



THE  
MISCELLANEOUS WORKS  
OF THE  
**REV. JOHN WESLEY.**

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

CONTAINING.

TRACTS AND LETTERS ON VARIOUS SUBJECTS.

---

**New-York :**

PRINTED AND SOLD BY J. & J. HARPER,

NO. 82 CLIFF-STREET.

---

1828.



## CONTENTS OF VOLUME X.

---

	PAGE
I. <i>A Roman Catechism ; with a Reply thereto</i> -	9
II. <i>Popery calmly considered</i> - - -	50
III. <i>The Advantages of the Members of the Church of England over those of the Church of Rome</i> -	64
IV. <i>A short Method of converting all the Roman Catholics in the Kingdom of Ireland</i> - - -	70
V. <i>A Letter to the Printer of the Dublin Public Advertiser, occasioned by the late Act passed in favour of Popery</i> - - -	74
VI. <i>Two Letters to the Editors of the Freeman's Journal</i> - - -	77
VII. <i>The Origin of Image-Worship among Christians</i>	84
VIII. <i>A Disavowal of Persecuting Papists</i> - -	85
IX. <i>Reasons against a Separation from the Church of England</i> - - -	93
X. <i>Thoughts on Separation from the Church</i> - -	95
XI. <i>On the Church : in a Letter to the Rev. Mr. ———</i>	94
XII. <i>Thoughts on the Consecration of Churches and Burial Grounds</i> - - -	97
XIII. <i>An Answer to an Important Question</i> - - -	98
XIV. <i>Free Thoughts on the present State of Public Affairs</i> - - -	100
XV. <i>Thoughts upon Liberty</i> - - -	115
XVI. <i>Thoughts upon the Origin of Power</i> - - -	125—
XV I. <i>A Calm Address to our American Colonies</i> - -	130
XVIII. <i>How far is it the Duty of a Christian Minister to preach Politics?</i> - - -	137

---

### PIECES ON VARIOUS SUBJECTS, FROM THE METHODIST MAGAZINES.

	PAGE
XIX. <i>Thoughts on Salvation by Faith</i> - - -	138
XX. <i>Further Thoughts on Necessity</i> - - -	141
XXI. <i>On hearing Ministers who oppose the Truth</i> -	145
XXII. <i>Thoughts concerning Gospel Ministers</i> -	146

	PAGE
XXIII. <i>Thoughts upon Methodism</i> - - -	148
XXIV. <i>Thoughts on the Manner of Educating Children</i>	150
XXV. <i>An Answer to Mr. Dodd</i> - - -	153
XXVI. <i>Of the Immortality of the Soul</i> - - -	156
XXVII. <i>A Thought upon Marriage</i> - - -	158
XXVIII. <i>Thoughts upon Dissipation</i> - - -	160
XXIX. <i>A clear and concise Demonstration of the Divine In- spiration of the Holy Scriptures</i> - -	162
XXX. <i>1 Thessalonians v. 23, elucidated</i> - - -	162
XXXI. <i>Thoughts on Suicide</i> - - -	164
XXXII. <i>Thoughts upon Taste</i> - - -	164
XXXIII. <i>Thoughts on the Power of Music</i> - - -	168
XXXIV. <i>Thoughts upon Jacob Behmen</i> - - -	171
XXXV. <i>Thoughts upon Montesquieu's Spirit of Laws</i>	175
XXXVI. <i>Thoughts on the Character and Writings of Mr. Prior</i> - - -	177
XXXVII. <i>Thoughts on Nervous Disorders</i> - - -	182
XXXVIII. <i>Thoughts on Genius</i> - - -	186
XXXIX. <i>Thoughts on Memory</i> - - -	188
XL. <i>A Letter to the Rev. Mr. Hervey</i> - - -	188
XLI. <i>Second Letter to Ditto</i> - - -	203
XLII. <i>To the Rev. Mr. Walker</i> - - -	204
XLIII. <i>Second Letter to Ditto</i> - - -	206
XLIV. <i>Third to Ditto</i> - - -	209
XLV. <i>Fourth to Ditto</i> - - -	212
XLVI. <i>Letter from the Rev. Mr. Wesley to his Father, on the Origin of Evil</i> - - -	214
XLVII. <i>Second Ditto to his Father, on the same subject</i>	215
XLVIII. <i>To Dr. Robertson, on Ramsay's Principles of Reli- gion</i> - - -	218
XLIX. <i>To Mr. —, on the Unction of the Holy One</i> -	222
L. <i>To Mr. —, on Worldly and Christian Prudence</i>	223
LI. <i>To Miss L—, on Female Study</i> - - -	225
LII. <i>To Miss —, on possessing the Mind of Christ</i> -	227
LIII. <i>To the Monthly Reviewers, on their improper Treat- ment of the Methodists</i> - - -	227
LIV. <i>Second Ditto to the Reviewers</i> - - -	228
LV. <i>To the Rev. Mr. Clark, on a Catholic Spirit</i>	231
LVI. <i>To a Friend, on Public Worship</i> - - -	232
LVII. <i>To Miss H—, on Christian Perfection</i> - - -	234
LVIII. <i>To Mr. —, on Heresy and Schism</i> - - -	237
LIX. <i>From Mr. T. Adam to Mr. Wesley, on Leaving the Church</i> - - -	240
LX. <i>Mr. Wesley's Answer</i> - - -	241
LXI. <i>To the Rev. Mr. G—, on condemning the Method- ists for holding Doctrines they utterly abhor</i>	243
LXII. <i>To the Rev. Mr. D—, on Union among the Evangelical Clergy</i> - - -	244

	PAGE
LXIII. <i>To Mr. John Trembath, on his improper conduct</i>	245
LXIV. <i>Second Ditto to Mr. Trembath</i>	246
LXV. <i>To a Friend, on a Passage in the Monthly Review</i>	247
LXVI. <i>To Mr. —, on Lay Preaching</i>	248
LXVII. <i>To the Rev. Mr. Furlly, on a good Style</i>	252
LXVIII. <i>To the Rev. Mr. Venn, on Union among Gospel Ministers</i>	254
LXIX. <i>To Mrs. A. F—, on Sanctifying Faith</i>	256
LXX. <i>To Mr. J. Hosmer, on the Adamic Law</i>	257
LXXI. <i>To Mr. A. Coats, on Christian Perfection</i>	258
LXXII. <i>To Mr. S. F—, on the Necessity of the Atoning Blood</i>	260
LXXIII. <i>Four Letters to Mrs. S. R—, on various branches of Christian Experience</i>	260
LXXIV. <i>To Lady —: the Backslider invited to return to God</i>	263
LXXV. <i>To Lord —, on Union among pious Clergymen</i>	264
LXXVI. <i>To the Rev. Mr. H—, on the Millennium</i>	265
LXXVII. <i>To the Rev. Mr. Plendeleith; Remarks on Mr. Erskine's Principles</i>	266
LXXVIII. <i>To Mr. S—, at Armagh: Directions to the Itinerant Preachers in Ireland</i>	268
LXXIX. <i>To —, on Union among the Ministers of the Gospel</i>	269
LXXX. <i>To the Rev. Mr. L—, on Unfaithfulness in Gospel Ministers</i>	271
LXXXI. <i>Six Letters to Miss A—, on various branches of Christian Experience and Practice</i>	272
LXXXII. <i>Three Letters to Mr. Joseph Cownley</i>	275
LXXXIII. <i>Two Letters to the Rev. William Law, on Justification by Faith</i>	277
LXXXIV. <i>To Mr. Fletcher, on too close Intimacy with lukewarm Professors</i>	279
LXXXV. <i>To Mr. Knox, on being altogether a Christian</i>	280
LXXXVI. <i>To Miss Bishop, on the Doctrine of Atonement</i>	282
LXXXVII. <i>To Mrs. Maitland, on Christian Perfection</i>	283
LXXXVIII. <i>To Mr. Hart, on Faith as a Condition of Justification</i>	283
LXXXIX. <i>To Lady —, on Sanctification by Faith</i>	284
XC. <i>To the Rev. George Whitefield</i>	285
XCI. <i>To Mrs. S. R—. Gentle, but important Reasons</i>	286
XCII. <i>To Mr. Valton, on the Necessity of an Inward Change</i>	287
XCIII. <i>Thirty-seven Letters, written by Mr. Wesley to a Member of his Society, on experimental and practical Religion</i>	287

	PAGE
XCIV. <i>To the Rev. Mr. L——</i> - - -	311
XCV. <i>To Mr. C——, on a Friend embracing         Popery</i> - - -	312
XCVI. <i>To Miss Fuller, exhorting to Steadfastness</i> -	313
XCVII. <i>Two Letters to Miss B——, on Fidelity to the           Grace of God</i> - - -	313
XCVIII. <i>To the Rev. E. Cooper, of Philadelphia</i> -	315
XCIX. <i>To Miss H——; The humble Penitent encour-           aged</i> - - -	315
C. <i>Seven Letters to Miss B——</i> - - -	316
CI. <i>Eight Letters to Miss Loxdale</i> - - -	324
CII. <i>Twenty-seven Letters to Mrs. Bennis, of Limerick</i>	328
CIII. <i>Sixteen Letters to Lady Maxwell</i> - - -	341
CIV. <i>Four Letters to Miss Briggs</i> - - -	353
CV. <i>——— Miss Perronet</i> - - -	354
CVI. <i>To Mr. Charles Perronet</i> - - -	355
CVII. <i>Two Letters to the Rev Mr. Dickenson</i> - - -	355
CVIII. <i>Seven Letters to Mr. Rankin</i> - - -	356
CIX. <i>To the Preachers in America</i> - - -	357
CX. <i>Two Letters to Mr. Dempster</i> - - -	359, 360
CXI. <i>To Mr. John King</i> - - -	361
CXII. <i>Six Letters to Miss B——</i> - - -	362
CXIII. <i>Fourteen Letters to Miss Bolton</i> - - -	369
CXIV. <i>Twenty-two Letters to Miss Ritchie</i> - - -	377
CXV. <i>Fifteen Letters to Miss H. A. Roe</i> - - -	388
CXVI. <i>To Miss Patty Chapman</i> - - -	396
CXVII. <i>To Mr. Alexander</i> - - -	397
CXVIII. <i>To Mr. Alexander, jun.</i> - - -	397
CXIX. <i>Thirty-six Letters to Mr. Benson</i> - - -	398
CXX. <i>Eight Letters to Miss Cooke</i> - - -	415
CXXI. <i>Twelve Letters to Mr A. Clarke</i> - - -	420
CXXII. <i>Four Letters to Mr. Downes</i> - - -	425
CXXIII. <i>Twenty-three Letters to Miss Furlly</i> - - -	427
CXXIV. <i>Eight Letters to Mrs. Crosby</i> - - -	438
CXXV. <i>Nineteen Letters to a Young Disciple</i> - - -	442
CXXVI. <i>To the Stewards of the Foundry</i> - - -	451
CXXVII. <i>To certain Persons in Dublin</i> - - -	451
CXXVIII. <i>To the Printer of the Dublin Chronicle</i> - - -	452
CXXIX. <i>Six Letters to Mr. Samuel Wesley</i> - - -	455
CXXX. <i>To Lady ——</i> - - -	464
CXXXI. <i>To Mr John Booth</i> - - -	464
CXXXII. <i>Modern Christianity exemplified at Wednesbury</i>	465
CXXXIII. <i>Answer to Mr. R. H.'s Tract, entitled "Imposture             Detected"</i> - - -	483
CXXXIV. <i>Thoughts on Slavery</i> - - -	489

## MISCELLANEOUS WORKS.

---

### A ROMAN CATECHISM:

WITH A REPLY THERETO.

---

#### THE PREFACE.

IT has been a frequent complaint among some of the Romish church, that the Protestants have misrepresented the doctrine of their church: on the other side, the Protestants accuse the writers in that church, of concealing, disguising, and palliating their doctrines. The latter justify their charge by producing such authors as have in several ages not only taught that doctrine, but taught it as the doctrine of their church; the former deny the charge, by appealing from particular authors, to a higher authority, to councils, and public acts and decrees, to missals, breviaries, and catechisms. Now though those Protestants are not to be blamed, when the authors they quote have been first licensed and approved in that church, and were never afterward condemned by it; yet in composing this Catechism, to avoid contention as much as I can, I have generally observed their directions, and have seldom made use of particular authors, but when it is for the explication of a doctrine that is not sufficiently explained, or for confirmation of a doctrine generally received. I am very confident that the quotations throughout are true, having again and again examined them; and I have been as careful as I could, not to mistake the sense of them; that I might rightly understand and truly represent the doctrine which I profess to censure: for without a faithful and impartial examination of an error, there can be no solid confutation of it.

## A ROMAN CATECHISM,

FAITHFULLY DRAWN OUT OF THE ALLOWED WRITINGS OF THE  
CHURCH OF ROME.

### SECTION I.—*Of the Church, and Rule of Faith.*

**Q. 1.** WHAT is the Church of Rome ?

**A.** The Church of Rome is that society of Christians, which professes it necessary to salvation\* to be subject to the Pope of Rome, as the alone visible head of the church. †

\* *Dicimus, definimus, pronunciamus, absolute necessarium ad salutem, omni humana creaturæ subesse Romano Pontifici, Extravag. c. Unam sanctam de majoritate et obedientia.*

*We say, define, and pronounce, that it is absolutely necessary to salvation, for every man to be subject to the Pope of Rome.*

† Bellarm. de Eccles. milit. l. 3. c. 2. ss. Nostra autem sententia et cap. 5. ss. respondeo neminem.

**Q. 2.** How comes subjection to the Pope to be necessary to salvation, and an essential note of the church ?

**A.** Because the Pope is Christ's vicar, St. Peter's successor,\* and hath the supreme power on earth over the whole church. † “The church is called one, as it has one invisible head, Christ; and one visible, who doth possess the chair at Rome, as the lawful successor of St. Peter, prince of the apostles.” (Catech. Rom. par. 1. c. 10. n. 11.)

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 6. Decret. de Reform. cap. 1. Bulli Pii. 4. sup. form. Joram.

† Con. Trid. Sess. 14. c. 7.

**Q. 3.** What authority doth the church of Rome challenge ?

**A.** She declares that she is the mother and mistress of all churches,\* and that to believe her so to be, is necessary to salvation. † Pope Innocent III. thus decreed, As God is called universal Lord, because all things are under his dominion: so the church of Rome is called catholic or universal, because all churches are subject unto her. *Apud Bzovium Annal. 1199.*

\* Concil. Later. 4 Can. 2 Concil. Trid. Sess. 7, de Bapt. Can. 3, &c.

† Bulla Pii 4, super form. Jur.

THE REPLY  
TO  
THE ROMAN CATECHISM.

---

SECTION I.—*Of the Church, and Rule of Faith.*

**R. 1.** CHRIST is the Head, from whom the whole body is fitly joined together. And the holding to that head, (Col. ii. 19,) is the one great note of the church, given by St. Austin *de unit. Eccles.* c. 3, 4. But there is neither in Scripture, nor antiquity, any evidence for a visible head, and much less for the visible head the pope, and least of all, that it is necessary to salvation to be subject to him.

If it is necessary to salvation to be subject to him, it is necessary to know who is the pope; but that the world hath often been divided about, when there were sometimes three, and for about forty years together two popes. *Vid. Theod. Niem. de Schism. Univers.*

**R. 2.** If Christ gave no such power to St. Peter, or the pope be not St. Peter's successor, then the pope has no pretence to this power. Now we read that 'Christ gave some apostles, and some prophets, for the work of the ministry and the edifying the body.' (Ephes. iv. 11, 12.) But that he gave one apostle pre-eminence above the rest, much less absolute power over them, we read not. This power they were forbidden to attempt or desire, (Matt. xx. 26,) and St. Paul was so far from acknowledging it, that he challenged an equality with the rest of the apostles, (Gal. i. 15, 17,) and upon occasion withstood St. Peter. (Gal. ii. 11.)

To this we may add the judgment of St. Cyprian. "The other apostles are the same St. Peter was, endowed with an equal fellowship of honour and power." *Epist. de unit. Eccles.*

**R. 3.** As it was foretold, (Isaiah ii. 3,) so it was fulfilled, 'Out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem.' There the church began, and therefore in the synodical epistle of the second general council of Constantinople, Jerusalem is called "the mother of all churches." Baron, A. D. 382, p. 461.

If she is the mistress, because she is the mother, (as pope Innocent the First would have it, *Epist. 1, Concil. Tom. 4, p. 5,*) then Jerusalem was the mistress. If the mistress, because she was once the imperial city, then Constantinople was so likewise; and accordingly it was decreed in the 4th general council, that of Chalcedon, **Can. 28,** "That the church of Constantinople should have equal privileges with that of Rome, because she is the imperial seat."

**Q. 4.** What use doth she make of this authority ?

**A.** She requires all persons, upon her sole authority, to receive and believe the doctrines she proposes to be received and believed,\* and without the belief of which she declares there can be no salvation. †

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 13, Decret. de Euchar. Sacrosancta synodus omnibus Christi fidelibus interdicit, ne posthac de sanctissima Eucharistia aliter credere, docere aut prædicare audeant, quam ut est hoc præsentis decreto explicatum, atque definitum. So again, Sess. 25, Decret. de Purgatorio. *And there are above one hundred Anathemas in that council in point of doctrine against such as do not so believe.*

† Bulla Pii. 4 super form. Juram. *Hanc veram Catholicam fidem, extra quam nemo salvus esse potest : i. e. This is the true Catholic faith, without which no man can be saved.*

**Q. 5.** Doth not the church of Rome acknowledge the holy Scripture to be a sufficient rule for faith and manners ?

**A.** No : For there are some doctrines proposed by that church as matters of faith, and some things required as necessary duty, which are by many learned men among themselves confessed not to be contained in Scripture.

This is confirmed by Pope Pius II. (when a cardinal) Epist. 288, p. 802, who saith, “that before the time of the Nicene council, little regard was had to the church of Rome.”

**Q. 6.** What doctrines of faith and matters of practice are thus acknowledged not to be in Scripture ?

**A.** The doctrines of transubstantiation,\* of the seven sacraments, † of purgatory, ‡ of the practice of half-communion, § worshipping of saints and images, || indulgences, ¶ and service in an unknown tongue. \*\*

\* Scotus in 4 sent. dist. 11, q. 3, et Yribarn in Scot.

† Bellarm. l. 2, de effectu Sacram. c. 25, ss. secunda probatio.

‡ Roffens. contr. Luther art. 18.

§ Concil. Constan. Sess. 13, Cassander. Art. 22.

|| Bellarm. de cult. Sancti. l. 3, c. 9, ss. præterea. Cassand. Consult. Art. 21, ss. 4.

¶ Polyd. Virg. de invent. lib. 8, c. 1.

\*\* Bellarm. de verb. Dei. li. 2, c. 26.

**Q. 7.** What doth the church of Rome propound to herself as an entire rule of faith ?

**A.** Scripture with tradition ; and she requires that the traditions be received and revered with the like pious regard and veneration as the Scriptures ; and whosoever knowingly contemns them, is declared by her to be accursed. *Concil. Trid. Sess. 4, Decret. de can. Script.*

**Q. 8.** What do they understand by tradition ?

**A.** Such things belonging to faith and manners as were dictated by Christ or the Holy Ghost in the apostles, and have been preserved by a continual succession in the catholic church, from hand to hand without writing. *Concil. Trid. ibid.*

And if she claims this sovereign authority upon any other reason, she never had, nor can ever prove a right to it.

**R. 4.** Gal. i. 11, 12, ‘The gospel which was preached of me, is not after man; for I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.’

Verse 8, 9, ‘Though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you, than that which we have preached, let him be accursed.’

The church of Rome cannot avoid St. Paul’s Anathema, when she requires to bow down before an image, which the Scripture forbids: and forbids to read the Scripture, which it requires.

And without doubt the text of the apostle holds as much against any other, as against himself or an angel from heaven.

**R. 5.** We read in Scripture of ‘the faith once delivered to the saints.’ Jude 3, and 2 Tim. iii. 16, 17. ‘All’ [or the whole] ‘Scripture is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.’

The Scripture, therefore, is a rule sufficient in itself and was by men divinely inspired *once* delivered to the world; and so neither needs, nor is capable of any further addition.

So Tertullian, “Let Hermogenes show that this thing is written. If it be not written, let him fear the wo pronounced against them that add to, or take from Scripture.” *Contr. Hermog. c. 22.*

**R. 6.** On the contrary: St. Augustin, lib. contr. Petil. l. 3, c. 6, writes, “If any one concerning Christ and his church, or concerning any other things which belong to faith or life, I will not say if we, but (which St. Paul hath added) if an angel from heaven preach unto you besides what ye have received in the law and evangelical writings, let him be accursed.” For as all faith is founded upon divine authority, so there is now no divine authority but the Scriptures: and, therefore, no one can make that to be of divine authority, which is not contained in them. And if transubstantiation and purgatory, &c. are not delivered in Scripture, they cannot be doctrines of faith.

**R. 7.** Matt. xv. 9, ‘In vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrine the commandments of men;’ forbidding that as unlawful which God hath not forbidden, and requiring that as necessary duty which God hath not required.

So St. Hierom, in cap. 1, Aggæi, “The sword of God [*his word*] doth smite those other things, which they find and hold of their own accord, as by apostolical tradition, without the authority and testimony of Scripture.”

**R. 8.** But St. Cyril affirms, “It behooveth us not to deliver, no not so much as the least thing of the holy mysteries of faith, without the holy Scripture. That is the security of our faith, not which is from our own inventions, but from the demonstration of the holy Scriptures.” *Cateches. 5.*

**Q. 9.** What are those traditions which they profess to have received from Christ and his apostles ?

*A.* The offering the sacrifice of the mass for the souls in purgatory,\* the mystical benedictions, incensings, garments, and many other things of the like kind, † salt, spittle, exorcisms, and wax candles used in baptism, ‡ &c. the priests shaving the head after the manner of a crown. §

\* Conc. Trid. Sess. 22, c. 2.

† Ibid. c. 5.

‡ Catech. Rom. par. 2, c. 2, n. 59, 65, &c.

§ Ibid. c. 7, n. 14.

**Q. 10.** Doth the church of Rome agree with other churches in the number of canonical books of Scripture ?

*A.* No: for she hath added to the canonical books of the Old Testament, Tobit, Judith, Wisdom, Ecclesiasticus, Baruch, Esdras, the two books of Maccabees,\* and a new part of Esther and Daniel; which whole books, with all their parts, † whosoever rejects as not canonical, is accursed. *Concil. Trident. Sess. 4, Decret. de Scriptur.*

\* These books are so sacred, as that they are of infallible truth. *Bellarmin. de verbo, l. 1, c. 10, ss. Ecclesia vera.*

† Wherefore doth the council add *with all their parts*? those parts also, about which there was some time a dispute, belong to the sacred canon of the bible. *Ibid. c. 7, ss. Denique.*

**Q. 11.** Are the people of the church of Rome permitted to read the Scripture in a tongue vulgarly known ?

*A.* No: they were for a time permitted to read it, under the caution\* of a license, where it could be obtained: but since they are forbid it, or to have so much as any summary or historical *compendium* of it in their own tongue. †

\* Reg. Ind. libr. prohib. Reg.

† Index libr. prohib. auctor. Sixti V. Clem. VIII. observat. circa 4, Regulam.

**Q. 12.** For what reason is the Scripture thus prohibited among them ?

*A.* Because, (say they,) if it be permitted to be read every where, without difference, there would more prejudice than profit proceed from it. *Reg. Ind. libr. prohib. Reg. 4.*

**Q. 13.** Since the Scripture may be misunderstood, have they no judge to determine the sense of it ?

*A.* They say, it belongs to the church (of Rome) to judge of the sense of Scripture, and no one may presume to interpret the Scripture, contrary to the sense which Mother Church hath held and doth hold. *Concil. Trid. Sess. 4, Decret. de Edit. & usu Script.*

*R. 9.* Mark vii. 8, 'Laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men.'

*St. Basil in Reg. brev. Reg. 95.* "It is necessary even for novices to learn the Scriptures, that the mind may be well confirmed in piety, and that they may not be accustomed to human traditions."

The church of Rome hath no more to show for their holy water, and incensings, and salt, and spittle, &c. than the Pharisees for their traditions: and since they no less impose them as divine than the other, they are alike guilty with them.

*R. 10.* These apocryphal books were written after prophecy and divine inspiration ceased, and so were not received by the Jewish church, (to whom 'were committed the oracles of God,' Rom. iii. 2,) nor the Christian church, as the 60th canon of the council of Laodicea shows, where there is a catalogue of the canonical books, without any mention of these.

*St. Jerom in prologo proverb.* "As therefore the church doth read Tobias, Judith, and the books of the Maccabees, but doth not receive them into the canonical Scriptures: so it doth read the two volumes of Wisdom and Ecclesiasticus for the edification of the people, not to establish the authority of ecclesiastical principles." See *Bellarmin. de verbo, l. i. c. 10, init.*

*R. 11.* Under the law, the people had the Scriptures in a tongue vulgarly known; and they were required to read the law, and to be conversant in it, Deut. vi. 6, 'These words which I command thee this day shall be in thine heart,' &c. and accordingly our Saviour sends them thither, John v. 39, 'Search the Scriptures.' So *St. Paul* requires that his 'epistle be read to all the brethren,' 1 Thess. v. 27, and if so, it was written in a language they understood. And so it was in the primitive church, therefore *St. Chrysostom* exhorts his hearers, though secular men, to provide themselves Bibles, the medicines of their souls, to be their perpetual instructors. *Comment. in Colos. iii. 16.*

*R. 12.* In the Apostles' times there were some that 'wrested the Scriptures to their own destruction:' and yet the Apostle thought of no other expedient than to give the Christians a caution, that they were 'not also led away with the error of the wicked.' 2 Pet. iii. 16, 17. The way to prevent this, therefore, is, not to keep the Scriptures from the people, (which 'were written for our learning,' Rom. xv. 4,) but to exhort them to a diligent perusal of them. Matt. xxii. 29, 'Ye err, not knowing the Scriptures.'

"The sheep should not cast away their skin, because wolves sometimes hide themselves under it." *St. Austin de Serm. Dom. in monte.*

*R. 13.* While the apostles were alive, the churches of Christ in matters of dispute, applied themselves to them, as in the point of circumcision, Acts xv. 2; but since they of the church of Rome can never prove the like infallibility in their church, nor direct us where it is, we think ourselves as well in our church, as they can be in theirs; and that as long as we have the Scripture, the church is

It cannot be called the church of God where the legitimate successor of St. Peter in the Roman chair, and the undoubted vicar of Christ doth not preside :—What the church doth teach is the express word of God, and what is taught against the sense and consent of the church, is the express word of the Devil. Cardinal *Hosius de expresso Dei verbo*, p. 642, 643.

## SECTION II.—Of REPENTANCE and OBEDIENCE.

Q. 14. WHAT doth the church of Rome teach concerning repentance ?

A. 1. It teacheth that contrition, (which is a sorrow for sins past, and a purpose of not committing it for the future,) though perfected with charity, is not sufficient to reconcile a person to God without penance, or confession to a priest either in act or desire. *Concil. Trid. Sess. 14, c. 4, Catech. Rom. pars 2, de Sacrament. pœnit. n. 38.*

A. 2. She teacheth that attrition, or imperfect contrition, proceeding merely from the fear of hell, is equivalent to contrition, by virtue of confession : and that attrition doth dispose to receive the grace of the sacrament of penance, and leads to justification.\*

\* *Sess. 14, cap. 4, Bellarm. de pœnit. l. 2, c. 18, ss. Sed sciendum est. [See Quest. 77.]*

Q. 15. What is the judgment of the church of Rome as to good works ?

A. The church of Rome doth affirm that the good works of justified persons do truly deserve eternal life ;\* and if any one say that such works do not truly deserve an increase of grace here, and an eternal life hereafter, let him be accursed.†

“Our good works do merit eternal life, not only by virtue of God’s covenant and acceptation, but also by reason of the work itself.”‡

\* *Concil. Trid. Sess. 6, c. 16.* † *Ibid. Can. 32.* ‡ *Bellarm. de Justif. l. 5, c. 17.*

Q. 16. But is there no allowance for such as have not good works of their own, sufficient to merit for themselves ?

A. Yes : there are indulgences to be obtained, by which persons may be discharged from the punishment of sin here and in purgatory : and if any affirm these indulgences to be useless, or that the church hath no power to grant them, he is accursed. *Concil. Trid. Sess. 25, Decret. de indulg.*

The popes and prelates of the church are judges appointed by

to be referred to the Scripture, and not the Scripture to the church; and that as the Scripture is the best expounder of itself, so the best way to know whether any thing be of divine authority, is to apply ourselves to the Scripture.

If I would have the church demonstrated, it is not by human teachings, but by the divine oracles. *St. Aug. de unit. Eccles. cap. 3.*

“The way for understanding the Scriptures, is to demonstrate out of themselves, concerning themselves.” *Clem. Alex. Strom. l. 7, p. 757.*

---

## SECTION II.—Of REPENTANCE and OBEDIENCE.

*R. 14.* CONTRITION is but another word for repentance, and repentance is a qualification for pardon and reconciliation. ‘A broken and contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise.’ Psalm li. 17. ‘Repent, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out.’ Acts iii. 19. The same texts which make contrition sufficient, without confession to the priest, make attrition insufficient without there be contrition. And as the former doctrine of the insufficiency of contrition without confession, makes that necessary which God hath not made necessary: so this latter of the sufficiency of attrition upon confession to the priest, without contrition, makes that unnecessary which God hath made necessary.

*R. 15.* Truly to deserve, is to make God our debtor; ‘to him that worketh,’ (i. e. *that meriteth*,) ‘is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.’ Rom. iv. 4. ‘But can a man be profitable to God?’ Job iv. 4. Our Saviour teaches us otherwise, Luke xvii. 10, ‘When ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, we are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.’ A command to do it, and grace to obey that command, and a ‘far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory,’ *as a reward*, (2 Cor. iv. 17,) will shame the pretence of real merit, and turn the anathema upon themselves. And they may as soon reconcile light and darkness, as the grace of God and merit of Christ to this doctrine.

*R. 16.* What God binds, no person can untie; and what he unties, no man can bind. But this course of indulgence, still upheld in the church of Rome, doth untie what God doth bind; it makes sin easy and cheap, and prostitutes the strict rules of Christianity to the basest purposes. For when a person can have a plenary indulgence for so trivial a satisfaction as the standing before the doors of St. Peter’s church at Rome, when the Pope blesses the people at Easter, it makes sin as easy to be committed as pardoned.

God to remit faults and punishments in his name by an indulgence, if so be justice be satisfied through the application of the satisfaction of Christ and his saints. *Bellarm. de Indulg. l. c. 1. 5, ss. Jam. vero.*

**Q. 17.** How far do those indulgences extend?

*A.* Sometimes to days, sometimes to years, nay some of them were plenary\* indulgences; some were for a discharge from punishments here, others from the pains of purgatory, † and some granted an eternal reward.

\* *Bellarm. de Indulget. l. 1, c. 9, init. Plenary indulgence doth take away all the punishment due to sin. Ibid. ss. Indulgentia Quadragen. † Ibid. c. 7, ss. Et quidem.*

**Q. 18.** Upon what terms were those indulgences to be obtained?

*A.* By money,\* pilgrimages, † assisting the pope, ‡ reciting certain prayers. §

\* This is implied *Concil. Trid. Sess. 21, c. 9*, though it is called by the soft name of alms.

† So many are granted to particular churches in Rome, for the benefit of pilgrims.

‡ So those, that upon his motion took up arms against the Albigenses, had by an indulgence the promise of an eternal reward. *Baron. ad A. D. 1179, n. 7.*

§ So Pope Alexander VI. granted to those that recited this prayer to the blessed Virgin, and St. Ann her mother, 30,000 years' indulgence.

“*Hail, Mary, full of grace, the Lord be with thee, thy grace with me. Blessed be thou among women: and blessed be St. Ann thy mother, from whom, O Virgin Mary, thou hast proceeded without sin and spot: but of thee hath Jesus Christ been born, the Son of the living God. Amen.*” *Thesaur. Var. Exercit. in grat. Sodal. B. V. M. Bruxel. Edit. 2 An. 1658, p. 287.*

**Q. 19.** Upon what pretence or reason is the doctrine and practice of indulgences founded?

*A.* Upon works of supererogation,\* that is, the overplus of the satisfactions of Christ and the saints, which is a treasury † committed to the church's custody, ‡ and to be disposed of as she sees meet. §

\* *That supererogation is necessary to indulgence, no one can deny, saith Bellarm. de Indulg. l. 1, c. 2, init.*

† *Concil. Trid. Sess. 21, c. 9.*

‡ So Pope Clem. VI. *Constit. extrav. in Bellarm. ibid. § ult. § Bellarm. ibid. c. 3.*

**Q. 20** Whither do the souls of those go that die in a state of grace, but are not sufficiently purged from their sins, or have not had a plenary indulgence for the remission of them?

*A.* Such go to purgatory, a place of torment in the other world, near to hell,\* where they are to continue till they have made full satisfaction for their sins, and are thoroughly purged and prepared for heaven, whereinto no unclean thing can enter. †

\* *Bellarm. de Purg. l. 2, c. 6, SS. Quinta est.*

† *Catech. Rom. par. 1, c. 6, n. 3.*

R. 17, 18. The scandal given by them was so notorious, that order was given by the council of Trent for reforming the abuses of them ; but when the fathers thought fit not to discover those abuses, and only forbade wicked gain,\* they left a large scope for making a gain of them. And two of the popes under whom that council sat (viz. Paul III. and Julius III. †) proceeded in the same course as their predecessors, if they did not exceed them : for by their bulls, there is granted to all such of the fraternity of the holy altar, as visit the church of St. Hilary of Chartres, during the six weeks of Lent, 775,700 years' pardon, besides fourteen or fifteen plenary indulgences. And since that, Urban VIII. ‡ and Clement X. § have granted by their indulgence a plenary remission of sins.

\* Sess. 25, Decret. de Indulg.

† *A bull of indulgence to the fraternity of the altar, Paris 1550, v. B. Taylor's defence ; part. 2, l. 2, p. 8.*

‡ Bullar. to. page 74.

§ A. D. 1671. *Bull upon the canonization of five saints.*

R. 19. Romans viii. 18, 'The sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us :'  
so 2 Cor. iv. 17. 'Every one of us shall give an account of himself to God.' Rom. xiv 12. If there be no comparison between the reward and our sufferings for it, then no one has merit to transfer to another : and if every man must give an account of himself, then no man can be saved by the merits of another. But suppose there is a super-abundance of satisfactions in the saints ; yet what need is there of them, when there is such an infinite value in the sufferings of Christ, who 'by one offering hath for ever perfected them that are sanctified.' Heb. x. 14. Or who gave the church the power so to apply them ?

R. 20, 21. That those that die in a state of grace, are yet in a state of torment, and are to be purged in the other world, is contrary to Scripture and Antiquity. Rom. viii. 1, 'There is no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus.' Verse 30, 'Whom he justified, them he also glorified.' Verses 33, 34, 'Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect ? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth ?' As justification and condemnation are here opposed by the apostle, so are condemnation and glorification ; and he that is justified upon the same reason that he cannot be condemned, shall be glorified. Now the elect are justified before

**Q. 21.** How come those persons to be punished in the other world, who depart in a state of grace out of this ?

**A.** Because they have not here fulfilled the penance imposed upon them, or due from them to God.\*

\* Bellarm. de Indulg. l. 1, c. 6, 7. (See Quest. 91.)

**Q. 22.** Of what continuance is the punishment of that state ?

**A.** It is but for an appointed time ; and the person is to continue in it till he is purged from his sin, and has suffered the punishment due to it.\*

\* Catch. ibid. Bellarm. de purg. l. 2, c. 8, SS. Quantum ad primum.

**Q. 23.** Is there no way by which the souls of those that are in purgatory may be delivered out of that prison, and their time of torment shortened ?

**A.** They may be helped and delivered by the suffrages\* of the faithful that are alive ; that is, by prayers, alms, and masses : † and other works of piety, such as indulgences. ‡

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 25, Decr. de Purgat. † Sess. 22, Can. 3.

‡ Bellarm. de Purgat. l. 2, c. 16, SS. Ad hæc.

**Q. 24.** Is the doctrine of purgatory a matter of faith, and necessary to be believed ?

they go out of this world; and consequently shall have nothing laid to their charge in the next.

“The servants of God then have peace, then enjoy quiet rest and security; when being drawn from these storms of the world, we arrive at the haven of our everlasting habitation and security; when this death being ended, we enter into immortality.” *St. Cypr. de Mortal. S S. 2.*

Luke xxiii. 43. ‘To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.’ Paradise is acknowledged to be the seat of the blessed.\* Now if there was a purgation necessary for sinners, he that believed and repented not till the last moment of his life, might be well supposed to need it: and should have been sent rather to purgatory than paradise.

“After the night of this life there is no purgation; and it is better to be corrected and purged now, than to be sent to the torment there, where the time of punishing is, and not of purging.” *Greg. Nazianz. Orat. 15. in plag.*

\* Bellarm. de Sanct. Beat. l. 1. c. 3. Testim. 4.

**R. 22.** The state that believers immediately enter upon after death, is said to be life for the comfort, and everlasting for the continuance of it.

John v. 24. ‘He that believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.’

So St. Cyprian, “The end of this life being completed, we are divided into the habitations of everlasting either death or immortality.” *Ad Demetr. sec. 16.*

**R. 23.** Luke xvi. 26, ‘Between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that they which would pass from hence to you [to relieve you] cannot.’

As the state in which Abraham and Lazarus were, needed no relief; so that in which the rich man was, could not obtain it. “After death is no help to be gotten by godliness or repentance. Lazarus doth not there go to the rich man, nor the rich man unto Lazarus. For the garners are sealed up, and the time is fulfilled.” *Epiphanius contr. Cather. Her. 59.*

And if a man’s own repentance cannot help him, much less can another’s good works profit him.

So St. Jerom: “While we are in this world, we may be able to help one another, either by our prayers, or by our counsels: but when we shall comē before the judgment-seat of Christ, neither Job, nor Daniel, nor Noah, can entreat for any one, but every one must bear his own burden.”\* And he elsewhere saith, “What shall be to all in the day of judgment, this is accomplished to every one at the day of death.”†

\* Lib. 3. Com. in Galat. c. 6.

† In Joel c. 2.

**R. 24.** Bishop Fisher saith, That there is none or very little men-  
VOL. 10.—C

*A.* Yes: for whosoever shall say, that there is no debt of temporal punishment to be paid, either in this world or purgatory, before there can be an admission into heaven, is accursed.\* And whosoever shall say, the sacrifice of the mass is not to be used for the dead, is accursed.† This is one of the principles, without the belief of which there is no salvation.‡

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 6. Can. 30. et Sess. 24. Decret. de Purg.

† Ibid. Sess. 22. Can. 3.

‡ Bulla Pii. 4ti.

**Q. 25.** In what place were the souls of the patriarchs, and other good men, before the coming of Christ?

*A.* Before the death and resurrection,\* or ascension of Christ,† the gates of heaven were open to none; and the souls of good men departed, were detained in a certain place called *Limbus Patrum*, which is the uppermost part of hell: the lowermost being the place of the damned; next above that, purgatory; next to that *limbus infantum*; above that *limbus patrum*.‡

\* Catch. Rom. par. 1. c. 6. n. 3. 6.

† Bellarm. de Christ. l. 4. c. 11.

‡ Bellarm. de Purg. l. 2. c. 6. SS. Quod autem.

**Q. 26.** In what condition were they while thus detained in limbo?

*A.* They are not agreed in the nature and condition of the place; for the Catechism saith, *N. 3.* "They were sustained by hope, and were without any sense of grief." And presently, *N. 4.* That "although they were without other sense of grief, yet being kept in suspense, they were tormented with the hope of that blessed glory which they did expect."

**Q. 27.** How and when were they delivered thence?

*A.* They were delivered by Christ at his descent into hell;\* so that ever since, that place remains empty.†

\* Catch. Rom. ibid. n. 5, 6.

† Bellarm. de Purg. l. 2. c. 6. sec. octava est.

**Q. 28.** What use do they make of this doctrine?

*A.* Hereby they give a reason why there is neither precept nor example in the Old Testament for the invocation of saints departed,\* because they were for their punishment enclosed in this place, and were there held bound by the devils,† till delivered by Christ. And so the people of those times only prayed to God, and did not use to say, holy Abraham, pray for me.‡

\* Bellarm. de Sanct. bear. l. 1. c. 19. see. Item. Exod.

† Catch. Rom. ibid. n. 5.

‡ Bellarm. ibid.

### SECTION III.—Of Divine Worship.

**Q. 29.** OF what doth the service in the Roman church consist?

*A.* It consists of prayers and hymns offered to God, angels, and

tion of purgatory among the ancients.\* It is then no little encroachment on the Christian world, to make it now a doctrine of faith, and to require it upon pain of damnation to be believed.

\* Roffens Lutheri confut. Art. 18. et Polyd. Virg. de Invent. l. 8. c. 1.

R. 25. We read that Elijah was taken up into heaven, 2 Kings ii. 11. and he and Moses appeared in glory, Luke ix. 31. Matt. xvii. 2. And Abraham is represented (Luke xvi. 32.) as in Paradise, the blessed abode of good men in the other world.

So St. Austin expounds it, "The bosom of Abraham is the rest of the blessed poor, whose is the kingdom of heaven, into which after this life they are received." *Quæst. Evangel. l. 2. c. 38.*

R. 26. But the Scripture tells us, that the state where Abraham was, was not only a state of *rest*, but also of *comfort*. Luke xvi. 25.

R. 27. The Scripture says not one word of this.

R. 28. There is neither precept nor example for the invocation of saints in the New Testament; and if that be the reason for a *limbus* before Christ, it may be a reason for a *limbus* still: and they may as well exclude the saints from heaven now as then, if there be no more for their invocation in the New Testament than was in the Old. Thus Salermo, (a learned disputant in the council of Trent,) "Invocations of saints have no express ground in all the Scriptures."\*

\* Ad. 1. Tim. ii. Disp. 7. sec. Sed cum aute et nec obstat.

---

### SECTION III.—Of Divine Worship.

R. 29. CARDINAL Quignonius at the instance of Pope Paul III. reformed the breviary; and instead of legends, set scriptures for

saints; of lessons taken out of the Scriptures, and legends; and of profession of faith in the creeds.

Q. 30. In what language is their service performed?

A. It is performed in all places among them in the Latin tongue, which is in no place vulgarly understood.

Q. 31. Is the having the service in an unknown tongue enjoined in the church of Rome?

A. Yes: it is required that it should be celebrated in the Latin tongue; and whosoever shall say that it ought only to be administered in the vulgar tongue, is accursed.\* Hence when of late years the missal, or mass-book, was translated into French, it was declared by Pope Alexander VII. to be a *seed-plot of disobedience, rashness, and schism*; and he calls them that did it, *sons of perdition, and doth condemn, reprobate, and forbid* that missal.

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 23. s. 3. and Can. 9.

Q. 32. What are the objects of worship in the church of Rome?

A. Besides the blessed Trinity, angels, the Virgin Mary, and saints.

Q. 33. What honour do they give to the angels?

A. 1. The church of Rome teaches that angels are to be worshipped,\* invoked, and prayed to.† And they have litanies and prayers composed for this purpose.‡

\* Catech. Rom. par. 3. c. 2. n. 8, 9, *venerari, adorare, colere.* † Ibid. n. 10.

‡ Litanix ss. Angelorum, vid. Horologium Tutelarix Angeli a Drexelio. p. 84. Cuac 1623.

A. 2. They teach, that as every particular person hath a guardian angel from his birth,\* so it is fit to commit themselves more particularly to him; † after this manner, “Blessed angel! to whose care our loving Creator hath committed me, defend me this day, I beseech you, from all dangers, and direct me in the way I ought to walk.” ‡

\* Catech. Rom. par. 4. cap. 9. sec. 1. n. 4. 6.

† Horolog. Drex. p. 108.

‡ *The Child's Catechism.* 1678.

the lessons. But Pope Pius Quintus, who afterward undertook to reform it also, prohibited that of Quignonius,\* and instead of the scriptures, placed legends again, and so it continues.

\* *Bulla prefata Breviar. Rom. Jussa Pii V. Edit.*

**R. 30, 31.** In divine worship (as in all other actions) the first thing to be considered is the end, and the next thing is the means conducing to that end. The end is the honour of God, and the edification of the church; and then God is honoured, when the church is edified. The means conducing to that end, are to have the service so administered, as may inform the mind, engage the affections, and increase devotion. But that cannot be done, where the tongue it is celebrated in, is not understood.

Thus we are taught by the Apostle, 1 Cor. xiv. 2, 'He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men.' Verse 11, 'If I know not the meaning of the voice, he that speaketh shall be a barbarian unto me.' Verse 16, 'If thou shalt bless with the Spirit [by the gift of an unknown tongue] how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say, Amen, at thy giving of thanks?' How can the people be attentive to the lessons, answer at the responses, be devout in the prayers, profess their faith in the creeds, when they do not understand what is read, prayed, or professed? Thus St. Ambrose on 1 Cor. xiv. "It is evident that the mind is ignorant where the tongue is not understood. The unskilful person hearing what he doth not understand, knows not the conclusion of the prayer, and doth not answer Amen."

**R. 32.** Matt. iv. 10, our Saviour says, 'Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.' As divine worship is due to God; so it is not lawful to give it to any other.

The church of Rome doth acknowledge this, but says, The worship they give to saints and angels is not of that kind. *Catech. Rom. Part 3. c. 2. n. 8. Part 4. c. 6. n. 3.*

But what worship is peculiar to God, if prayer is not? So thought St. Ambrose, "Thou only art to be invocated." *De obitu Theodos.*

For God alone can receive our prayer, or can give what we pray for, or be the object of our faith and trust.

**R. 33.** We honour the holy angels, as they are God's ministers, and are 'sent forth to minister unto them that shall be heirs of salvation. Heb. i. 14. But to worship or pray to them we dare not, as it is what they themselves refuse and abhor, Rev. xix. 10, and the Scripture doth condemn as 'a sign of a fleshly mind, vainly intruding into those things which we have not seen.' Col. ii. 18. Theodoret upon this text saith, That the practice of worshipping angels continued a long time in Phrygia and Pisidia: wherefore the Synod of Laodicea doth forbid praying to angels: "For Christians ought not to forsake the church of God, and depart aside and invoke angels, which are forbidden." *Conc. Laod. Can. 35.*

**Q. 34.** What religious honour do they give to the saints?

**A.** They pray to them as their intercessors, make confessions to them: offer incense, and make vows to them; venerate their images and relics.

**Q. 35.** For what reason do they pray to saints?

**A.** That by their help they may obtain benefits from God,\* who doth confer many favours upon mankind, by their merit, and grace. and intercession.†

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 25. de invocat.

† Catech. Rom. par. 3. c. 2. sec. 12. Missal Rom. proprium Missarum de sanctis.

**Q. 36.** After what manner do they pray to saints?

**A.** They pray to them as favourites with God, that they would take them into their protection, and would obtain those things of God for them which they want. Therefore they plead that they have two different forms of prayer; for God they properly say, *Have mercy upon us, hear us*: to a saint, *Pray for us*. Catech. Rom. par. 4. c. 6. n. 3.

**Q. 37.** But have they not those forms in their missals, breviaries, and common books of devotion, which are particularly and immediately applied to the saints for obtaining what they want?

**A.** Yes; it is too manifest to be denied; and though they have been more sparing of late years, yet nothing formerly more frequent. As for instance, in a missal printed at Paris, An. 1520, fol. 51, there is this prayer to St. Agnes.

“O Agnes, woman of the Lamb, do thou enlighten us within. Destroy the roots of sin, O excellent Lady, after the grievances of the world do thou translate us to the company of the blessed.”

**Q. 38.** What is the worship they give to the Virgin Mary?

**A.** They flee unto her as the advocatrix of the faithful, the mother of God, that by prayer to her they may obtain help, through her most excellent merits with God.

**Q. 39.** Have they not some singular forms of devotion to her?

**A.** Yes: for apprehending her to be in glory superior to all created beings, they offer a service to her, beyond what they give either to angels or saints.

**Q. 40.** After what manner do they apply themselves to her?

**A.** According to some missals, they ask her to *command her Son by the right and authority of a mother*;\* or, as it is in the breviaries used at this day, “Show thyself a mother.”† They pray to her, that she would loose the bands of the guilty, bring light to the blind, would make them mild and chaste, and cause their hearts to burn in love to Christ.‡

\* Missal. Paris Anno 1520, Folio 65.

† Brev. Rom. Fest. Assum.

‡ Officium. B. M. in the hymn called Planctus B. M. Antwerp, 1641.

In a book printed lately in London, the author saith, that “what

*R.* 34, 35, 36, 37. 'There is one God, and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a ransom for all.' 1 Tim. ii. 5, 6.

Rom. viii. 34. 'Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea, rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right-hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.'

As there is but one God to us, though there are gods many, and lords many, (1 Cor. viii. 5.) so to us there is but one Mediator, or Intercessor, though we should grant there are many intercessors and mediators. For though the angels and saints may intercede for us in heaven, that no more makes them such intercessors as we may pray to, than because there are gods many, we may pray to them, as we do to the true God.

The Scripture knows no difference between a Mediator of intercession and redemption; he alone makes intercession for us, that died and rose, and is at the right-hand of God. And he alone has a right to our prayers, and to him alone we may address them.

So Origen: "All prayers, and supplications, and thanksgivings, are to be sent up to God the Lord of all, by that High Priest, who is above all angels, being the Living Word of God." L. 5. cont. Cels. p. 233. 239.

So again: "We ought to pray only to the God over all, and his only Son the first-born of every creature, who as our High Priest, offers his prayers to his God, and our God." Lib. 8. p. 395. 402.

To have other mediators and intercessors, is not to hold the head, (Colos. ii. 19.) in the judgment of the Apostle, and the council of Laodicea, where it is said, "Christians ought not to forsake the church, and invoke angels.—If any man therefore be found to give himself to this privy idolatry, let him be anathema; because he hath forsaken our Lord Jesus, the Son of God, and betaken himself to idolatry."

*R.* 38. We honour this blessed virgin as the mother of the holy Jesus, and as she was a person of eminent piety; but we do not think it lawful to give that honour to her, which belongs not to a creature, and doth equal her with her Redeemer.

*R.* 39, 40. We cannot but wonder at the applications made to the blessed Virgin in the church of Rome, whose acts on earth, and whose power in heaven, the Scripture doth very sparingly relate, or is altogether silent in. We read nothing there of her bodily assumption into heaven, nor of her exaltation to a throne above angels and archangels.\* We read nothing there of her being the mother of grace and mercy,† the queen and gate of heaven, the advocatrix of sinners,‡ and of her power in destroying all heresies in the world,§ and being all things to all.||

\* Brev. Rom. Æstiv. Fest. Assump.

† Officium parvum B. M. ad Matutin. } Catech. par. 4.

‡ Completor. } c. 5. n. 8.

§ Fest. Assump. || Missale Paris, ibid. et Le Psaultier de Jesus. Paris. 1620. p. 126.

When we read so much of the blessed Virgin in books of this kind.

ever gifts are bestowed upon us by Jesus, we receive them by the mediation of Mary. No one being gracious to Jesus that is not devoted to Mary. That the power of Mary in the kingdom of Jesus, is suitable to her maternity."—"And though the condition of some great sinners may be so deplorable, that the limited excellency and merits cannot effectually bend the mercies of Jesus to relieve them; yet such is the acceptableness of the mother of Jesus to Jesus, that whosoever is under the verge of her protection, may confide in her intercession to Jesus." "That the person devoted to her, is to beg of her to accompany him as his sacred guide, advocate, and champion against the assaults of sin and sensuality."\*

\* Contemplations of the life and glory of holy Mary, &c. p. 7, 8, 9. 14. Printed Anno 1635.

Much after the fore-cited manner did the council of Constance invoke the blessed Virgin, as other councils used to do the Holy Ghost, calling her the *mother of grace, the fountain of mercy*; and they call on her for *light from heaven*.

**Q. 41.** What external representations or memorials have they in the church of Rome, which they give veneration and worship to?

**A.** They have the relics and images of the Virgin Mary and saints. Concil. Trid. Sess. 25. de invoc.

**Q. 42.** What do they mean by relics?

**A.** The bodies or remainders of them, or particular things belonging or relating to them when alive, as an arm, or thighs, bones, or ashes;\* and the part in which they suffered,† or the things by which they suffered, as the chains with which St. Peter was bound.‡

\* Ex Decret. Regist. Præfix. Brev. Rom.

† Catech. Rom. par. 3. c. 2. n. 15.

‡ Brev. Rom. par. Æstiv. Aug. Fest. Petri. ad vinc.

**Q. 43.** For what cause do they show this regard to relics?

**A.** By the veneration of them they obtain the help of the saints, whom the relics relate to; and many benefits are thereby conferred by God upon mankind; for by these the dead have been raised, the infirm cured, and devils cast out.†

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 25. de invocat.

† Catech. Rom. ibid. Breviar. Rom. ibid.

and so little of her in the divine writings, we cannot but reflect upon what is said by Epiphanius, of a certain sect of women that in his time, offered cakes to the Virgin Mary, which he calls an impious thing, and altogether "contrary to the doctrine of the Holy Ghost."\* And he further adds; "This the Holy Ghost doth warn us of, in that Christ saith, Woman, what have I to do with thee? Where he calls her woman, and as it were prophesying, to refute those schisms and heresies which he knew would arise in the world; and that no one, being moved by a certain admiration of the blessed Virgin, might turn himself to those dotages of heresies." And he adds, "Let the Virgin Mary be honoured, but the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, be adored."† Much more hath that Father there to this purpose.

\* Hæres. 78. p. 1054. Par. 1622.

† Hæres. 79. N. 4. 7, &amp;c.

But what would this Father have said, if, instead of a chair adorned and set forth in honour of the Virgin Mary, (as those women did,) he had found her advanced to a throne of a mediatrix in heaven? What if instead of cakes, there had been litanies and prayers offered to her, and that in more abundance than to Christ himself? What if he had found them praying, *O holy mother, succour the miserable, help the weak, comfort those that mourn?* (Breviar. Rom. Æstiv. Suffragia.) I doubt not but he would have said of this, what he doth of the other, that they would obtrude her upon us for God, and have called it heresy and idolatry.

R. 41, 42. Deut. xxxiv. 6. 'He [God by Michael] buried Moses, but no man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day.' S. Barradas the Jesuit upon the place saith, "It is the common opinion of Lyra, Abulensis, Cajetan, and others, that the sepulchre was hid, lest the Israelites, who were inclined to the worship of idols, should worship Moses as God. For they say that when the Devil would for that reason have showed the grave and the body of Moses to the Israelites, St. Michael hindered; and this was the contention spoken of, Jude 9." Seb. Barrad. Itinerar. Fil. Israel.

They could give no greater honour to the body of Moses, than is given to relics in the church of Rome; and if that was idolatry, and Moses's body was concealed to prevent it, then there is as much reason to think it unlawful now in this case, as it was then in that.

R. 43. We read of Hezekiah, 2 Kings xviii. 4, that he brake in pieces the brazen serpent that Moses had made: and the reason was, because the children of Israel did burn incense to it. The brazen serpent was of God's own institution, Numb. xxi. 8. By looking up to which, the people were formerly cured. And though it was preserved as a memorial of that divine operation; yet when abused to idolatry, he cut it in pieces. And were these truly relics of saints, and did work those miracles they pretend, it would be no reason for that reverence and worship they give to them; but the reverence and worship given to them should, according to good king Hezekiah's practice, be a reason to give them a decent interment.

**Q. 44.** What kind of reverence or worship is required to be given to images and pictures in the church of Rome?

**A.** They kiss them, uncover the head, and fall down before them; offer incense, and pray to them, and use all such postures of worship as they would do to the person or persons thereby represented, (whether Christ, the Virgin Mary, or other saints,) if they were present: and whosoever doth think otherwise is accursed.\* And accordingly the priest is to direct the people to them, that they may be worshipped.†

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 25. de invocat. Catech. Rom. Par. 4. c. 6. n. 4.

† Colantur Catech. Rom. Par. 3. c. 2. n. 31.

**Q. 45.** What do they profess, is their intention in the reverence they give to images and pictures?

**A.** They declare that the honour given to images and pictures, is referred to the prototypes,\* or the persons represented by them, whether God the Father, Christ, angels, or saints: and when they fall down before the image or picture, they worship God, or Christ, the angel, or saint.

\* Concil. Trid. Ibid.

**Q. 46.** What regard have they to the material cross or crucifix?

**A. 1.** They ascribe peculiar virtue to it, and pray that God would make the wood of the cross to “be the stability of faith, an increase of good works, the redemption of souls.” *Pontificale in bened. novæ Crucis.*

**2.** They use all expressions of outward adorations, by kissings, and prostrations, &c.\*

**3.** They pray directly to it, to “increase grace in the godly, and blot out the sins of the guilty.”†

**4.** They give *latria* to it, which is the sovereign worship that is peculiar to God.‡

\* Missale Fer. 6. in Parasc.

† Ibid. sub ante Domin. pass. & Fest. invent. crucis.

‡ Pontif. Rom. ordo ad recep. Imper. Rubr. 1. & Gretser de cruce, l. 1. c. 49.

R. 44. On the contrary, the second commandment teaches us, ‘Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, &c. Thou shalt not bow down to them, nor serve them.’ In which there are two words to be considered, the one, *pesel*, which we rightly translate *graven image*; for it properly signifies any thing carved and cut out of wood or stone; and so it is about forty times rendered in the Greek translation (*γλυπτὸν*) a *graven thing*. So that an idol and an image are there forbidden. The next word is *themunah*, which doth properly signify a *similitude* or *likeness*, (as is confessed,) and is always so translated. And thus it was understood by the fathers. So Justin Martyr when he recites this law, saith, God forbid *every image and similitude*. [*εἰκόνα καὶ ομοιωμὰ.*] And therefore Cassander grants that the ancient Christians *abhorred all veneration of images*. Consult. Art. 21. de Imagin. Indeed the command is so express against this practice, that there has been a kind of self-condemnation in the church of Rome; whilst they commonly either altogether leave out this commandment,\* or render it imperfectly, and by halves, *Thou shalt not make to thee an idol*.

\* The Children’s Catechism, printed 1678.

R. 45. If an image be a representation of a divine person, and worship be due to the image for the sake of the person represented in it; then such as the person is, such must the worship be that is due to his image; and what is due to the person if present, is due to the image in his absence. For to give one honour to the person, and another to the image, a superior to the person, and an inferior to the image, is to terminate the worship in the image, and not pass it from thence to the person, as Grester the Jesuit argues:\* but if it be to pass from the image unto the person, then we know what they do when they kiss, and uncover their heads, and bow down to, and worship an image: and have reason to remember the apostle’s advice, 1 John v. 21, “Keep yourselves from idols.”

\* De cruce, l. 1. c. 49. § *Secundo itaque*.

R. 46. The church of Rome, though without any authority from Scripture, (which uses the words promiscuously,)\* makes a distinction between *latría* and *douλία*; the former is the worship they give to God, the latter the worship they give to saints. Now they grant, that to give *latría*, or sovereign worship to any besides God, is idolatry; and that were not the host the very body and blood of Christ, it would be no less than idolatry to give that honour to the host, which they give to Christ: we understand then how to call that worship they give to the cross; they themselves call it *latría*; so we may by their leave call it idolatry. For whatever the host is, the cross is but a representation, and not the person worshipped.

\* Gal. iv. 8. *ἐδουλοῦσατε*, Ye did service to them that were no gods. Rom. i. 25. *ἐλάτρευσατε*, They served the creature.

**Q. 47.** Do they think it lawful to represent God and the blessed Trinity by pictures and images; and to worship them?

**A.** Such pictures are not only almost every where received in the church of Rome, but universally tolerated,\* and are both recommended as expedient for the people,† and proposed to them to be worshipped.‡

\* Bellarm. de Imag. l. 2. c. 8. § ultimo probatur.

† Concil. Trid. Sess. 25. de sacr. Imag. Catech. Rom. par. 3. c. 2. n. 20.

‡ Cajetan. in Aquin. q. 25, art. 3.

**Q. 48.** Upon what pretence do they make such representations of God?

**A.** They say, they hereby represent not God, but some of his properties and actions, after the manner they are described in Scripture: as when Dan. vii. 9. 10, 'The Ancient of days' is said 'to sit on a throne, having the books opened before him:' thereby signifying his eternity and infinite wisdom.\*

\* Catech. Rom. Ibid.

**Q. 49.** But are not such descriptions of God, the way to represent him, as if he was like unto one of us?

**A.** Such pictures are not without danger to be exposed to such as cannot read the Scriptures, if they are not taught that they are to be taken metaphorically.\*

\* Bellarm. de Imag. l. 2. c. 8. SS. Respondent.

#### SECTION IV.—*Of the Sacraments.*

**Q. 50.** What is a Sacrament?

**A.** A Sacrament is a sensible thing which, by the institution of God, hath a power, as well of causing as of signifying holiness and righteousness.\*

**Q. 51.** How many sacraments are there in the church of Rome?

**A.** There are seven, viz. Baptism, Confirmation, Eucharist, Penance, Extreme Unction, Orders, and Matrimony.†

**Q. 52.** Is this number determined to be a matter of faith?

**A.** Whosoever saith, that there are more or fewer than seven instituted by Christ; or that any of the seven are not truly and properly sacraments, is accursed.‡

\* Catech. Rom. par. 2. cap. 1. n. 11.

† Concil. Trid. Sess. 7. Can. 1. ibid.

‡ Ibid.

R. 47. There is nothing more expressly forbidden in Scripture, than the making any image or representation of God, Deut. iv. 15, 16, 'Take ye good heed unto yourselves, (for ye saw no manner of similitude,) lest ye corrupt yourselves; and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure.' If it had been acceptable to God, he would have chosen a similitude to appear in; but seeing he did not, they were not to presume to make one for him. This is to *change his glory*, Rom. i. 21, &c. And "to place such an image in a Christian temple is abominable," saith St. Austin.\* And "thus to describe the Trinity, is a deformation of it," saith Cassander.†

\* De Fide & Symb. c. 7.

† Art. 21. § de Imag.

R. 48. But what is this to those images and pictures used by them, which have no resemblance in Scripture; such are their descriptions of the Trinity in Unity, as of God the Father like an old Man, having the Son lying in his bosom, the Holy Ghost over his head like a dove?

2. God himself never appeared in any form, and so the resemblance in Daniel was only a prophetic scheme, and did no more belong to God, than the eyes and ears that are ascribed to him in Scripture.

3. God cannot be represented at all, but by such properties and effects: but if an image of God be forbidden to be worshipped, then the image, even by such properties and effects, is forbidden to be worshipped.

R. 49. Cassander saith, "I wish those from whom this information is to be received, were not the authors of these superstitions;" and he adds, "That the teaching is not enough; without the occasions be removed." This he saith of all images, but more especially of such as are made to represent God. *Art. 21 de Imag.*

#### SECTION IV.—*Of the Sacraments.*

R. 50, 51, 52. CASSANDER saith, that we shall not easily find any before Peter Lombard, who lived about 1139, that did define the number of the sacraments.\* And St. Austin is very positive that there are but two of divine institution.† Now that there should be sacraments of divine institution, that are neither instituted in the gospel, nor known to be so, till 1100 years after our Saviour, nor be made a matter of faith till 1500, may be a doctrine received in the church of Rome, but will not easily be believed by any out of it.

\* Art. 13. § de num. Sacrum.

† Epist. ad Januar. 118. *Our Lord Jesus Christ, saith he, hath knit Christians together, with sacraments most few in number, most easy to be kept, most excellent in signification, as are Baptism and the Lord's Supper.*

**Q. 53.** What are the parts of a sacrament ?

**A.** The parts of a sacrament are the matter or element, and the form of words of consecration: so the matter in Baptism is water; the form is, *-I baptize thee, &c.*

**Q. 54.** Of what virtue are the sacraments ?

**A.** The sacraments contain the grace which they signify, and confer grace, (*ex opere operato,*) by the work itself, upon such as do not put an obstruction.\* For these sensible and natural things work by the almighty power of God in the sacraments, what they could not do by their own power. †

\* Concil. Trid. *ibid.* Can. 6. & 8. † Catech. Rom. *ibid.* n. 27.

**Q. 55.** What is necessary to a sacrament on the part of those that officiate ?

**A.** It is absolutely necessary that those that make and consecrate the sacraments, have an intention of doing at least what the church doth, and doth intend to do. *Conc. Trid. ibid. can. 11.*

### *Of Baptism.*

**Q. 56.** Who may administer the sacrament of Baptism ?

**A.** It chiefly belongs to bishops, priests, and deacons,\* but in case of necessity men or women, Jews, infidels, or heretics† may do it, if they intend to do what the church doth.

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 2. *de bapt. can.*

† Catech. Rom. par. 2. c. 2. n. 24.

**Q. 57.** What ceremonies are used in the administration of Baptism in the church of Rome ?

**A.** Before Baptism, there is, 1. Chrism or oil mixed with water in the consecration of it.\*

2. Exorcism composed of certain words, prayers, and actions, for driving away the Devil† out of the child, and the salt, &c. And the priest is to blow in the face of the child, after the form of a cross, saying, *Go out of him, Satan, &c. ‡*

3. The forehead, eyes, breast, &c. are to be crossed, to show that by the mystery of baptism, the senses are opened to receive God, and to understand his commands. *Cate. n. 67. Pastor ibid.*

4. Then some exorcised salt is to be put into the mouth, to signify a deliverance from the putrefaction of sin, and the savour of good works.§ And the priest in putting it into the mouth, saith, *N. Take the salt of wisdom, and let it be a propitiation for thee to eternal life. Amen. ||*

\* Catech. *ibid.* n. 11. & 60.

† Catech. *Ibid.* n. 65.

‡ Pastorale Antwerp, 1625.

§ Catech. *ibid.* n. 66.

|| Pastor. *ibid.*

**R. 53.** That a sacrament should consist of matter and form, and yet either have no form, as Confirmation and extreme Unction; or have neither matter nor form, of divine institution, as Penance and Matrimony; is to make them sacraments, and to be none. Our church rightly affirms of the additional sacraments, they have not any visible sign ordained of God. Article 25.

**R. 54.** It is not sufficient that adult persons have no indisposition to receive the grace of the sacraments; for there is also required a mind well instructed, a sound belief, and a heart well inclined for that purpose. 2. The virtue in the sacraments doth not proceed from the mere elements and words, but from the blessing of God in consequence of his promise to such only as rightly partake of them, and are qualified for it.

**R. 55.** From hence it follows, that if there be no intention, the sacraments are none. And so there is no certainty whether the priest be a priest, or whether in the eucharist the elements continue not elements after consecration, and what is taken for the host be no other than bread. For without the intention, neither is the priest ordained, nor are the elements consecrated.

#### *Of Baptism.*

**R. 56.** OUR Saviour gave commission to the apostles and their successors in the office of the ministry, 'to teach all nations, baptizing them.' Matt. xxviii. 19, 20. So that women, Jews, and infidels, have no more a power to administer baptism, than they have to teach, or to be priests.

**R. 57.** It is pleaded for these ceremonies, that they are appointed for the majesty of divine worship, and that the benefits contained in the sacraments, may be better imprinted on the mind. *Catech. part 2. c. 2 n. 59.*

But can we think it for the majesty of baptism to have it dressed up like a form of conjuration, that the child must be supposed to be possessed with the Devil, and the priest must blow in his face three times, with *get thee out, Satan*, before he can say, *Peace be with thee*; and that he must cross him half a score times or more, from part to part, in preparation to baptism?

Can we think it for the majesty of it, to have salt exorcised in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; and to be put into the mouth of the child, *for a propitiation unto eternal life*? Can we think it for the majesty of this ordinance, that the priest should put some of his own spittle in his left hand, and then taking it thence with the thumb and fore-finger of his right hand, touch both ears of the infant, and say, *Ephphatha, be thou opened*: and then his nostrils, and say, *For the odour of sweetness; but thou O Devil fly*: and then on his

5. Then the nose and ears are to be anointed with spittle, and then the child is to be brought to the water, as the blind man to Siloam, to signify it brings light to the mind. *Catech. ibid. n. 60.*

After baptism, 1. The priest anoints the top of the head with chrism,\* and he adds, *Let him anoint thee with the chrism of salvation.* †

2. He puts a white garment on the baptized, saying, *Take this white garment, which thou mayest bring before the judgment seat of Christ, that thou mayest have life eternal.* *Catech. ibid. n. 73.*

3. A lighted candle is put into the hand, to show a faith inflamed with charity; and nourished with good works. *Ibid. n. 74.*

\* *Catech. ibid. n. 72.*

† *Pastor. ibid.*

### *Of Confirmation.*

Q. 58. Is Confirmation a sacrament?

A. It is properly and truly, and whosoever holds otherwise is accursed.\*

\* *Conc. Trid. Sess. 7. de confirm. can. 1.*

Q. 59. What is the matter of the sacrament of confirmation?

A. The matter is chrism, which is an ointment compounded of oil olive, and balsam, and consecrated by the bishop,\* upon Maunday Thursday. †

\* *Catech. Rom. par. 2. c. 3. n. 2. 7. and 27.*

† *Sum of Christian doctrine, Lond. 1686.*

Q. 60. What is the form of consecration?

A. The form is the words used by the bishop, when he crosses the forehead with the chrism, viz. "I sign thee with the sign of the cross, and I confirm thee with the chrism of salvation, in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost." *Catech. n. 2. & 11.*

Q. 61. What ceremonies are used in confirmation?

right hand, after the manner of a cross, saying, N. *I deliver unto thee, the mark of our Lord Jesus Christ, † that thou mayst drive the adversary from thee on every side, and have life eternal?*

And what are the benefits imprinted on the mind by these fantastical ceremonies? Or when is it such benefits are promised as these are said to signify? Is it not rather a debasing of it, to have such rites and prayers introduced into it, as signify that which baptism was never appointed for? To give an instance in the salt used in it.

*The Exorcism of the Salt.*

“ I exorcise thee, O creature of salt, in the name of the Father † omnipotent, and in the love of our Lord Jesus † Christ, and in the virtue of the Holy † Spirit. I exorcise thee by the living † God, by the true † God, by the holy † God, who hath created thee for the safeguard of mankind, and hath commanded it to be consecrated by his servants for the people that come to believe, that in the name of the holy Trinity thou be'st made a wholesomè sacrament to put the enemy to flight. Therefore we pray thee, O our Lord God, that in sanctifying † thou dost sanctify this creature of salt, and in blessing † thou dost bless it, that it may be a perfect medicine to all that take it.”

N. B. Where this mark † stands, the sign of the cross is made.

*Of Confirmation.*

R. 58. THE Roman catechism saith, That sacraments cannot be instituted by any but God \* And yet the great schoolman, Alex. Ales, saith, “ Christ did not institute nor declare confirmation to be a sacrament.” † So by their own confession it is none.

\* Catech. *ibid.* n. 6.

† Par. 4. Q. 4. M. 1.

R. 59. That chrism is either of divine institution or the matter of a sacrament may be said, but cannot be proved.

R. 60. It is said that Christ instituted the matter and form of confirmation from the authority of pope Fabian; \* but Alex. Ales saith, it was ordained by the Meldensian council. † And indeed the Roman catechism, after some pretence to divine institution, thinks it safest to resolve it into the authority of the church.

\* Par. 4. Q. 3. M. 2. N. 3. & Q. 9. M. 1.

† Catech. Rom. *ibid.* N. 6. & 12. & Bellarminus de confirm. c. 2.

R. 61. Whether we consider the far fetched significations of  
D 2.

*A.* In the anointing, the bishop dips the tip of his finger in the chrism, and making a cross, saith, *I sign thee, &c* \*

2. After confirmation, he strikes the person slightly on the cheek, that he may remember he is to suffer all injuries for the name of Christ, with patience and courage. †

3. Then the person to be confirmed setting his foot upon the right foot of the godfather, ‡ is to have his head bound with a clean head-band for some days, more or less, with reverence to the holy chrism; which done, the band is to be preserved in the *sacrarium*, or other clean place till the following Ash-Wednesday, to be burnt to holy ashes. §

\* Pontif. de confirm. † Catech. n. 25. ‡ Pontif. ibid. § Pastorale.

### *Of the Eucharist.*

**Q. 62.** What is the Eucharist?

*A.* It is a sacrament wherein is truly and substantially contained whole Christ, God-man, body and blood, bones and nerves,\* soul and divinity, under the species or appearance of bread and wine. †

\* Catech. Rom. par. 2. c. 4. n. 33. † Concil. Trid. Sess. 13. de real. præ. c. 1.

**Q. 62.** How do they attempt to prove this?

*A.* From the words of our Saviour, *This is my body*: which, say they, clearly demonstrate, that the same body which was born of the Virgin, and is now in heaven, is in the sacrament.\* *Catech. par. 2. c. 4. n. 26.*

\* A Sum of Christian Doctrine, printed 1636:

**Q. 63.** What becomes of the bread and wine after consecration?

*A.* Upon consecration there is a conversion of the whole substance of the bread, into the substance of Christ's body; and of the whole substance of the wine, into the substance of Christ's blood; which conversion is usually called transubstantiation. *C. Trid. ibid. c. 4. Concil. Later. 4. Can. 1.*

**Q. 64.** What is then that, which is seen and tasted in the eucharist?

*A.* The things seen and tasted are the accidents only of bread and wine; there is the savour, colour, and quantity of bread and wine, without any of their substance; but under those accidents there is only the body and blood of Christ. *Catech. Rom. n. 37 & 44.*

**Q. 65.** Is the body and blood of Christ broken, when the host is broken and divided?

these ceremonies, or the virtue put in them; the abuse is intolerable; as for instance, that in consecration of the chrism, the bishop blows upon it, to signify the descent of the Holy Ghost for the sanctification of it,\* and that it hath a power of sanctification as the instrument of God.† So the bishop prays in the consecration of it, “That God in bestowing spiritual grace upon this ointment, would pour out the fulness of sanctification, and that it may be to all that are to be anointed with it, for the adoption of sons of the Holy Spirit.‡ Amen.”

\* Bellarm. de confirm. l. 2. c. 13. § Tertio habet.

† Ibid. § Quarta cæremonia.

‡ Pontif. Rom.

### Of the Eucharist.

R. 62, 63. No such change of the substance of the bread; (1.) into the substance of Christ's body, can be inferred from our Saviour's words, *This is my body*, Matt. xxvi. 26, for it is not said this is turned into my body, but *This is my body*; which if to be taken literally, would rather prove the substance of the bread to be his body. Therefore cardinal Cajetan acknowledges it is no where said in the gospel, that the bread is changed into the body of Christ; but they have it from the authority of the church. *Cajet. in Aquin. 3 par. Q. 75. art. 1.*

2. It is farther evident that the words are not to be taken in their proper sense; for it is called bread as well after consecration as before it, 1 Cor. x. 17. xi. 26, 27, 28. So that what was called his body was also bread at the same time.

3. The mystical relation which the bread by consecration has to Christ's body, is sufficient to give it the name of his body. For it is the usual way of Scripture, to call things of a sacramental nature, by the name of those things they are the figure of.\* So circumcision is called the covenant, Gen. xvii. 13. And the killing, dressing, and eating the Lamb, is called the passover, Exodus xii. 11. And after the same manner is the bread in the sacrament Christ's body; that is, as circumcision was the covenant, and the Lamb the passover, by signification and representation, by type and figure. And so the elements are called by the fathers; *The images,† the symbols,‡ the figure,§* of Christ's body and blood.

\* Aug. Epist. 23.

† Orig. dial. 3. contr. Marcion.

‡ Euseb. dem. Evang. l. 1. c. & ult.

§ Aug. contr. Adimant. c. 12.

R. 64. Our Saviour appealed to the senses of his disciples, Luke xxiv. 39. ‘Handle and see me, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones as you see me have.’ Take away the certainty of sense, and there is no discerning a body from a spirit; and grant transubstantiation, and we take away the certainty of sense.

R. 65. If every particle of the host is as much the whole body of Christ, as the whole host is before it be divided, then a whole may

*A.* No, because Christ is impassable;\* and besides there is whole and entire Christ under either species or element, under the species of bread, and under every particle of it; under the species of wine, and under every drop of it.†

\* Abridgment of Christ. Doctrine, c. 11. § Euchar. † Conc. Trid. *ibid.* c. 3.

**Q. 66.** Do they administer the sacrament in both kinds of bread and wine?

*A.* No, the people are permitted to receive it only in one kind, and are denied the cup. *Trid. Sess. 21. c. 1.*

**Q. 67.** For what reason doth the church of Rome deprive the people of what our Lord is granted to have instituted?

*A.* For *just and weighty* causes,\* such as these, 1. Lest the blood of Christ should be spilt upon the ground. 2. Lest the wine by being kept for the sick, should grow-eager. 3. Because many cannot bear the taste or smell of wine. 4. Because in many countries, there is such a scarcity of wine as is not to be had without great charge and tedious journeys. 5. To disprove those that deny whole Christ to be contained under each species.†

\* *Con. Trin. *ibid.* c. 2.* † *Catech. Rom. *ibid.* n. 66.*

**Q. 68.** What is the mass?

*A.* In the sacrifice of the mass, the same Christ is contained, and unbloodily offered, who bloodily offered himself upon the altar of the cross. *Conc. Trid. Sess. 22. c. 1.*

**Q. 69.** Of what virtue is the sacrifice in the mass?

*A.* It is truly a propitiatory sacrifice, and is available, not only for the sins, punishments, and satisfactions of the living, but also for those of the souls in purgatory. *Ibid.*

**Q. 70.** Is this necessary to be believed?

*A.* Yes, and whosoever denies any of this is accursed,\* and incapable of salvation.†

\* *Concil. Trid. Sess. 22. Can. 1.*

† *Bulla Pii. 4.*

**Q. 71.** May the priest communicate alone, though there be none besides to communicate?

*A.* Yes, the church of Rome doth approve and commend solitary masses, and accounts them a communion; partly, because the people do spiritually communicate in it, and partly because it is celebrated

be divided into wholes ; for divide it and sub-divide it, it is still whole. Whole it is before the division, whole it is in the division, and whole it is after it. Thus unreasonable, as well as false, is the doctrine of transubstantiation.

R. 66. It is acknowledged, that our Saviour instituted and delivered the sacrament in both kinds.\* And that it so continued even in the church of Rome for above 1000 years after.† And yet with a *non obstante* to both, they forbid the people to drink of it ; and declare, whoever thinks it necessary to receive in both kinds, is accursed!‡

\* Concil. Constant. Sess. 13.—Trid. Sess. 21, c. 1, 2.

† Consult. Cassandri. Art. 22.

‡ Concil. Trid. *ibid.* Can. 1.

R. 67. These are the *just and weighty causes* for their over-ruling the plain precept of our Saviour, Matt. xxvi. 27. *Drink ye all of this* ; and yet whosoever shall say they are not just and sufficient reasons, is accursed.\* As if it was sufficient to forbid wine in the sacrament to all, because some few cannot bear the taste or smell of it ; and it was a just cause to deprive all countries of it, because some have not wine, or cannot obtain it without difficulty !

\* Concil. Trid. *ibid.* Can. 2.

R. 68, 69, 70. The Scripture, when it extols the perfection and infinite value of Christ's sacrifice, doth infer from it, that there needed not therefore any repetition of it. Heb. vii. 27, 'He needeth not daily, as those high-priests, to offer up sacrifice, &c. for this he did once, when he offered up himself.' But if the same Christ is offered in the mass as was on the cross, and that unbloody sacrifice is alike propitiatory as the bloody, there is then a repetition of the same sacrifice, and he is daily offered. And what is it to say the one was bloody and the other is unbloody, when the unbloody is of the same virtue, and is applied to the same end as the bloody ? So that as if Christ had again been bloodily offered up, there had been a repetition of that sacrifice ; so there is a repetition of it when he is offered up unbloody. To have then a perfect sacrifice daily repeated, and a sacrifice without suffering, and a propitiation and remission without blood, are alike irreconcilable to the apostle, Heb. ix. 22, 25, &c.

R. 71. The apostle calls the Lord's supper a communion, and saith, 'all are partakers of that one bread,' 1 Cor. x. 16, 17. And Cassander saith, "It cannot properly be a communion unless many partake of it ;" and adds from the council of Nantz, That it is absurd to say, "Lift up your hearts," when there is none communicates

by a public minister, not only for himself, but also for the people.  
*Conc. Trid. ibid. cap. 6.*

Q. 72. What honour is to be given to the consecrated host?

A. *Latria*, or the same sovereign worship which is due only to God,\* adore it; † pray to it. ‡ And whosoever holds it unlawful or idolatrous so to do, is accursed.§

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 13. cap. 5.

† Missale Rom. Can. Missæ.

‡ Brev. Rom. Hym. in F. Corp. Ch.

§ Concil. Trid. ibid. Can. 6.

Q. 73. What are the ceremonies used in the mass?

A. The ceremonies in the mass, respect either things, actions, or words; among the things, are garments, places, time, vessels, cloths, incense, lights, &c. *Bellarmin. Doc. Trid. de Sacr. Miss.*

Q. 74. What are the garments used by the priests in the mass, and what is their signification?

A. 1. The amice or white veil, which he puts over his head, signifies mystically, either the divinity of Christ, covered under his humanity, or the crown of thorns; and morally, contemplation or hope. In putting it on, he saith, "Put on, O Lord, the helmet of salvation upon my head, that I may overcome all diabolical temptations."

2. The alb or long white garment, signifies mystically, the white robe put on our Saviour; and, morally, faith and innocency. In putting it on, he saith, "Make me white, O Lord, and cleanse my heart, that being whitened in the blood of the Lamb, I may enjoy everlasting gladness."

3. The girdle signifies mystically the cords wherewith our Saviour was bound; and morally, (being turned up on both sides,) the two means to preserve chastity, viz. fasting and prayer. When he puts it about him, he prays; "Gird me, O Lord, with the girdle of purity, and quench in my loins the humour of lust, that there may remain in me the virtue of continency and chastity." The like account is given of the maniple, vestment, and stole, and of the divers colours of the furniture used in the several seasons, in the *manual of the poor man's devotion*, Chap. Of the Ornaments of the Mass.

### Of Penance.

Q. 75. What is the matter and form of the sacrament of penance?

A. The matter is contrition, confession, and satisfaction. The form is, *I absolve.* *Catech. Com. par. 2. c. 5. n. 14 & 15.*

with the priest.\* And yet the council of Trent declares, whosoever shall say such masses are unlawful, and to be abrogated, is accursed. †

\* Consult. Art. 24. de solit. Miss. † Sess. 22. Can. 8.

R. 72. We freely own that Christ is to be adored in the Lord's supper; but that the elements are to be adored, we deny. If Christ is not corporally present in the host, they grant their adoration to be idolatry.\* And that he is not corporally present any where but in heaven, we are taught, Acts i. 11. iii. 21, whither he went, and where he is to continue till his second coming to judgment.

\* Coster. Enchir. c. 8. n. 10.

R. 73, 74. The council of Trent saith, that the ceremonies of the mass, such as mystical benedictions, lights, incensings, garments, &c. are from apostolical tradition,\* or as others, were instituted by the Holy Ghost: † and that they serve for the majesty of that sacrifice, and to raise the mind to the contemplation of the divine things concealed in it: so none of them are superfluous and vain. ‡

\* Sess. 22. c. 5. † Bellarm. cap. de Sacr. Mis. ‡ Catech. par. 2. c. 4. n. 81.

But how shall we reconcile this to the numerous crossings and sprinklings, used in the celebration of the mass? For example, When the priest is clothed with the garments, rehearsed before, he comes to the altar, and standing on the lowest step just against the middle of it, he makes a profound reverence to the altar and crucifix. Then he ascends, and having placed the books, &c. in order, he descends to the lowest step, and turning himself to it, with his hands joined before his breast, and making a reverence to the altar or crucifix, he begins the mass standing upright, and drawing with his right hand (his left hand laid on his breast) the sign of the cross from his forehead to his breast. Then he joins his hands before his breast; the minister standing on his left-hand behind him bowing, saith, *Ad Deum*, &c. Then the priest with the minister say the psalm, *Judica me*, with *Gloria Patri*, at which he is to bow his head to the cross. Then he repeats the *Introibo*, making with his right hand the sign of the cross from the forehead to the breast. Then he bows his head and body to the altar, and there he stands bowing till the minister saith *miscreator*. When he saith *mea culpa*, he smites thrice upon his breast with the right hand; and thus the missal proceeds in its ceremonies in all the remaining parts of the service.

#### Of Penance.

R. 75. We are told, that the matter of a sacrament is somewhat sensible:\* then how is penance a sacrament which has no such matter? For where is the matter that is sensible in contrition? The council to avoid this, call it *Quasi materia, a matter after a sort.* †

\* Catech. Rom. par. 2. c. 1. n. 11.

† Concil. Trid. Sess. 14. cap. 3.

**Q. 76.** What is confession ?

**A.** Confession is a particular discovery of all mortal sins to the priest, with all their circumstances that increase or diminish the sin, as far as can be called to mind ;\* without which, neither forgiveness nor salvation is to be obtained. †

\* Concil. Trid. Sess. 14. c. 5. and Catech. *ibid.* n. 48.

† Trid. *ibid.* Can. 6, 7. Catech. n. 44.

**Q. 77.** Of what kind is the absolution, which the priest grants upon confession ?

**A.** The absolution is not only declarative, but judicial, and the sentence pronounced by the priest, is as if pronounced by the Judge himself,\* he perfecting what God causes. †

\* Concil. Trid. *ibid.* c. 6. & Can. 9.

† Catech. par. 2. 5. n. 17.

**Q. 78.** What is the benefit of absolution ?

**A.** Although a sinner is not so affected with such grief for his sin, as may be sufficient to obtain pardon ; yet when he has rightly confessed to a priest, all his sins are pardoned, and an entrance is opened into heaven. *Catech. ibid.* n. 38.

**Q. 79.** What is satisfaction ?

**A.** It is a compensation made to God, by prayer, fasting, alms,\* &c. for all offences committed against him ; † so that the offender is thereupon purged from the defilement of sin, and discharged from all temporal punishments due to him, either here or in purgatory. ‡

\* Catech. *ibid.* n. 75.

† Bellarminus de Satisfact. Bellarm. de Indulg. l. i. c. 7. § Quarta. propositio.

‡ Catech. Rom. *ibid.* n. 65, 66.

**Q. 80.** How do these works become thus satisfactory ?

**A.** They are meritorious and satisfactory, § as they are united to the satisfaction of Christ. ||

§ Catech. *ibid.* n. 72, 73.

|| Bellarm. de forma. satisfact. Bellarm. de Indul. l. i. c. 4. ss. Respons. non est quidem.

### *The Sacrament of Extreme Unction.*

**Q. 81.** What is the matter of the sacrament of Extreme Unction ?

**A.** Oil of olive-berries\* consecrated by a bishop, which aptly signifies the grace of the Spirit with which the soul of the sick is invisibly anointed. †

\* Catech. Rom. par. 2. c. 6. n. 5.

† Concil. Trid. Sess. 14. de Ex. Unct. c. 1.

**Q. 82.** What is the form of it ?

**A.** The form is, "By this holy anointing, God pardon thee, by

*R. 76.* We grant confession to men to be in many cases of use, public in case of public scandal; private to a spiritual guide for disburthening of the conscience, and as a help to repentance. But to make auricular confession, or particular confession to a priest, necessary to forgiveness and salvation, when God has not so made it, is apparently to teach for doctrine the commandment of men; and to make it necessary in all cases, is to make of what may be a useful means, a dangerous snare, both to the confessor and those that confess.

*R. 77.* To pardon sin, and absolve the sinner judicially, so as the conscience may rest firmly upon it, is a power reserved by God to himself. So 1 John i. 9, ‘If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.’ And, therefore, the authority of the priest is only ministerial, declarative, and conditional. “Men show a ministry in the forgiveness of sins, but do not exercise a right of power. They pray, but it is God forgives,” saith St. Ambrose, *de Spir.* l. 3. c. 19.

*R. 78.* The grief which is sufficient to obtain pardon, is contrition; and so the grief which is not sufficient to obtain pardon, must be attrition: and the meaning then is, that attrition with absolution, is as effectual as contrition.

*R. 79, 80.* The giving satisfaction to the church in case of scandal, and the imposing penances upon notorious offenders, is an useful part of ecclesiastical discipline. But to make that a satisfaction to God which is given to the church; and to make our works to satisfy, though but as an appendant to the satisfaction of Christ, we can by no means allow. Not the former, because it is derogatory to the justice of God; not the latter, because it is derogatory to the merits of our Saviour. For what can make a satisfaction to God, but the obedience and suffering of his Son? Or what need is there of another satisfaction after that of our Saviour? Heb. x. 14, ‘By one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.’

#### *Of Extreme Unction.*

*R. 81, &c.* We read, Mark vi. 13, when the twelve apostles were sent forth, they ‘anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them;’ making use of that anointing, not as a natural means, but as a mystical sign of the miraculous cure to be wrought by the power of Christ: And as long as this power continued in the church, so long there was a reason for continuing this rite. Accordingly the apostle directs, Jam. v. 14, 15, ‘Is any sick? Let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord. And the prayer of faith shall save the sick.’ But when the power ceased, there was no reason for the con-

whatever thou hast offended, by the fault of the eyes; nose, or touch."  
*Catech. ibid. n. 6.*

**Q. 83.** What are the parts anointed ?

**A.** The eyes because of seeing, the ears because of hearing, the mouth because of tasting or speech, the hands because of touching, the feet because of motion, the reins because the seat of lust. *Catech. ibid. n. 10.*

**Q. 84.** When is this anointing administered ?

**A.** It is to be administered only when persons are supposed to be near the point of death,\* whence it is called Extreme Unction.†

\* Concil. Trid. *ibid.* c. 3. Bellarm. *Extr. Unct.* l. 1. c. 2. ss. *Accedit.*

† *Catech. ibid. n. 2, & 14.*

### *Of the Sacrament of Orders.*

**Q. 85.** Is ordination a sacrament ?

**A.** It is truly and properly a sacrament, and doth confer grace ; and whoso denies this is accursed. *Concil. Trid. Sess. 7. Can. 1. and 23. cap. 3. and Can. 3.*

**Q. 86.** What are the several orders instituted for the service of the church ?

**A.** The orders always received by the Catholic Church are seven, the greater and less ; the greater are the priest, deacon, and subdeacon : the less are the acolythus, who is to carry the candle and assist the subdeacon ; the exorcist, who is to attend, and pray over them that are possessed with the Devil ; the reader, and the ostiarius, or door-keeper. *Catech. par. 2. c. 7. n. 12, 15, &c.*

### *Of the Sacrament of Marriage.*

**Q. 87.** Is marriage truly and properly a sacrament ?

**A.** Yes, and whosoever denies it so to be, is accursed. *Concil. Trid. Sess. 24. Can. 1.*

tinuance of this sign. And yet this ceremony of anointing is not only continued in the church of Rome without any pretence to the power, but the nature and the use of it is wholly perverted from what it was in apostolical times. For, 1. This rite was then used in curing the sick, but was not necessary to it; for we find them also cured by imposition of hands, Mark xvi. 18. Acts ix. 17. or by a word, Acts ix. 34. But in the church of Rome it is made absolutely necessary. 2. In apostolical times it was a mere rite, but in the church of Rome it is made a sacrament, and whosoever saith it is a mere rite, is accursed.\* 3. It was used in apostolical times properly for corporal maladies; but in the church of Rome properly for the soul, and but accidentally for the body.† 4. It was used then for the recovery of the sick; but here it is to be applied only to those that are judged to be past it.

\* Conc. Trid. Sess. 14. can. 1. † Bellarm. de Ext. Unct. l. 1. c. 2. § Probo igitur.

### Of Orders.

R. 85. We account ordination to be of divine institution, and that by it a ministerial commission is conveyed; but how necessary soever this office is to the church, and grace for the exercise of it, yet as that grace is not promised to it, we cannot admit it to be properly and truly a sacrament.

R. 86. We know of no authority there is for any order under a deacon, so as to anathematize them that do not receive them.\* We know of no authority for the forms used in the ordination of those lower orders; as when the bishop admits any to that of exorcists, he reaches to them a book in which the exorcisms are contained, and saith, "Receive, and commit to memory, and take the power of laying on of hands upon the possessed, or baptized, or catechumens."†

\* Concil. Trid. *ibid.* Can. 2. † Catech. *ibid.* n. 17.

We know of no authority for this kind of procedure; for those forms of conjuration contained in those books, or for the use of those rites therein prescribed, for exorcising persons, houses, cattle, milk, butter, fruits, &c. infested with the Devil. See the *Pastoral Mechlin*, and the *Manual of Exorcisms, Antwerp, 1626.*

### Of Marriage.

R. 87. St. Austin saith, that signs when applied to religious things, are called sacraments.\* And in this large sense he calls the sign of the cross a sacrament;† and others give the same name to washing the feet,‡ and many other mysteries. But then matrimony doth no more confer grace, than washing the feet, or using the sign of the cross; which Bellarmin, after all the virtue he ascribes to it, will not allow to be properly and truly a sacrament.§

\* Epist. 5. † In Psal. 141. ‡ Cypr. de lotionem pedum.  
§ De Imag. l. 2. c. 30. ss. Dices ergo.

Q. 88: May those that are in holy orders marry, or those that are married be received into orders in the church of Rome?

A. No, these that are married may not be admitted,\* those that are admitted may not marry, and those that being admitted do marry, are to be separated.

\* Concil. Later. 1. Can. 21, and Later. 2. Can. 6.

Q. 89. If marriage is a sacrament, and so confers grace, how comes it to be denied to those that are in holy orders? *Catech. Rom. par. 2. c. 8. n. 17.*

A. Those in holy orders are the temple of God, and it is a shameful thing that they should serve uncleanness. *Later. Concil. 2. Can. 6.*

R. 88, 89. The apostle, on the contrary, saith, ‘ Marriage is honourable in all,’ Heb. xiii. 4, and gives a hard character of that doctrine which forbids it. 1 Tim. iv. 1—3. And how lawful it was the direction of the apostle about it, 1 Tim. iii. 2, doth show. And how convenient it is, is manifest from the mischiefs attending the prohibition of it in the Romish church, which wise men among themselves have lamented.\*

\* Polyd. Virg. de invent. l. 3. c. 4. and Cassander. Consult. Art. 23.

---

### THE CONCLUSION.

I might have added the 5th section about jurisdiction, which the church of Rome challenges over princes, and about their canonization of saints, their consecration of *Agnus Dei*, and beads, &c. and the use these and the like are applied to. I might have further considered their notes of a church, and showed how many of them are not true, or however do not belong to the church of Rome: but that would be too large a subject to enter upon: and what has been said will be sufficient to show how far that church hath erred from truth and reason. For if we set their councils, missals, breviaries, rituals, and catechisms on one side, and Scripture and antiquity on the other, we shall find their doctrines and practices as truly opposite to those as they are opposite to ours: and may be assured that persons may sooner lose their eyes, than find there such a primacy of St. Peter as they contend for, or their vicarship of the Pope, the invocation of saints, the worship of images, service in an unknown tongue, transubstantiation, purgatory, and the rest that we contend against. Scripture and indubitable antiquity are the authority we appeal to, thither we refer our cause, and can heartily conclude with that of Vincentius Lyrin, *That is to be held, which hath been believed every where, always, and by all.* Contr. Hær. c. 3.

## POPERY

### CALMLY CONSIDERED.

---

#### TO THE READER.

IN the following Tract I propose, First, To lay down and examine the chief Doctrines of the Church of Rome: Secondly, To show the natural tendency of a few of those Doctrines: and that with all the plainness and all the calmness I can.

---

#### SECTION I.—*Of the Church, and the Rule of Faith.*

1. THE Papists judge it necessary to salvation, to be subject to the pope, as the one visible Head of the Church.

But we read in Scripture that CHRIST is the *Head* of the church, “from whom the whole body is fitly joined together,” Col. ii. 19. The Scripture does not mention any visible head of the church: much less does it mention the pope as such: and least of all does it say, that it is necessary to salvation, to be subject to him.

2. The Papists say, The pope is Christ’s vicar, St. Peter’s successor, and has the supreme power on earth over the whole church.

We answer, Christ gave no such power to St. Peter himself. He gave no apostle pre-eminence over the rest. Yea, St. Paul was so far from acknowledging St. Peter’s supremacy, that he withstood him to the face, (Gal. ii, 11,) and asserted himself, “not to be behind the chief of the apostles.”

Neither is it asserted that St. Peter was the bishop of Rome: no, nor that he ever was there.

But they say, “Is not Rome the mother, and therefore the mistress of all churches?”

We answer, No. The word of the Lord went forth from Jerusalem. There the church began. She, therefore, not the church of Rome, is the mother of all churches.

The church of Rome, therefore, has no right to require any person to believe what she teaches on her sole authority.

3. St. Paul says, “All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.”

The Scripture therefore being delivered by men divinely inspired, is a rule sufficient of itself: so it neither needs, nor is capable of any farther addition.

Yet the papists add tradition to Scripture, and require it to be received with equal veneration. By traditions they mean, "Such points of faith and practice as have been delivered down in the church from hand to hand without writing." And for many of these they have no more Scripture to show, than the Pharisees had for their traditions.

4. The church of Rome not only adds tradition to Scripture, but several entire books; namely, Tobit and Judith, the Book of Wisdom, Ecclesiasticus, Baruch, the two books of Maccabees, Esdras, and a new part of Esther and of Daniel: "Which whole books," says the church of Rome, "whoever rejects, let him be accursed."

We answer, We cannot but reject them. We dare not receive them as part of the Holy Scriptures. For none of these books were received as such by the Jewish church, "to whom were committed the Oracles of God," Rom. iii. 2. Neither by the ancient Christian church, as appears from the sixtieth canon of the council of Laodicea: wherein is a catalogue of the books of Scripture, without any mention of these.

5. As the church of Rome, on the one hand, adds to the Scriptures, so, on the other, she forbids the people to read them. Yea, they are forbid to read so much as a summary or historical compendium of them in their own tongue.

Nothing can be more inexcusable than this. Even under the law, the people had the Scriptures in a tongue vulgarly known. And they were not only permitted, but required to read them; yea, to be constantly conversant therein, Deut. vi. 6, &c. Agreeably to this, our Lord commands to "Search the Scriptures:" and St. Paul directs, that his "Epistle should be read in all the churches." 1 Thess. v. 27. Certainly this epistle was written in a tongue which all of them understood.

But they say, "If people in general were to read the Bible, it would do them more harm than good." Is it any honour to the Bible to speak thus? But supposing some did abuse it, is this any sufficient reason for forbidding others to use it? Surely not. Even in the days of the apostles, there were some *unstable and ignorant men*, who *wrested* both St. Paul's *Epistles* and *the other Scriptures to their own destruction*. But did any of the apostles, on this account, forbid other Christians to read them? You know they did not: they only cautioned them, "Not to be led away by the error of the wicked." And certainly the way to prevent this is, not to keep the Scriptures from them: (for "they were written for our learning:") but to exhort all to the diligent perusal of them, lest they should "err, not knowing the Scriptures."

6. "But seeing the Scripture may be misunderstood, how are we to judge of the sense of it? How can we know the sense of any scripture, but from the sense of the church?"

We answer, 1. The church of Rome is no more the *church in general*, than the church of England is. It is only one particular branch of the Catholic, or Universal church of Christ, which is the

whole body of believers in Christ, scattered over the whole earth. 2. We therefore see no reason, to refer any matter in dispute to the church of Rome, more than any other church; especially as we neither know the bishop nor the church of Rome, to be any more infallible than ourselves. 3. In all cases, the church is to be judged by the Scripture, not the Scripture by the church. And Scripture is the best expounder of Scripture. The best way therefore to understand it is, carefully to compare scripture with scripture, and thereby learn the true meaning of it.

---

## SECTION II.—Of *Repentance and Obedience.*

1. The church of Rome teaches, "That the deepest repentance or contrition, avails nothing without confession to a priest: but that with this, attrition, or the fear of hell, is sufficient to reconcile us to God."

This is very dangerously wrong, and flatly contrary to Scripture. For Scripture says, "A broken and contrite heart, thou, O God, wilt not despise." Ps. li. 17. And the same texts which make contrition sufficient without confession, show that attrition even with it, is insufficient. Now as the former doctrine of the insufficiency of contrition without confession, makes that necessary which God has not made necessary; so the latter, of the sufficiency of attrition with confession, makes that unnecessary which God has made necessary.

2. The church of Rome teaches, "That good works truly merit eternal life."

This is flatly contrary to what our Saviour teaches; "When ye have done all those things that are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do," Luke xvii. 10. A command to do it, grace to obey that command, and a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory, must for ever cut off all pretence of *merit* from all human obedience.

3. That a man may truly and properly merit hell, we grant; although he never can merit heaven. But if he does merit hell, yet, according to the doctrine of the church of Rome, he need never go there. For "the church has power to grant him an *indulgence*, which remits both the fault and the punishment."

Some of these indulgences extend to so many days, some to so many weeks, but others extend to a man's whole life; and this is called a *Plenary Indulgence*.

These indulgences are to be obtained, by going pilgrimages; by reciting certain prayers: or (which is abundantly the most common way) by paying the stated price of it.

Now can any thing under heaven be imagined more horrid, more execrable than this? Is not this a manifest prostitution of religion to

the basest purposes? Can any possible method be contrived, to make sin more cheap and easy? Even the Popish council of Trent acknowledged this abuse, and condemned it in strong terms. But they did not in any degree remove the abuse which they acknowledged. Nay, two of the Popes under whom the council sat, Pope Paul III. and Julius III. proceeded in the same course with their predecessors, or rather exceeded them. For they granted to such of the *fraternity of the holy altar*, as visited the church of St. Hilary of Chartres, during the six weeks of Lent, seven hundred and seventy-five thousand, seven hundred, years of pardon.

4. This miserable doctrine of indulgences is founded upon another bad doctrine, that of *works of supererogation*. For the church of Rome teaches, That there is "an overplus of merit in the saints; and that this is a treasure committed to the church's custody, to be disposed of as she sees meet."

But this doctrine is utterly irreconcilable with the following scriptures: "The sufferings of the present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us." Rom. viii. 18. And "every one of us shall give an account of himself to God." 2 Cor. iv. 17. For if there be no comparison betwixt the reward and the sufferings, then no one has merit to transfer to another. And if every one must give an account of himself to God, then no one can be saved by the merit of another. But suppose there were a superabundance of merits in the saints, yet we have no need of them, seeing there is such an infinite value in what Christ hath done and suffered for us: seeing he alone hath, "by one offering, perfected for ever them that are sanctified." Heb. x. 14.

5. But where do the souls of those go after death, who die in a state of grace; but yet are not sufficiently purged from sin, to enter the kingdom of heaven?

The church of Rome says, "They go to *purgatory*, a purging fire near hell, where they continue till they are purged from all their sins, and so made meet for heaven."

Now, that those who die in a state of grace, go into a place of torment, in order to be purged in the other world, is utterly contrary to Scripture. Our Lord said to the penitent thief upon the cross, "To-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise." Now if a purgation in another world were necessary for any, he that did not repent and believe till the last hour of his life, might well be supposed to need it: and consequently ought to have been sent to purgatory, not to Paradise.

6. Very nearly akin to that of purgatory is the doctrine of *Limbus Patrum*. For the church of Rome teaches, that, "Before the death and resurrection of Christ, the souls of good men departed, were detained in a certain place, called *Limbus Patrum*, which is the uppermost part of hell. The lowermost, they say, is the place of the damned: next above this, is purgatory; next to that *Limbus infantum*, or the place where the souls of infants are."

It might suffice to say, there is not one word of all this in Scripture. But there is much against it. We read that Elijah was taken up into heaven, 2 Kings ii. 11. And he and Moses appeared in glory, Matt. xvii. 2. And Abraham is represented as in Paradise, Luke xvi. 22, the blessed abode of good men in the other world. Therefore none of these were in the *Limbus Patrum*. Consequently, if the Bible is true, there is no such place.

### SECTION III.—Of *Divine Worship*.

1. The service of the Roman church consists of prayers to God, angels, and saints, of lessons and of confessions of faith.

All their service is every where performed in the Latin tongue, which is nowhere vulgarly understood. Yea, it is required, and a curse is denounced against all those who say it ought to be performed in the vulgar tongue.

This irrational and unscriptural practice destroys the great end of public worship. The end of this is, the honour of God in the edification of the church. The means to this end is, to have the service so performed, as may inform the mind and increase devotion. But this cannot be done by that service which is performed in an unknown tongue.

What St. Paul judged of this, is clear from his own words. "I know not the meaning of the voice, (of him that speaks in a public assembly,) he that speaketh shall be a barbarian to me," 1 Cor. xiv. 11. Again, "If thou shalt bless by the Spirit, (by the gift of an unknown tongue,) how shall the unlearned say, Amen?" ver. 16. How can the people be profited by the lessons, answer at the responses, be devout in their prayers, confess their faith in the creeds, when they do not understand what is read, prayed, and confessed? It is manifest then, that the having any part of divine worship in an unknown tongue, is as flatly contrary to the Word of God, as it is to reason.

2. From the manner of worship in the church of Rome, proceed we to the objects of it. Now the Romanists worship, besides angels, the Virgin Mary, and other saints. They teach, that angels, in particular, are to be "worshipped, invoked, and prayed to." And they have litanies and other prayers composed for that purpose.

In flat opposition to all this, the words of our Saviour are, "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve." To evade this, they say, "The worship we give to angels is not of the same kind with that which we give to God." Vain words! What kind of worship is peculiar to God, if prayer is not? Surely God alone can receive all our prayers, and give what we pray for. We honour the angels, as they are God's ministers; but we dare not worship or pray to them. It is what they themselves refuse and abhor. So, when "St. John fell down at the feet of the angel to worship him, he said, See thou do it not. I am thy fellow-servant: worship God!" Rev. xix. 10.

3. The Romanists also worship saints. They pray to them as their intercessors. They confess their sins to them: they offer incense and make vows to them. Yea, they venerate their very images and relics.

Now all this is directly contrary to Scripture. And, first, the worshipping them as intercessors. For as "there is but one God to us, though there are gods many, and lords many:" so, according to Scripture, there is but one Intercessor or Mediator to us. (1 Cor. viii. 5.) And suppose the angels or saints intercede for us in heaven, yet may we no more worship them, than because *there are gods many on earth*, we may worship them as we do the true God.

The Romanists allow, "there is only one Mediator of Redemption:" but say, "there are many mediators of intercession." We answer, The Scripture knows no difference between a Mediator of Intercession and of Redemption. He alone *who died and rose again* for us, *makes intercession for us at the right hand of God*. And he alone has a right to our prayers, nor dare we address them to any other.

4. The worship which the Romanists give to the Virgin Mary, is beyond what they give either to angels or other saints. In one of their public offices, they say, "Command thy son by the right of a mother." They pray to her, to "loose the bands of the guilty, to bring light to the blind, to make them mild and chaste, and to cause their hearts to burn in love to Christ."

Such worship as this cannot be given to any creature, without gross, palpable idolatry. We honour the blessed Virgin, as the mother of the Holy Jesus, and as a person of eminent piety. But we dare not give worship to her; for it belongs to God alone.

Meantime we cannot but wonder at the application which the church of Rome continually makes to her, of whose acts on earth the Scripture so sparingly speaks. And it says nothing of, (what they so pompously celebrate,) her assumption into heaven, or of her exaltation to a throne above angels or archangels. It says nothing of her being "the mother of Grace and Mercy, the Queen of the gate of heaven," or of her "power to destroy all heresies," and being "all things to all."

5. The Romanists pay a regard to the relics of the saints also, which is a kind of worship. By relics they mean the bodies of the saints, or any remains of them, or particular things belonging or relating to them when they were alive; as an arm or thigh, bones or ashes; or the place where, or the things by which they suffered. They venerate these, in order to obtain the help of the saints. And they believe "by these, many benefits are conferred on mankind: that by these relics of the saints, the sick have been cured, the dead raised, and devils cast out."

We read of good king Hezekiah, that "he brake in pieces the brazen serpent which Moses had made." 2 Kings xviii. 4. And the reason was, because the children of Israel burnt incense to it. By looking up to this, the people bitten by the fiery serpents had been

healed. And it was preserved from generation to generation, as a memorial of that divine operation. Yet when it was abused to idolatry, he ordered it to be broken in pieces. And were these true relics of the saints, and did they truly work these miracles, yet that would be no sufficient cause for the worship that is given them. Rather this worship would be a good reason, according to Hezekiah's practice, for giving them a decent interment.

6. Let us next consider, what reverence the church of Rome requires to be given to images and pictures. She requires "to kiss them; to uncover the head; to fall down before them, and use all such postures of worship as they would to the persons represented if present." And accordingly "the priest is to direct the people to them, that they may be worshipped." They say, indeed, that "in falling down before the image, they worship the saint or angel whom it represents." We answer, 1. We are absolutely forbidden in Scripture, to worship saints or angels themselves: Secondly, We are expressly forbidden "to fall down and worship any image, or likeness, of any thing in heaven or earth," whomsoever it may represent. This, therefore, is flat idolatry, directly contrary to the commandment of God.

7. Such likewise, without all possibility of evasion, is the worship they pay to the cross. They pray, that God may make the wood of the cross, to "be the stability of faith, an increase of good works, the redemption of souls."

They use all expressions of outward adoration, as kissing and falling down before it. They pray directly to it, to "increase grace in the ungodly, and blot out the sins of the guilty." Yea, they give *Latria* to it. And this they themselves say, "is the sovereign worship that is due only to God."

But, indeed, they have no authority from Scripture, for their distinction between *Latria* and *Dulia*; the former of which they say, is due to God alone, the latter that which is due to saints. But here they have forgotten their own distinction. For although they own *Latria* is due only to God, yet they do in fact give it to the cross. This, then, by their own account, is flat idolatry.

8. And so it is to represent the blessed Trinity by pictures and images, and to worship them. Yet these are made in every Romish country, and recommended to the people to be worshipped: although there is nothing more expressly forbidden in Scripture, than to make any image or representation of God. God himself never appeared in any bodily shape. The representation of "the Ancient of Days," mentioned in Daniel, was a mere prophetic figure, and did no more literally belong to God; than the eyes or ears that are ascribed to him in Scripture.

SECTION IV.—*Of the Sacraments.*

1. THE church of Rome says, "A sacrament is a sensible thing instituted by God himself, as a sign and a means of grace."

"The sacraments are seven, baptism, confirmation, the Lord's supper, penance, extreme unction, orders, and marriage."

"The parts of a sacrament are, the matter, and the form or words of consecration. So in baptism, the matter is water; the form, 'I baptize thee,' &c."

On this we remark, Peter Lombard lived about 1110 years after Christ. And he was the first that ever determined the sacraments to be seven. St. Austin (a greater than he) positively affirms, "that there are but two of Divine institution."

Again, To say, That a sacrament consists of matter and form, and yet either has no form, as confirmation and extreme unction, (neither of which is ever pretended to have any form of words, instituted by God himself,) or has neither matter nor form, as penance, or marriage, is to make them sacraments and no sacraments. For they do not answer that definition of a sacrament which themselves have given.

2. However, they teach, that "all these seven confer grace *ex opere operato*, by the work itself, on all such as do not put an obstruction." Nay, it is not enough, that we do not put an obstruction. In order to our receiving grace, there is also required previous instruction, true repentance, and a degree of faith. And even then, the grace does not spring merely *ex opere operato*: it does not proceed from the mere elements, or the words spoken: but from the blessing of God, in consequence of his promise to such as are qualified for it.

Equally erroneous is that doctrine of the church of Rome, that "in order to the validity of any sacrament, it is absolutely necessary the person who administers it, should do it with a holy intention." For it follows, that wherever there is not this intention, the sacrament is null and void. And so there is no certainty, whether the priest, so called, be a real priest? For who knows the intention of him that ordained him? And if he be not, all his ministrations are of course null and void. But if he be, can I be sure that *his* intention was holy in administering the baptism or the Lord's supper? And if it was not, they are no sacraments at all, and all our attendance on them is lost labour.

3. So much for the sacraments in general, let us now proceed to particulars.

"*Baptism*, say the Romanists, may, in case of necessity, be administered by women, yea, by Jews, infidels, or heretics." No: our Lord gave this commission only to the apostles, and their successors in the ministry.

The ceremonies which the Romanists use in baptism are these:

Before *baptism*, 1. *Chrism*, that is, oil mixed with water is to be consecrated. 2. *Exorcism*, that is, the priest is to blow in the face of the child, saying, "Go out of him Satan!" 3. He *crosses* the

forehead, eyes, breast, and several other parts of the body. 4. He puts *exorcised salt* into his mouth, saying, "Take the salt of wisdom." 5. He puts spittle into the palm of his left hand, puts the forefinger of his right hand into it, and anoints the child's nose and ears therewith, who is then brought to the water.

After baptism, first, he anoints the top of the child's head with chrism, as a token of salvation: secondly, he puts on him a white garment, in token of his innocence: and, thirdly, he puts a lighted candle into his hand, in token of the light of faith.

Now what can any man of understanding say, in defence of these idle ceremonies, utterly unknown in the primitive church, as well as unsupported by Scripture? Do they add dignity to the ordinance of God? Do they not rather make it contemptible?

4. The matter of confirmation is the chrism, which is an ointment consecrated by the bishop. The form is, the words he uses in crossing the forehead with the chrism, namely, "I sign thee with the sign of a cross, and confirm thee with the chrism of salvation, in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost."

Then the person confirmed, setting his right foot on the right foot of his godfather, is to have his head bound with a clean headband: which, after some days, is to be taken off and reserved till the next Ash-Wednesday, to be then burnt to holy ashes.

The Roman Catechism says, "Sacraments cannot be instituted by any besides God." But it must be allowed, Christ did not institute confirmation, therefore it is no sacrament at all.

5. We come now to one of the grand doctrines of the church of Rome, that which regards the Lord's supper. This therefore we would wish to consider with the deepest attention. They say, "In the Lord's supper, whole Christ is really, truly, and substantially contained; God-man, body and blood, bones and nerves, under the appearance of bread and wine."

They attempt to prove it thus: "Our Lord himself says, *This is my body*. Therefore, upon consecration, there is a conversion of the whole substance of the bread, into the whole substance of Christ's body, and of the whole substance of the wine into the substance of his blood: and this is usually termed *Transubstantiation*.

"Yet we must not suppose, that Christ is broken, when the host (or consecrated bread) is broken; because there is whole and entire Christ, under the species of every particle of bread, and under the species of every drop of wine."

We answer, No such change of the bread into the body of Christ, can be inferred from his words, "This is my body." For it is not said, "This is changed into my body;" but, "This is my body:" which, if it were to be taken literally, would rather prove the substance of the bread to be his body. But that they are not to be taken literally is manifest from the words of St. Paul, who calls it bread, not only before but likewise after the consecration, 1 Cor. x. 17. chap. xi. ver. 26, 27, 28. Here we see, that what was called his body, was bread at the same time. And accordingly these

elements are called by the fathers, the images, the symbols, the figure of Christ's body and blood.

Scripture and antiquity then are flatly against transubstantiation. And so are our very senses. Now our Lord himself appealed to the senses of his disciples, Luke xxiv. 39, "Handle and see me; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have." Take away the testimony of our senses, and there is no discerning a body from a spirit. But if we believe transubstantiation we take away the testimony of all our senses.

And we give up our reason too. For if every particle of the host is as much the whole body of Christ, as the whole host is before it is divided, then a whole may be divided, not into parts, but into wholes. For, divide and subdivide it over and over; and it is whole still! It is whole before the division; whole in the division; whole after the division! Such nonsense, absurdity, and self-contradiction, all over, is the doctrine of transubstantiation!

6. An evil practice attending this evil doctrine is, The *depriving the laity of the cup* in the Lord's supper. It is acknowledged by all, that our Lord instituted and delivered this sacrament *in both kinds*: giving the wine as well as the bread, to all that partook of it: and that it continued to be so delivered in the church of Rome for above a thousand years. And yet, notwithstanding this, the church of Rome now forbids the people to *drink of the cup*! A more insolent and barefaced corruption cannot easily be conceived.

Another evil practice in the church of Rome, utterly unheard of in the ancient church, is, that when there is none to receive the Lord's supper, the priest *communicates alone*. (Indeed it is not properly to *communicate*, when only one receives it.) This likewise is an absolute innovation in the church of God.

But the greatest abuse of all in the Lord's supper is, the *worshipping the consecrated bread*. And this the church of Rome not only practises, but positively enjoins. These are her words: "The same sovereign worship which is due to God, is due to the host. Adore it. Pray to it. And whosoever holds it unlawful so to do, let him be accursed."

The Romanists themselves grant, that if Christ is not corporally present in the Lord's supper, this is idolatry. And that he is not corporally present any where but in heaven, we learn from Acts ii. 11. ch. iii. 21. "Thither he went, and there he will continue till the time of the restitution of all things."

7. Consider we now what the Romanists hold, concerning the sacrament of penance.

"The matter of the sacrament of penance is, contrition, confession, and satisfaction; the form, I absolve thee."

We object to this: You say, "The matter of a sacrament is something sensible," perceivable by our senses. But if so, penance is not a sacrament. For surely, contrition is not something perceivable by the outward senses!

Again; they say, "Confession is a particular discovery of all mor-

tal sins to a priest, with all their circumstances, as far as they can be called to mind, without which there can be no forgiveness or salvation."

We answer, Although it is often of use, to confess our sins to a spiritual guide, yet to make confessing to a priest necessary to forgiveness and salvation, is, "teaching for doctrines the commandments of men." And to make it necessary in all cases, is to lay a dangerous snare both for the confessor and the confessed.

They go on, "The sentence pronounced by the priest in absolution, is pronounced, by the judge himself. All the sins of the sinner are thereby pardoned, and an entrance opened into heaven."

We cannot allow it. We believe the absolution pronounced by the priest, is only declarative and conditional. For judicially to pardon sin and absolve the sinner, is a power God has reserved to himself.

Once more: You say, "Satisfaction is a compensation made to God by alms, &c. for all offences committed against him."

We answer, 1. It cannot be, that we should satisfy God, by any of our works. For, 2. Nothing can make satisfaction to him, but the obedience and death of his Son.

8. We proceed to what they call, "The sacrament of *extreme unction*." "The matter," they say, "of extreme unction is, oil consecrated by the bishop, and applied to the eyes, ears, mouth, hands, feet, and reins, of a person supposed to be near death." The form is, "By this holy anointing, God pardon thee for whatever thou hast offended by the eyes, ears, mouth, or touch."

We reply: When the apostles were sent forth, "they anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them," (Mark vi. 13,) using this as a sign of the miraculous cures to be wrought. And St. James accordingly directs, "Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church, let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord. And the prayer of faith shall save the sick," (ch. v. ver. 14, 15.) But what has this to do with the extreme unction of the church of Rome? In the first church this anointing was a mere rite: in the church of Rome it is made a sacrament: it was used in the first church for the body: it is used in the church of Rome for the soul. It was used then for the recovery of the sick; now, for those only that are thought past recovery. 'Tis easy, therefore, to see, that the Romish extreme unction has no foundation in Scripture.

9. We are now to consider, what the church of Rome delivers concerning *Ordination*. "This," says she, "is properly a sacrament. He that denies it, let him be accursed."

"The orders received in the church of Rome, are seven: the priest, the deacon, the sub-deacon, the acolythus to carry the candle, the exorcist to cast out devils, the reader, and the door-keeper."

On this we observe, it is not worth disputing, whether ordination should be called a sacrament or not. Let the word then pass; but we object to the thing; there is no divine authority for any order under a deacon. Much less is there any scriptural authority, for

the forms of conjuration prescribed to the exorcists, or for the rites prescribed in exorcising not only men, women, and children, but likewise houses, cattle, milk, butter, or fruits, said to be infested with the Devil.

-10. The next of their sacraments, so called, is marriage: concerning which they pronounce, "Marriage is truly and properly a sacrament. He that denies it so to be, let him be accursed."

We answer, in one sense it may be so. For St. Austin says, "Signs, when applied to religious things, are called sacraments." In this large sense he calls the sign of the cross a sacrament: and others give the name to washing the feet. But it is not a sacrament according to the Romish definition of the word: for it no more "confers grace," than washing the feet, or signing with the cross.

A more dangerous error in the church of Rome is, the *forbidding the clergy to marry*. "Those that are married may not be admitted into orders: those that are admitted may not marry: and those that being admitted, do marry, are to be separated."

The apostle on the contrary, says, "Marriage is honourable in all," Heb. xiii. 4, and accuses those who *forbid to marry*, of "teaching doctrines of devils." How lawful it was for the clergy to marry, his directions concerning it show, 1 Tim. iv. 1—3. And how convenient, yea, necessary in many cases it is, clearly appears from the innumerable mischiefs, which have, in all ages, followed the prohibition of it in the Church of Rome: which so many wise and good men, even of her own communion, have lamented.

I have now fairly stated, and calmly considered most of the particular doctrines of the church of Rome. Permit me to add a few considerations of a more general nature.

That many members of that church have been holy men, and that many are so now, I firmly believe. But I do not know, that any of them who are dead, were more holy than many Protestants, who are now with God: yea, than some of our own country, who were very lately removed to Abraham's bosom. To instance only in one, (whom I mention the rather because an account of his life is extant,) I do not believe, that many of them of the same age, were more holy than THOMAS WALSH. And I doubt, if any among them living now, are more holy than several Protestants now alive.

But be this as it may. However, by the tender mercies of God, many members of the Church of Rome, have been and are now holy men, notwithstanding their principles, yet I fear many of their principles have a natural tendency to undermine holiness; greatly to hinder if not utterly to destroy, the essential branches of it; to destroy the love of God, and the love of our neighbour with all justice, and mercy, and truth.

I wish it were possible to lay all prejudice aside, and to consider this calmly and impartially. I begin with the love of God, the fountain of all that holiness, without which we cannot see the Lord. And what is it that has a more natural tendency to destroy this than idolatry? Consequently, every doctrine which leads to idolatry natu-

rally tends to destroy it. But so does a very considerable part of the avowed doctrine of the Church of Rome. Her doctrine, touching the worship of angels, of saints, the Virgin Mary in particular, touching the worship of images, or relics, of the cross, and above all the host, or consecrated wafer, leads all who receive it to practise idolatry, flat, palpable idolatry, the paying that worship to the creature which is due to God alone.—Therefore, it has a natural tendency to hinder, if not utterly destroy the love of God.

Secondly, the doctrine of the Church of Rome has a natural tendency to hinder, if not destroy, the love of our neighbour. By the love of our neighbour, I mean universal benevolence, tender goodwill to all men. For in this respect, every child of man, every son of Adam, is our neighbour; as we may easily learn from our Lord's history of the good Samaritan. Now the Church of Rome by asserting that all who are not of her own church, that is, the bulk of mankind, are in a state of utter rejection from God, despised and hated by him that made them; and by her bitter (I might say, accursed) anathemas, devoting to absolute, everlasting destruction, all who willingly or unwillingly differ from her, in any jot or tittle; teaches all her members to look upon them with the same eyes as she supposes God to do: to regard them as mere fire-brands of hell, *vessels of wrath fitted for destruction*. And what love can you entertain for such? No other than you can believe God to have for them. Therefore, every anathema denounced by the Church of Rome, against all who differ from her, has a natural tendency, not only to hinder, but utterly destroy the *love of our neighbour*.

Thirdly, the same doctrine which devotes to utter destruction so vast a majority of mankind, must greatly indispose us for showing them the *Justice* which is due to all men. For how hard is it to be just to them we hate! To render them their due, either in thought, word, or action! Indeed, we violate justice by this very thing, by not loving them as ourselves. For we do not render unto all their due; seeing love is due to all mankind. If we owe *no man any thing beside*, do we not owe this, *to love one another*? And where love is totally wanting, what other justice can be expected? Will not a whole train of injurious tempers and passions, of wrong words and actions naturally follow? So plain, so undeniably plain it is, that this doctrine of the Church of Rome, (to instance at present in no more,) That “all but those of their own church are accursed,” has a natural tendency to hinder, yea, utterly to destroy *justice*.

Fourthly, Its natural tendency to destroy *Mercy*, is equally glaring and undeniable. We need not use any reasoning to prove this: only cast your eyes upon matter of fact! What terrible proofs of it do we see, in the execrable crusades against the Albigenses! In those horrible wars in the Holy Land, where so many rivers of blood were poured out! In the many millions that have been butchered in Europe, since the beginning of the Reformation: not only in the open field, but in prisons, on the scaffold, on the gibbet, at the stake! For how many thousands of lives, barbarously taken away, has Philip II. to give an account to God? For how many thousands, that infamous;

perfidious butcher, Charles IX. of France? To say nothing of our own bloody Queen Mary, not much inferior to them. See in Europe, in America, in the uttermost parts of Asia, the dungeons, the racks, the various tortures of the Inquisition, so unhappily styled *the House of Mercy!* Yea, such mercy as is in the fiends of hell! Such mercy as the natives of Ireland in the last century, showed to myriads of their Protestant countrymen! Such is the mercy which the doctrine of the Church of Rome very naturally inspires!

Lastly, the doctrine of the Church of Rome has a natural tendency to destroy *Truth* from off the earth. What can more directly tend to this, what can more incite her own members to all lying and falsehood, than that precious doctrine of the Church of Rome, That “no faith is to be kept with heretics?” Can I believe one word that a man says, who espouses this principle? I know it has been frequently affirmed, that the Church of Rome has renounced this doctrine. But I ask, When or where? By what public and authentic act, notified to all the world? This principle has been publicly and openly avowed by a whole council, the ever-renowned council of Constance: (an assembly never to be paralleled, either among Turks or Pagans, for regard to justice, mercy, and truth!) But when and where was it as publicly disavowed? Till this be done in the face of the sun, this doctrine must stand before all mankind as an avowed principle of the Church of Rome.

And will this operate only toward heretics? Toward the supposed enemies of the Church? Nay, where men have once learned not to keep faith with heretics, they will not long keep it towards Catholics. When they have once overleaped the bounds of truth, and habituated themselves to lying and dissimulation, toward one kind of men, will they not easily learn, to behave in the same manner toward all men? So that instead of *putting away all lying*, they will put away all truth! And instead of having *no guile found in their mouth*, there will be found nothing else therein!

Thus naturally do the principles of the Romanists tend to banish truth from among themselves. And have they not an equal tendency to cause lying and dissimulation among those that are not of their communion; by that Romish principle, that force is to be used in matters of religion? That if men are not of our sentiments, of our church, we should thus *compel them to come in*? Must not this, in the very nature of things, induce all those over whom they have any power, to dissemble, if not deny those opinions, who vary ever so little from what that church has determined? And if a habit of lying and dissimulation is once formed, it will not confine itself to matters of religion. It will assuredly spread into common life, and tincture the whole conversation.

Again, Some of the most eminent Roman casuists (whose books are duly licensed by the heads of the church) lay it down as an undoubted maxim, That although malicious lies are sins, yet “*officious lies, that is, lies told in order to do good, are not only innocent, but meritorious.*” Now what a flood-gate does this open for falsehood of

every kind ! Therefore, this doctrine likewise has a natural tendency to banish truth from the earth.

One doctrine more of the Romish church, must not here be passed over, I mean that of *Absolution* by a priest, as it has a clear, direct tendency to destroy both justice, mercy, and truth, yea, to drive all virtue out of the world. For if a man (and not always a very good man) has power to forgive sins : if he can, at pleasure, forgive any violation, either of truth, or mercy, or justice : what an irresistible temptation must this be to men of weak or corrupt minds ! Will they be scrupulous with regard to any pleasing sin, when they can be absolved upon easy terms ? And if after this, any scruple remain, is not a remedy for this provided ? Are there not *Papal Indulgences* to be had ? Yea, *Plenary Indulgences* ? I have seen one of these which was purchased at Rome, not many years ago. This single doctrine of papal indulgences strikes at the root of all religion. And were the church of Rome ever so faultless in all other respects, yet till this power of forgiving sins, whether by *Priestly Absolution*, or *Papal Indulgences* is openly and absolutely disclaimed : and till these practices are totally abolished, there can be no security in that church, for any morality, any religion, any justice, or mercy, or truth.

---

THE ADVANTAGES  
OF THE  
*MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND,*  
OVER THOSE  
OF THE CHURCH OF ROME.

---

1 LAY this down as an undoubted truth, “The more the Doctrine of any church agrees with the Scripture, the more readily ought it to be received.” And on the other hand, “The more the Doctrine of any church differs from the Scripture, the greater cause we have to doubt of it.”

2. Now it is a known principle of the Church of England, that nothing is to be received as an article of faith, which is not read in the holy Scripture, or to be inferred therefrom, by just and plain consequences. Hence it follows, that every Christian has a right to know and read the Scripture, that he may be sure what he hears from his teachers agrees with the revealed Word of God.

3. On the contrary, at the very beginning of the Reformation, the Church of Rome began to oppose this principle, that all articles of faith must be proveable from Scripture, (till then received throughout the whole Christian world,) and to add, if not prefer, to holy Scripture, tradition, or the doctrine of fathers and councils, with the decrees of popes. And soon after she determined in the council of Trent, "That the Old and New Testament, and the traditions of the church, ought to be received *pari pietatis affectu ac reverentia*, (with equal piety and reverence;)" and that "it suffices for laymen, if they believe and practise what the church believes and requires, whether they understand the ground of that doctrine and practice or not."

4. How plain is it, that this remedy was found out, because they themselves observed, that many doctrines, practices, and ceremonies of their church, not only could not be proved by Scripture, but were flatly contradictory thereto?

As to the fathers and councils we cannot but observe, that in a hundred instances they contradict one another: consequently, they can no more be a rule of faith to us, than the papal decrees, which are not grounded on Scripture.

5. But the Church of Rome does not stop here. She not only makes tradition of equal authority with the Scripture, but also takes away the Scripture from the people, and denies them the use of it.

For soon after her writers began to teach, yea and assert in entire volumes,

"That the Scripture is obscure, and hard to be understood;

"That it gives a handle to error and heresies;

"That it is not a perfect or sufficient rule of life;

"That it ought to be understood no otherwise than the *church*, (that is, the Popc) explains it;

"That consequently the reading the Scripture is of more hurt than use to the generality of Christians."

And, in fact, they not only publicly spoke against the reading the holy Scriptures, but in most countries absolutely forbad the laity to read them, yea and the clergy too, till they were ordered to preach. And if any did read them without a particular license, they condemned and punished it as a great crime.

6. Thus the case stands to this day: yea, the late controversies in France, make it undeniably plain, that the Church of Rome does now labour more earnestly than ever, to take away the use of the Scriptures, even from those who have hitherto enjoyed them.

Seeing, therefore, the Church of England contends *for* the word of God, and the Church of Rome *against* it, it is easy to discern on which side the advantage lies, with regard to the grand principle of Christianity

7. But that it may more clearly appear, how widely the church of Rome differs from the holy Scriptures, we have set down a few instances, wherein they flatly contradict the written word of God.

Thus the Church of Rome, after acknowledging that the Apostles

terms *concupiscence* sin ; yet scruples not to add immediately, "The Catholic church never understood, that this is truly and properly sin : and if any think the contrary, let him be accursed." *Conc. Trid. Sess. 5.*

Thus, although Christ himself says to all his disciples, *Without me ye can do nothing* ; yet the church of Rome condemns this very proposition, as false and heretical, "The grace of Jesus Christ, the effectual principle of all good, is necessary to every good word. Not only nothing good is done without it, but nothing can be done." In the bull *Unigenitus*.

8. In like manner, the Church of Rome does not scruple to impose upon the consciences of men, in the doctrine of the mass, various traditions, that have no authority from holy writ : and also takes away the cup in the Lord's supper from the laity, contrary to the plain institution of Christ, as well as to the acknowledged custom of the primitive church. Whence it manifestly appears, that it is not the design of the Roman Church to conform itself to the rule of the written Word.

9. Again, the Church of Rome pronounces all those accursed, (*Con. Trid. Sess. 7.*) who say,

"That baptism, confirmation, the Lord's supper, penance, extreme unction, orders, and matrimony, are not sacraments instituted by Christ himself : or,

"That there are more or fewer sacraments than *seven* ; or,

"That any of these is not truly and properly a sacrament : or,

"That they do not confer grace barely by the work done."

Now whereas these positions cannot be proved by Scripture, and yet are enjoined to be believed under pain of an *Anathema*, it is hence also plain, that the Church of Rome does purposely teach, and also maintain by open force, things which partly are not founded on holy Writ, partly are contrary thereto.

10. As to the sacraments in particular, it is easy to show, that they require in each of them such doctrines and customs to be received, as are wholly unsupported by, if not also contrary to, the word of God.

For example. They teach, that

In baptism, "The right intention of the minister is so indispensably necessary, that if it be wanting, the baptized receives no benefit : (*ibid.*) that

"Confirmation was a true and proper sacrament from the beginning : (*ibid.*) that

"In the Lord's supper the bread and wine are converted into the natural body and blood of Christ : (*Sess. 13, and 22.*)

"That every particle of what is consecrated is no longer bread, but the entire body of Christ :

"That it ought to be worshipped and adored : and

"That the laity ought not to receive the cup."

In penance, "That a full confession of all our sins to the priest is absolutely necessary, or they cannot be pardoned : (*Sess. 14.*)

“That the penances imposed, (such as pilgrimages, whipping themselves, and the like,) do meritoriously co-operate toward the forgiveness of sins :

“That this forgiveness is obtained, not through the merits of Christ alone, but also through the merits and intercession of the Virgin Mary and other Saints: that

“Extreme unction is a true and proper sacrament instituted by Christ: (*ibid.*)

“That the oil, blessed by the bishop, eases the soul of the sick, and preserves him from the temptations of the Devil: that

“Ordination is a true and proper sacrament, instituted by Christ : (*Sess. 23.*)

“That an indelible character is given thereby :

“That there were from the beginning those seven orders in the church, priests, deacons, sub-deacons, acolythists, exorcists, readers, and door-keepers :

“That the proper business of a priest is, to consecrate and offer the body and blood of Christ, and to remit or retain sins in the chair of confession : that

“Marriage is a true and proper sacrament, instituted by Christ :

“That nevertheless marriage may be dissolved by either party’s entering into a convent, even against the consent of the other :

“That it is unlawful for any of the clergy to marry.”

11. Now seeing all these doctrines are unsupported by, if not also contrary to, the Word of God, which yet the Church of Rome requires to be received as true, and pronounces all accursed who do not receive them, we cannot but conclude, that the Church of England enjoys an unspeakable advantage over the Church of Rome, with respect to her doctrines, which are wholly agreeable to, and founded on, the written word of God.

12. The advantage of the Church of England, over the Church of Rome, is equally great with regard to public worship.

For it is manifest, that the public worship of the Roman Church is wholly degenerated from the nature of Christ’s kingdom and the simplicity of the first Christians :

That at present it consists in magnificent buildings, altars, images, ornaments, and habits ; in splendid ceremonies ; in processions, and pilgrimages, and prayers in an unknown tongue ; and in reciting the Creed, the Lord’s prayer, and the Ave Maria, over and over according to the number of their beads ;

That they are not instructed to worship God in spirit and in truth as their loving and most beloved Father ; and to praise him, and comfort one another, with psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs ;

That their souls are not edified by sermons and catechising out of the word of God, the Scripture being cited very sparingly in their sermons, and generally in a strained and allegorical sense ;

That they are not permitted to search the Scriptures at home, and seek food for their souls therein ;

That the common people are by this means purposely kept in the grossest ignorance and superstition.

13. It is manifest also, that they are held in doubt as to the salvation both of the living and the dead, by the doctrine of purgatory.

That hereby the minds of those who want to be assured of the state of their souls, are disquieted and disturbed :

That pardon of sins, release from punishment due thereto, and redemption from purgatory by masses and indulgences, either for the living or dead, are daily sold for money.

14. It is no less manifest, that their trust in Christ alone, the one Mediator between God and man, is hindered so much the more, the more the people are referred to the merits and intercession of the blessed Virgin, and other Saints :

The more they are taught to adore their images and relics ; to make vows to them, and to implore their help in any trouble :

Yea, and to place therein a very considerable part of their worship and devotion ;

As well as in a bare outward observance of saints-days, and other festivals of the church, and in the abstaining from some particular kinds of meat, on what they call fast-days.

15. All these practices, wholly unsupported by Scripture, the Church of Rome retains to this day ; at the same time that she rejects and pronounces accursed all, whether practices or doctrines, that make against her, be they ever so plainly contained in, and grounded on the word of God.

Our reformers seeing this, judged it needful to inquire whether it could be proved by holy writ,

That the bishop of Rome is the successor of St. Peter ;

That he is Christ's vicar upon earth, and the visible head of the church :

That he has a right of interpreting the Word of God according to his own pleasure ;

To introduce and prohibit doctrines, besides and against the written Word ;

To license things which the Scriptures forbid ;

To exercise a spiritual, and, in many cases, a secular power, over all Christians, kings and emperors not excepted :

To anathematize all that oppose his will, depose princes, and absolve subjects from their allegiance :

To denounce heretics ; to curse, kill, torture, and burn alive, all who do not submit to him in every point.

16. Some of the reasons they had to doubt of these things, were those which follow :

That neither St. Peter, nor any of the ancient bishops, had the same doctrine or manner of governing the church, which the bishop of Rome now has, as is clear both from the epistles of St. Peter, from the *Acts of the Apostles*, and the ancient ecclesiastical history :

That Christ alone is made of God, *Head over all things to the church*;

Eph. i. 21, iv. 15, Col. i. 18. Who is *with it always, even to the end of the world* :

That the kingdom of Christ, being not of this world, bears no resemblance to the hierarchy and monarchy of the papal kingdom :

That the possessing the see of Rome no more proves the pope to be the successor of St. Peter, than the possessing the city of Constantinople proves the *Great Turk*, to be the successor of Constantine the Great.

That if the pope were the vicar of Christ, (which is not yet proved) still he would have no authority to change or abrogate the laws of his Lord and King ; much less to make laws just contrary to them, or to exempt any from obeying the laws of Christ :

That attempts of this kind denote an adversary, rather than a faithful and upright vicar of Christ.

17. They doubt of these things the more, because the primitive church knew of no such thing as an universal head :

Because no bishop was acknowledged as such, at the time of the council of Nice :

Because Gregory the Great declared, “ He should account any man to be antichrist, who called himself by such a title :”

Because it is apparent that Boniface III. the next pope but one to him, about the year 606, was the first to whom the title of Universal Bishop was given, as a reward for his absolving the tyrant Phocas, after he had murdered his master, the emperor Mauritius, with his empress, and eight children :

Because the succeeding popes acquired one part of their power after another, by various methods, either of fraud or force :

Because many of them have been notoriously wicked men, and encouragers of all manner of wickedness: notwithstanding all which men are required to believe that they were all enlightened by the Holy Ghost, in so extraordinary a manner, as to be rendered infallible ; although one pope was continually contradicting another, and reversing the decrees which his predecessors had most solemnly established.

18. When the Romanists are desired to prove by Scripture, that the pope is the head of the church, they urge, that Christ said to St. Peter, 1. *I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven.* 2. *Feed my lambs ; feed my sheep.*—Therefore—

We answer, These texts by no means prove that Christ made St. Peter himself his vicar ; much less that he gave that dominion to the pope, which he now usurps over the consciences of men.

And hence we are the more clearly convinced,

That the papal power is not of divine original :

And that we have great cause to bless God, whom the pope has excluded from his communion, and thereby restored to that unshaken liberty of conscience, wherein, by the grace of God, we shall always stand.

9. In the proper use of this liberty every member of our church.

Vol. 10.—G

if he gives himself up to the guidance of God's Holy Spirit, may learn the foundation of his faith from the written word of God ;

May read and meditate therein day and night ;

May devoutly pray in the spirit of adoption, like the holy men of ancient times ;

May comfort and quicken himself and others with psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs ;

May enjoy all the ordinances of Christ, according to his own institution ;

May be assured of the remission of his sins, and of his justification through faith in Christ, the Spirit of God witnessing with his spirit, that he is a child of God ;

May study to have a conscience void of offence, both toward God and toward man ;

May freely enjoy every blessing which God hath bestowed upon our church ; and

May make advantage of whatever good the providence of God has still preserved in the church of Rome :

He may cheerfully look for a happy death, and a blessed eternity ;

And, at length, by resting on Christ alone, and patiently partaking of his sufferings, he may, with a certain hope of a resurrection to eternal life, without any fear either of purgatory or hell, resign his spirit into the hand of God, and so be ever with the Lord.

---

## A SHORT METHOD

OF CONVERTING ALL THE ROMAN CATHOLICS,  
IN THE KINGDOM OF IRELAND.

*Humbly proposed to the Bishops and Clergy of that Kingdom.*

---

I. IT is a melancholy consideration to those who love the Protestant interest, that so small a part of this nation is yet reformed from Popery. They cannot observe, without a very sensible concern, that in many parts of the kingdom, there are still ten, nay, fifteen, perhaps upwards of twenty Papists to one Protestant. Nor can they see any prospect of its being otherwise ; few Papists being brought over to our church, notwithstanding all the methods which have been used, while many Protestants are seduced from it.

II. Yet they cannot but earnestly desire, that all the Papists were convinced of their errors. How much would this redound to the glory of God, who willeth all to come to the knowledge of his truth ! How greatly would it advantage their own souls both in this world and in the world to come ! What an advantage would it be to the

kingdom in general to be no longer divided against itself, to have that grand cause of contention removed, and all its inhabitants of one heart and one mind! And how highly would it advance both the honour and interest of our gracious Sovereign, to have all his subjects cordially united together, thinking and speaking the same thing?

III. Why then is not this desirable end pursued with a vigour proportionable to its importance? Is it because we despair of any success? Because we think it impossible to be attained? But why should we imagine it to be impossible? A common and plausible answer is, because the Papists are so bigotted to their clergy; believing all they affirm, however contrary both to Scripture and reason, and doing all that they direct, whom they generally believe to be the holiest and wisest of men.

IV Undoubtedly this is a considerable difficulty in the way. And yet I cannot think it is insurmountable. Still I conceive it is possible to convince all the Papists, provided there are proper instruments for the work. And what instruments are so proper as the clergy? Not only as they are in every place, distributed through the whole nation, and always ready on the spot for the work: but likewise as it more immediately belongs to them: as it is no inconsiderable branch of their business who are peculiarly set apart to *watch over the souls of men as they that must give account.*

V But what way can the clergy take, with any probability of success? There is one way, and one only; one that will (not probably, but) infallibly succeed. If this way is taken, I am willing to stake my life upon the success of it. And it is a plain, simple way, such as may be taken by any man, though but of a small capacity. For it requires no peculiar depth of understanding, no extraordinary height of learning; but only a share of common sense, and an honest, upright heart.

VI. It was observed, that the grand difficulty of the work lies, in the strong attachment of the Papists to their clergy. Here therefore we are to strike at the root. And if this bigotry be but removed, whatever error or superstition is built upon it, will of course fall to the ground.

Now this may be effectually done thus. The Papists themselves allow that one set of clergy were holier and wiser even than their own, namely, the apostles. They allow these both to have lived and preached better than the present clergy even of the Roman church.

Here therefore is the short and sure method. Let all the clergy of the church of Ireland only *live* like the apostles, and *preach* like the apostles, and the thing is done.

The Romans, on the same ground that they prefer the apostles before their own clergy, will then prefer ours before them. And when they once do this, when we have carried this point, when their attachment to our clergy is stronger than that to their own; they will be convinced by hundreds, till there is not a Roman left in the kingdom of Ireland.

VII. If it be asked, But how did the apostles live and preach? I answer, (not to descend to particulars,) as to their inward life, (if I may so speak,) they *lived the life which is hid with Christ in God.* "They were crucified with Christ. Nevertheless they lived; yet not they, but Christ lived in them." So that each of them could say, "The life which I now live in the flesh," even in this mortal body, "I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved ME, and gave himself for ME."

And this faith continually wrought by love, that *love of God* which was *shed abroad in their hearts*, and was a perennial *fountain of water, springing up into everlasting life.*

By this loving faith their hearts were purified from anger, from pride, from all vile affections, from the love of money, of power, of pleasure, of ease, from the desire of the flesh, the desire of the eye, and the pride of life: all their "affections being set on things above, not on things of the earth." In a word, that *mind was in them which was in Christ Jesus.*

Let but this mind be in every clergyman of our church, and Popery will vanish out of the kingdom.

VIII. As to the outward life of the apostles, it was in general, holy and unblamable in all things. Herein did they exercise themselves day and night, with regard to every word and action, "to have a conscience void of offence, toward God and man." And their continual ground of "rejoicing was this, the testimony of their conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity they had their conversation in the world."

They were temperate in all things. They denied themselves, and took up their cross daily. They "kept under their bodies and brought them into subjection," even in the midst of distresses and persecutions; "lest by any means, after they had preached to others, they themselves should become cast-aways."

They were in every respect burning and shining lights; they went about doing good as they had opportunity, doing good of every kind, and in every possible degree, to all men. They abstained from all appearance of evil. They overcame evil with good. If their enemy hungered, they fed him, if he thirsted, they gave him drink; and, by patiently continuing so to do, "heaped coals of fire upon his head," and melted his hardness into love.

In fine, it was their meat and drink, to do the will of their Father which was in heaven. And hence whatsoever they did, whether in word or deed, they did all to the glory of God.

Let every clergyman of our church *live* thus, and, in a short time, there will not be a Papist in the nation.

IX. As to the preaching of the apostles, with regard to the matter of it, they preached Jesus, "the Author and Finisher of our faith, having determined not to know any thing, save Jesus Christ and him crucified." They preached Jesus Christ as "of God made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption." They declared "Other foundation" of morality, religion, holiness,

happiness, "can no man lay." All they spoke either in public or private, centred in this one point, "Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever."

More particularly, they preached, that "a man is justified by faith, without the works of the law;" that "to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness."

X. They preached farther, that "except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God:" except he be "born from above," born not only of water, but "of the Holy Ghost;" and that the present "kingdom of God is not meats and drinks," (lies not in externals of any kind,) *but righteousness*, the image of God on the heart, *peace*, even a peace that passeth all understanding, *and joy in the Holy Ghost*, whereby they rejoiced with joy unspeakable and full of glory.

They declared, that he that is thus "born of God doth not commit sin;" that "he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not;" but that as Christ who hath called him is holy, so is he holy in all manner of conversation.

XI. As to the manner of their preaching, they spoke with authority, as speaking not their own word, but the word of him that sent them, and "by manifestation of the truth, commending themselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God." They were "not as many that corrupt the word of God," debase and adulterate it with foreign mixtures, "but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God, spake they in Christ." They approved themselves the ministers of God, "in much patience, in labours, in watchings, in fastings: by pureness, by knowledge," knowing all their flock by name, all their circumstances, all their wants: "by long-suffering, never weary of well-doing, by kindness, by love unfeigned: by the word of truth, by the power of God attending it, by the armour of righteousness on the right hand, and on the left." Hence they were "instant in season, out of season," being never afraid of the faces of men, never ashamed of Christ or of his words, even before an adulterous and sinful generation. They went on unmoved through "honour and dishonour," through "evil report and good report." They regarded not father or mother, or wife or children, or houses or lands, or ease or pleasure: but having this single end in view, to save their own souls, and those that heard them, they "counted not their lives dear unto themselves, so that they might make full proof of their ministry, so they might finish their course with joy, and testify the gospel of the grace of God."

Let all the right reverend, the bishops, and the reverend the clergy, only walk by this rule: let them thus live, and thus testify with one heart and one voice, the gospel of the grace of God; and every Papist within these four seas, will soon acknowledge the truth as it is in Jesus.

## A LETTER

TO THE PRINTER OF THE PUBLIC ADVERTISER.

OCCASIONED BY THE LATE ACT PASSED IN FAVOUR OF POPERY.

TO WHICH IS ADDED,

A DEFENCE OF IT, IN TWO LETTERS

TO THE EDITORS OF THE FREEMAN'S JOURNAL, DUBLIN.

---

*A Letter to the Printer of the Public Advertiser.*

SIR,

SOME time ago, a pamphlet was sent me, entitled, "*An Appeal from the Protestant Association, to the People of Great Britain.*" A day or two since, a kind of answer to this was put into my hand, which pronounces "its style contemptible, its reasoning futile, and its object malicious." On the contrary, I think the style of it is clear, easy, and natural; the reasoning (in general) strong and conclusive; the object, or design, kind and benevolent. And in pursuance of the same kind and benevolent design, namely, to preserve our happy constitution, I shall endeavour to confirm the substance of that Tract, by a few plain arguments.

With persecution I have nothing to do. I persecute no man for his religious principles. Let there be as "boundless a freedom in religion," as any man can conceive. But this does not touch the point: I will set religion, true or false, utterly out of the question. Suppose the Bible, if you please, to be a fable, and the Koran to be the Word of God. I consider not, whether the Romish religion be true or false; I build nothing on one or the other supposition. Therefore away with all your common-place declamation about intolerance and persecution for religion. Suppose every word of Pope Pius's creed to be true; suppose the Council of Trent to have been infallible: yet, I insist upon it, That no government not Roman Catholic, ought to tolerate men of the Roman Catholic persuasion.

I prove this by a plain argument: (let him answer it that can.) —That no Roman Catholic does or can give security for his allegiance or peaceable behaviour, I prove thus. It is a Roman Catholic maxim, established not by private men, but by a public council, that "No faith is to be kept with heretics." This has been openly avowed by the Council of Constance; but it never was openly disclaimed. Whether private persons avow or disavow it, it is a fixed maxim of the church of Rome. But as long as it is so, nothing can

be more plain, than that the members of that church can give no reasonable security to any government of their allegiance or peaceable behaviour. Therefore, they ought not to be tolerated by any government, Protestant, Mahometan, or Pagan.

You may say, "Nay, but they will take an oath of allegiance." True, five hundred oaths; but the maxim, "No faith is to be kept with heretics," sweeps them all away as a spider's web. So that still, no governors that are not Roman Catholics, can have any security for their allegiance.

Again. Those who acknowledge the *spiritual power* of the Pope can give no security of their allegiance to any government; but all Roman Catholics acknowledge this: therefore, they can give no security for their allegiance.

The power of granting *pardons* for all sins, past, present, and to come, is and has been for many centuries one branch of his *spiritual power*.

But those who acknowledge him to have this spiritual power, can give no security for their allegiance: since they believe the Pope can pardon rebellions, high treason, and all other sins whatsoever.

The power of *dispensing* with any promise, oath, or vow, is another branch of the *spiritual power* of the Pope. And all who acknowledge his spiritual power, must acknowledge this. But whoever acknowledges the *dispensing power* of the Pope can give no security of his allegiance to any government.

Oaths and promises are none; they are light as air, a dispensation makes them all null and void.

Nay, not only the Pope, but even a priest has *power to pardon sins!* —This is an essential doctrine of the church of Rome. But they that acknowledge this, cannot possibly give any security for their allegiance to any government. Oaths are no security at all; for the priest can pardon both perjury and high treason.

Setting then religion aside, it is plain, that upon principles of reason, no government ought to tolerate men, who cannot give any security to that government for their allegiance and peaceable behaviour. But this no Romanist can do, not only while he holds, that "No faith is to be kept with heretics," but so long as he acknowledges either priestly absolution, or the *spiritual power* of the Pope.

"But the late Act," you say, "does not either *tolerate* or *encourage* Roman Catholics." I appeal to matter of fact. Do not the Romanists themselves understand it as a toleration? You know they do. And does it not already, (let alone what it *may* do by-and-by,) *encourage* them to preach openly, to build chapels, (at Bath and elsewhere,) to raise seminaries, and to make numerous converts day by day to their intolerant, persecuting principles? I can point out, if need be, several of the persons. And they are increasing daily.

But "nothing dangerous to English liberty is to be apprehended from them." I am not certain of that. Some time since, a Romish priest came to one I knew; and after talking with her largely, broke

out, "You are no heretic! You have the experience of a real Christian!" "And would you," she asked, "burn me alive?" He said, "God forbid!—Unless it were for the good of the church!"

Now what security could she have had for her life, if it had depended on that man? *The good of the Church* would have burst all ties of truth, justice, and mercy. Especially when seconded by the absolution of a priest, or (if need were) a papal pardon.

If any one please to answer this, and to set his name, I shall probably reply.—But the productions of anonymous writers, I do not promise to take any notice of.

I am, Sir, your humble servant,  
JOHN WESLEY.

City-Road, Jan. 21, 1780.

---

### TO THE READER.

SEVERAL months since, Father O'Leary, a Capuchin Friar, in Dublin, published Remarks upon this Letter in the Freeman's Journal. As soon as these were sent to me, I published a Reply in the same Paper. When I read more of his Remarks, printed in five succeeding Journals, I wrote a second Reply, but did not think it worth while to follow, step by step, so wild, rambling a writer.

Mr. O'Leary has now put his Six Letters into One, which are reprinted in London, with this title, "Mr. O'Leary's Remarks on the Rev. Mr. W's Letters in defence of the Protestant Associations in England: to which are prefixed Mr. Wesley's Letters."

Is it by negligence or by design, that there are so many mistakes even in a titlepage?

1. "To which are prefixed Mr. W's Letters." No: the second of those Letters is not mine. I never saw it before.

2. But where are the two Letters published in the Freeman's Journal? Why is a *spurious* Letter palmed upon us, and the genuine ones suppressed?

3. "Letters in defence of the Protestant Associations in England." Hold! In my first Letter I have only *three lines* in defence of a Tract published in London. But I have not one line "in defence of the Associations," either in London or elsewhere.

If Mr. O'Leary will seriously answer the two following Letters, he may expect a serious Reply. But if he has only drollery and low wit to oppose to argument, I shall concern myself no further about him.

London, Dec. 29, 1780.

## LETTER I.

*To the Editors of the Freeman's Journal.*

GENTLEMEN,

1. Mr. O'Leary does well to entitle his Paper *Remarks*; as that word may mean any thing or nothing; but it is no more an answer to my Letter, than to the *Bull Unigenitus*. He likewise does wisely in prefacing his Remarks with so handsome a compliment: this may naturally incline you to think well of his judgment, which is no small point gained.

2. His manner of writing is easy and pleasant, but might it not as well be more serious? The subject we are treating of is not a light one; it moves me to tears rather than to laughter. I plead for the safety of my country; yea, for the children that are yet unborn. "But cannot your country be safe, unless the Roman Catholics are persecuted for their religion?" Hold! Religion is out of the question: but I would not have them persecuted at all. I would only have them hindered from doing hurt: I would not put it in their power, (and I do not wish that others should,) to cut the throats of their quiet neighbours. "But they will give security for their peaceable behaviour." They cannot while they continue Roman Catholics: they cannot while they are members of that church which receives the decrees of the Council of Constance, which maintains the *spiritual power* of the *Bishop of Rome*, or the doctrine of *priestly absolution*.

3. This I observed in my late Letter; whoever therefore would *remark* upon it to any purpose, must prove these three things: 1. That the decree of the Council of Constance *publicly* made, has been *publicly* disclaimed. 2. That the Pope has not power to *pardon sins*, or to dispense with oaths, vows, and promises: and, 3. That no priest has power to pardon sins. But has Mr. O'Leary proved these three points? Has he proved any one of them? He has indeed said something upon the first. He denies such a decree was ever made.

4. I am persuaded Mr. O'Leary is the first man that ever made the important discovery. But before he is quite sure, let him look again into Father L'Abbe's *Concilia Maxima*, printed at Paris in the year 1672. The last volume contains a particular account of the Council of Constance: one of whose decrees, page 169, is, "That Heretics ought to be put to death, *Non obstantibus salvis conductibus Imperatoris, Regum, &c.*" notwithstanding the public faith engaged to them in the most solemn manner. Who then can affirm that no such doctrine or violation of faith with Heretics is authorized by this Council? Without putting on spectacles, (which, blessed be God, I

do not wear,) I can read a little Latin still. And while I can, I must fix this horrid doctrine on the Council of Constance.

5. But supposing the Council of Constance had never advanced this doctrine, or the church of Rome had publicly disclaimed it; my conclusion stands good till it is proved, 1. That no priest has a power of pardoning sins: and, 2. That the Pope has neither a power of pardoning sins, or of dispensing with oaths, vows, promises, &c.

Mr. O'Leary has proved neither of these, and what has he proved? It is hard to say. But if he proves nothing, he either (directly or indirectly) asserts many things. In particular, he asserts, 1. Mr. Wesley has arraigned in the jargon of the Schools: Heigh-day! What has this to do here? There is no more of the jargon of the Schools in my letter, than there is of Arabic: "The Catholics all over the world are liars, perjurers, &c." Nay, I have not arraigned one of them. This is a capital mistake. I arraign the doctrines, not the men. Either defend *them*, or renounce *them*.

"I do renounce them," says Mr. O'Leary. Perhaps you do. But the Church of Rome has never renounced them. "He asperses our communion in a cruel manner." I do not asperse it at all, in saying, these are the doctrines of the church of Rome. Who can prove the contrary?

2. "Mr. O'Leary did not even attempt to seduce the English soldiery." I believe it; but does this prove any of *these three* points? "But Queen Elizabeth and King James roasted Heretics in Smithfield?" In what year? I doubt the fact.

3. "Mr. Wesley is become an apologist of those who burned the chapel in Edinburgh." Is not this said purely *ad movendam invindiam*? To inflame the minds of the people? For it has no shadow of truth. I never yet wrote, nor spoke one word in their defence. "He urged the rabble to light that fire." No more than he urged them to dethrone the King.

4. "Does Mr. Wesley intend to sound Alecto's horn, or the war-shell of the Mexicans?" All this is cruel aspersion indeed; designed merely to inflame! What I intend, is neither more nor less than this, to contribute my mite to preserve our Constitution both in Church and State.

5. "They were the Scotch and English regicides who gave rise to the Irish massacre!" The Irish massacre!!! Was there ever any such thing? Was not the whole account *a mere Protestant lie*? O no! It was a melancholy truth, written in the blood of many thousands. But the regicides no more gave rise to that massacre than the Hottentots. The whole matter was planned several years, and executed before the King's death was thought of. "But Mr. Wesley is sowing the seeds of another massacre!" Such another as the massacre of Paris!

6. "Was he the trumpeter of persecution, when he was persecuted himself?" Just as much as now. Cruel aspersions still! Designed and calculated only to inflame. "Did he then abet persecution on the score of conscience?" No, nor now. Conscience is out of

the question. "His Letter contains all the horrors, invented by blind misguided zeal, set forth in the most bitter language." Is this gentleman in his senses? I hope not. Else I know not what excuse to make for him. Not one *bitter* word is in my letter. I have learned to put away *all bitterness, with all malice*. But still this is wide of the mark; which of *those three points does it prove!*

7. "In his *second* letter, he promises to put out the fire which he has already kindled in England!" Second letter! What is that? I know nothing of it. "The fire which he has kindled in England."—When?—Where? I have kindled no fire in England any more than in Jamaica. I have done, and will do, all that is in my power, to put out that which others have kindled.

8. "He strikes out a creed of his own for Roman Catholics. This fictitious creed he forces upon them." My words are these: "Suppose every word of Pope Pius's creed to be true." I say not a word more of the matter. Now, I appeal to every *reasonable man*, "Is this striking out a creed of my own for Roman Catholics? Is this forcing a fictitious creed on them, like the Frenchman and the blunderer in the comedy?" What have I to do with one or the other? Is not this *dull jest* quite out of season? And is the creed, composed by the Council of Trent, and the Bull of Pope Pius IV a *fictitious one*? Before Mr. O'L. asserts this again, let him look into the *Concilia Maxima* once more, and read there, "*Bulla Pii Quarti super forma Juramenti professionis fidei*." This *forma professionis fidei*, I call Pope Pius's creed. If his "*stomach revolts from it*," who can help it?

9. Whether the account given by Philip Melancthon of the words spoken (not in Hebrew, but in Latin,) be true or false, it does not at all affect the account of Miss Duchesne, which I gave in her own words. And I cannot but observe, that after all the wittieisms which he has bestowed upon it, Mr. O'Leary does not deny that the *Priest might have burnt her, "had it been for the good of the church."*

10. "*Remark a missionary inflaming the rabble, and propagating black slander.*"—*Remark a SAN BENITO Cap, painted with devils; but let him put it on, whom it fits.* It does not fit me: I inflame no rabble: I propagate no slander at all. But Mr. O'Leary does. He propagates a heap of slander in these his Remarks. I say too, "Let the Appeal be made to the *Public and their impartial reason.*" I have nothing to do with the "*jargon or rubbish of schools,*" lugged in like the jargon of Schools before. But I would be glad if Mr. O'Leary would tell us what these two *pretty* phrases mean?

The whole matter is this. I have without the least bitterness, advanced three reasons, why I conceive it is not safe to tolerate the Roman Catholics. But still I would not have them persecuted: I wish them to enjoy the same liberty, civil and religious, which they enjoyed in England, before the late Act was repealed. Meantime, I would not have a sword put into their hands; I would not give them liberty to hurt others. Mr. O'Leary with much *archness and pleasantry has nibbled at one of these three reasons*, leaving the other

two untouched. If he chooses to attack them in his next, I will endeavour to give him a calm and serious answer.

I am, Gentlemen, your obedient servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

*Manchester, March 23, 1780.*

---

## LETTER II.

*To the Editors of the Freeman's Journal.*

GENTLEMEN,

SOME time ago, in a letter published at London, I observed, "Roman Catholics cannot give those whom they account Heretics, any sufficient security for their peaceable behaviour:"

1. Because it has been publicly avowed in one of their general Councils, and never publicly disclaimed, That faith is not to be kept with Heretics :

2. Because they hold the doctrine of priestly absolution : and,

3. The doctrine of papal pardons and dispensations.

Mr. O'Leary has published *Remarks* on this letter : nine parts in ten of which are quite wide of the mark, not that they are wide of *his* mark, which is to introduce a plausible panegyric upon the Roman Catholics, mixed with keen invectives against the Protestants, whether true or false it matters not. All this is admirably well calculated to inspire the reader with aversion to these Heretics, and to bring them back to the holy, harmless, much-injured church of Rome ! And I should not wonder, if these six papers should make six thousand converts to her.

Close arguing he does not attempt, but he vapours, and skips to and fro, and rambles to all points of the compass, in a very lively and entertaining manner.

Whatever has the face of an argument in his first letter, I answered before. Those of the 14th, 16th, 18th, and 21st instant, I pass over at present : I have now only to do with what he advances in your Journal of March 12.

Here I read, "For Mr. Wesley's Second Letter, see the last page." I have seen it ; but I can find no more in the second Letter in the last page, than in the first. It would be strange if I did ; for that second Letter was never heard of but in Mr. O'Leary's Remarks. "But why then does he mention it over and over ?" Truly I cannot tell.

He begins, "Fanaticism"—Hold ! There is no fanaticism in my Letter, but plain, sober reason. I "now expect" (they are his own words) "a serious answer to a serious charge."

My argument was, The Council of Constance has openly avowed violation of faith with Heretics. But it has never been openly disclaimed. Therefore those who receive this Council, cannot be

trusted by those whom they account Heretics.—This is my immediate conclusion. And if the premises be admitted, it will infallibly follow.

On this, Mr. O'Leary says, "A Council so often quoted, challenges peculiar attention. We shall examine it with all possible precision and impartiality. At a time when the broachers of a new doctrine" (as new as the Bible) "were kindling the fire of sedition, and shaking the foundations of thrones and kingdoms"—Big words, but entirely void of truth;—"was held the Council of Constance. To this, was cited John Huss, famous for propagating errors tending to—wrest the sceptre from the hands of kings."—Equally true. "He was obnoxious to Church and State." To the Church of Rome : not to the State in any degree.

"Protestant and Catholic Legislators enacted laws for burning Heretics." How wisely are these jumbled together ! And the Protestants placed first ! But pray what Protestant Legislator made such laws, either before or after the Catholic ones ?—I know one man, Servetus, was burnt at Geneva ; but I know not that there was any law for it. And I know one woman, Joan Bocher, was burnt in Smithfield, much against the mind of King Edward. But what is this to the numbers who were inhumanly butchered by Queen Mary ? To say nothing of her savage husband. "But the same laws were executed by Queen Elizabeth and King James." How ! Did either of these burn Heretics ? Queen Elizabeth put *two* Anabaptists to death ! But what was this to the achievements of her sister ?

He adds a well-devised apology for the Romish persecutions of the Protestants, as necessarily resulting from the nature of things, and not from any wrong principles. And this he illustrates by the treatment formerly given to the Methodists, whose Love-feasts and Watch-nights "roused the vigilance of the magistrate, and influenced the rage of the rabble." Indeed they did not. Not only no magistrate ever objected either to one or the other, but no mob, even in the most turbulent times, ever interrupted them.

But to the Council. "*Huss* strikes at the root of all temporal power and civil authority. He boldly asserts, That all princes, magistrates, &c. in the state of mortal sin, are deprived, *ipso facto*, of all power and jurisdiction. And, by broaching these doctrines, he makes Bohemia a theatre of intestine war. See the Acts of the Council of Constance in L'Abbe's Collection of Councils."

I have seen them, and I can find nothing of all this therein. But more of this by and by.

"He gave notice that he would stand his trial. But he attempted to escape." No, never : this is pure invention. "He is arrested at Constance," whence he never attempted to escape—"and confined. His friends plead his safe-conduct. The Council then declared, *No safe-conduct granted by the Emperor or any other Princes, to Heretics, ought to hinder them from being punished as Justice shall require. And*

*the person who has promised them security, shall not be obliged to keep his promise, by whatever tie he may be engaged."*

And did the Council of Constance declare this? Yes, says Mr. O'Leary. I desire no more. But before I argue upon the point, permit me to give a little fuller account of the whole affair.

The Council of Constance was called by the Emperor Sigismund, and Pope John the 23d, in the year 1414. Before it began, the Emperor sent some Bohemian gentlemen, to conduct John Huss to Constance, solemnly promising, That he should "come and return freely, without fraud or interruption."

But before he left Prague, he waited on the bishop of Nazareth, Papal Inquisitor for that city and diocess, who, in the presence of many witnesses gave him the following testimonial:—

"We, Nicholas,—do by these presents, make known to all men, That we have often talked with that honourable man, Master John Huss, and in all his sayings, doings, and behaviour, have proved him to be a faithful man; finding no manner of evil, sinister, or erroneous doings in him, unto this present." Prague, August 30, 1414.

This was attested by the hand and seal of the public notary, named Michael Pruthatietz.

After this, Conrade, Archbishop of Prague, declared before all the Barons of Bohemia, That "he knew not that John Huss was culpable or faulty, in any crime or offence whatever."

So neither the Inquisitor nor the Archbishop knew any thing of "his making Bohemia a theatre of intestine war!" In October he began his journey, accompanied with two noblemen, Wencelat de Duba, and John de Clum. On Nov. 3d, he came to Constance, and was treated with great respect. But not long after, he was suddenly arrested and cast into a noisome prison. Here he quickly fell sick. During his sickness, his accusers exhibited twelve articles against him. But none of them charge him with sedition. They relate purely to the Church.

May 14, 1415, the Nobles of Bohemia complained to the Council, "When Master John Huss came to the Council, under the Emperor's safe-conduct, he was, in violation of the public faith, imprisoned before he was heard." They add, "And he is now grievously tormented, both with fetters, and with hunger and thirst."

June 8, his accusers brought thirty-nine articles more, and afterward twenty-six others. But both the former and the latter relate wholly to the Church.

Seven more were brought next. The first of these is, "If the Pope, Bishop, or Prelate, be in deadly sin, he is then no Pope, Bishop, or Prelate." But this he himself explains in the same tract whence it is taken. "Such, as touching their deserts, are not worthily Popes or Pastors before God: yet as touching their office, are Popes and Pastors."

After these, six more articles were exhibited, but all relate to the Church, as do nineteen more that followed them. In fine, nineteen others were preferred by the Chancellor and University of Paris.

One of these was, "No man being in deadly sin, is a true Pope, Prelate, or Lord." This seems to be the same with the preceding charge; only they have mended it by adding the word *Lord*. Another was, "Subjects ought publicly to reprove the vices of their rulers." It does not appear, that ever he held this.

In the seventeenth session, the sentence and condemnation of John Huss was read and published. The emperor then commanded the Duke of Bavaria to deliver him to the executioners; for which glorious exploit he was thus addressed by the bishop of Landy, in the name of the Council: "This most holy and godly labour was reserved only for Thee, O most noble Prince! Upon thee only doth it lie, to whom the whole rule and ministration of justice is given. Wherefore thou hast established thy praise and renown; even by the mouths of babes and sucklings thy praise shall be celebrated for evermore."

From this whole transaction we may observe, 1. That John Huss was guilty of no crime, either in word or action; even his enemies, the archbishop of Prague, and the Papal inquisitor, being judges.

2. That he never preached or wrote any thing tending to sedition: neither was there in fact any sedition, much less intestine war in Bohemia, while he ministered there.

3. That his real fault, and his only one was, opposing the Papal usurpations.

4. That this "most noble Prince" was a bigotted, cruel, perfidious murderer, and that the fathers of the council deserve the same praise, seeing they urged him to imbrue his hands in innocent blood, in violation of the public faith, and extolled him to the skies for so doing. And, seeing they have laid it down as a maxim, That the most solemn promise, made to a heretic, may be broken.

But says Mr. O'L. "This regards the peculiar case of safe-conducts granted by princes to heretics." If you mean, they took occasion from a particular case, to establish a general rule; this is true. But what then? If the public faith with heretics may be violated in one instance, it may be in a thousand. "But can the rule be extended farther?" It may; it must; we cannot tell where to stop. Away then with your witticisms on so awful a subject. What, do you sport with human blood? I take burning men alive to be a very serious thing. I pray, spare your jests on the occasion.

But you have another plea. "Sigismund only promised to guard him from any violence in *going* to the council." Why this was just nothing. What man in his wits would have moved a step upon such a promise as this? "But this was all it was in his power to do." It was not. It was in his power to have told the council, "My own honour, and yours, and that of the empire, are at stake. I will not upon any account suffer the public faith to be violated: I will not make myself infamous to all generations. My name shall not stink to all future ages. I will rather part with my empire, with my life." He could have taken John Huss out of their hands, and have sent him safe to his own country. He would have done it, had he been

an honest man ; had he had either honour or conscience. I ask Mr. O'L. Would not *you* have done it, had you been in Sigismund's place ? If you say, "No," a Protestant ought not to trust you, any more than he would trust a wild bull.

I am afraid, this is the case ; for you strangely add, "It was nugatory in Sigismund, to grant him a safe-conduct. For neither king nor emperor could deprive the bishops of their right of judging," (add, and murdering heretics.) It is plain, Sigismund thought he could, that he could screen Huss from all dangers ; else he had been both a fool and a knave to promise it ; especially by a public instrument which pledged his own honour and that of the whole empire for his safety.

Now for flourish. "Thus the superannuated charge of *violation of faith with heretics*"—No more superannuated now than it was while John Huss was in the flames—"vanishes way."—No, nor ever will. It still stares us in the face, and will do so, till another general council publicly and explicitly repeals that infamous determination of the Council of Constance, and declares the burning of John Huss to have been an open violation of all justice, mercy, and truth. But flourish on ! "The foundation then of Mr. W's aerial fabric being sapped,"—not at all,—"the superstructure falls of course, and his long train of false and unchristian assertions."—What can this mean ? I know of no *long train of assertions*, whether true or false ! I use three arguments and no more, in proof of one conclusion.

"What more absurd, than to insist on a general council's disclaiming a doctrine which they never taught ?" They *did* teach it ; and that not by the by, not incidentally ; but they laid it down as a stated rule of action, dictated by the Holy Ghost. I quote chapter and verse. I say too, "See L'Abbe's Councils," printed at Paris, in 1672. Yea, and they were not ashamed to publish this determination to all the Christian world ! And to demonstrate their sincerity therein, by burning a man alive. And this Mr. O'L. humorously compares, to the roasting a piece of beef ! With equal tenderness I suppose he would compare, the "making the beards of heretics," (that is, thrusting a burning furze-bush in their face) to the singing a fowl before it was roasted.

"It is sufficient to disclaim it, when it is fixed upon us." Then disclaim it without delay ; for it is fixed upon you, to all intents and purposes. Nay, and you fix it upon yourselves, in every new edition of the councils ; in all of which this council stands in *eternam rei memoriam*, and this very determination, without the least touch of blame ! It must therefore stand as an avowed doctrine of the Church of Rome, that "Heretics ought to be condemned and executed, notwithstanding the most solemn assurances to the contrary : " in other words, that, "*The public faith, even that of kings and emperors, ought not to be kept with heretics.*"

What security then for my life can any man give me, till he utterly renounces the Council of Constance ? What security can any

Romanist give a Protestant, till this doctrine is publicly abjured? If Mr. O'Leary has any thing more to plead for this Council, I shall follow him step by step. But let him keep his word, and "give a serious answer to a serious charge." "Drollery may come in, when we are talking of roasting fowls;" but not when we talk of "roasting men."

Would I then wish the Roman Catholics to be persecuted? I never said or hinted any such thing. I abhor the thought: it is foreign to all I have preached and written for these fifty years. But I would wish the Romanists in England, (I had no others in view,) to be treated still with the same lenity that they have been these sixty years: to be allowed both civil and religious liberty, but not permitted to undermine ours. I wish them to stand just as they did, before the late Act was passed: not to be persecuted or hurt themselves; but gently restrained from hurting their neighbours.

I am, Gentlemen, your obedient servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

*Chester, March 31, 1780.*

### A DISAVOWAL OF PERSECUTING PAPISTS.

I have read a tract lately sent me, and will now give my free thoughts upon the subject.

I set out early in life with an utter abhorrence of persecution in every form, and a full conviction that every man has a right to worship God according to his own conscience. Accordingly, more than fifty years ago, I preached on those words, "Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of: for the Son of Man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them." And I preached on the same text, in London, the fifth of last November. And this I extend to members of the Church of Rome, as well as to all other men.

I agree not only that many of these in former ages were good men, (as Thomas à Kempis, Francis Sales, and the Marquis de Renty,) but that many of them are so at this day. I believe I know some Roman Catholics, who sincerely love both God and their neighbour, and who steadily endeavour to do unto every one, as they wish him to do unto them.

But I cannot say, this is a general case: nay, I am fully convinced, it is not. The generality of Roman Catholics wherever I have been, are of the same principles, and the same spirit with their forefathers. And indeed, if they held the same principles, it could not be doubted, but they would be of the same practice too, if opportunity should serve.

Those principles, openly avowed by their forefathers, of priestly absolution, Papal indulgences, and No faith to be kept with heretics, have never been openly and authoritatively disavowed, even unto this day. And until they are, a Roman Catholic, consistent with his principles, cannot be trusted by a Protestant.

For the same principles naturally tend to produce the same spirit, and the same practice. Very lately, a person seeing many flocking to a place, which she did not know was a Roman chapel, innocently said, What do all these people want? And was answered by one of them, with great vehemence, "We want *your blood*. And we will have it soon."

On Friday last I dined with a gentlewoman, whose father, living in Dublin, was very intimate with a Roman Catholic gentleman. Having invited him to dinner one day, in the course of conversation, Mrs. Gr—— asked him, "Sir, would you really cut my husband's throat, if your priest commanded you?" He answered honestly, "Madam, Mr. Gr—— is my friend. And I love him well: but I must obey the church." "Sir," said she, "I beg I may never more see you within my doors."

But still, be their principles what they will, I would not persecute them. So persecution is utterly out of the question. I know no one that pleads for it. Therefore the writing or talking against it, is time lost: it is proving what no one denies.

And the Romanists never have been persecuted in England since I remember. They have enjoyed a full toleration. I wish them to enjoy the same toleration still; neither more nor less.

I would not hurt a hair of their head. Meantime I would not put it into their power to hurt me, or any other persons whom they believe to be heretics. I steer the middle way. I would neither kill, nor be killed. I would not use the sword against them; nor put it into their hands, lest they should use it against *me*: I wish them well: but I dare not trust them.

But still I say, persecution is out of the question. And I look on all vague declamations upon it, which have been lately poured out, as either mere flourishes of persons who think they talk prettily, or artful endeavours to puzzle the cause, and to throw dust into the eyes of honest Englishmen.

*Bristol, March 18, 1782.*

---

THE

ORIGIN OF IMAGE-WORSHIP AMONG CHRISTIANS.

---

WHEN Christianity was first preached in the world, it was supported by such miraculous assistance of the divine power, that there was need of little or no human aid to the propagation of it. Not only the Apostles, who first preached it, but even the lay-believers were sufficiently instructed in all the articles of faith, and were inspired

with the power of working miracles, and the gift of speaking in languages unknown to them before.

But when the gospel was spread, and had taken root through the world; when kings and princes became Christians, and when temples were built and magnificently adorned for Christian worship; then the zeal of some well-disposed Christians brought pictures into the churches, not only as ornaments, but as instructors of the ignorant; and from thence they were called *libri laicorum*, the books of the people. Thus the walls of the churches were beset with pictures, representing all the particular transactions mentioned. And they, who did not understand a letter of a book, knew how to give a very good account of the gospel, being taught to understand the particular passages of it in the pictures of the church. Thus, as hieroglyphics were the first means of propagating knowledge, before writing by letters and words was invented; so the more ignorant people were taught compendiously by pictures, what, by the scarcity of teachers, they had not an opportunity of being otherwise fully instructed in.

But these things, which were at first intended for good, became, by the Devil's subtlety, a snare for the souls of Christians. For when Christian princes, and the rich and great, vied with one another who should embellish the temples with greatest magnificence, the pictures upon the walls were turned into gaudy images upon the altars; and the people being deceived by the outward appearance of the priest's bowing and kneeling (before those images) as the different parts of their devotion led them, they imagined that those gestures were designed to do honour to the images, before which they were performed. (which they certainly were not;) and so from admiring, the people came to adore them. Thus, what were at first designed as monuments of edification, became the instruments of superstition. This being a fatal oversight in the clergy, at first, neglected, or winked at, by degrees, (as all errors have crept into the church,) gathered strength; so that, from being in the beginning, the dotage of the ignorant vulgar, the poison infected those of better rank, and by their influence and countenance, brought some of the priests over to their opinion, or rather those priests were the occasion of deceiving the rich and powerful; especially the female sex, for ends not very reputable or agreeable to the integrity of their profession. But so it was, that what the priests at first winked at, they afterwards gave countenance to; and what they once countenanced, they thought themselves obliged in honour to defend; till at last, superstition came to be preached from the pulpits, and gross idolatry obtruded upon the people for true devotion.

It is true, there were many of the sacred order, whose sound hearts and clear heads, were very averse to this innovation; who both preached and wrote against the worship of images, showing both the wickedness and folly of it. But the disease was so far spread, and the poison had taken such root, that the consequence of opposition was the dividing the church into parties and schisms, and at last proceeded to blood and slaughter.

N. B. Is it not marvellous that what was so simple in the beginning, should degenerate into such idolatry as is scarcely to be found in the Heathen world! While this, and several other errors, equally contrary to Scripture and reason, are found in the church, together with the abominable lives of multitudes who call themselves Christians; the very name of Christianity must stink in the nostrils of the Mahometans, Jews, and Infidels.

---

## REASONS AGAINST A SEPARATION

FROM

THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

---

WHETHER it be *lawful* or not, (which itself may be disputed, being not so clear a point as some may imagine,) it is by no means *expedient* for us to separate from the established Church:

1. Because it would be a contradiction to the solemn and repeated declarations which we have made in all manner of ways, in preaching, in print, and in private conversation:

2. Because, (on this as well as on many other accounts,) it would give huge occasion of offence to those who seek and desire occasion to all the enemies of God and his truth:

3. Because it would exceedingly prejudice against us many who fear, yea, who love God, and thereby hinder their receiving so much, perhaps any further, benefit from our preaching:

4. Because it would hinder multitudes of those who neither love nor fear God, from hearing us at all:

5. Because it would occasion many hundreds, if not some thousands of those who are now united with us, to separate from us; yea, and some of those who have a deep work of grace in their souls:

6. Because it would be throwing balls of wild-fire among them that are now quiet in the land. We are now sweetly united together in love. We mostly think and speak the same thing. But this would occasion inconceivable strife and contention, between those who left, and those who remained in the Church, as well as between those who left us, and those who remained with us: nay, and between those very persons who remained, as they were variously inclined one way or the other:

7. Because, whereas controversy is now asleep, and we in a great measure live peaceably with all men, so that we are strangely at leisure to spend our whole time and strength in enforcing plain, practical, vital religion, (O what would many of our forefathers have given, to have enjoyed so blessed a calm!) This would utterly banish peace

from among us, and that without hope of its return. It would engage me for one, in a thousand controversies, both in public and private; (for I should be in conscience obliged to give the reasons of my conduct, and to defend those reasons against all opposers,) and so take me off from those more useful labours, which might otherwise employ the short remainder of my life:

8. Because to form the plan of a new church would require infinite time and care, (which might be far more profitably bestowed,) with much more wisdom and greater depth and extensiveness of thought, than any of us are masters of:

9. Because from some having barely entertained a distant thought of this, evil fruits have already followed, such as prejudice against the clergy in general; and aptness to believe ill of them; contempt (not without a degree of bitterness) of clergymen as such, and a sharpness of language toward the whole order, utterly unbecoming either gentlemen or Christians:

10. Because the experiment has been so frequently tried already, and the success never answered the expectation. God has, since the reformation, raised up from time to time many witnesses of pure religion. If these lived and died (like John Arndt, Robert Bolton, and many others,) in the churches to which they belonged, notwithstanding the wickedness which overflowed both the teachers and people therein; they spread the leaven of true religion far and wide, and were more and more useful, till they went to paradise. But if upon any provocation or consideration whatever, they separated, and founded distinct parties, their influence was more and more confined; they grew less and less useful to others, and generally lost the spirit of religion themselves in the spirit of controversy:

11. Because we have melancholy instances of this, even now before our eyes. Many have in our memory left the Church, and formed themselves into distinct bodies. And certainly some of them from a real persuasion, that they should do God more service. But have any separated themselves and prospered? Have they been either more holy, or more useful than they were before?

12. Because by such a separation we should not only throw away the peculiar glorying, which God has given us, that we do and will suffer all things for our brethren's sake, though the more we love them, the less we be loved: but should act in direct contradiction to that very end, for which we believe God hath raised us up. The chief design of his providence in sending us out, is undoubtedly to quicken our brethren. And the first message of all our preachers is, to the lost sheep of the Church of England. Now would it not be a flat contradiction to this design, to separate from the Church? These things being considered, we cannot apprehend, (whether it be lawful in itself or not,) that it is lawful for us: were it only on this ground, that it is by no means expedient.

II. It has indeed been objected, that till we do separate, we cannot be a compact, united body.

It is true, we cannot till then be *a compact, united body*, if you mean

by that expression, a body distinct from all others. And we have no desire so to be.

It has been objected, secondly, "It is mere cowardice and fear of persecution which makes you desire to remain united with them."

This cannot be proved. Let every one examine his own heart, and not judge his brother.

It is not probable. We never yet, for any persecution, when we were in the midst of it, either turned back from the work, or even slackened our pace.

But this is certain: that although persecution many times proves an unspeakable blessing to them that suffer it, yet we ought not wilfully to bring it upon ourselves. Nay, we ought to do whatever can lawfully be done, in order to prevent it. We ought, to avoid it so far as we lawfully can, when persecuted in one city, to flee into another. If God should suffer a general persecution, who would be able to abide it, we know not. Perhaps those who talk loudest might flee first. Remember the case of Dr. Pendleton.

III. Upon the whole, one cannot but observe, how desirable it is, that all of us who are engaged in the same work, should think and speak the same thing, be united in one judgment, and use one and the same language.

Do we not all now see *ourselves*, the *Methodists* (so called) in general, *the Church*, and *the clergy* in a clear light?

We look upon *ourselves*, not as the authors, or ringleaders of a particular sect or party; (it is the farthest thing from our thoughts;) but as messengers of God, to those who are Christians in name, but Heathens in heart and in life, to call them back to that from which they are fallen, to real, genuine Christianity. We are therefore debtors to all these, of whatever opinion or denomination: and are consequently to do all that in us lies, to please all, for their good to edification.

We look upon the Methodists (so called) in general, not as any particular party: (this would exceedingly obstruct the grand design, for which we conceive God has raised them up) but as living witnesses in, and to every party, of that Christianity which we preach: which is hereby demonstrated to be a real thing, and visibly held out to all the world.

We look upon England as that part of the world, and *the Church* as that part of England, to which all we, who were born and have been brought up therein, owe our first and chief regard. We feel in ourselves a strong *Σταργη*, a kind of natural affection for our country, which we apprehend Christianity was never designed either to root out, or to impair. We have a more peculiar concern for our brethren, for that part of our countrymen, to whom we have been joined from our youth up, by ties of a religious as well as a civil nature. True it is, that they are in general, *without God in the world*. So much the more do our bowels yearn over them. They do lie *in darkness and the shadow of death*. The more tender is our compassion for them. And when we have the fullest conviction of that complicated wickedness which covers them as a flood, then do we feel the most (and we

desire to feel yet more) of that inexpressible emotion, with which our blessed Lord beheld Jerusalem, and wept and lamented over it. Then are we the most willing to *spend and to be spent* for them, yea, to *lay down our lives for our brethren*.

We look upon the *clergy*, not only as part of these our brethren, but as that part whom God by his adorable providence, has called to be watchmen over the rest, for whom therefore they are to give a strict account. If these then neglect their important charge, if they do not watch over them with all their power, they will be of all men most miserable, and so are entitled to our deepest compassion. So that to feel, and much more to express either contempt or bitterness toward them, betrays an utter ignorance of ourselves and of the spirit which we especially should be of.

Because this is a point of uncommon concern, let us consider it a little farther.

The clergy, wherever we are, are either friends to the truth, or neutrals, or enemies to it.

If they are friends to it, certainly we should do every thing, and omit every thing we can with a safe conscience, in order to continue, and if it be possible, increase their good-will to it.

If they neither further nor hinder it, we should do all that in us lies, both for their sakes and for the sake of their several flocks, to give their neutrality the right turn, that it may change into love rather than hatred.

If they are enemies, still we should not despair of lessening, if not removing their prejudice. We should try every means again and again. We should employ all our care, labour, prudence, joined with fervent prayer, to overcome evil with good, to melt their hardness into love.

It is true, that when any of these openly wrest the Scriptures, and deny the grand truths of the gospel, we cannot but declare and defend, at convenient opportunities, the important truths which they deny. But in this case especially we have need of all gentleness and meekness of wisdom. Contempt, sharpness, bitterness, can do no good. *The wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.* Harsh methods have been tried again and again, (by two or three unsettled railers,) at Wednesbury, St. Ives, Cork, Canterbury. And how did they succeed? They always occasioned numberless evils; often wholly stopped the course of the gospel. Therefore, were it only on a prudential account, were conscience unconcerned therein, it should be a sacred rule to all our preachers, *No contempt, no bitterness to the clergy.*

2. Might it not be another (at least prudential) rule, for every Methodist preacher, *Not to frequent any dissenting meeting?* (Though we blame none who have been always accustomed to it,) but if we do this, certainly our people will. Now this is actually separating from the Church. If therefore it is (at least) not expedient to separate, neither is this expedient. Indeed we may attend our assemblies, and the Church too; because they are at different hours. But we

cannot attend both the meeting and the Church, because they are at the same hours.

If it be said, "But at the Church we are fed with chaff, whereas at the meeting we have wholesome food:" we answer, 1. The prayers of the Church are not chaff: they are substantial food for any who are alive to God. 2. The Lord's Supper is not chaff, but pure and wholesome for all who receive it with upright hearts. Yea, 3. In almost all the sermons we hear there, we hear many great and important truths. And whoever has a spiritual discernment, may easily separate the chaff from the wheat therein. 4. How little is the case mended at the meeting! Either the teachers are *new-light-men*, denying the Lord that bought them, and overturning his gospel from the very foundations: or they are Predestinarians, and so preach predestination and final perseverance, more or less. Now whatever this may be to them who were educated therein, yet to those of our brethren who have lately embraced it, repeated experience shows it is not wholesome food: rather to them it has the effect of deadly poison. In a short time it destroys all their zeal for God. They grow fond of opinions and strife of words. They despise self-denial and the daily cross; and, to complete all, wholly separate from their brethren.

3. Nor is it expedient for any Methodist preacher, to imitate the dissenters in their manner of praying, either in his *tone*: all particular tones both in prayer and preaching should be avoided with the utmost care: nor in his *language*: all his words should be plain and simple, such as the lowest of his hearers both use and understand: or in the *length* of his prayer, which should not usually exceed four or five minutes, either before or after sermon. One might add, neither should we sing, like them, in a slow, drawling manner: we sing swift, both because it saves time, and because it tends to awake and enliven the soul.

4. Fourthly, If we continue in the Church not by chance, or for want of thought, but upon solid and well-weighed reasons, then we should never speak contemptuously of the Church, or any thing pertaining to it. In some sense it is the mother of us all, who have been brought up therein. We ought never to make her blemishes matter of diversion, but rather of solemn sorrow before God. We ought never to talk ludicrously of them; no, not at all, without clear necessity. Rather, we should conceal them, as far as ever we can, without bringing guilt upon our own consciences. And we should all use every rational and scriptural means, to bring others to the same temper and behaviour. I say, *all*: for if some of us are thus minded, and others of an opposite spirit and behaviour, this will breed a real schism among ourselves. It will of course divide us into two parties: each of which will be liable to perpetual jealousies, suspicions, and animosities against the other. Therefore on this account likewise, it is expedient in the highest degree, that we should be tender of the Church to which we belong.

5. In order to secure this end, to cut off all jealousy and suspicion from our friends, and hope from our enemies, of our having any de-

sign to separate from the Church, it would be well for every Methodist preacher, who has no scruple concerning it, to attend the service of the Church as often as conveniently he can. And the more we attend it, the more we love it, as constant experience shows. On the contrary, the longer we abstain from it, the less desire we have to attend it at all.

6. Lastly, Whereas we are surrounded on every side, by those who are equally enemies to us and to the Church of England; and whereas these are long practised in this war, and skilled in all the objections against it: while our brethren on the other hand are quite strangers to them all, and so on a sudden know not how to answer them: it is highly expedient for every preacher to be provided with sound answers to those objections, and then to instruct the societies where he labours, how to defend themselves against those assaults. It would be therefore well for you carefully to read over the *Preservative against unsettled Notions in Religion*, together with *Serious Thoughts concerning Perseverance, and Predestination calmly considered*. And when you are masters of them yourselves, it will be easy for you to recommend and explain them to our societies: that they may *no more be tost to and fro by every wind of doctrine*; but being settled in one mind and one judgment, by solid scriptural and rational arguments, *may grow up in all things into him who is our head, even Jesus Christ*.

JOHN WESLEY.

---

I THINK myself bound in duty to add my testimony to my brother's. His twelve reasons against our ever separating from the Church of England, are mine also. I subscribe to them with all my heart. Only with regard to the first, I am quite clear, that it is neither expedient, nor *lawful for me* to separate: and I never had the least inclination or temptation so to do. My affection for the Church is as strong as ever: and I clearly see my calling; which is, to live and to die in her communion. This, therefore, I am determined to do. the Lord being my helper.

CHARLES WESLEY

---

*Thoughts on Separation from the Church.*

MY DEAR FRIEND,

THE question properly refers (when we speak of a separation from the Church) to a *total* and *immediate* separation, such was that of Mr. Ingham's people first, and afterwards that of Lady Huntingdon's, who all agreed to form themselves into a separate body *without delay*: to go to church no more, and to have no more connexion with the Church of England, than with the Church of Rome.

Such a separation I have always declared against, and certainly it will not take place (if ever it does) while I live. But a kind of

separation has already taken place and will inevitably spread, though by slow degrees. Those ministers, so called, who neither live nor preach the gospel, I dare not say, are sent of God. Where one of these is settled, many of the Methodists dare not attend his ministry; so if there be no other church in that neighbourhood, they go to church no more. This is the case in a few places already, and it will be the case in more, and no one can justly blame *me* for this, neither is it contrary to any of my professions.

J. W.

*Bristol, Sept. 20, 1788.*

*On the Church : in a Letter to the Rev. ———.*

*Plymouth Dock, Aug. 19, 1785.*

REV. SIR,

I WILL tell you my thoughts with all simplicity, and wait for better information. If you agree with me, well: if not, we can (as Mr. Whitefield used to say,) agree to disagree.

For these forty years I have been in doubt concerning that question: "What Obedience is due to Heathenish Priests and Mitred Infidels?"

I have from time to time proposed my doubts to the most pious and sensible Clergymen I knew. But they gave me no satisfaction: rather they seemed to be puzzled as well as I. Some obedience I always paid to the Bishops, in obedience to the laws of the land. But I cannot see, that I am under any obligation to obey them farther than those laws require.

It is in obedience to those laws, that I have never exercised in England the power which I believe God has given me. I firmly believe, I am a scriptural *Επισκοπος* as much as any man in England or in Europe. (For the *Uninterrupted Succession* I know to be a fable, which no man ever did or can prove.) But this does in nowise interfere with my remaining in the Church of England: from which I have no more desire to separate than I had fifty years ago. I still attend all the Ordinances of the Church, at all opportunities. And I constantly and earnestly desire all that are connected with me so to do. When Mr. Smyth pressed us to "separate from the Church," he meant, "Go to Church no more." And this was what I meant seven and twenty years ago, when I persuaded our brethren "Not to separate from the Church." But here another question occurs, "What is the Church of England?" It is not "all the people of England." Papists and Dissenters are no part thereof. It is not all the people of England except Papists and Dissenters. Then we should have a glorious Church indeed! No: according to our twentieth article, a particular Church is "a congregation of faithful people (*Cœtus credentium*, the words in our Latin edition,) among whom the Word of God is preached, and the sacraments duly ad-

ministered." Here is a true logical definition, containing both the essence and the properties of a Church. What then, according to this definition, is the Church of England? Does it mean all the believers in England, (except the Papists and Dissenters) who have the Word of God and the sacraments duly administered among them?" I fear this does not come up to your idea of "The Church of England." Well, what more do you include in that phrase? "Why, all the believers that adhere to the doctrine and discipline established by the Convocation under Queen Elizabeth." Nay; that discipline is well nigh vanished away, and the doctrine both you and I adhere to.

All those reasons against a separation from the Church in this sense, I subscribe to still. What then are you frightened at? I no more separate from it now, than I did in the year 1758. I submit still (though sometimes with a doubting conscience,) to Mitred Infidels. I do indeed vary from them in some points of doctrine and in some points of discipline, (by preaching abroad, for instance, by praying extempore, and by forming societies.) But not a hair's breadth further than I believe to be meet, right, and my bounden duty. I walk still by the same rule I have done for between forty and fifty years. I do nothing rashly. It is not likely I should. The high-day of my blood is over. If you will go hand in hand with me, do. But do not hinder me, if you will not help. Perhaps if you had kept closely to me, I might have done better. However, with or without help, I creep on. And as I have been hitherto, so I trust I shall always be,

Your affectionate Friend and Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

### *Further Thoughts on Separation from the Church.*

1. FROM a child I was taught to love and reverence the Scriptures, the Oracles of God: and next to these, to esteem the Primitive Fathers, the writers of the three first centuries. Next after the Primitive Church, I esteemed our own, the Church of England, as the most scriptural, national Church in the world. I therefore, not only asserted to all the doctrines, but observed all the rubric in the Liturgy; and that with all possible exactness, even at the peril of my life.

2. In this judgment, and with this spirit, I went to America, strongly attached to the Bible, the Primitive Church, and the Church of England, from which I would not vary in one jot or tittle on any account whatever. In this spirit I returned as regular a clergyman as any in the three kingdoms: till after not being permitted to preach in the Churches, I was constrained to *preach in the open air*.

3. Here was my first *irregularity*. And it was not voluntary, but constrained. The second was *extemporary* prayer. This likewise

I believed to be my bounden duty, for the sake of those who desired me to watch over their souls. I could not in conscience refrain from it: neither from accepting those who desired to serve me *as sons in the gospel*.

4. When the people joined together, simply to help each other to heaven, increased by hundreds and thousands, still they had no more thought of leaving the Church than of leaving the kingdom. Nay, I continually and earnestly cautioned them against it; reminding them that we were a part of the Church of England, whom God had raised up not only to save our own souls, but to enliven our neighbours, those of the Church in particular. And at the first meeting of all our Preachers in Conference, in June 1744, I exhorted them to keep to the Church, observing that this was our peculiar glory, Not to form any new sect, but abiding in our own Church, to do to all men all the good we possibly could.

5. But as more Dissenters joined with us, many of whom were much prejudiced against the Church, these, with or without design, were continually infusing their own prejudices into their brethren. I saw this, and gave warning of it from time to time, both in private and in public. And in the year 1758, I resolved to bring the matter to a fair issue. So I desired the point might be considered at large, Whether it was expedient for the Methodists to leave the Church? The arguments on both sides were discussed for several days; and at length we agreed, without a dissenting voice, "It is by no means expedient that the Methodists should leave the Church of England."

6. Nevertheless, the same leaven continued to work in various parts of the kingdom. The grand argument (which in some particular cases must be acknowledged to have weight) was this: "The minister of the parish wherein we dwell, neither lives nor preaches the Gospel. He walks in the way to hell himself, and teaches his flock to do the same. Can you advise them to attend his preaching?" I cannot advise them to it. "What then can they do, on the Lord's-Day, suppose no other Church be near? Do you advise them to go to a dissenting Meeting? Or to meet in their own Preaching-house?" Where this is really the case, I cannot blame them if they do. Although, therefore, I earnestly oppose the *general* separation of the Methodists from the Church, yet I cannot condemn such a *partial* separation, in this particular case. I believe to separate thus far from these miserable wretches, who are the scandal of our Church and nation, would be for the honour of our Church, as well as to the glory of God.

7. And this is no way contrary to the profession which I have made above these fifty years. I never had any design of separating from the Church. I have no such design now. I do not believe, the Methodists in general design it, when I am no more seen. I do, and will do, all that is in my power to prevent such an event. Nevertheless, in spite of all that I can do, many of them will separate from it; (although I am apt to think, not one half, perhaps not a third of them.) These will be so bold and injudicious, as to form

a separate party, which consequently will dwindle away, into a dry, dull, separate party. In flat opposition to these, I declare once more, that I live and die a member of the Church of England: and that none who regard my judgment or advice, will ever separate from it.

JOHN WESLEY.

London, Dec. 11, 1789.

---

*Thoughts on the Consecration of CHURCHES and BURIAL-GROUNDS.*

1. IT has been a custom for some ages, in Roman Catholic countries, to have a particular form of consecration, for all Churches and Chapels: and not for these only, but for every thing pertaining to them; such as fonts, chalices, bells, sacerdotal vestments, and church-yards in particular. And all these customs universally prevailed in England, as long as it was under the papal power.

2. From the time of our Reformation from Popery, most of these customs fell into disuse. Unconsecrated bells were rung without scruple, and unconsecrated vestments worn. But some of them remained still: the consecration of churches and church-yards in particular: and many scrupled the performing divine service in an *unconsecrated church*: and could not consent that their bodies should be buried in *unconsecrated ground*.

3. Accordingly the consecrating of churches and church-yards has been practised in England ever since. But it is a thing purely indifferent, being neither forbidden, nor established by law. The case is different in Ireland. While the Earl of Stafford was lord-lieutenant of that kingdom, a law was made for the *consecration* not only of churches, but of church-yards also. And a form of consecration for both was inserted in the Common Prayer-book, which is used at this day: much resembling that which Archbishop Laud used, in the consecration of St. Katherine-Creed's Church, in London.

4. But such a law has never passed in England, much less been inserted in our Common Prayer-book. However, such consecration has been generally practised, though not authorized by the Legislature. "Is it then illegal?" That word is capable of a two-fold meaning. It may mean, either *without* any law in its favour, or against law. I do not conceive it to be illegal, in the latter sense. Perhaps it is in the former: I do not know any law that enjoins, or even permits it.

5. And certainly as it is not enjoined by the law of the land, so it is not enjoined by the law of God. Where do we find one word in the New Testament enjoining any such thing? Neither do I remember any precedent of it in the purest ages of the Church. It seems to have entered, and gradually spread itself, with the other innovations and superstitions of the Church of Rome. "Do you think it

then a superstitious practice?" Perhaps it is not, if it be practised as a thing indifferent. But if it be done as a *necessary* thing, then it is flatly superstitious.

6. For this reason I never wished that any bishop should consecrate any chapel or burial-ground of mine. Indeed I should not dare to suffer it; as I am clearly persuaded, the thing is wrong in itself, being not authorized either by any law of God, or by any law of the land. In consequence of which I conceive, that either the clerk or the sexton may as well consecrate the Church, or the Church-yard, as the bishop.

7 With regard to the latter, the church-yard, I know not who could answer that plain question: you say, "This is *consecrated ground*, so many feet *broad*, and so many *long*." But pray, how *deep* is the consecrated ground?—"Deep! What does that signify?" O, a great deal! for if any grave be dug too *deep*, I may happen to get out of the *consecrated ground*! And who can tell, what unhappy consequences may follow from this!

8. I take the whole of this practice to be a mere relic of Romish superstition. And I wonder that any sensible Protestant should think it right to countenance it: much more that any reasonable man should plead for the necessity of it! Surely it is high time now, that we should be guided, not by custom, but by Scripture and Reason.

J. W.

Dumfries, May 14, 1788.

---

*An Answer to an Important Question.*

Armagh, June 18, 1787.

DEAR SIR,

You ask, "Why do not the Clergy, whether in England or Ireland, avail themselves of the Methodist Preachers?" You say, "You wonder they do not thankfully accept of their assistance, who desire no pay for their service, in repressing error and wickedness of every kind, and propagating truth and religion?" You inquire, "upon what rational principles can this be accounted for?"

To give a complete answer to this question, would require a whole treatise. I have not leisure for this: but I will give as full an answer as my time will permit.

Only before I answer, I must observe, that many both of the English and Irish Clergy, are entirely out of the question. They are not only learned, but truly religious men, and, as such, are an honour to their profession. I speak only of those that are of a different character, be they many or few. Let them wear the cap whom it fits. That is no concern of mine.

This premised, I think it easy to be accounted for, even upon heathen principles. Horace observed long ago,

*Oderunt hilarem tristes, tristemque jocos,*  
*Vinosi porrecta negantem pocula—*

Accordingly, grave and solemn men (though too few are guilty of this fault) dislike many of the Methodist Preachers for having nothing of *that* gravity or solemnity about them. Jocose Clergymen, on the other hand, cannot but dislike those who are steadily serious. And those that love to take a cheerful glass, are not fond of such as are strictly temperate. You need go no farther than this consideration to have a clear answer to the question, "Why do many of the Clergy refuse to have any assistance from the Methodist Preachers?"

But this may be more fully accounted for upon Christian principles. What says our Lord to the first Preachers of the Gospel, and in them to all their successors? (John xv. 18, and seq.) "If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love its own; but because ye are not of the world, therefore the world hateth you. These things will they do unto you, because they know not him that sent me."

Does not this give us sufficient reason to expect, that if we are *not of the world*, all *the world*, all who *know not God*, whether Clergy or Laity, will be so far from accepting our assistance, that they will sincerely hate us, and openly or privately persecute us, so far as God permits? We have, therefore, reason to wonder, not that they do not desire any union or coalition with us, but that they bear with, yea, and on many occasions, treat us with courtesy and civility. This is a peculiar instance of the providence of God, causing in some measure the scandal of the cross to cease.

"But do not many Clergymen, who are not pious men, acknowledge that the Methodists do good, and encourage them to persevere therein?" They do: but observe how far they would have them go. They wish them to repress outward sin: to reclaim the people from cursing, and swearing, and drunkenness, and sabbath-breaking, (unless the squire gains by it.) They are well pleased, that their parishioners grow more diligent and honest, and are constant attendants on the Church and Sacrament. Nay, they are glad that they are brought to practise both justice and mercy; in a word, to be *moral men*.

But the truth is, the Methodists know and teach, that all this is nothing before God: that whoever goes thus far and no farther, is *building upon the sand*: that he who would worship God to any purpose, must worship him *in spirit and in truth*: that true religion is *righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost*: even giving God our hearts: the seeking and finding happiness in him. Here then they divide from the Methodists, whom they judge to be going too far. They would have their parishioners *moral men*; that is, in plain terms, honest heathens, but they would not have them *pious men*, men devoted to God, *Bible Christians*. If therefore the Methodist Preachers would stop here, would preach outward religion and no more, many Clergymen would not only encourage them therein,

but likewise cordially join them. But when they persuade men, *not to be almost, but altogether Christians, to maintain a constant fellowship with the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ: to be transformed into that image of God, wherein they were created, and thenceforth to live that life which is hid with Christ in God: let them not expect, that any will give them the right-hand of fellowship, but those God hath chosen out of the world.*

I am, your's, &c.

J. W.

---

## FREE THOUGHTS

ON THE

## PRESENT STATE OF PUBLIC AFFAIRS.

IN A LETTER TO A FRIEND.

---

*Periculosæ plenum opus aleæ  
Tractas, et incedis per ignes  
Suppositos cineri doloso.*

HOR.

---

YOU desire me to give you my thoughts freely on the present state of public affairs. But do you consider? I am no politician: politics lie quite out of my province. Neither have I any acquaintance, at least no intimacy, with any that bear that character. And it is no easy matter to form any judgment concerning things of so complicated a nature. It is the more difficult, because in order to form our judgment, such a multitude of facts should be known, few of which can be known with tolerable exactness by any but those who are eye-witnesses of them. And how few of these will relate what they have seen precisely as it was, without adding, omitting, or altering any circumstance, either with or without design! And may not a slight addition or alteration give a quite different colour to the whole?

And as we cannot easily know with any accuracy, the facts on which we are chiefly to form our judgment, so much less can we expect to know the various springs of action which gave rise to those facts, and on which more than on the bare actions themselves, the characters of the actors depend. It is on this account that an old writer advises us to *judge nothing before the time*; to abstain as far as possible from judging peremptorily, either of things or persons, till the time comes, when *the hidden things of darkness*, the facts now concealed, will be brought to light, and the hidden springs of action will be discovered, *the thoughts and intents of every human heart.*

Perhaps you will say, "Nay, every Englishman is a politician; we suck in politics with our mother's milk. It is as natural for us to talk politics as to breathe: we can instruct both the king and his council. We can in a trice reform the state, point out every blunder of this or that minister, and tell every step they ought to take to be arbiters of all Europe."

I grant, every cobbler, tinker, porter, and hackney-coachman, can do this. But I am not so *deep-learned*: while they are sure of every thing, I am in a manner sure of nothing; except of that very little which I see with my own eyes, or hear with my own ears. However, since you desire me to tell you what I think, I will do it with all openness. Only please to remember, I do not take upon me to *dictate* either to you or to any one. I only use the privilege of an Englishman, to speak my naked thoughts: setting down just what appears to me to be the truth, till I have better information.

At present, indeed, I have not much information, having read little upon this head but the public papers. And you know, these are mostly on one side; in them little is to be seen on the other side. And that little is seldom written by *masterly* writers. How few of them have such a pen as Junius!

But supposing we have ever so much information, how little can one rely on it! On the information given by either party! For is not one as warm as the other? And who does not know how impossible it is for a man to see things right, when he is angry? Does not passion blind the eyes of the understanding, as smoke does the bodily eyes? And how little of the truth can we learn from those, who see nothing but through a cloud!

This advantage then I have over both parties, the being angry at neither. So that if I have a little understanding from nature or experience, it is (in this instance at least) unclouded by passion. I wish the same happiness which I wish to myself, to those on one side and on the other. I would not hurt either, in the least degree; I would not willingly give them any pain.

I have likewise another advantage, that of having no bias one way or the other. I have no interest depending: I want no man's favour, having no hopes, no fears from any man: and having no particular attachment of any kind, to either of the contending parties.

But am I so weak as to imagine, that because I am not angry at *them*, they will not be angry at *me*? No, I do not imagine any such thing. Probably *both* will be angry enough; that is, the warm men on both sides, were it only for this, that I am not as warm as themselves. For what is more insufferable to a man in a passion, than to see you keep your temper? And is it not a farther provocation, that I do not behave as he does to his opponent? That I call him no ill names? That I give him no ill words? I expect therefore to be abused on all sides; and cannot be disappointed, unless by being treated with common humanity.

This premised, I come to the point, to give you my *Free Thoughts on the present State of Public Affairs*, the *causes* and *consequences* of the present commotions. But permit me to remind you, that I say

nothing peremptorily. I do not take upon me to affirm, that things are thus or thus. I just set down my naked thoughts, and that without any art or colouring.

“What then do you think is the direct and principal *cause* of the present public commotions, of the amazing ferment among the people, the general discontent of the nation?” which now rises to a higher degree than it has done in the memory of man: insomuch that I have heard it affirmed with my own ears, “King George ought to be treated as King Charles was.” Is it the extraordinary bad character of the king? I do not apprehend it is. Certainly if he is not, as some think, the *best* prince in Europe, he is far from being the *worst*. One not greatly prejudiced in his favour, does not charge him with want of *virtue* (of this he judges him to have *more than enough*,) but with wanting those *royal vices*, which (with Machiavel and the ingenious Doctor Mandeville) he supposes would be *public benefits*.

“But does he not likewise want *understanding*?” So it has been boldly affirmed. And it must be acknowledged this charge is supported by facts, which cannot be denied. The first is, he believes the Bible: the second, he fears God; the third, he loves the queen. Now suppose the first of these, considering the prejudice of education, might consist with some share of understanding, yet how can this be allowed with regard to the second? For although in the times of ignorance and barbarism, men imagined, *the fear of God was the beginning of wisdom*, our enlightened age has discovered it is the *end* of it: that whenever the fear of God begins, wisdom is at an end. And with regard to the third, for a man to love his wife, unless perhaps for a month or two, must argue such utter want of sense, as most men of rank are now ashamed of. But after all, there are some who, allowing the facts, deny the consequence. Who still believe, and that after the most accurate inquiry, from such as have had the best means of information, that there are few noblemen or gentlemen in the nation, (and we have many not inferior to most in Europe) who have either so good a natural understanding, or so general a knowledge of all the valuable parts of learning.

“But suppose something might be said for his majesty’s understanding, what can be said in excuse of his *bad actions*? As first, his pardoning a murderer?” I really think something may be said on this head also. Can you or I believe, that the king knew him to be such? Understood him to be a wilful murderer? I am not sure of it at all: neither have you any rational proof: (even supposing this to have been the case, which is far from being clear.) And if he did not know or believe him to be such, how can he be blamed for pardoning him? Not to have pardoned him in this case, would have been inexcusable before God and man.

“But what can be said in excuse of his being *governed by his mother*, and fixing all his measures at *Carlton house*?” It may be said, that if it was so, it is past, and so is no matter of present complaint. But who informed you that it was? Any eye and ear witness? “O, it is in every body’s mouth.” Very well: but every body is nobody: so this proof is no proof at all! And what better proof have you, or

any man, of his fixing any of his measures there? This has been affirmed a hundred times, but never was proved yet. "Nay, but is it not an undeniable fact, that he spent hour after hour with her? And especially when he was hard pressed, and knew not which way to turn?" And what then? Who loves him better than his parent? And whom has he a right to love better than her? Who is more faithful to him, more steadily desirous of his welfare? And whom can he trust better? Suppose then it was true, (which is more than any man can prove,) that he did consult her on all occasions, and particularly when he was in trouble and perplexity, who can blame him for so doing?

"Well, be this as it may, who can help blaming him for giving so many *pensions*?" This is a thing which I do not understand, and can therefore neither praise nor blame. Some indeed, I think, are *well bestowed*, on men eminent in their several professions. All, I believe, are *well designed*, particularly those given to men who are removed from public employments. Yet, I fear, some of these are *ill bestowed*, on those who not only fly in the face of their benefactor, but avail themselves of his favours to wound the deeper. "For were he not in the wrong, these would never turn against him!" What pity they should enjoy them another day, after such foul and flagrant ingratitude!

This fault (if it were really such) would argue too great *easiness* of temper. But this is quite the reverse of what is commonly objected, *inflexible stubbornness*. "Nay, what else could occasion the settled disregard of so many *petitions* and *remonstrances*, signed by so many thousands of hands, and declaring the sense of the nation." *The sense of the nation!* Who can imagine this, that knows the manner wherein nine in ten, I might say, ninety-nine in a hundred, of those petitions are procured? A lord or squire (sometimes two or more) goes or sends his steward, round the town where his seat is, with a paper, which he tells the honest men is for the good of their king and country. He desires each to set his name or mark to this. And who has the hardiness to gainsay; especially if my lord keeps open house? Meantime the contents of it they know nothing about.

I was not long since in a town in Kent, when one of these petitions was carrying about. I asked one and another, "Have you signed the petition?" And found none that had refused it. And yet not one single person to whom I spoke, had either read it or heard it read.

Now I would ask any man of common sense, what stress is to be laid on these petitions? And how do they declare the *sense of the nation*? Nay, of the very persons that have signed them? What a shocking insult is it then on the whole kingdom, to palm these petitions upon us, of which the very subscribers have not read three lines, as the general *sense of the nation*?

But suppose they had read all that they have subscribed, what judges are they of these matters? To put this beyond dispute, let us only propose one case out of a thousand. Step back a few years, and suppose Mr. Pitt at the head of the administration. Here comes up a

petition from Newcastle-upon-Tyne, signed by five hundred hands, begging his majesty to dismiss that minister, who was taking such measures as tended to the utter ruin of the nation. What could Mr. Pitt say to this? Would he not ask, "How came these colliers and keelmen to be so well acquainted with the affairs of state? How long have they been judges of public administration? Of naval and military operations? How came they to understand the propriety or impropriety of the measures I take? Do they comprehend the balance of Europe? Do they know the weakness and strength of its several kingdoms? The characters of the monarchs and their ministers? The springs of this and that public motion? Else, why do they take upon them to scan my conduct? *Ne sutor ultra crepidam!* Let them mind their own work, keep to their pits and keels, and leave state affairs to me.

"But surely you do not place the citizens of London on a level with the colliers of Newcastle?" I do not. And yet I suppose they were equally incompetent judges of the measures which Mr. Pitt took. And I doubt they are fully as incompetent judges of the measures taken by the present ministry. To form a tolerable judgment of them, requires not only a good understanding, but more time than common tradesmen can spare, and better information than they can possibly procure. I think, therefore, that the encouraging them to pass their verdict on ministers of state, yea, on king, lords, and commons, is not only putting them out of their way, but doing them more mischief than you are aware of.

"But the *remonstrance!* Surely the king ought to have paid more regard to the remonstrance of the *city of London.*" Consider the case: the city had presented a petition, which he could by no means approve of, as he judged it was designed not so much to *inform* him, as to inflame his subjects. After he had rejected this, as mildly as could be done, whilst he viewed it in this light, they present a remonstrance to the same effect, and (as he judged) with the same design. What then could he do less than he did? Could he *seem* to approve what he did not approve? If not, how could he testify his full disapprobation in more inoffensive terms?

As to the idle, shameless tale of his bursting out into laughter at the magistrates, any who know his majesty's temper, would as soon believe that he spit in their faces, or struck them a box on the ear.

His majesty's character then, after all the pains which have been taken to make him odious, as well as contemptible, remains unimpeached; and therefore cannot be in any degree the cause of the present commotions. His whole conduct, both in public and private, ever since he began his reign, the uniform tenor of his behaviour, the general course both of his words and actions, has been worthy of an Englishman, worthy of a Christian, and worthy of a king.

"Are not then the present commotions owing to his having *extraordinary bad ministers?* Can you say that his ministers are as blameless as himself?" I do not say this: I do not think so. But I think they are not one jot worse than those that went before them: nor than any set of ministers who have been in place for at least thirty years last

past. I think they are not a jot worse than their opponents, than those who bawl the loudest against them, either with regard to intellectual or moral abilities, with regard to sense or honesty. Set twenty against twenty, or ten against ten; and is there a pin to choose?

“However, are not these commotions owing to the *extraordinary bad measures* they have taken? Surely you will not attempt to defend all their measures!” No indeed. I do not defend *general warrants*. But I observe, 1. The giving these, be it good or bad, is no *extraordinary* measure. Has it not been done by all ministers for many years, and that with little or no objection? 2. This ordinary measure is of exceedingly little importance to the nation in general: so little, that it was never before thought worthy to be put into the list of public grievances: so little, that it never deserved the hundredth part of the outcry, which has been made concerning it.

I do not defend the *killing* of Mr. Allen. But I would have the fact truly represented. By the best information I can gain, I believe it stands just thus: About that time the mob had been very turbulent. On that day they were likely to be more insolent than ever. It was therefore judged proper to send a party of soldiers, to prevent or repress their violence. Their presence did not prevent it: the mob went so far as to throw stones at the soldiers themselves. One of them hit and wounded a soldier: two or three pursued him: and fired at one whom, being in the same dress, they supposed to be the same man. But it was not; it was Mr. Allen. Now though this cannot be excused, yet, was it the most horrid villany that ever was perpetrated? Surely not. Notwithstanding all the tragical exclamations which have been made concerning it, what is this to the killing a man in cool blood? And was this never heard of in England?

I do not defend the measures which have been taken relative to the *Middlesex election*. But let it be remembered, 1st, That there was full as much violence on the one side as on the other: 2dly, That a right of *expulsion*, of *putting* a member out of the House, manifestly implies a right of *exclusion*, of *keeping* him out; otherwise that right amounts to just nothing at all: 3dly, That consequently a member expelled is incapable of being re-elected, at least during that session; as incapable as one that is disqualified any other way. It follows, 4thly, That the votes given for this disqualified person, are null and void, being in effect given for nobody. Therefore, 5thly, If the other candidate had two hundred votes, he had a majority of two hundred.

Let it be observed farther, if the electors had the liberty of choosing *any qualified person*, it is absolute nonsense to talk of their “being deprived of the liberty of choosing;” because they were not permitted to choose *a person utterly unqualified*.

But suppose a single borough or county were deprived of this in a single instance: (which undoubtedly is the case, whenever a person duly elected does not sit in the House:) How is this “depriving the good people of England, the *nation* of their *birth-right*?” What an insult upon common sense in this wild way of talking! If Middlesex is wronged (put it so) in this instance, how is Yorkshire or Cumberland affected by it? Or twenty counties and forty boroughs

besides? Much less *all the nation*? O, but they “may be affected by and by.” Very true! And the sky may fall!

To see this whole matter in the clearest light, let any one read and consider the speech of Lord Chief Justice Mansfield, on a motion made by Lord Chatham, “To repeal and rescind the resolutions of the House of Commons, in regard to the expulsion and incapacitation of Mr. Wilkes.”

“In this debate, though it has already been spoken to with great eloquence and perspicuity, I cannot content myself with only giving a single vote; I feel myself under a strong necessity of saying something more. The subject requires it, and though the hour is late, [*it being then near ten o'clock,*] I shall demand your indulgence, while I offer my sentiments on this motion.

“I am sure, my lords, many of you must remember, from your reading and experience, several persons expelled the House of Commons without ever this house once pretending to interfere, or call in question by what authority they did so. I remember several myself, [*here his lordship quoted several cases,*] in all which, though most of the candidates were sure to be *re-chosen*, they never once applied, resting contented with the expulsoy power of the House, as the *only self-sufficient dernier resort* of application.

“It has been echoed on all sides, from the partizans of this motion, that the House of Commons acted illegally, in accepting Col. Luttrell, who had but 296 votes, in preference to Mr. Wilkes, who had 1143. But this is a mistake of the grossest nature imaginable, and which nothing but the intemperature of the people’s zeal could possibly transport them to, as Mr. Wilkes had been previously considered by the laws as an unqualified person to represent the people in parliament; therefore it appears very plainly, that Col. Luttrell had a very great majority, not less than 296, Mr. Wilkes being considered as nobody in the eye of the law; consequently Col. Luttrell had no legal opposition.

“In all contested elections, where one of the parties think themselves not legally treated, I should be glad to know to whom it is they resort? Is it to the freeholders of the borough, or the county they would represent? Or is it to the people at large? Who cannot see, at once, the absurdity of such a question? Who so ignorant of our laws, that cannot immediately reply and say, ‘It is the House of Commons who are the only judges to determine every nicety of the laws of election; and from whom there is no appeal, after they have once given their determination? All the freeholder has to do, is to determine on his object, by giving him his vote; the ultimate power lies with the House of Commons, who is to judge of his being a legal object of representation in the several branches of his qualifications. This, my lords, I believe, is advancing no new doctrine, nor adding an iota to the privilege of a member of the House of Commons, more than what the constitution long ago has given him; yet here is a cry made, in a case that directly applies to what I have been speaking of, as if it was illegal, arbitrary, and unprecedented.

“I do not remember, my lords, in either the course of my reading or observation, ever to have known an instance of a person's being re-chosen, after being expelled, till the year 1711; then, indeed, my memory serves me with the case of Sir Robert Walpole. He was expelled the House of Commons, and was afterwards re-chosen; but this last event did not take place till the meeting of the next parliament; and during that interval, I find no debate about the illegality of his expulsion, no interference of the House of Lords, nor any addresses from the public, to decry that measure by a dissolution of parliament.

“Indeed, as for the precedent of one House interfering with the rules, orders, or business of another, my memory does not serve me at present with the recollection of a single one. As to the case of Titus Oates, as mentioned by the noble lord in my eye, (Lord Chatham,) he is very much mistaken in regard to the mode; his was a trial in the King's-Bench, which, on a writ of error, the House of Commons interfered in, and they had an authority for so doing. A judge certainly may be mistaken in points of law, the wisest and the best of us may be so at times, and it reflects no discredit; on the contrary, it does particular honour, when he finds himself so mistaken, to reverse his own decree. But for one House of Parliament interfering with the business, and reversing the resolutions of another, it is not only unprecedented, but unconstitutional to the last degree.

“But suppose, my lords, that this house coincided with this motion; suppose we all agreed *nem. con.* to repeal and rescind the resolutions of the House of Commons, in regard to the expulsion and incapacitation of Mr. Wilkes;—Good God! What may be the consequence? The people are violent enough already, and to have the superior branch of legislation join them, would be giving such a public encouragement to their proceedings, that I almost tremble, while I even suppose such a scene of anarchy and confusion.”

“What then can we think of the violent outcry, That the nation is oppressed, deprived of that liberty which their ancestors bought with so much treasure and blood, and delivered down through so many generations?” Do those who raise this cry believe what they say? If so, are they not under the highest infatuation? Seeing that England, from the time of William the Conqueror, yea, of Julius Cæsar, never enjoyed such liberty, civil and religious, as it does at this day. Nor do we know of any other kingdom or state in Europe, or in the world, which enjoys the like.

I do not defend the measures which have been taken with regard to America; I doubt whether any man can defend them, either on the foot of law, equity, or prudence. But whose measures were these? If I do not mistake, Mr. George Grenville's. Therefore the whole merit of these measures belong to him, and not to the present ministry.

“But is not the general dissatisfaction owing, if not to any of the preceding causes, to the *extraordinary bad conduct* of the parliament,

particularly the House of Commons?" This is set in so clear a light by a late writer, that I need only transcribe his words.

"The last recess of parliament was a period filled with unprecedented troubles: and the session opened in the midst of tumults. Ambitious men, with a perseverance uncommon in indolent and luxurious times, rung all the changes of popular noise, for the purpose of intimidation. The ignorant, who could not distinguish between real and artificial clamours, were alarmed; the lovers of their own ease wished to sacrifice the just dignity of the House of Commons to a temporary relief, from the grating sound of seditious scurrility.

"Hence the friends of the constitution saw the opening of the session with anxiety and apprehension. They were afraid of the timidity of others, and dreaded nothing more than that panic to which popular assemblies, as well as armies, are sometimes subject. The event has shown that their fears were groundless: the house supported its decisions against the current of popular prejudice; and, in defending their own judicial rights, secured the most solid part of the liberties of their constituents.

"Their firm adherence to their resolutions was not more noble, than their concessions in the matter of their own rights was disinterested and generous. The extensive privileges, which, in a series of ages, had accumulated to the members of both houses, were certainly inconsistent with the impartial distribution of justice. To sacrifice these privileges was not only diametrically opposite to the idea of self-interest, with which some asperse the legislature, but it has also thrown a greater weight into the scale of public freedom than any other act passed since the revolution. And it has reflected honour on the present Administration, that a bill, so very favourable to the liberty of the subject, was brought in and carried through by them.

"The arbitrary manner of determining petitions about elections, has been a serious complaint and of long continuance. I shall not deny to Mr. Grenville the merit of bringing in a bill for remedying this grievance; but its passing as it did is a certain proof that the pretended influence of Administration over a majority of the House is a mere bugbear, held forth for private views by the present opposition.

"During the whole Session, the House of Lords behaved with that dignity and unalterable firmness which became the first assembly in a great nation. Attacked with impertinent scurrility, they smiled upon rage, and treated the ravings of a despotic tribune with contempt. When with an infamous perversion of his pretended love to freedom, he attempted to extend the control of the Peers to the resolutions of the representatives of the people, they nobly rejected the golden bait; and scorned to raise the dignity of their house upon the ruins of the other. They, in short, throughout the session, showed a spirit that disdained to be braved: a magnanimity that diminished their own personal power for the ease and comfort of the inferior subject.

“If the conduct of Parliament is in any instance blameable, it is in a lenity that is inconsistent with the vulgar idea of political courage. They have been attacked with scurrility in the Lower House; in the Upper they have been treated with indecency and disrespect. Their prudence and love for the public peace prevailed over their resentment. They knew that legal punishment is in these times the road to popularity, and they were unwilling to raise insignificant men into a consequence that might disturb the state.”

So far we have gained. We have removed the *imaginary causes* of the present commotions. It plainly appears, they are not owing to the *extraordinary badness*, either of the King, of his Parliament, of his ministers, or of the measures which they have taken. To what then are they owing? What are the *real causes* of this amazing ferment among the people?

Before I say any thing on this subject, let me remind you once more, that I do not *dictate*: I do not take upon me to *affirm* any thing, but simply tell you what I think. I think the first and principal spring of the whole motion is *French gold*. “But why do you think so?” I will tell you as plainly as I can.

A person of a complete uniform character, encumbered with no religion, with no regard to virtue or morality, squanders away all that he has. He applies for a place, but is disappointed. He is thoroughly exasperated, abuses the ministry, asperses the King’s mother in the grossest manner, is prosecuted, (not for this, but other achievements,) and retires to France. After some time, he suddenly returns to London, sets up for a patriot, and vehemently inveighs against evil counsellors, grievances, and male-administration. The cry spreads: more and more espouse his cause, and second him with all their might. He becomes the head of the party; and not only the vulgar, but the world runs after him. He drives on with still increasing numbers, carrying all before him, inflaming the nation more and more, and making their minds evil-affected, in appearance towards the ministers of state, but in reality towards the king. Now can any reasonable man believe, that the French are ignorant of all this? Or that they have no hand at all therein, but are mere unconcerned spectators? Do they not understand their own interest better? If they do not kindle the fire, will they not use all means to prevent its going out? Will they not take care to add fuel to the flame? Will they not think forty or fifty thousand Louisd’ors, well bestowed on so important an occasion?

I cannot but think this is (at least) one principal spring of all the present commotions. But may not other causes likewise concur? As, 1st, *Covetousness*; a love of English as well as of French gold. Do not many hunger after the lucrative employments which their neighbours enjoy? They had rather have them themselves. And will not those that are hungry naturally cry for food? 2dly, *Ambition*. How many desire honour, perhaps more than they do money itself? And how various are the shapes which they will put on, in order to attain it? 3dly, Those who are not so much under the

power of these, are yet susceptible of *pride*, or *envy*; and frequently of both together. To these we may, 4thly, add *resentment*. Many doubtless look upon themselves as injured, were it only on this account, that they are not regarded, yea and recompensed as their merits or services deserve. Others are *angry* because they are disappointed; because, after all their schemes, which they imagined could not fail of success, they are not able to carry their point.

Now all these, united by these various motives, some encouraged by good pay in hand, (and perhaps by promises of more,) others animated by covetousness, by ambition, by envy, pride, and resentment. by every means animate all they have access to. They treat both rich and poor (according to their rank) with all elegance and profuseness. They talk largely and vehemently. They write abundantly, having troops enough in their service. They publish *addresses*, *petitions*, *remonstrances*, directed *nominally* to the king, (otherwise they would not answer the end;) but *really* to the people. Herein their orators make use of all the powers of rhetoric. They bring forth their strong reasons, the very best which the cause will bear. They set them off with all the beauty of language, all the poignancy of wit. They spread their writings in pamphlets, newspapers, magazines, &c. to every corner of the land. They are indefatigable in their work; they never stop to take breath; but as they have tongues and pens at command, when one has done, another begins, and so on and on with a continuance. By this means the flame spreads wider and wider; it runs as fire among the stubble. The madness becomes epidemic, and no medicine hitherto has availed against it. The whole nation sees *the State in danger*, as they did the *Church* sixty years ago.: and the world now *wanders after* Mr. Wilkes, as it did then after Dr. Sacheverel!

One means of increasing the ferment is, the suffering no contradiction: the hooting at all who labour for peace, and treading them down like dirt: the using them just as they do the king, without either justice or mercy. If any writes on that head, presently the cry is raised, "O, he only writes *for pay*." But if he does, do not those on the other side too? Which are paid best, I do not know: but doubtless both are paid, a very few old-fashioned mortals excepted, who having nothing to hope, and nothing to fear, simply consider the good of their country.

"But what do you think the end will be?" It is easy to foresee this. Supposing things to take their natural course, they must go from bad to worse.

*In stipulam veluti cum flamma furentibus austris  
Incidit, aut rapidus montano flumine torrens  
Exiit, oppositasque evicit gurgite moles,*

The people will be inflamed more and more: the torrent will swell higher and higher, till at length it bursts through all opposition, and overflows the land. The consequences of these commotions will be, (unless a higher Hand interpose,) exactly the same as those of the like commotions in the last century. First, the land will become a

field of blood : many thousands of poor Englishmen will sheathe their swords in each others bowels, for the diversion of their good neighbours. Then either a commonwealth will ensue, or else a second Cromwell. One must be; but it cannot be determined which, King W——, or King Mob.

“But that case is not parallel with this.” It is not, in all particulars. In many respects it is widely different. As, 1st, With regard to the king himself. Few will affirm the character of king Charles, (even allowing the account given by Lord Clarendon, to be punctually true in every respect,) to be as faultless as that of king George. But other passions, as well as love, are blind. So that when these are raised to a proper height, especially when Junius has thrown a little more of his magic dust into the eyes of the people, and convinced them, that what are virtues *in others*, are mere vices *in him*, the good patriots will see no manner of difference, between a king George and king Charles—or even a Nero.

The case is also widely different, 2dly, with regard to the Ministry. King George has no such furious drivers about him, as poor King Charles had. But a skilful painter may easily add a few features, either to one or the other, and by a little colouring make Lord North the very picture of Lord Stafford, and Archbishop Cornwallis of Archbishop Laud.

How different likewise is the case, 3dly, With regard to the *administration* of public affairs? The requiring *tonnage* and *poundage*, the imposing *ship-money*, the prosecutions in the *Bishops Courts*, in the *High Commission-Court*, and in the *Star-chamber*, were real and intolerable grievances. And what is there in the present administration which bears any resemblance to these? Yet, if you will view even such an affair as the Middlesex Election, through Mr. Horne's magnifying glass, it will appear a more enormous instance of oppression than a hundred star-chambers put together.

The parallel does not hold, 4thly, With regard to the *opposers* of the King and his Ministry. Is Mr. Burke the same calm, wise, disinterested man, that Mr. Hampden was? And where shall we find twenty noblemen and twenty gentlemen (to name no more) in the present opposition, whom any impartial man will set on a level with the same number of those that opposed King Charles and his Ministry.

Nor does the parallel hold, 5thly, in this respect. That was in a great measure a contest about *Religion* : at least about rites and ceremonies, and opinions, which many supposed to be religion. But all religion is out of the question now : this is generally allowed, both by the one side and the other, to be so very a trifle, that they do not give themselves the least concern about it.

In one circumstance more there is an obvious difference. The Parliament were then the King's enemies. Now they are his firmest friends. But indeed this difference may easily be removed. Let the King only take Mr. Wilkes's advice and dissolve the Parliament. The Parliament of 1640, (the first which sat after the troubles be-

gan,) although many therein were much dissatisfied with the measures which had been taken, yet would never have been prevailed upon, to join in the schemes which afterwards prevailed. But when that Parliament was so seasonably dissolved, and a few men, wise in their generation, practising with unwearied industry on the heated spirits of the people, had procured a new Parliament to be chosen after their own heart; then it was not long ere the train took fire, and the whole constitution was blown up.

But notwithstanding the disparity between the present and past times, in the preceding respects, yet how surprisingly does the parallel hold in various particulars! 1. A handful of people laid a scheme which few would have believed, had a man then declared it unto them: (though indeed it is probable, that at the beginning they had no settled scheme at all.) 2. These professed great zeal for the *good of their country*, were vehement contenders for *liberty*, cried aloud against *evil ministers* and the *evil measures* which they pursued, and were continually declaiming against either real or imaginary *grievances*. 3. They were soon joined by men eminent for *probity* as well as for *understanding*, who undoubtedly *were* what the others *appeared*, lovers of their king and country, and desired nothing but the removal of bad ministers, and the redress of real grievances. 4. The spirits even of these were *gradually sharpened* and *embittered* against the king. And they were drawn farther and farther by the art of their leaders, till they had gone so far, they knew not how to retreat: yea, till they had (passively at least) concurred in those measures, which at first their very souls abhorred. 5. Meantime the nation in general was *inflamed* with all possible diligence, by *addresses*, *petitions*, and *remonstrances*, admirably well devised for the purpose; which were the most effectual *libels* that could be imagined against the king and government, and were continually spread throughout the land, with all care and assiduity. 6. Among the most inflamed and embittered in all England were the people of London, as the managers had the best opportunity of practising upon them. 7. All this time they professed the *highest regard for the king*, for his honour as well as safety; an authentic monument whereof we have in the *solemn League and Covenant*. And these professions they continued with equal vehemence till within a short time of the cutting off his head!

Now what man, who has the least degree of understanding, may not see, in the clearest light, how surprisingly the parallel holds in all these circumstances?

“But do not you think it is in the power of the King to put an end to all these commotions, by only sending his mother away, changing his ministers, and dissolving the parliament?” He may send his mother away; and so he may his wife, if they please to rank her among his evil counsellors. He may put out his present ministers, and desire the Lord Mayor to put others in their place. He may likewise dissolve the present parliament, (as King Charles did that of 1640,) and exchange it for one chosen, animated; and tutored by Mr.

Wilkes and his friends. But can you really believe this would mend the matter? Would put an end to all these commotions? Certainly the sending his mother to the *Indies* would avail nothing, unless he removed his ministers too. Nor would the putting out these, yea, every man of them, avail any thing, unless at the same time he put in every man whom Lord Chatham chose. But neither would this avail, unless he struck the finishing stroke, by dissolving the parliament. Then indeed he would be as perfectly safe as the "sheep that had given up their dogs!"

It would puzzle the wisest man alive to tell what the King can do: what can he do, that will still the raging of the sea, or the madness of the people? Do you imagine it is in his power to do any thing which will please all parties? Can he do any thing that will not displease one, as much as it will please the other? Shall he drive his \*mother out of the land? Will this then please all parties? Nay, will not some be apt to inquire, "How has she deserved it at his hands?" Why, she is an evil counsellor. How does this appear? Who are the witnesses of it? Indeed we have read as grave and formal accounts of the conferences at Carleton-house, as if the relater had stood all the time behind the curtain, and taken down the whole matter in short-hand. But what shadow of proof of all this? No more than of the conferences related in *Tristram Shandy*.

"But she is a bad woman." Who ever said or thought so, even while she was in the flower of her age? From the time that she first set foot in England, was there a more faultless character in the nation? Nay, was not her whole behaviour, as a wife, as a mother, as a mistress, and as a princess, not only blameless, but commendable in the highest degree, till that period of time arrived, when it was judged proper, in order to blacken her (supposed) favourite, to asperse her too? And when she was *illud quod dicere nolo!* One would think that even the *ignobile vulgus, the beasts of the people*, the lowest, basest herd, who wore the human form, would be ashamed of either advancing or crediting so senseless, shameless a tale. Indeed I can hardly think it is credited by one in a hundred even of those who foul their mouths with repeating it. Let it die and be forgotten! Let it not be remembered, that ever any *Englishman* took so dirty a slander into his mouth.

"However, become what will of his mother, let him put away his bad ministers." Suppose they really are bad, do you know where he can find better? Where will he find twenty men, we will not say of *Christian*, but of *Roman* integrity? Point them out, men of sound judgment, of clear apprehension, of universal benevolence, lovers of mankind, lovers of their country, lovers of their King: men attached to no party, but simply pursuing the general good of the nation: not haughty or overbearing: not addicted to passion: not of a revengeful temper: superior to covetousness on the one hand, free from profuseness on the other. I say, show me the men, only this

\* This was written before the Princess Dowager went abroad.

small number ; or rather, show them to his Majesty. Let clear and satisfactory proof be given, that this is their character. And if these worthy men are not employed in the place of the unworthy ones, you will then have some reason to stretch your throat against evil ministers.

“ But if the matter were wholly left to him, would not Lord —— immediately employ twenty such ?” That may bear some doubt. It is not certain that he would ; perhaps he knows not where to find them. And it is not certain to a demonstration, that he would employ them if he did. It is not altogether clear, that he is such himself, that he perfectly answers this character. Is he free from pride ? From any thing haughty in his temper, or overbearing in his behaviour ? Is he neither passionate nor revengeful ? Is it indisputably plain, that he is equally clear of covetousness on the one hand, and profuseness on the other ? Is he steady and uniform in his conduct : always one thing ? Is he attached to no party, but determined at all events singly to pursue the general good of the nation ? Is he a *lover of the King* ? Is he *remarkably grateful* to him, from whom he has received no common favours ? If not, though he has a strong understanding, and a large share of manly eloquence, still it may be doubted, whether he and his friends would behave a jot better than the ministers we have already.

And suppose the King were to dissolve the parliament, what hope is there of having a better, even though the nation were as quiet and peaceable as it was ten years ago ? Are not the present members, generally speaking, men of the greatest property in the land ? And are they not, the greater part of them at least, as honest and wise as their neighbours ? How then should we mend ourselves at any time ; but especially at such a time as this ? If a new parliament were chosen during this epidemic madness, what probability of a better than the present ? Have we not all the reason in the world to apprehend it would be much worse ? That it would be the parliament of 1641, instead of the parliament of 1640 ? Why, this is the very thing we want, the very point we are aiming at. Then would Junius and his friends quickly say, “ Sir King, know your place !” *Es et ipse lignum*. “ Take your choice ! Be King log, or to the block !”

Does it not then appear, upon the whole, that it is by no means in the power of the King, by any step which he can possibly take, to put a stop to the present commotions ? That especially he cannot make concessions without making a bad matter worse ? That the way he has taken, the standing his ground, was as wise a method as he could take, and as likely to restore the peace of the nation, as any the wit of man could devise ? If any is more likely, would it not be, vigorously to execute the laws against incendiaries ? Against those who, by spreading all manner of lies, inflame the people even to madness : to teach them, that there is a difference between *liberty*, which is the glory of Englishmen, and *licentiousness*, a wanton abuse of liberty, in contempt of all laws, divine and human ? Ought they not to *feel*, if they will not *see*, that *scandalum regis*, scandalizing the King,

is as punishable as *scandalum magnatum*? That for the future none may dare to slander the King, any more than one of his nobles: much less to print and spread that deadly poison among his Majesty's liege subjects. Is not this little less than high treason? Is it not sowing the seeds of rebellion?

It is possible this might restore peace, but one cannot affirm it would. Perhaps *God has a controversy with the land*, for the general neglect, nay, contempt of all religion. Perhaps he hath said, *Shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?* And if this be the case, what can avail, unless his anger be turned away from us? Was there ever a time in which there was a louder call for them that fear God to humble themselves before him? If haply general humiliation and repentance may prevent general destruction!

1788.

---

## THOUGHTS UPON LIBERTY.

---

I scorn to have my free-born toe  
Dragoon'd into a wooden shoe.

PRIOR.

---

1. ALL men in the world desire Liberty; whoever breathes, breathes after this: and that by a kind of natural instinct, antecedent to art or education. Yet at the same time all men of understanding acknowledge it is a rational instinct. For we feel this desire, not in opposition to, but in consequence of our reason. Therefore it is not found, or in a very low degree, in many species of brutes, which seem, even when they are left to their choice, to prefer servitude before liberty.

2. The love of liberty is then the glory of rational beings: and it is the glory of Britons in particular. Perhaps it would be difficult to find any nation under heaven, who are more tenacious of it. Nay, it may be doubted if any nation ever was: not the Spartans, not the Athenians: no, not the Romans themselves, who have been celebrated for this very thing by the poets and historians of all ages.

3. Was it not from this principle, that our British forefathers so violently opposed all foreign invaders? That Julius Cæsar himself, with his victorious legions, could make so little impression upon them? That the generals of the succeeding emperors sustained so many losses from them? And that, when at length they were overpowered, they rather chose to lose all they had than their liberty; to retire into the Cambrian or Caledonian mountains, where, if they had nothing else, they might at least enjoy their native freedom?

4. Hence arose the vehement struggles of the Cambro-Britons, through so many generations against the yoke, which the Saxons first, and afterwards the English strove to impose upon them: hence the struggles of the English Barons against several of their Kings, lest they should lose the blessing they had received from their forefathers. Yea, the Scottish nobles, as all their histories show, would no more bear to be enslaved than the Romans. All these, therefore, however differing from each other in a thousand other respects, agreed in testifying the desirableness of liberty, as one of the greatest blessings under the sun.

5. Such was the sense of all our ancestors even from the earliest ages. And is it not also the general sense of the nation at this day? Who can deny, that the whole kingdom is panting for liberty? Is not the cry for it gone forth, not only through every part of our vast metropolis, from the west end of the city to the east, from the north to the south, so that instead of *no complaining in our streets*, there is nothing but complaining: but likewise into every corner of our land, borne by all the four winds of heaven? Liberty! Liberty! sounds through every county, every city, every town, and every hamlet.

6. Is it not for the sake of this, that the name of our great patriot, (perhaps not so admirable in his private character as *the Man of Ross*, or so great a lover of his country as Codrus, or old Curtius,) is more celebrated than that of any private man has been in England for these thousand years? That his very picture is so joyfully received, in every part of England and Ireland? That we stamp his, (I had almost said, adored,) name, on our handkerchiefs, on the cheerful bowl, yea, and on our vessels of various kinds, as well as upon our hearts? Why is all this, but because of the inseparable connexion between Wilkes and Liberty? Liberty that came down, if not *fell from heaven*; whom *all England, and the world worship*?

7. But, meantime, might it not be advisable to consider, (if we are yet at leisure to consider any thing,) what is Liberty? Because it is well known the word is capable of various senses. And possibly it may not be equally desirable in every sense of the word.

8. There are many nations in America, those particularly that border on Georgia and Carolina, wherein if one disapproves of what another says, or perhaps dislikes his looks, he scorns to affront him to his face, neither does he betray the least dissatisfaction. But as soon as opportunity serves, he steps from behind a tree and shoots him. And none calls him that does it to an account. No: this is the *liberty* he derives from his forefathers.

9. For many ages the free natives of Ireland, as well as those of the Scottish Highlands, when it was convenient for them, made an excursion from their woods or fastnesses, and carried off for their own proper use the sheep, and oxen, and corn of their neighbours. This was the *liberty* which the O'Neals, the Campbells, and many other septs and clans of venerable antiquity, had received by immemorial tradition from their ancestors.

10. Almost all the soldiers in the Christian world, as well as in the Mahometan and Pagan, have claimed, more especially in time of war, another kind of *liberty*: that of borrowing the wives and daughters of the men that fell into their hands; sometimes, if they pleaded scruple of conscience or honour, using a little necessary force. Perhaps this may be termed *the liberty of war*. But I will not positively affirm, that it has never been used in this free country, even in the time of peace.

11. In some countries of Europe, and indeed in England, there have been instances of yet another sort of *liberty*, that of calling a monarch to account, and, if need were, taking off his head; that is, if he did not behave in a dutiful manner to our sovereign Lords the people.

12. Now, that we may not always be talking at random, but bring the matter to a determinate point, which of these sorts of liberty do you desire? Is it the first sort? The liberty of knocking on the head, or cutting the throats of those you are out of conceit with? Glorious liberty indeed! What would not king mob do to be gratified with it but for a few weeks? But, I conceive calm, sensible men do not desire to see them intrusted with it. They apprehend there might be some consequences, which, upon the whole, would not redound to the prosperity of the nation.

13. Is the second more desirable? The liberty of taking when we see best, the goods and chattels of our neighbours? Undoubtedly, thousands in the good city of London, (suppose we made the experiment here first,) would be above measure rejoiced thereat, would leap as broke from chains. O how convenient would it be to have free access, without any let or hinderance, to the cellars, the pantries, the larders, yea, and the coffers of their rich, overgrown landlords! But perhaps it would not give altogether so much joy to the Lord Mayor or Aldermen: no; nor even to those staunch friends of liberty, the Common Councilmen. Not that they regard their own interest at all: but, setting themselves out of the question, they are a little in doubt whether this liberty would be for the good of trade.

14. Is it then the third kind of liberty we contend for; the liberty of taking our neighbours' wives, and daughters? Ye pretty gentlemen, ye beaux esprits, will ye not, one and all, give your voices for this natural liberty? Will ye not say, "If we cry out against monopolies of other kinds, shall we tolerate the monopoly of women?" But hold. Are there not some among *you* too, who have wives or daughters, of your own? And are you altogether willing to oblige the first comer with them? I say, the first comer: for observe! As you are to give the liberty you take, so you must not pick and choose your men: you know, by nature, all men are on a level. Liberty! Liberty! No restraint! We are free-born Englishmen: down with the fences! Lay all the enclosures open! No: it will not do. Even nature recoils. We are not yet *polished* enough for this.

15. Are we not ripe, however, for the fourth kind of liberty, that of removing a disobedient King? Would Mr. Wilkes, would Mr

Horne, would any *free Briton* have any objection to this? Provided only, that as soon as our present monarch is removed, we have a better to put in his place. But who is he? King John? That will not sound well even in the ears of his greatest admirers. And whoever calmly considers the characters and endowments of those other great men, who may think themselves much fitter for the office than his present majesty, will hardly concur in their opinion; so that a difficulty lies in your way. Whatever claim you may have to this liberty, you must not use it yet, because you cannot tell where to find a better prince.

16. But to speak seriously. These things being set aside, which the bawling mob dignify by that name; what is that *liberty*, properly so called, which every wise and good man desires? It is either *religious* or *civil*. Religious liberty is, a liberty to choose our own religion, to worship God according to our own conscience, according to the best light we have. Every man living, as man, has a right to this, as he is a rational creature. The Creator gave him this right when he endowed him with understanding. And every man must judge for himself, because every man must give an account of himself to God. Consequently this is an indefeasible right; it is inseparable from humanity. And God did never give authority to any man, or number of men, to deprive any child of man thereof, under any colour or pretence whatever. What an amazing thing is it then, that the governing part of almost every nation under heaven should have taken upon them in all ages to rob all under their power of this liberty? Yea, should take upon them at this day so to do! To force rational creatures, into their own religion! Would one think it possible, that the most sensible men in the world should say to their fellow creatures, "Either be of my religion or I will take away your food, and you, and your wife, and your children shall starve? If that will not convince you, I will fetter your hands and feet, and throw you into a dungeon. And if still you will not *see as I see*, I will burn you alive."

17. It would not be altogether so astonishing; if this were the manner of American savages. But what shall we say, if numberless instances of it have occurred, in the politest nations of Europe? Have no instances of the kind been seen in Britain? Have not England and Scotland seen the horrid fires? Have not the flames, burning the flesh of heretics, shone in London as well as in Paris and Lisbon? Have we forgot the days of *good* queen Mary? No: they will be had in everlasting remembrance. And although burning was out of fashion in queen Elizabeth's days, yet hanging even for religion was not. It is true, her successor did not go quite so far. But did even king James allow liberty of conscience? By no means. During his whole reign, what liberty had the Puritans? What liberty had they in the following reign? If they were not persecuted unto death, (although eventually indeed many of them were, for they died in their imprisonment,) yet were they not continually harassed, by prosecutions in the Bishop's courts or Star-chamber? By fines upon

finer, frequently reducing them to the deepest poverty? And by imprisonments for months, yea for years together, till many of them, escaping with the skin of their teeth, left their country and friends, fled to seek their bread in the wilds of America? However, we may suppose, all this was at an end under the merry monarch, king Charles II. Was it indeed? Where have they lived who suppose this? To waive a thousand particular instances: what will you say to those two public monuments, the Act of Uniformity, and the Act against Conventicles? In the former it is enacted, to the eternal honour of the King, Lords, and Commons, at that memorable period, "Every parson, vicar, or other minister whatever, who has any benefice within these realms, shall, before the next twenty-fourth of August, openly and publicly declare his unfeigned assent and consent, to all and every thing contained in the book of Common Prayer, or shall *ipso facto* be deprived of all his benefices! Likewise, if any dean, prebendary, master, fellow, chaplain, or tutor, of any college, hall, house of learning, or hospital, any public professor, any other person in holy orders, any schoolmaster, or teacher, or tutor in any private family, do not subscribe hereto he shall be *ipso facto* deprived of his place, and shall be utterly disabled from continuing therein."

Property for ever! See how well *English property* was secured in those golden days!

So, by this glorious act, thousands of men, guilty of no crime, nothing contrary either to justice, mercy, or truth, were stripped of all they had, of their houses, lands, revenues, and driven to seek where they could, or beg their bread. For what? Because they did not dare to worship God according to other men's consciences! So they and their families were at one stroke turned out of house and home, and reduced to little less than beggary, for no other fault, real or pretended; but because they could not assent and consent to that manner of worship, which their worthy governors prescribed!

But this was not all. It was further enacted by the same merciful lawgivers, "If any person act as a teacher, tutor, or schoolmaster, in any private family, before he has subscribed hereto, he shall suffer three months imprisonment, without bail or mainprize."

Liberty for ever! Here is security for your person, as well as your property!

By virtue of the Act against Conventicles, if any continued to worship God according to their own consciences, they were first robbed of their substance, and, if they persisted, of their liberty; often of their lives also. For this crime, under this *our most religious and gracious King!* (What were they who publicly told God he was such!) Englishmen were not only spoiled of their goods, but denied even the use of the free air, yea and the light of the sun, being thrust by hundreds into dark and loathsome prisons!

18. Were matters much better in the neighbouring kingdom? Nay, they were inexpressibly worse. Unheard of cruelties were

practised there, from soon after the restoration till the revolution.\* What fining, plundering, beating, maiming, imprisoning, with the most shocking circumstances? For a specimen, look at Dunotter castle! where young and old, of both sexes, (sick or well, it was all one,) were thrust together between bare walls, and that in the heat of summer, without a possibility of either lying or sitting; yea without any convenience of any kind, till many of them, through hunger, thirst, heat, and stench, were set at liberty by death! Considering this; considering how many others were hunted over their native mountains, and shot whenever they were overtaken, with no more ceremony than beasts: considering the drowning, hanging, cutting off of limbs, and various arts of torturing, which were practised by order of king Charles, and often in the presence of king James, who seemed to enjoy such spectacles; it would be no wonder if the very name of an Englishman was had in abomination from the Tweed to the Orkneys.

19. But is this the case at present with *us*? Are we abridged of our religious liberty? His late Majesty was desired, about thirty years ago, to take a step of this kind. But his answer was worthy of a king, yea the king of a free people, "I tell you, while I sit on the English throne, no man shall be persecuted for conscience' sake." And it is certain, he made his promise good from the beginning of his reign to the end. But perhaps the case is altered now. Does his present majesty tread in his steps? He does, he persecutes no man for conscience' sake. If he does, where is the man? I do not ask, whom has he committed to the flames, or caused to die by the common hangman; or whom has he caused to die many deaths, by hunger and thirst, cold and nakedness; but whom has he tortured or thrust into a dungeon, yea, or imprisoned at all, or fined, for worshipping God according to his own conscience, in the Presbyterian, or any other way? O compare king Charles, gracious Charles II. with king George. And you will know the value of the liberty you enjoy.

20. In the name of wonder, what religious liberty can you desire, or even conceive, which you have not already? Where is there a nation in Europe, in the habitable world, which enjoys such liberty of conscience as the English? I will be bold to say, there is nothing like it in Holland, in Germany, (Protestant or Popish,) in either the Protestant or Popish cantons of Switzerland; no, nor in any country under the sun. Have we not in England, full liberty to choose any religion, yea, or no religion at all? To have no more religion than a Hottentot, shall I say? Nay, no more than a bull or a swine? Whoever, therefore, in England stretches his throat, and bawls for more religious liberty, must be totally void of shame, and can have no excuse but want of understanding.

21. But is not the ground of this vehement outcry, that we are deprived of our civil liberty? What is *civil liberty*? A liberty to enjoy

\* See Wodrow's History of the Sufferings of the Church of Scotland.

our lives and fortunes in our own way : to use our property, whatever is legally our own, according to our own choice. And can you affirm, "That we are robbed of this liberty?" Who are? Certainly I am not. I pray, do not face me down that I am. Do not argue me out of my senses. If the Great Turk, or the King of France, wills that a man should die, with or without cause, die he must. And instances of the kind continually occur: but no such instances occur in England. I am in no more danger of death from King George, than from the Queen of Hungary. And if I study to be quiet and mind my own business, I am in no more danger of losing my liberty than my life. No, nor my property; I mean by any act of the King. If this is in any degree invaded, it is not by the King, or his parliament, or army; but by the good-patriots.

Hark! Is Hell or Bedlam broken lose? What roaring is that, loud as the waves of the sea? "It is the patriot mob." What do they want with me? Why do they flock about my house? "Make haste! Illuminate your windows, in honour of Mr. Wilkes." I cannot in conscience; I think it is encouraging vice. "Then they will all be broken." That is, in plain English, give them twenty shillings, or they will rob you of five pounds. Here are champions for the laws of the land! For liberty and property! O vile horse guards?

"That dared, so grim and terrible to' advanc'd  
Their miscreated fronts athwart the way!"

True, they did nothing, and said nothing. Yet (in default of the civil powers, who did not concern themselves with the matter,) they hindered the mob from finishing their work.

22. Why then these men, instead of any way abridging it, plainly preserved my liberty and property. And by their benefit, not the care of those to whom it properly belonged, I still enjoy full, civil liberty. I am free to live in every respect, according to my own choice. My life, my person, my property, are safe. I am not murdered, maimed, tortured, at any man's pleasure: I am not thrown into prison. I am not manacled: see, I have not one fetter, either on my hands or feet. And are not you as free as I am? Are you not at liberty to enjoy the fruit of your labours? Who hinders you from doing it? Does King George? Does Lord North? Do any of his Majesty's officers or soldiers? No, nor any man living. Perhaps some would hinder you, if you acted contrary to law: but this is not liberty; it is licentiousness. Deny the fact who can: am not I free to use my substance according to my own discretion? And do not you enjoy the self-same freedom? You cannot, you dare not deny it. At this hour I am at full liberty, to use my property as I please. And so are you: you do, in fact, use your house, your goods, your land, as is right in your own eyes. Does any one take them from you? No; nor does any one restrain you from the full enjoyment of them. What then is the matter? What is it you are making all this pother about? Why are you thus wringing your hands, and screaming, to the terror of your quiet neighbours, "Destruction! Slavery! Bondage! Help, countrymen! Our liberty is destroyed!"

We are ruined, chained, fettered, undone!" Fettered! How? Where are the fetters, but in your own imagination? There are none, either on your hands, or mine. Neither you nor I can show to any man in his senses, that we have one chain upon us, even so big as a knitting-needle.

23. I do not say, that the ministry are without fault; or that they have *done all things well*. But still I ask, What is the liberty which we want? It is not civil or religious liberty. These we have in such a degree as was never known before, not from the times of William the Conqueror.\* But all this is nothing: this will never satisfy the *bellua multorum capitum*. That many-headed beast, the people, roars for liberty of another kind. Many want *Indian liberty*, the liberty of cutting throats, or of driving a brace of balls through the head of those ugly-looking fellows, whom they cannot abide the sight of. Many more want the old *Highland liberty*, the convenient liberty of plundering. Many others there are, who want the *liberty of war*, of borrowing their neighbours' wives or daughters. And not a few (though they do not always avow it) the liberty of murdering their prince.

24. If you are a reasonable man, a man of real honour, and consequently want none of these, I beg to know, What would you have? Consider the thing calmly. What liberty can you reasonably desire, which you do not already enjoy? What is the matter with you; and with multitudes of the good people, both in England and Ireland? That they are crying and groaning as if they were chained to an oar, or barred up in the dungeons of the Inquisition! The plain, melancholy truth is this: there is a general infatuation, which spreads, like an overflowing stream, from one end of the land to the other. And a man must have great wisdom and strength, or he will be carried away by the torrent. But how can we account for this epidemic madness? For it deserves no better name. We must not dare to give the least intimation, that the Devil has any thing to do with it. No, this *enlightened* age is too wise to believe that there is any Devil in being. Satan, avaunt! We have driven thee back into the land of shadows, keep thou among thy own kindred:

"With hydras, gorgons, and chimeras dire."

Suppose it then to be a purely natural phenomenon: I ask again, how can we account for it? I apprehend, if we could divest ourselves of prejudice, it might be done very easily; and that without concerning ourselves with the hidden springs of action, the motives or intentions of men. Letting these alone, is there not a visible, undeniable cause, which is quite adequate to the effect? The good people of England have for some years past, been continually fed with poison. Dose after dose has been administered to them, for fear the first, or second, or tenth, should not suffice, of a poison whose natural effect is, to drive men out of their senses. "Is the *centaur* not fabu-

\* If the famous *Middlesex* election was an exception to this; yet observe, one swallow makes no summer.

lous?" Neither is *Circæ's cup*. See how, in every county, city, and village, it is now turning quiet, reasonable men, into wild bulls, bears, and tigers! But to lay metaphor aside, how long have the *public papers* represented one of the best of princes as if he had been one of the worst, as little better than Caligula, Nero, or Domitian? These were followed by *pamphlets* of the same kind, and aiming at the same point, to make the King appear odious as well as contemptible, in the eyes of his subjects. Letters succeed, written in fine language, and with exquisite art: but filled with the gall of bitterness. "Yes, but not against the King; Junius does not strike at him, but at the evil administration." Thin pretence! Does not every one see the blow is aimed at the King through the sides of his ministers? All these are conveyed, week after week, through all London and all the nation. Can any man wonder at the effect of this? What can be more natural? What can be expected, but that they who drink in these papers and letters with all greediness, will be thoroughly embittered and inflamed thereby? Will first despise and then abhor the King? What can we expect, but that by the repeated doses of this poison they will be perfectly intoxicated, and only wait for a convenient season to tear in pieces the Royal Monster (as they think him) and all his adherents?

25. At present there are hinderances in the way, so that they cannot use their teeth as they would. One is, an untoward Parliament, who *will not* look upon the King with the same eye that they do; but still think he has no more design or desire to enslave the nation, than to burn the city of London. A still greater hinderance is the army: even lions and bears do not chuse to encounter them, so that these men of war do really at this time preserve the peace of the nation. What then can be done before the people cool, that this precious opportunity be not lost? What, indeed, but to prevail upon the King to dissolve his Parliament and disband his army? Nay, let the Parliament stay as it is; it will suffice to disband the army. If these red coats were but out of the way, the mob would soon deal with the Parliament. *Probatum est*: nothing is more easy than to keep *malignant members* from the house. Remember Lord North not long ago: \* this was a taste, a specimen of their activity. What then would they not do if they were masters of the field, if none were left to oppose them? Would not the avenues of both houses be so well guarded, that none but patriots would dare to approach?

26. But (often as you have heard the contrary affirmed) king George has too much understanding, to throw himself into the hands of those men who have given full proof that they bear him no great good will. Nor has he reason to believe that they are much more fond of his office than of his person. They are not vehemently fond of monarchy itself whoever the monarch be. Therefore, neither their good nor ill words will induce him, in haste, to leap into the fire with his eyes open.

\* Rudely insulted by a turbulent mob, as he was going into the House.

27. But can any thing be done to open the eyes, to restore the senses, of an infatuated nation? Not unless the still-renewed, still operating cause of that infatuation can be removed. But how is it possible to be removed, unless by restraining the licentiousness of the press? And is not this remedy worse than the disease? Let us weigh this matter a little. There was an ancient law in Scotland, which made *leasing-making* a capital crime. By leasing-making was meant, telling such *wilful lies*, as tended to breed dissension between the king and his subjects. What pity but there should be such a law enacted in the present session of Parliament? By our present laws a man is punishable for publishing even truth, to the detriment of his neighbour. This I would not wish. But should he not be punished, who publishes palpable lies? And such lies as manifestly tend to breed dissensions between the king and his subjects? Such, with a thousand more, was that barefaced lie of the king's *bursting out into laughter* before the city magistrates! Now does not the publisher of this lie deserve to lose his ears more than a common knight of the post? And if he is liable to no punishment for a crime of so mischievous a nature, what a grievous defect is in our law! And how loud does it call for a remedy!

28. To return to the point whence we set out. You see whence arose this outcry for liberty, and these dismal complaints, that we are robbed of our liberty, echoing through the land. It is plain to every unprejudiced man, they have not the least foundation. We enjoy at this day throughout these kingdoms such liberty, civil and religious, as no other kingdom or commonwealth in Europe, or in the world, enjoys: and such as our ancestors never enjoyed from the conquest to the revolution. Let us be thankful for it to God and the King! Let us not by our vile unthankfulness, yea, our denial that we enjoy it at all, provoke the King of kings to take it away. By one stroke, by taking to himself that prince whom we know not how to value, He might change the scene, and put an end to our civil as well as religious liberty. Then would be seen who were patriots; and who were not: who were real lovers of liberty, and their country. The God of love remove that day far from us! Deal not with us according to our deservings; but let us know, at least in this our day, the things which make for our peace!

*February 24, 1772.*

## THOUGHTS

CONCERNING

## THE ORIGIN OF POWER.

1. BY *Power*, I here mean, *supreme power*, the power over life and death, and consequently over our liberty and property, and all things of an inferior nature.

2. In many nations this power has, in all ages, been lodged in a single person. This has been the case in almost the whole eastern world, from the earliest antiquity : as in the celebrated empires of Assyria, of Babylon, of Media, Persia, and many others. And so it remains to this day, from Constantinople to the farthest India. The same form of government obtained very early, in very many parts of Afric, and remains in most of them still, as well as in the empires of Morocco and Abyssinia. The first adventurers to America found absolute *monarchy* established there also : the whole power being lodged in the Emperor of Mexico, and the Yncas of Peru. Nay, and many of the ancient nations of Europe were governed by single persons ; as Spain, France, the Russias, and several other nations are at this day.

3. But in others, the power has been lodged in a few, chiefly the rich and noble. This kind of government, usually styled *aristocracy* obtained in Greece, and in Rome, after many struggles with the people, during the later ages of the republic. And this is the government which, at present, subsists in various parts of Europe. In Venice indeed, as well as in Genoa, the supreme power is nominally lodged in one, namely the Doge : but in fact, he is only a royal shade : it is really lodged in a few of the nobles.

4. Where the people have the supreme power, it is termed a *democracy*. This seems to have been the ancient form of government in several of the Grecian states. And so it was at Rome, for some ages after the expulsion of the kings. From the earliest authentic records, there is reason to believe it was for espousing the cause of the people, and defending their rights against the illegal encroachments of the nobles, that Marcus Coriolanus was driven into banishment, and Manlius Capitolinus, as well as Tiberius and Caius Gracchus, were murdered. Perhaps formerly the popular government subsisted in several states. But it is scarcely now to be found, being every where swallowed up either in monarchy or aristocracy.

5. But the grand question is, not in whom this power is lodged, but from whom it is ultimately derived. What is the origin of power ?

What is its primary source? This has been long a subject of debate. And it has been debated with the utmost warmth, by a variety of disputants. But as earnest as they have been on each side of the question, they have seldom come to any good conclusion: but have left the point undecided still, to be a ball of contention to the next generation.

6. But is it impossible, in the nature of things, to throw any light on this obscure subject? Let us make the experiment: let us (without pretending to *dictate*, but desiring every one to use his own judgment) try to find out some ground whereon to stand, and go as far as we can toward answering the question. And let not any man be angry on the account, suppose we should not exactly agree. Let every one enjoy his own opinion, and give others the same liberty.

7. Now I cannot but acknowledge, I believe an old book, commonly called the Bible, to be true. Therefore I believe, *there is no power but from God*, Rom. xiii. 1. *The powers that be, are ordained of God*. There is no *subordinate power* in any nation, but what is derived from the supreme power therein. So in England the king, in the United Provinces the States are the fountain of all power. And there is no *supreme power*, no power of the sword, of life and death, but what is derived from God, the Sovereign of all.

8. But have not *the people*, in every age and nation, the right of disposing of this power? Of investing therewith whom they please, either one or more persons; and that in what proportion they see good, and upon what conditions? Consequently, if those conditions are not observed, have they not a *right* to take away the power they gave? And does not this imply, that they are the judges whether those conditions are observed or not? Otherwise, if the receivers were judges of their own cause, this right would fall into nothing.

9. To prove this, that *the people*, in every country are the source of power, it is argued thus: "All men living upon earth are naturally equal: none is above another. And all are naturally free, masters of their own actions. It manifestly follows, no man can have any power over another, unless by his own consent. The power therefore which the governors in any nation enjoy, must be originally derived from *the people*, and presupposes an *original compact* between them and their first governors."

10. This seems to be the opinion which is now generally espoused by men of understanding and education: and that (if I do not mistake) not in England alone, but almost in every civilized nation. And it is usually espoused with the fullest and strongest persuasion, as a truth little less than self-evident; as what is clear beyond all possibility of doubt, what commands the assent of all reasonable men. Hence if any man affected to deny it, he would in most companies be rather hooted at than argued with: it being so absurd to oppose what is confirmed by the general suffrage of mankind.

11. But still (suppose it to need no proof) it may need a little explaining. For every one does not understand the term. Some will ask, Who are *the people*? Are they *every man, woman, and child*?

Why not? Is it not allowed, is it not affirmed, is it not our fundamental principle, our incontestible, self-evident axiom, that "all persons living upon earth are naturally equal? That all human creatures are naturally free? Masters of their own actions? That none can have any power over others, but by their own consent? Why then should not every man, woman, and child, have a voice in placing their governors? In fixing the measure of power to be intrusted with them; and the conditions on which it is intrusted? And why should not every one have a voice in displacing them too? Seeing it is undeniable, they that gave the power have a right to take it away. Do not quibble or shuffle. Do not evade the question: but come close to the point. I ask, by what argument do you prove, that women are not naturally as free as men? And if they are, why have they not as good a right as we have to choose their own governors? Who can have any power over free, rational creatures, but by their own consent? And are they not free by nature as well as we? Are they not rational creatures?

12. But suppose we exclude women from using their natural right, by might overcoming right, by main strength; for it is sure, that we are stronger than they: I mean that we have stronger limbs, if we have not stronger reason) what pretence have we for excluding men like ourselves, yea, thousands and tens of thousands, barely because they have not lived one and twenty years? "Why, they have not wisdom or experience to judge concerning the qualifications necessary for governors?" I answer, 1. Who has? How many of the voters in Great Britain? One in twenty? One in a hundred? If you exclude all who have not this wisdom, you will leave few behind. But, 2. Wisdom and experience are nothing to the purpose. You have put the matter upon another issue. Are they men? That is enough. Are they human creatures? Then they have a right to choose their own governors: an indefensible right: a right inherent, inseparable from human nature. "But in England, at least, they are excluded by law." But did they consent to the making of that law? If not, by your original-supposition, it can have no power over them. I therefore utterly deny, that we can, consistently with that supposition, debar either women or minors from choosing their own governors.

13. But suppose we exclude these by main force, (which it is certain we are able to do, since though they have most votes they have least strength) are all that remain, all *men of full age*, the people? Are all males then, that have lived one and twenty years, allowed to choose their own governors? "Not at all: not in England, unless they are freeholders, unless they have forty shillings a year." Worse and worse. After depriving half of the human species of their natural right for want of a beard; after depriving myriads more for want of a stiff beard, for not having lived one and twenty years: you rob others (probably some hundreds of thousands) of their birth-right for want of money! Yet not altogether on this account neither: if so, it might be more tolerable. But here is an Englishman, who has money enough to buy the estates of fifty freeholders, and yet he must

not be numbered among *the people*, because he has not two or three acres of land! How is this? By what right do you exclude a man from being one of the people, because he has not forty shillings a year? Yea, or not a groat? Is he not a man whether he be rich or poor? Has he not a soul and a body? Has he not the nature of a man? Consequently all the rights of a man, all that flow from human nature? And among the rest, that of not being controlled by any, but by his own consent?

14. "But he is excluded by law." By what law? By a law of his own making? Did he consent to the making of it? Before this law was passed, was his consent either obtained or asked? If not, what is that law to him? No man, you aver, has any power over another, but by his own consent. Of consequence, a law made without his consent, is with regard to him null and void. You cannot say otherwise, without destroying the supposition, that none can be governed but by his own consent.

15. See now, to what your argument comes. You affirm, all power is derived from *the people*: and presently exclude one half of the people, from having any part or lot in the matter. At another stroke, suppose England to contain eight millions of people, you exclude one or two millions more. At a third, suppose two millions left, you exclude three-fourths of these. And the poor pittance that remains, by I know not what figure of speech, you call, *The people of England!*

16. Hitherto we have endeavoured to view this point in the mere light of reason. And even by this means it manifestly appears, that this supposition, which is so high in vogue, which is so generally received, nay, which has been palmed upon us with such confidence, as undeniable and self-evident, is not only false, not only contrary to reason, but contradictory to itself: the very men who are most positive, that the people are the source of power, being brought into an inextricable difficulty, by that single question, "Who are the people?" Reduced to a necessity of either giving up the point, or owning that by *the people* they mean scarcely a tenth part of them.

17. But we need not rest the matter entirely on reasoning; let us appeal to matter of fact. And because we cannot have so clear and certain a prospect of what is at too great a distance, whether of time or place, let us only take a view of what has been in our own country, for six or seven hundred years. I ask then, when and where did *the people* of England, (even suppose by that word, *the people*, you mean only a hundred thousand of them,) choose their own governors? Did they choose, to go no farther, William the Conqueror? Did they choose King Stephen or King John? As to those who regularly succeeded their fathers, it is plain, *the people* are out of the question. Did they choose Henry IV? Edward IV or Henry VII.? Who will be so hardy as to affirm it? Did the *people* of England, or but fifty thousand of them, choose Queen Mary, or Queen Elizabeth? To come nearer to our own times, did they choose King James I.? Perhaps you will say, "But if the peo-

ple did not *give* King Charles the supreme power, at least they took it away from him. Surely you will not deny this." Indeed I will: I deny it utterly. The *people of England* no more took away his power, than they cut off his head. "Yes, the parliament did, and they are the people." No: the parliament did not. The lower house, the House of Commons, is not *the parliament*, any more than it is the nation. Neither were those who then sat, the House of Commons: no, nor one-quarter of them. But suppose they had been the whole House of Commons, yea, or the whole parliament; by what rule of logic will you prove, that seven or eight hundred persons are *the people* of England? "Why, they are the delegates of the people; they are chosen by them." No, not by one-half, not by a quarter, not by a tenth part of them. So that *the people*, in the only proper sense of the word, were innocent of the whole affair.

18. "But you will allow, *the people* gave the supreme power to King Charles II. at the restoration." I will allow no such thing; unless by *the people* you mean General Monck and fifteen thousand soldiers. "However, you will not deny, that *the people* gave the power to King William at the revolution." Nay, truly, I must deny this too. I cannot possibly allow it. Although I will not say, that William III. obtained the royal power as William I. did: although he did not claim it by right of conquest, which would have been an odious title: yet certain it is, that he did not receive it by any act or deed of *the people*. Their consent was neither obtained nor asked: they were never consulted in the matter. It was not therefore *the people* that gave him the power: no, nor even the parliament. It was the *convention*, and none else. "Who were the *convention*?" They were a few hundreds of lords and gentlemen, who, observing the desperate state of public affairs, met together on that important occasion. So that still we have no single instance in above seven hundred years, of *the people* of England's conveying the supreme power, either to one or more persons.

19. Indeed I remember in all history, both ancient and modern, but one instance of supreme power conferred by *the people*; if we mean thereby, though not all the people, yet a great majority of them. This celebrated instance occurred at Naples, in the middle of the last century; where *the people*, properly speaking, that is, men, women, and children, claimed and exerted their natural right in favour of Thomas Aniello, (vulgarly called Masanello,) a young fisherman. But will any one say, he was the only governor for these thousand years, who has had a proper right to the supreme power? I believe not: nor, I apprehend, does any one desire, that *the people* should take the same steps in London.

20. So much both for reason and matter of fact. But one single consideration, if we dwell a little upon it, will bring the question to a short issue. It is allowed no man can dispose of another's life but by his own consent. I add, no, nor with his consent. For no man has a right to dispose of his own life. The Creator of man has the

sole right to take the life which he gave. Now it is an indisputable truth, *Nihil dat quod non habet*: none gives what he has not. It plainly follows, that no man can give to another a right which he never had himself: a right which only the Governor of the world has; even the wiser Heathens being judges: but which no man upon the face of the earth either has or can have. No man therefore can give the power of the sword, any such power as implies a right to take away life. Wherever it is, it must descend from God alone, the sole Disposer of life and death.

21. The supposition then, that *the people* are the origin of power, is every way indefensible. It is absolutely overturned by the very principle on which it is supposed to stand, namely, that a right of choosing his governors belongs to every partaker of human nature. If this be so, then it belongs to every individual of the human species: consequently, not to freeholders alone, but to all men; not to men only, but to women also: nor only to adult men and women, to those who have lived one and twenty years, but to those who have lived eighteen or twenty, as well as those who have lived three-score. But none did ever maintain this, nor probably ever will. Therefore this boasted principle falls to the ground, and the whole superstructure with it. So common sense brings us back to the grand truth, *There is no power but of God.*

---

## A CALM ADDRESS

TO

## OUR AMERICAN COLONIES.

---

*Ne, pueri, ne tanta animis assuescite bella,  
Neu patriæ validas in viscera vertite vires.*

VIRGIL.

---

### BRETHREN AND COUNTRYMEN,

1. THE grand Question which is now debated, (and with warmth enough on both sides,) is this, Has the English Parliament power to tax the American Colonies?

In order to determine this, let us consider the nature of our Colonies. An English Colony is, a number of persons to whom the King grants a charter, permitting them to settle in some far country as a corporation, enjoying such powers as the charter grants, to be administered in such a manner as the charter prescribes. As a corporation they make laws for themselves: but as a corporation sub-

sisting by a grant from higher authority, to the control of that authority they still continue subject.

Considering this, nothing can be more plain, than that the supreme power in England has a legal right of laying any tax upon them for any end beneficial to the whole empire.

2. But you object, "It is the privilege of a freeman and an Englishman to be taxed only by his own consent. And this consent is given for every man by his representative in Parliament. But we have no representation in Parliament. Therefore we ought not to be taxed thereby."

I answer, This argument proves too much. If the Parliament cannot tax you, because you have no representation therein, for the same reason it can make no laws to bind you. If a freeman cannot be taxed without his own consent, neither can he be punished without it: for whatever holds with regard to taxation, holds with regard to all other laws. Therefore he who denies the English Parliament the power of taxation, denies it the right of making any laws at all. But this power over the Colonies you have never disputed: you have always admitted statutes, for the punishment of offences, and for the preventing or redressing of inconveniences. And the reception of any law draws after it by a chain which cannot be broken, the necessity of admitting taxation.

3. But I object to the very foundation of your plea. That "every freeman is governed by laws to which he has consented," as confidently as it has been asserted, it is absolutely false. In wide-extended dominions, a very small part of the people are concerned in making laws. This, as all public business, must be done by delegation, the delegates are chosen by a select number. And those that are not electors, who are far the greater part, stand by, idle and helpless spectators.

The case of electors is little better. When they are near equally divided, almost half of them must be governed, not only without, but even against their own consent.

And how has any man consented to those laws, which were made before he was born? Our consent to these, nay, and to the laws now made even in England, is purely passive. And in every place, as all men are born the subjects of some state or other, so they are born, passively, as it were, consenting to the laws of that state. Any other than this kind of consent, the condition of civil life does not allow.

4. But you say, You "are entitled to life, liberty, and property by nature; and that you have never ceded to any sovereign power, the right to dispose of these without your consent."

While you speak as the naked sons of nature, this is certainly true. But you presently declare, "Our ancestors at the time they settled these Colonies, were entitled to all the rights of natural-born subjects, within the realm of England." This likewise is true; but when this is granted, the boast of original rights is at an end. You are no longer in a state of nature, but sink down to Colonists, governed by

a charter. If your ancestors were subjects, they acknowledged a Sovereign : if they had a right to English privileges, they were accountable to English laws, and had *ceded* to the King and Parliament, *the power of disposing without their consent, of both their lives, liberties, and properties.* And did the Parliament cede to them, a dispensation from the obedience which they owe as natural subjects ? Or any degree of independence, not enjoyed by other Englishmen ?”

5. “ They did not,” indeed, as you observe, “ by emigration forfeit any of those privileges : but they were, and their descendants now are entitled to all such as their circumstances enable them to enjoy.”

That they who form a Colony by a lawful charter, forfeit no privilege thereby, is certain. But what they do not forfeit by any judicial sentence, they may lose by natural effects. When a man voluntarily comes into America, he may lose what he had when in Europe. Perhaps he had a right to vote for a knight or burgess : by crossing the sea he did not *forfeit* this right. But it is plain he has made the exercise of it no longer possible. He has reduced himself from a voter to one of the innumerable multitude that have no votes.

6. But you say, “ As the Colonies are not represented in the British Parliament, they are entitled to a free power of legislation. For they inherit all the right which their ancestors had of enjoying all the privileges of Englishmen.”

They do inherit all the privileges which their ancestors had : but they can inherit no more. Their ancestors left a country where the representatives of the people were elected by men particularly qualified, and where those who wanted that qualification were bound by the decisions of men whom they had not deputed. You are the descendants of men who either had no votes, or resigned them by emigration. You have therefore exactly what your ancestors left you : not a vote in making laws, nor in choosing legislators, but the happiness of being protected by laws, and the duty of obeying them.

What your ancestors did not bring with them, neither they nor their descendants have acquired. They have not, by abandoning their right in one legislature, acquired a right to constitute another : any more than the multitudes in England who have no vote, have a right to erect a Parliament for themselves.

7. However the “ Colonies have a right to all the privileges granted them by royal charters, or secured to them by provincial laws.”

The first clause is allowed : they have certainly a right to all the privileges granted them by royal charters. But as to the second there is a doubt : provincial laws may grant privileges to individuals of the province. But surely no province can confer provincial privileges on itself ! They have a right to all which the King has given them ; but not to all which they have given themselves.

A corporation can no more assume to itself privileges which it had not before, than a man can, by his own act and deed, assume titles or dignities. The legislature of a colony may be compared to the vestry of a large parish ; which may lay a cess on its inhabitants, but

still regulated by the law : and which, whatever be its internal expenses, is still liable to taxes laid by superior authority.

The charter of Pennsylvania has a clause admitting, in express terms, taxation by parliament. If such a clause be not inserted in other charters, it must be omitted as not necessary : because it is manifestly implied in the very nature of subordinate government : all countries which are subject to laws, being liable to taxes.

It is true, the first settlers in Massachusetts-Bay were promised *an exemption from taxes for seven years*. But does not this very exemption imply, that they were to pay them afterwards ?

If there is in the charter of any Colony a clause exempting them from taxes for ever, then undoubtedly they have a right to be so exempted. But if there is no such clause, then the English Parliament has the same right to tax them as to tax any other English subjects.

3. All that impartially consider what has been observed, must readily allow, that the English Parliament has undoubted right to tax all the English Colonies:

But whence then is all this hurry and tumult ? Why is America all in an uproar ? If you can yet give yourselves time to think, you will see, the plain case is this.

A few years ago, you were assaulted by enemies, whom you were not well able to resist. You represented this to your mother-country, and desired her assistance. You were largely assisted, and by that means wholly delivered from all your enemies.

After a time, your mother-country desiring to be reimbursed for some part of the large expense she had been at, laid a small tax, (which she had always a right to do,) on one of her Colonies.

But how is it possible, that the taking this reasonable and legal step, should have set all America in a flame ?

I will tell you my opinion freely ; and perhaps you will not think it improbable. I speak the more freely, because I am unbiassed : I have nothing to hope or fear from either side. I gain nothing either by the Government or by the Americans, and probably never shall. And I have no prejudice to any man in America : I love you as my brethren and countrymen.

9. My opinion is this. We have a few men in England, who are determined enemies to monarchy. Whether they hate his present Majesty on any other ground, than because he is a King, I know not. But they cordially hate his office, and have for some years been undermining it with all diligence, in hopes of erecting their grand idol, their dear commonwealth, upon its ruins. I believe they have let very few into their design : (although many forward it, without knowing any thing of the matter ;) but they are steadily pursuing it, as by various other means, so in particular by inflammatory papers, which are industriously and continually dispersed, throughout the town and country : by this method they have already wrought thousands of the people, even to the pitch of madness. By the same, only varied according to your circumstances, they have likewise in-

flamed America. I make no doubt, but these very men are the original cause of the present breach between England and her Colonies. And they are still pouring oil into the flame, studiously incensing each against the other, and opposing under a variety of pretences, all measures of accommodation. So that although the Americans, in general, love the English, and the English, in general, love the Americans, (all I mean that are not yet cheated and exasperated by these artful men,) yet the rupture is growing wider every day, and none can tell where it will end.

These good men hope it will end in the total defection of North America from England. If this were effected, they trust the English, in general, would be so irreconcilably disgusted, that they should be able, with or without foreign assistance, entirely to overturn the government: especially while the main of both the English and Irish forces, are at so convenient a distance.

10. But, my brethren, would this be any advantage to *you*? Can *you* hope for a more desirable form of government either in England or America, than that which you now enjoy? After all the vehement cry for liberty, what more liberty can you have? What more religious liberty can you desire, than that which you enjoy already? May not every one among you worship God according to his own conscience? What civil liberty can you desire, which you are not already possessed of? Do not you sit without restraint, *every man under his own vine*? Do you not, every one, high or low, enjoy the fruit of your labour? This is real, rational liberty, such as is enjoyed by Englishmen alone: and not by any other people in the habitable world. Would the being independent of England make you more free? Far, very far from it. It would hardly be possible for you to steer clear, between anarchy and tyranny. But suppose after numberless dangers and mischiefs, you should settle into one or more republics: would a republican government give you more liberty, either religious or civil? By no means. No governments under heaven are so despotic as the republican: no subjects are governed in so arbitrary a manner, as those of a commonwealth. If any one doubt of this, let him look at the subjects of Venice, of Genoa, or even of Holland. Should any man talk or write of the Dutch government as every cobbler does of the English, he would be laid in irons, before he knew where he was. And then woe be to him! Republics show no mercy.

II. "But if we submit to one tax, more will follow." Perhaps so, and perhaps not. But if they did; if you were taxed (which is quite improbable) equal with Ireland or Scotland, still were you to prevent this by renouncing connexion with England, the remedy would be worse than the disease. For, O! what convulsions must poor America feel, before any other government was settled? Innumerable mischiefs must ensue, before any general form could be established. And the grand mischief would ensue when it was established; when you had received a yoke which you could not shake off.

12. Brethren, open your eyes! Come to yourselves! Be no longer the dupes of designing men. I do not mean any of your countrymen in America: I doubt whether any of these are in the secret. The designing men, the Ahithophels are in England; those who have laid their scheme so deep, and covered it so well, that thousands who are ripening it, suspect nothing at all of the matter. These well-meaning men, sincerely believing that they are serving their country, exclaim against grievances, which either never existed, or are aggravated above measure, and thereby inflame the people more and more, to the wish of those who are behind the scene. But be not you duped any longer; do not ruin yourselves for them that owe you no good-will, that now employ you only for their own purposes, and in the end will give you no thanks. They love neither England nor America, but play one against the other, in subserviency to their grand design of overturning the English government. Be warned in time. Stand and consider before it is too late; before you have entailed confusion and misery on your latest posterity. Have pity upon your mother country! Have pity upon your own! Have pity upon yourselves, upon your children, and upon all that are near and dear to you! Let us not bite and devour one another, lest we be consumed one of another! O let us follow after peace! Let us put away our sins; the real ground of all our calamities! Which never will or can be thoroughly removed, till we fear God and honour the King.

---

A Sermon preached by Dr. Smith, in Philadelphia, has been lately reprinted in England. It has been much admired, but proceeds all along upon wrong suppositions. These are confuted in the preceding Tract: yet I would just touch upon them again.

Dr. Smith supposes, 1. They have a right of granting their own money: that is, of being exempt from taxation by the supreme power. If they "*contend for*" this, they contend for neither more nor less than independency. Why then do they talk of their "rightful Sovereign?" They acknowledge no sovereign at all.

That they contend for "the cause of liberty" is another mistaken supposition. What liberty do you want, either civil or religious? You had the very same liberty we have in England. I say, you *had*: but you have now thrown away the substance, and retain only the shadow. You have no liberty, civil or religious now, but what the Congress pleases to allow.

But you justly suppose, "We are by a plain *original contract* entitled to a community of privileges, with our brethren that reside in England, in every civil and religious respect." p. 19. Most true. And till you appointed your new sovereigns, you enjoyed all those privileges. Indeed you had no vote for members of Parliament, neither have I, because I have no freehold in England. Yet the being taxed by the Parliament is no infringement either of my civil or religious liberty.

But you say again, “no power on earth has a right to grant our property *without our consent*,” p. 22.

Then you have no sovereign: for every sovereign under heaven has a right to tax his subjects: that is, “to grant their property, with or *without their consent*.” Our sovereign\* has a right to tax me, and all other Englishmen, whether we have votes for Parliament-men or not.

Vainly, therefore, do you complain of “unconstitutional exactions, violated rights, and mutilated charters,” p. 24. Nothing is exacted, but according to the original constitution both of England and her Colonies. Your rights are no more violated than mine, when we are both taxed by the supreme power: and your charters are no more mutilated by this, than is the charter of the city of London.

Vainly do you complain of being “made slaves.” Am I, or two millions of Englishmen made slaves, because we are taxed without our own consent?

You may still “rejoice in the common rights of freemen.” I rejoice in all the rights of my ancestors. And every right which I enjoy, is common to Englishmen and Americans.

But shall we “surrender any part of the privileges which we enjoy, by the *express terms* of our colonization?” that is, of our charter? By no means: and none requires it of you. None desires to withhold any thing that is granted by the *express terms* of your charters. But remember! One of your first charters, that of Massachusetts Bay, says in *express terms*, you are exempt from paying taxes to the king, for *seven years*: plainly implying, that after those seven years you are to pay them like other subjects. And remember your last charter, that of Pennsylvania, says, in *express terms*, you are liable to taxation.

But “a people will resume,” you say, “the power, which they never surrendered, except”—No need of any exception. They never surrendered it at all; they could not surrender it; for they never had it. I pray did *the people*, unless you mean the Norman army, give William the Conqueror his power? And to which of his successors did *the people* of England, (six or seven millions,) give the sovereign power? This is mere political cant: words without meaning. I know but one instance in all history, wherein *the people* gave the sovereign power to any one; this was, to Massaniello, of Naples. And I desire any man living to produce another instance in the history of all nations.

Ten times over, in different words, you “profess yourselves to be contending for liberty.” But it is a vain, empty profession: unless you mean by that threadbare word, a liberty from obeying your rightful sovereign, and from keeping the fundamental laws of your country. And this undoubtedly it is, which the confederated Colonies are now contending for.

\* That is, in connexion with the Lords and Commons.

*How far is it the Duty of a Christian Minister to preach Politics?*

1. IT is impossible to answer this question before it is understood. We must, first, therefore, endeavour to understand it; and then it will be easy to answer.

2. There is a plain command in the Bible, *Thou shalt not speak evil of the Ruler of thy people.* But notwithstanding this, many that are called religious people, speak evil of him continually. And they speak many things that are palpably false; particularly when they affirm him to be a *w—k* man; whereas a nobleman who is not at all prejudiced in his favour, when he was pressed to speak, made this honest declaration: “Sir, I know him well; and I judge the King to be one of *the most sensible* men in Europe. His ministers are no fools: but his Majesty is able *to wind them all round his finger.*”

3. Now when a clergyman comes into a place, where this, and many more stories, equally false, have been diligently propagated against the king, and are generally believed: if he guards the people against this evil-speaking, by refuting those slanders, many cry out, “O, he is *preaching politics.*”

4. If you mean this by the term, it is the bounden duty of every Christian minister to *preach politics.* It is our bounden duty to refute these vile aspersions, in public as well as in private. But this can be done only now and then, when it comes naturally in our way. For it is our main and constant business, to preach Jesus Christ and him crucified.

5. Again. Many who do not so freely censure the king, speak all manner of evil of his ministers. If any misfortune befalls us at home or abroad, by sea or land, it is “all *their* fault.” If one commander in America is surprised with all his forces, when he is dead drunk, “Lord North deserves to be hanged.” If General Burgoyne or Lord Cornwallis is betrayed into their enemy’s hand, all the blame is laid on our ministers at home. But still the king is wounded through their sides; the blame glances from them to him. Yet if we say a word in defence of them, (which is in effect defending him,) this also is *preaching politics.*

6. It is always difficult, and frequently impossible, for private men, to judge of the measures taken by men in public offices. We do not see many of the grounds which determine them to act, in this or the contrary manner. Generally therefore it behoves us to be silent, as we may suppose they know their own business best: but when they are censured without any colour of reason, and when an odium is cast on the king by that means, we ought to *preach politics* in this sense also: we ought publicly to confute those unjust censures. Only remembering still, that this is rarely to be done, and only when fit occasion offers: it being our main business to preach *Repentance towards God, and faith in our Lord Jesus Christ.*

LEWISHAM, Jan. 9, 1782.

# PIECES ON VARIOUS SUBJECTS.

FROM THE

## METHODIST MAGAZINES.

BY JOHN WESLEY, A.M.

### THOUGHTS ON SALVATION BY FAITH.

1. IT is now upwards of forty years\* since my brother and I were convinced of that important truth, which is the foundation of all real religion, that *by grace we are saved through faith*. And as soon as we believed, we spoke : when we saw it ourselves, we immediately began declaring it to others. And, indeed, we could hardly speak of any thing else, either in public or private. It shone upon our minds with so strong a light, that it was our constant theme. It was our daily subject, both in verse and prose ; and we vehemently defended it against all mankind.

2. But in doing this we met with abundance of difficulty : we were assaulted and abused on every side. We were every where represented as mad dogs, and treated accordingly. We were stoned in the streets, and several times narrowly escaped with our lives. In sermons, newspapers, and pamphlets of all kinds, we were painted as unheard-of monsters. But this moved us not : we went on, by the help of God, testifying Salvation by Faith both to small and great, and not counting our lives dear unto ourselves, so we might finish our course with joy.

3. While we were thus employed, another storm arose from a quarter whence we least expected it. Some of our familiar friends declared open war against us, “ for preaching Salvation by Works !” This we could not in anywise understand : we wondered what they meant. We utterly disavowed the charge : we denied it in the strongest terms. We declared over and over, both in public and in private, “ We believe and constantly preach Salvation by Faith ; Salvation by Works is a doctrine we abhor : we neither preach nor believe it.” But it did not avail : say what we would, the same charge was still repeated : and that not only when we were at a convenient distance, but even before our face.

1. At first, we were inclined to think, that many who affirmed this

\* This was written in the year 1780.

did not believe themselves ; that it was merely a copy of their countenance, spoken *ad movendam invidiam*. And could we have been fully persuaded of this, the difficulty would have been solved. But we did not dare to give way to the thought : whatever they might think or say of *us*, we could not but think they were upright men, and spoke according to their real sentiments. The wonder, therefore, remained, How they could impute to us a doctrine which our soul abhorred, and which we were continually opposing, and confuting with all our might !

5. I was in this perplexity, when a thought shot across my mind, which solved the matter at once : “ This is the key : those that hold, Every one is absolutely predestinated either to Salvation or Damnation, see no medium between Salvation by Works and Salvation by Absolute Decrees.” It follows, that whosoever denies Salvation by Absolute Decrees, in so doing, (according to *their* apprehension) asserts Salvation by Works.

6. And herein I verily believe they are right. As averse as I once was to the thought, upon further consideration, I allow there is, there can be no medium. Either Salvation is by Absolute Decree, or it is (in a *scriptural* sense) *by Works*. Yea, this I will proclaim on the house-top, there is no medium between these. You must either assert Unconditional Decrees, or (in a sound sense) Salvation by Works.

7. This deserves a fuller examination : let us consider it more attentively. If the Salvation of every man that ever was, is, or shall be finally saved, depends wholly and solely upon an Absolute, Irresistible, Unchangeable Decree of God, without any regard either to Faith or Works foreseen, then it is not, in any sense, by Works. But neither is it by Faith. For an *Unconditional* Decree excludes Faith as well as Works : since if it is either by Faith or Works foreseen, it is not by an Unconditional Decree. Therefore, Salvation by an Absolute Decree excludes both one and the other. And, consequently, upon this supposition, Salvation is neither by Faith nor by Works.

8. If, on the other hand, we deny all Absolute Decrees, and admit only the conditional one, (the same which our blessed Lord hath revealed,) *He that believeth shall be saved* ; we must, according to *their* apprehension, assert Salvation by Works. We must do this, (in a sound sense of the expression) if we believe the Bible. For seeing no faith avails, but that *which worketh by love*, which produces both inward and outward good works, to affirm, no man is finally saved without this, is in effect to affirm, no man is finally saved without Works. It is plain, then, if we affirm, no man is saved by an Absolute, Unconditional Decree, but only by a Conditional one : we must expect, all who hold Unconditional Decrees will say, We teach Salvation by Works.

9. Let none, therefore, who hold Universal Redemption, be surprised at being charged with this. Let us deny it no more : let us frankly and fairly meet those who advance it upon their own ground.

If they charge you with holding Salvation by Works, answer plainly, "In *your* sense I do : for I deny that our final salvation depends upon any Absolute Unconditional Decree. If, therefore, there be no medium, I do hold Salvation by Works. But observe ! In allowing this, I allow no more than that I am no Calvinist. So that by my making you this concession, you gain—just nothing."

10. I am, therefore, still consistent with myself, as well as consistent with the Bible. I still hold, (as I have done above these forty years) that *by grace we are saved through faith* ; yet so as not to contradict that other expression of the same Apostle, *Without holiness no man shall see the Lord*. Meantime, those who maintain Absolute Predestination, who hold Decrees that have no Condition at all, cannot be consistent with themselves, unless they deny Salvation by Faith, as well as Salvation by Works. For if only *he that believeth shall be saved*, then is Faith a Condition of Salvation. And God hath decreed, from all eternity, that it should be such. But if the Decree admit of any Condition, it is not an Unconditional Decree. Either, therefore, you must renounce your Unconditional Decrees, or deny that Faith is the Condition of Salvation : or, (which is just the same thing,) affirm that a man may be saved without either faith or works.

11. And I am consistent with myself, as well as with the Bible, when I affirm, that none shall be finally saved by any *faith* but that *which worketh by love*, both inward and outward holiness. I fear many of them that hold Unconditional Decrees, are not sensible of this. For they seriously believe themselves to be in the high road to Salvation, though they are far from inward (if not outward) holiness. They have not *put on humbleness of mind, bowels of mercy, brotherly-kindness*. They have no gentleness, no meekness, no long-suffering ; so far are they from the *love that endureth all things*. They are under the power of sin, of evil-surmising, of anger : yea, of outward sin. For they scruple not to say to their brother, *Thou fool !* They not only, on a slight provocation, make no scruple of rendering evil for evil, of returning railing for railing : but they bring railing accusations unprovoked : they pour out floods of the lowest, basest invectives. And yet they are within the Decree ! I instance in the two late publications of Mr. Rowland Hill. "O," says Mr. Hill, "but Mr. Wesley is a wicked man." What then ! Is he more wicked than he that *disputed with Michael, about the body of Moses* ? How then durst he bring a railing accusation against a man, when an Archangel durst not bring one against the Devil ? O fight, fight for an Unconditional Decree ! For if there be any Condition, how can you be saved ?

## FURTHER THOUGHTS ON NECESSITY.

I. 1. THE late ingenious Dr. Hartley, in his Essay on Man, resolves all *thoughts* into *vibrations* of the brain. When any of the fine fibres of the brain are moved, so as to vibrate to and fro, then (according to his scheme) a perception or *sensation* is the natural consequence. These sensations are at first *simple*, but are afterwards variously *compounded*: till, by farther vibrations, ideas of *reflection* are added to ideas of sensation. By the additional vibrations of this curious organ, our *judgments* of things are also formed. And from the same fruitful source arise our *reasonings* in their endless variety.

2. From our apprehensions of things, from our judgments and reasonings concerning them, all our *passions* arise: whether those which are more sudden and transient, or those of a permanent nature. And from the several mixtures and modifications of these, our *tempers* or *dispositions* flow: very nearly, if not altogether the same with what are usually termed *virtues* or *vices*.

3. Our passions and tempers are the immediate source of all our *words* and *actions*. Of consequence, these likewise depending on our passions, and our passions on our judgments and apprehensions, all our actions, passions, and judgments are ultimately resolvable into the vibrations of the brain. And all of them together follow each other, in one connected chain.

4. "But you will say, (says the Doctor,) this infers the universal necessity of human actions. I am sorry for it: but I cannot help it." But since he saw this destroyed the very essence of morality, leaving no room for either virtue or vice, why did he publish it to the world? Why? Because his brain vibrated in such a manner, that he could not help it.

Alas for poor human nature! If this is so, where is "The dignity of man?"

II. 1. But other great men totally disapprove of the doctrine of vibrations. They give an entirely different account of this whole affair. They say, the delicate, soft, and almost fluid substance, of which the brain is composed, is absolutely incapable of such vibrations, as the Doctor ascribes to it: but that the animal spirits, whatever they are, continually moving through that soft substance, naturally form various *traces* therein: first, very simple, then less or more compounded: that these are afterward varied innumerable ways; and that from these simple or compounded traces, arise simple or compounded ideas, whether of sensation or reflection. From these result the judgments we form, with all our train of reasonings. And

at a little farther remove, our passions, our tempers, and from these our words and actions.

2. It is easy to observe, that this scheme equally infers the universal necessity of human actions. The premises indeed are a little different, but the conclusion is one and the same. If every thought, word, and action, necessarily depends upon those traces in the brain, which are formed whether we will or not, without either our consent or knowledge : then the man has no more liberty in thinking, speaking, or acting, than the stone has in falling.

III. That great man, President Edwards, of New England, places this in a still stronger light. He says,

1. The whole frame of this world wherein we are placed is so constituted, that without our choice, visible objects affect our eyes, sounds strike upon the ear, and the other things which surround us affect the other bodily organs, according to their several natures.

2. The *nerves*, which are spread all over the body, without any choice of ours, convey the impression made on the outward organ to the common sensory ; supposed to be lodged, either in the pineal gland, or in some other part of the brain.

3. Immediately, without our choice, the perception or sensation follows.

4. The simple apprehension (analogous to sensation) furnishes us with simple ideas.

5. These ideas are more and more associated together, still without our choice : and we understand, judge, reason, accordingly : yea, love, hate, joy, grieve, hope, or fear.

6. And according to our passions we speak and act. Where is liberty then ? It is excluded. All you see is one connected chain, fixed as the pillars of heaven.

To the same effect, though with a little variation, speaks the ingenious Lord Kaim. He says,

“ The universe is one immense machine, one amazing piece of clock work, consisting of innumerable wheels, fitly framed, and indissolubly linked together. Man is one of these wheels, fixed in the middle of this vast automaton. And he moves just as necessarily as the rest, as the sun, or moon, or earth. Only with this difference, (which was necessary for completing the design of the Great Artificer,) that he *seems* to himself perfectly free ; he *imagines* that he is unecessitated, and master of his own motions : whereas in truth he no more directs or moves himself, than any other wheel in the machine.”

The general inference then is still the same ; the point which all these so laboriously endeavour to prove is, that inevitable Necessity governs all things, and men have no more liberty than stones !

V 1. But allowing all this : allowing (in a sense) all that Dr. Hartly, Edwards, and their associates contend for : what discovery have they made ? What new thing have they found out ? What does all this amount to ? With infinite pains, with immense parade, with the utmost ostentation of mathematical and metaphysical learning.

they have discovered just as much as they might have found in one single line of the Bible :

*Without me ye can do nothing!* Absolutely, positively nothing! Seeing, *in him all things live and move*, as well as *have their being*: seeing, he is not only the true *primum mobile*, containing the whole frame of creation, but likewise the inward, sustaining, acting principle, indeed the only proper Agent in the universe: unless so far as he imparts a spark of his active, self-moving nature, to created spirits. But more especially *ye can do nothing right*, nothing wise, nothing good, without the direct, immediate agency of the First Cause.

2. Let the trial be made. And, first, what can *Reason*, all-sufficient Reason, do in this matter? Let us try, upon Dr. Hartley's scheme. Can it prevent or alter the *vibrations* of the brain? Can it prevent or alter the various *compositions* of them? Or cut off the connexion between these and our apprehensions, judgments, reasonings? Or between these and our passions? Or that between our passions, and our words and actions? Not at all. Reason can do nothing in this matter. In spite of all our reason, nature will keep its course, will hold on its way, and utterly bear down its feeble opponent.

3. And what can Reason do, upon the second supposition? Can it prevent or alter the *traces* in the brain? Not a jot more than it could the vibrations. They laugh at all its power. Can it cut off the connexion between those traces and our apprehensions: or that between our apprehensions, and our passions? Or between our passions and actions? Nothing at all of this. It may see the evil, but it cannot help it.

4. Try what Reason can do upon the third supposition, that of President Edwards. Can it change the appearances of things that surround us? Or the impression which the nerves convey to the common sensory? Or the sensation that follows? Or the apprehension? Or can it cut off the connexion between our apprehensions of things and our passions? Or that between our passions and our actions? Poor, impotent reason! It can do neither more nor less in any of these matters. It cannot alter the outward constitution of things; the nature of light, sound, or the other objects that surround us. It cannot prevent their affecting our senses thus and thus. And then, will not all the rest follow?

5. Make a trial, if Reason can do any more, upon Lord Kaim's supposition. Can it in any degree alter the nature of the universal machine? Can it change or stop the motion of any one wheel? Utterly impossible.

6. Has *Free-will* any more power in these respects than Reason? Let the trial be made upon each of these schemes.

What can it do upon Dr. Hartley's scheme? Can our *Free-will* alter one *vibration* of the brain? What can it do upon the second scheme? Can it erase or alter one of the *traces* formed there? What can it do upon Dr. Edwards's? Can it alter the appearances of the things that surround us? Or the impressions they make upon the nerves? Or the natural consequences of them? Can it do any thing

more on Lord Kaim's scheme? Can it any ways alter the constitution of the great clock? Stand still! Look awhile into your own breast! What can your will do in any of these matters? Ah poor Free-will! Does not plain experience show, it is as impotent as your Reason? Let it stand then as an eternal truth, *Without me ye can do nothing.*

VI. 1. But in the same old book there is another word, *I can do all things through Christ strengthening me.* Here the charm is dissolved! The light breaks in, and the shadows flee away.

One of these sentences should never be viewed apart from the other: each receives light from the other. God hath joined them together, and let no man put them asunder.

Now taking this into the account, I care not one pin, for all Dr. Hartley can say of his *vibrations*. Allowing the whole which he contends for, allowing all the links of his mathematical chain, to be as indissolubly joined together, as are the propositions in Euclid: suppose vibrations, perceptions, judgments, passions, tempers, actions, ever so naturally follow each other: what is all this to the God of Nature? Cannot he stop, alter, annihilate, any or all of these, in whatever manner, and in whatever moment he pleases? Away then with all these fine-wrought speculations! Sweep them off as a spider's web! Scatter them in the wind! How helpless soever they may be, *who are without God in the World*: however they may groan under the iron hand of dire Necessity: necessity has no power over those, *who have the Lord for their God*. Each of these can say, through happy experience, *I can do all things through Christ strengthening me.*

2. Again. Allowing all the minute philosophers can say, of the *traces* formed in the brain, and of perceptions, judgments, passions, tempers, words, and actions, naturally flowing therefrom: whatever dreadful consequences may follow from hence, with regard to those who know not God, who have only natural Reason and Free-will to oppose the power of Nature: (which we know to have no more force, than a thread of tow that has touched the fire) under the influence of the God of Nature, we laugh all our enemies to scorn. He can alter or efface all these *traces*, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye. Still, although *without him I can do nothing, I can do all things through Christ strengthening me.*

3. Yet again. Let Dr. Edwards say all he will or can, concerning the outward *appearances* of things, as giving rise to *sensations, associations* of ideas, passions, dispositions, and actions: allowing this to be the *course of Nature*: what then? See, One superior to Nature! What is the course of Nature to him? By a word, a nod, he turneth it upside down!

His power inverted Nature owns,  
Her only law, his sovereign word.

Let your chain be wrought ever so firm: he nods, and it flies in pieces. He touches it, and all the links fall asunder, as unconnected as the sand.

4. Once more. After Lord Kaim has said all he pleases, concerning the grand machine of the universe, and concerning the connexion of its several wheels, yet it must be allowed, he that made it, can unmake it: can vary every wheel, every spring, every movement, at his own good pleasure. Neither therefore does this imply any necessity, laid either upon the thoughts, passions, or actions, of those that know and trust in him, who is the Creator and Governor of heaven and earth.

5. Ah poor Infidel! This is no comfort to *you*! You must plunge on in the fatal whirlpool! You are without hope! Without help! For there is only one possible help: and that you spurn. What follows then? Why,

Dum adamantinos  
Figit dira necessitas  
Clavos, non animum metu,  
Non mortis laqueis expediet caput.

Oh what advantage has a Christian (*a real* Christian) over an Infidel: He sees God! Consequently

-----Metus omnes, et inexorable fatum  
Subjecit pedibus, strepitumque Acherontis avari.

He tumbles on inexorable fate,  
And fear, and death, and hell!

6. Ah poor Predestinarian! If you are true to your doctrine, this is no comfort to *you*! For perhaps you are not of the elect number: if so, you are in the whirlpool too. For what is your hope? Where is your help? There is no help for you in your God. *Your* God! No. He is not yours: he never was; he never will be. He that made you, he that called you into being, has no pity upon you! He made you for this very end, to damn you; to cast you headlong into a lake of fire burning with brimstone! This was prepared for you, or ever the world began! And for this you are now reserved in chains of darkness, till the decree brings forth; till, according to his eternal, unchangeable, irresistible will,

You groan, you howl, you writhe in waves of fire,  
And pour forth blasphemies at his desire!

Oh God, how long shall this doctrine stand?

---

## ON HEARING MINISTERS WHO OPPOSE THE TRUTH.

---

1. LAST summer I received a letter from Yorkshire, signed by several serious men, who proposed a difficulty they were under, wherein they knew not how to act. And indeed I did not well know how to advise them. So I delayed giving them a determinate answer, till I could lay the matter before our brethren, at the ensuing conference.

2. Their difficulty was this. "You advise all the members of our societies, constantly to attend the service of the Church. We have done so for a considerable time. But very frequently Mr. R., our minister, preaches not only what we believe to be false, but dangerously false doctrine. He asserts, and endeavours to prove, That we cannot be saved from our sins in this life, and that we must not hope to be perfected in love, on this side eternity. Our nature is very willing to receive this; therefore it is very liable to hurt us. Hence we have a doubt, whether it is our duty, to hear this preaching, which experience shows to weaken our souls."

3. This letter I laid before the conference, and we easily perceived, the difficulty therein proposed, concerned not only the society at Baiden, but many others, in various parts of the kingdom. It was, therefore, considered at large, and all our brethren were desired to speak their sentiments freely. In the conclusion, they unanimously agreed, 1. That it was highly expedient, all the Methodists (so called) who had been bred therein, should attend the service of the Church as often as possible: but that, 2dly, if the minister began either to preach the Absolute Decrees, or to rail at, and ridicule Christian Perfection, they should quietly and silently go out of the church; yet attend it again the next opportunity.

4. I have since that time, revolved this matter over and over in my own mind. And the more I consider it, the more I am convinced, this was the best answer that could be given. I still advise all our friends, when this case occurs, quietly and silently to go out. Only I must earnestly caution them, not to be critical: not to make a man an offender for a word; no, nor for a few sentences, which any who believe the Decrees may drop without design. But if such a minister should at any time, deliberately and of set purpose, endeavour to establish Absolute Predestination, or to confute scriptural perfection: then I advise all the Methodists in the congregation, quietly to go away.

JOHN WESLEY

*Lewisham, Jan. 9, 1782.*

---

## THOUGHTS CONCERNING GOSPEL-MINISTERS.

---

1. HOW frequently do we hear this expression, from the mouths of rich and poor, learned and unlearned? Many lament, that they have not a gospel-minister in their Church, and therefore are constrained to seek one at the meeting. Many rejoice that they have a gospel-minister, and that there are many such in their neighbourhood. Mean-time they generally speak with much displeasure, if not contempt of those, who, they say, are not gospel-ministers.

2. But it is to be feared, few of these understand what they say. Few understand what that expression means. Most that use it, have

only crude, confused notions concerning gospel-ministers. And hence many inconveniences arise; yea, much hurt to the souls of men. They contract prejudices in favour of very worthless men, who are indeed blind leaders of the blind; not knowing what the real gospel is, and therefore incapable of preaching it to others. Meantime from the same cause they contract prejudices against other ministers, who in reality both live and preach the gospel: and therefore are well able to instruct them in all those truths that accompany salvation.

3. But what then is the meaning of the expression? Who is a gospel-minister? Let us consider this important question calmly, in the fear and in the presence of God.

Not every one that preaches the *Eternal Decrees*: (although many suppose, this is the very thing!) that talks much of the *Sovereignty* of God, of *free distinguishing Grace*; of dear *Electing Love*; of *irresistible Grace*, and of the infallible *Perseverance* of the saints. A man may speak of all these, by the hour together: yea, with all his heart, and with all his voice: and yet have no right at all to the title of a gospel-minister.

Not every one that talks largely and earnestly on (those precious subjects) *the righteousness and blood of Christ*. Let a man descant upon these in ever so lively a manner, let him describe his sufferings ever so pathetically: if he stops there; if he does not show man's duty, as well as Christ's sufferings; if he does not apply all to the consciences of the hearers: he will never lead them to life, either here or hereafter, and, therefore, is no gospel-minister.

Not everyone who deals in the promises only, without ever showing the terrors of the law: that slides over *the wrath of God revealed from heaven, against all ungodliness and unrighteousness*, and endeavours to heal those that never were wounded. These *promise-mongers* are no gospel-ministers.

Not every one (very nearly allied to the former) who bends all his strength to *coax* sinners to Christ: such soft, tender expressions, as "My dear hearers, my *dear lambs*," though repeated a thousand times do not prove a man to be a minister.

Lastly, not every one that preaches *Justification by Faith*; he that goes no farther than this, that does not insist upon sanctification also, upon all the fruits of faith; upon universal holiness: does not declare the whole counsel of God: and consequently is not a gospel-minister.

4. Who then is such? Who is a gospel-minister, in the full, scriptural sense of the word? He and he alone, of whatever denomination, that does declare the whole counsel of God: that does preach the whole gospel, even justification and sanctification preparatory to glory. He that does not put asunder what God has joined; but publishes alike, *Christ dying for us, and Christ living in us*. He that constantly applies all this to the hearts of the hearers, being willing to spend and be spent for them: having himself the mind which was in Christ, and steadily walking as Christ also walked: he, and he alone, can with propriety be termed, *a gospel-minister*.

5. Let it be particularly observed, if the gospel be "Glad tidings

of *great salvation* which shall be unto *all people* ;” then those only are, in the full sense, gospel-ministers who proclaim the *great salvation*, that is, salvation from *all* (both inward and outward) *sin*, into *all the mind that was in Christ Jesus* ; and likewise proclaim offers of this salvation to every child of man. This honourable title is therefore vilely prostituted, when it is given to any but those who testify, *That God willeth all men to be saved, and to be perfect as their Father which is in heaven is perfect.*

---

## THOUGHTS UPON METHODISM.

---

1. I AM not afraid, that the people called Methodists, should ever cease to exist either in Europe or America. But I am afraid, lest they should only exist as a dead sect, having the form of religion without the power. And this undoubtedly will be the case, unless they hold fast both the doctrine, spirit, and discipline with which they first set out.

2. What was their fundamental doctrine ? That the Bible is the whole and sole rule both of Christian faith and practice. Hence they learned, 1. That religion is an inward principle ; that it is no other than the mind that was in Christ : or in other words, the renewal of the soul after the image of God ; in righteousness and true holiness : 2. That this can never be wrought in us, but by the power of the Holy Ghost : 3. That we receive this and every other blessing, merely for the sake of Christ ; and, 4. That whosoever hath the mind that was in Christ, the same is our brother, and sister, and mother.

3. In the year 1729, four young students in Oxford, agreed to spend their evenings together. They were all zealous members of the Church of England, and had no peculiar opinions, but were distinguished only by their constant attendance on the Church and sacrament. In 1735, they were increased to fifteen : when the chief of them embarked for America, intending to preach to the Heathen Indians. Methodism then seemed to die away ; but it revived again in the year 1738. Especially after Mr. Wesley (not being allowed to preach in the Churches) began to preach in the fields. One and another then coming to inquire, What they must do to be saved, he desired them to meet him all together, which they did, and increased continually in number. In November, a large building, the foundry, being offered him, he began preaching therein, morning and evening ; at five in the morning, and seven in the evening, that the people’s labour might not be hindered.

4. From the beginning, the men and women sat apart, as they always did in the primitive Church. And none were suffered to call any place their own, but the first comers sat down first. They had no pews ; and all the benches for rich and poor, were of the same

construction. Mr. Wesley began the service with a short prayer; then sung a hymn and preached, (usually about half an hour) then sang a few verses of another hymn, and concluded with prayer. His constant doctrine was, salvation by faith, preceded by repentance, and followed by holiness.

5. But when a large number of people was joined, the great difficulty was, to keep them together. For they were continually scattering lither and thither, and we knew no way to help it. But God provided for this also, when we thought not of it. A year or two after, Mr. Wesley met the chief of the society in Bristol, and inquired, "How shall we pay the debt upon the preaching-house?" Captain Foy stood up and said, "Let every one in the society give a penny a week, and it will easily be done." "But many of them," said one, "have not a penny to give." "True," said the Captain: then put ten or twelve of them to me. Let each of these give what they can weekly, and I will supply what is wanting." Many others made the same offer. So Mr. Wesley divided the societies among them: assigning a class of about twelve persons, to each of these who were termed leaders.

6. Not long after one of these informed Mr. Wesley that, calling on such a one in his house, he found him quarrelling with his wife. Another was found in drink. It immediately struck into Mr. Wesley's mind, This is the very thing we wanted. The leaders are the persons, who may not only receive the contributions, but also watch over the souls of their brethren. The society in London being informed of this, willingly followed the example of that in Bristol. As did every society from that time, whether in Europe or America. By this means it was easily found, if any grew weary or faint, and help was speedily administered. And if any walked disorderly, they were quickly discovered, and either amended or dismissed.

7. For those who knew in whom they had believed, there was another help provided. Five or six, either married or single men, met together at such an hour as was convenient, according to the direction of St. James, "Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, and ye shall be healed." And five or six of the married or single women met together for the same purpose. Innumerable blessings have attended this institution, especially in those who were *going on to perfection*. When any seemed to have attained this, they were allowed to meet with a select number, who appeared, so far as man could judge, to be partakers of the same *great salvation*.

8. From this short sketch of Methodism, (so called) any man of understanding may easily discern, that it is only plain, scriptural religion, guarded by a few prudential regulations. The essence of it is holiness of heart and life: the circumstantial all point to this. And as long as they are joined together in the people called Methodists, no weapon formed against them shall prosper. But if even the circumstantial parts are despised, the essential will soon be lost. And if ever the essential parts should evaporate, what remains will be dung and dross.

9. It nearly concerns us to understand how the case stands with us

at present. I fear, wherever riches have increased (exceeding few are the exceptions) the essence of religion, the mind that was in Christ, has decreased in the same proportion. Therefore I do not see how it is possible, in the nature of things, for any revival of true religion to continue long. For religion must necessarily produce both industry and frugality. And these cannot but produce riches. But as riches increase, so will pride, anger, and love of the world in all its branches.

10. How then is it possible that Methodism, that is, the religion of the heart, though it flourishes now as a green bay-tree, should continue in this state? For the Methodists in every place grow diligent and frugal: consequently they increase in goods. Hence they proportionably increase in pride, in anger, in the desire of the flesh, the desire of the eyes, and the pride of life. So, although the form of religion remains, the spirit is swiftly vanishing away.

11. Is there no way to prevent this? This continual declension of pure religion? We ought not to forbid people to be diligent and frugal: we *must* exhort all Christians, to gain all they can, and to save all they can: that is, in effect, to grow rich! What way then (I ask again) can we take that our money may not sink us to the nethermost hell? There is one way, and there is no other under heaven. If those who *gain all they can*, and *save all they can*, will likewise *give all they can*, then the more they gain, the more they will grow in grace; and the more treasure they will lay up in heaven.

*London, Aug. 4, 1786.*

---

## THOUGHTS

ON

## THE MANNER OF EDUCATING CHILDREN.

---

1. A GENTLEMAN with whom I was conversing awhile ago, was speaking largely on the manner of educating children. He objected strongly to the bringing them up too strictly, to the giving them more of religion than they liked: to the telling them of it too often, or pressing it upon them whether they will or not. He said, he never pressed it upon his own children, but only spoke of it occasionally in their hearing; and if they appeared affected, then answered their questions, or perhaps spoke to them directly. He thought that the common methods that are used in those that are called religious schools, of talking about divine things continually, and daily pressing it upon children, did abundantly more harm than good; especially if any severity were used; and concluded with saying, that those children who had been trained up in this manner, as soon as the restraint was taken off, were commonly worse than others.

2. As all this was perfectly new to me, I made little answer for the present: but it put me upon much thought! I knew it was quite agreeable to the sentiments of Rousseau, in his *Emilius*, the most empty, silly, injudicious thing, that ever a self-conceited Infidel wrote. But I knew it was quite contrary to the judgment of the wisest and best men I have known. I thought, if these things are so, how much mischief have we done unawares? How much hurt has Miss Bosanquet (now Mrs. Fletcher) been doing in the world for many years! How much more have the Miss Owens done, spoiling twenty children at a time! How much mischief is Miss Bishop likely to do! Perhaps more than even the Miss Owens! Above all, how much mischief has been done, and is now doing at Kingswood! Where (if this hypothesis be true) we are continually ruining fifty children at a time!

3. "But be this as it may, I urge the matter of fact against such an education. The children educated thus, are, when grown up, actually worse than other men or women." I doubt the fact: nay, that is not enough: I totally deny it. As frequently as this has been affirmed, it is notoriously false. Some few, and very few of those women, that were brought up by Miss Bosanquet or Miss Owen, either never were converted to God, (perhaps never convinced of sin,) or *have made shipwreck of the faith*, and at the same time, of its attendant, *a good conscience*. And undoubtedly these would be worse than others, than those who had not so grieved the Holy Spirit of God. The same may be said of some of those men that were educated at Kingswood School. If they quenched the Spirit, they would be worse than those that never were partakers of it. But this proves nothing, unless it were a general case, which is not by any means true. Many both of the women who were educated by Miss Bosanquet or Miss Owen, and of the men who were educated at Kingswood, are holy in heart and in life, and trust they shall praise God to all eternity, that ever they saw those schools.

4. Yet I allow that what is commonly called a religious education, frequently does more hurt than good: and that many of the persons who were so educated, are sinners above other men, yea, and have contracted an enmity to religion, which usually continues all their lives. And this will naturally be the case, if either the religion wherein they are instructed, or the manner of instructing them be wrong. But in most of those that are termed religious schools; there is a grand error either in the former or the latter instance.

5. With regard to the former, how few are there of those that undertake the education of children, who understand the nature of religion, who know what true religion is! Some of them supposing it to be barely the doing no harm, the abstaining from outward sin; some, the using the means of grace, saying our prayers, reading good books, and the like: and others the having a train of right opinions, which is vulgarly called faith. But all these, however common in the world, are gross and capital errors. Unless religion be described as consisting in holy tempers, in the love of God and our neighbour, in humility, gentleness, patience, long-suffering, contentedness in every

condition; to sum up all, in the image of God, in the mind that was in Christ: it is no wonder if these that are instructed therein are not better, but worse than other men. For they think they have religion. when indeed they have none at all, and so add pride to all their other vices.

6. But suppose those that educate them judge right, with regard to the nature of religion, they may still be mistaken with regard to the manner of instilling it into children. They may not have the spirit of government, to which some even good men are utter strangers. They may habitually lean to this or that extreme, of remissness or of severity. And if they either give children too much of their own will, or needlessly and churlishly restrain them; if they either use no punishment at all, or more than is necessary, the leaning either to one extreme or the other, may frustrate all their endeavours. In the latter case, it will not be strange, if religion stink in the nostrils of those that were so educated. They will naturally look upon it as an austere, melancholy thing; and if they think it necessary to salvation, they will esteem it a necessary evil, and so put it off as long as possible.

7 But does it follow, that we ought not to instil true religion into the minds of children as early as possible? Or rather that we should do it, with all diligence, from the very time that reason dawns? Laying line upon line, precept upon precept, as soon and as fast as they are able to bear it? By all means. Scripture, reason, and experience, jointly testify, that inasmuch as the corruption of nature is earlier than our instructions can be, we should take all pains and care, to counteract this corruption, as early as possible. The bias of nature is set the wrong way: education is designed to set it right. This, by the grace of God, is to turn the bias from self-will, pride, anger, revenge, and the love of the world, to resignation, lowliness, meekness, and the love of God. And from the moment we perceive any of those evil roots springing up, it is our business immediately to check their growth if we cannot yet root them out. As far as this can be done by mildness, softness, and gentleness, certainly it should be done. But sometimes these methods will not avail, and then we must correct with kind severity. For where tenderness will not remove the fault, *He that spareth the rod, spoileth the child.* To deny this, is to give the lie to the God of truth, and to suppose we can govern better than he. For *whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.*

8. In the name of God, then, and by the authority of his word, let all that have children, from the time they begin to speak or run alone, begin to train them up in the way wherein they should go: to counter-work the corruption of their nature with all possible assiduity: to do every thing in their power to cure self-will, pride, and every other wrong temper. Then let them be delivered to instructors (if such can be found) that will tread in the same steps; that will watch over them as immortal spirits, who are shortly to appear before God, and who have nothing to do in this world, but to prepare to meet him in the clouds, seeing they will be eternally happy, if they are ready: if not, eternally miserable.

## AN ANSWER TO MR. DODD.

1. YOU and I may the more easily bear with each other, because we are both of us *rapid* writers, and, therefore, the more liable to mistake. I will thank you for showing me any mistake I am in: being not so tenacious of my opinions now as I was twenty or thirty years ago. Indeed I am not fond of any opinion as such. I read the Bible with what attention I can, and regulate all my opinions thereby, to the best of my understanding. But I am always willing to receive more light; particularly with regard to any less common opinions, because the explaining and defending of them takes up much time, which I can ill spare from other employments. Whoever, therefore, will give me more light, with regard to Christian Perfection, will do me a singular favour. The opinion I have concerning it at present, I espouse merely because I think it is scriptural. If, therefore, I am convinced it is not scriptural, I shall willingly relinquish it.

2. I have no particular fondness for the term. It seldom occurs either in my preaching or writings. It is my opponents who thrust it upon me continually; and ask me, What I mean by it? So did Bishop Gibson, till by his advice, I publicly declared, What *I did not* mean by it, and what *I did*. This I supposed might be best done in the form of a Sermon, having a text prefixed, wherein that term occurred. But that text is there used only as an occasion or introduction to the subject. I do not build any doctrine thereupon, nor undertake critically to explain it.

3. What is the meaning of the term *Perfection*, is another question; but that it is a *Scriptural term* is undeniable. Therefore none ought to object to the use of the *term*, whatever they may do to this or that *explication* of it. I am very willing to consider whatever you have to object, to what is advanced under the first head of that Sermon. But I still think that *Perfection* is only another term for *Holiness*, or the image of God in man. *God made man perfect*, I think is just the same as he made him *holy*, or *in his own image*. And you are the very first person I ever read of or spoke with, who made any doubt of it. Now *this Perfection* does certainly admit of degrees. Therefore I readily allow the propriety of that distinction, Perfection of Kinds, and Perfection of Degrees. Nor do I remember one writer; ancient or modern, who excepts against it.

4. In the Sermon of Salvation by Faith, I say, "He that is born of God sinneth not," (a proposition explained at large in another Sermon) and every where either explicitly or virtually connected with, *while he keepeth himself*, "by any sinful desire. Any unholy desire he stiflith in the birth." (Assuredly he does, *while he keepeth himself*.) "Nor doth he sin by infirmities. For his infirmities have

no concurrence of his will, and without this they are not properly sins." Taking the words as they lie in connexion thus, (and taken otherwise they are not *my* words but *yours*.) I must still aver, they speak both my own experience, and that of many hundreds of the children of God whom I personally know. And all this, with abundantly more than this, is contained in that single expression, "The loving God with all our heart, and serving him with all our strength." Nor did I ever say or mean any more by Perfection, than *thus* loving and serving God. But I dare not say *less* than this. For it might be attended with worse consequences than you seem to be aware of. If there be a mistake, it is far more dangerous on the one side than on the other. If I set the mark too high, I drive men into needless fears; if you set it too low, you drive them into hell-fire.

5. We agree, that true "Christianity implies a destruction of the kingdom of Sin, and a renewal of the soul in Righteousness: which even babes in Christ do in a measure experience; though not in so large a measure as young men and fathers?" But here we divide; I believe even babes in Christ (*while they keep themselves*) do not commit sin. By *sin* I mean outward sin; and the word *commit* I take in its plain, literal meaning. And this I think is fully proved by all the texts cited Sermon III. from the sixth chapter to the Romans. Nor do I conceive there is any material difference between *committing sin* and *continuing therein*. I tell my neighbour here, "*William, you are a child of the Devil; for you commit sin: you were drunk yesterday.*" No, Sir, says the man; I do not *live* or *continue in sin*, (which Mr. Dodd says is the true meaning of the text,) I am not drunk *continually*, but only now and then, once in a fortnight, or once in a month." Now, Sir, how shall I deal with this man? Shall I tell him he is in the way to heaven or hell? I think he is in the high road to destruction, and that if I tell him otherwise, his blood will be upon my head. And all that you say, of *living, continuing in, serving sin*, as different from *committing it*, and of its *not reigning*, not having *dominion* over him, who still frequently *commits* it, is making so many *loop-holes* whereby any impenitent sinner may escape from all the terrors of the Lord. I dare not, therefore, give up the plain, literal meaning either of St. Paul's or St. Peter's words.

6. As to those of St. John (cited Sermon V.) I do not think you have proved they are not to be taken literally. In every single act of obedience, as well as in a continued course of it, *ποιει δικαιοσυνην*. And in either an act or a course of sin, *ποιει ακαρτιαν*. Therefore, that I may give no countenance to any kind or degree of sin, I shall interpret these words by those in the fifth chapter, and believe, *He that is born of God* (while he keepeth himself) *sinneth not: doth not commit outward sin*.

7. But "It is absolutely necessary, as you observe, to add sometimes explanatory words to those of the sacred Penmen." It is so: to add words *explanatory* of their sense; but not *subversive* of it. The words added to this text, *Ye know all things*, are such. And you yourself allow them so to be. But I do not allow the words

*wilfully and habitually* to be such. These do not explain but overthrow the text. That the first Fathers thus explained it, I deny: as also that I ever spoke lightly of them.

8. You proceed, "You allow in another Sermon, in evident contradiction to yourself, that the true children of God *could and did* commit sin." This is no contradiction to any thing I ever advanced. I every where allow that a Child of God *can and will* commit sin, *if he does not keep himself*. "But this, you say, is nothing to the present argument." Yes, it is the whole thing. If they *keep themselves*, they do not; otherwise they *can and do* commit sin. I say nothing contrary to this in either sermon. But "hence you say, we conclude, *That he who is born of God, may possibly commit sin.*" An idle conclusion as ever was formed. For whoever denied it? I flatly affirm it in both the Sermons, and in the very paragraph now before us. The only conclusion which I deny, is, That "all Christians *do and will commit sin as long as they live.*" Now this you yourself (though you seem to start at it) maintain from the beginning of your letter to the end: viz. That all Christians *do sin and cannot but sin*, more or less, to their lives' end. Therefore I do not "*artfully put* this conclusion;" but it is your own conclusion, from your own premises. Indeed were I *artfully* to put in any thing, in expounding the word of God, I must be an errant knave. But I do not: my conscience bears me witness, that I speak the very truth, so far as I know it, in simplicity and godly sincerity.

9. I think that all this time you are directly pleading for *looseness of manners*, and that every thing you advance naturally tends thereto. This is my grand objection to that doctrine of the *necessity of sinning*. Not only that it is false, but that it is directly subversive of all holiness. The doctrine of the *Gnosticks*, was not that of a Child of God *does not commit sin*, i. e. Act the things which are forbidden in Scripture: but that they are *not sin* in him; that he is a Child of God still: so they contend, not for *sinless*, but *sinful Perfection*: just as different from what I contend for, as Heaven is from Hell. What the *Donatists* were, I do not know. But I suspect, they were the real Christians of that age: and were, therefore, served by St. Augustine and his warm adherents, as the Methodists are now by their zealous adversaries. It is extremely easy to blacken: and could I give myself leave, I could paint the consequences of your doctrine, in at least as dark and odious colours, as you could paint mine.

10. The passage of St. Peter (mentioned Sermon XII.) I still think proves all which I brought it to prove.

"But you allow (Sermon IV) that Paul and Barnabas did commit sin. And these were without all controversy Fathers in Christ." That is not without controversy: that either Barnabas when he left Paul, or Peter when he dissembled at Antioch, was at that time a father in Christ in St. John's sense; though *by office* undoubtedly they were. Their example, therefore, only proves what no one denies, viz. That if a believer keeps not himself, he may commit sin. Would the conclusions here drawn, "be made only by a very weak

opponent?" Then you are a weak opponent; for you make them all, either from these or other premises. For you believe and maintain, 1. That *all the other Apostles committed sin sometimes*: 2. That *all the other Christians* of the Apostolic age, sometimes committed sin: 3. That *all other Christians in all ages*, do and will commit sin as long as they live: and, 4. That every man *must* commit sin, *cannot help* it, as long as he is in the body. You cannot deny one of the propositions, if you understand your own premises.

I am, Rev. Sir,  
Your affectionate Brother,  
J. WESLEY.

---

## OF THE IMMORTALITY OF THE SOUL.

---

THE proofs of the immortality of the Soul are drawn, 1st, From the nature of the soul itself, and particularly its immateriality; which though not absolutely necessary to the eternity of its duration, has, I think, been evinced to almost a demonstration.

2dly, From its passions and sentiments, as particularly from its love of existence, its horror of annihilation, and its hopes of immortality, with that sweet satisfaction which it finds in the practice of virtue, and that uneasiness which follows in it upon the commission of vice.

3dly, From the nature of the Supreme Being, whose justice, goodness, wisdom, and veracity, are all concerned in this point.

But among these and other excellent arguments for the immortality of the soul, there is one drawn from the perpetual progress of the soul to its perfection, without a possibility of ever arriving at it; which is a hint that I do not remember to have seen opened and improved by others who have written on this subject, though it seems to me to carry a great weight with it. How can it enter into the thoughts of man, that the soul, which is capable of such immense perfections, and of receiving new improvements to all eternity, shall fall away into nothing almost as soon as it is created? Are such abilities made for no purpose? A brute arrives at a point of perfection that he can never pass; in a few years he has all the endowments he is capable of; and were he to live ten thousand more, would be the same thing he is at present. Were a human soul thus at a stand in her accomplishments, were her faculties to be full grown, and incapable of farther enlargements, I could imagine it might fall away insensibly, and drop at once into a state of annihilation. But can we believe a thinking being, that is in a perpetual progress of improvements, and travelling on from perfection to perfection, after having just looked abroad into the works of its Creator, and made a

few discoveries of his infinite goodness, wisdom, and power, must perish at her first setting out, and in the very beginning of her inquiries?

A man considered in his present state, seems only sent into the world to propagate his kind. He provides himself with a successor, and immediately quits his post to make room for him.

Hæres  
*Hæredem atterius, velut unda supervenit undam.*

Hor. Ep. 2. l. 2. v. 175.

—Heir crowds on heir, as in a rolling flood  
Wave urges wave.

CREECH.

He does not seem born to enjoy life, but to deliver it down to others. This is not surprising to consider in animals, which are formed for our use, and can finish their business in a short life. The silk-worm, after having spun her task, lays her eggs and dies. But a man can never have taken in his full measure of knowledge, has not time to subdue his passions, establish his soul in virtue, and come up to the perfection of his nature, before he is hurried off the stage. Would an infinitely wise Being make such glorious beings for so mean a purpose? Can he delight in the production of such abortive intelligences, such short-lived reasonable beings? Would he give us talents that are not to be exerted? Capacities that are never to be gratified? How can we find that wisdom that shines through all his works, in the formation of man, without looking on this world as only a nursery for the next, and believing that the several generations of rational creatures, which rise up and disappear in such quick successions, are only to receive their first rudiments of existence here, and afterwards to be transplanted into a more friendly climate, where they may spread and flourish to all eternity.

There is not a more pleasing and triumphant consideration in religion than this, of the perpetual progress which the soul makes towards the perfection of its nature, without ever arriving at a period in it. To look upon the soul as going on from strength to strength; to consider that she is to shine for ever with new accessions of glory, and brighten to all eternity; that she will be still adding virtue to virtue, and knowledge to knowledge; carries in it something wonderfully agreeable to that ambition which is natural to the mind of man. Nay, it must be a prospect pleasing to God himself, to see his creation for ever beautifying in his eyes, and drawing nearer to him, by greater degrees of resemblance.

Methinks this single consideration, of the progress of a finite spirit to perfection, will be sufficient to extinguish all envy in inferior natures, and all contempt in superior. That cherub that now appears as a god to a human soul, knows that a period will come, when the human soul shall be as perfect as he himself now is: nay, when she shall look down upon that degree of perfection, as much as she now falls short of it. It is true, the higher nature still advances, and pre-

serves his distance, and superiority in the scale of being; but he knows that, how high soever the station is of which he stands prepossessed at present, the inferior nature will at length mount up to it, and shine forth in the same degree of glory.

With what astonishment and veneration may we look into our souls, where there are such hidden stores of virtue and knowledge! Such inexhausted sources of perfection! We know not yet what we shall be, nor will it ever enter into the heart of man to conceive the glory that will be always in reserve for him. The soul, considered with its Creator, is like one of those mathematical lines that may draw near to another to all eternity, without a possibility of touching it. And can there be a thought so transporting, as to consider ourselves in these perpetual approaches to him, who is not only the standard of perfection, but of happiness!

## A THOUGHT UPON MARRIAGE.

*If thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.*

1. I AM not now about to speak to men of the world, or to them that have only the form of religion; but to you who *have* experienced, if you do not *now*, the *faith which worketh by love*. And in speaking to you I do not peremptorily assert any thing. I barely propose a thought that rises in my mind, and beg you to consider it.

2. You have some thoughts of altering your condition: and we know, *Marriage is honourable to all men*. But is your eye single herein? This is worthy your most serious consideration. Retire a little into yourself, and ask your own heart, "What is it moves me to think of this?"

3. I will tell you how it was with *me*. Though I do not know I was ever low-spirited, (my spirits being always the same, whether in sickness or in health,) yet I was often uneasy. Even in vigorous health, in plenty, and in the midst of my friends, I wanted something: I was not satisfied. I looked about for happiness, but could not find it. Then I thought, "O, if I had but such a person with me, I should surely be happy." I mused with myself, "How lovely is her look! How agreeably she talks! I thought of Sappho's words:

"Blest as th' immortal gods is he,  
The youth that fondly sits by thee;  
And hears and sees thee all the while,  
Softly speak and sweetly smile."

Surely this is the very thing I want; and could I attain it, I should then no more be solitary! For,

“Thou from all shades the darkness wouldst exclude,  
And from a desert banish solitude :”

Therefore with her, I can be happy: without her, I never can.”

4. Perhaps your case is something like mine. Let me then ask you a few questions.

Were you ever convinced of sin? Of your lost, undone state? Did you feel the wrath of God abiding on you? If so, what did you then want to make you happy? “To know my God is reconciled.” You had your wish. You were enabled to say boldly, “I know that my Redeemer liveth.” And were not you then happy? “Indeed I was.” In what? “In the knowledge and love of God.”

5. And if you now have the same knowledge and love of God, does it not answer the same end? Will not the same cause still produce the same effect? If therefore you are not happy now, is it not because you have not that intercourse with God, which you then had? And you are seeking to supply the want of that intercourse, by the enjoyment of a creature! You imagine that near connexion with a woman will make amends for distance from God! Have you so learned Christ? Has your experience taught you no better than this?

6. You *were* happy once: you knew you were: happy in God, without being beholden to any creature. You did not need

Love's all-sufficient sea to raise  
With drops of creature-happiness.

And is it wise to seek it now any where else, than where you found it before? You have not the same excuse with those who were never happy in God. And how little is the seeking it in any creature better than idolatry? Is it not, in effect, loving the creature more than the Creator? Does it not imply that you are *a lover of pleasure more than a lover of God?*

7. O return to Him that made you happy before, and He will make you happy again. Repeat your prayer,

Keep me dead to all below;  
Only Christ resolv'd to know;  
Firm, and disengag'd, and free;  
Seeking all my bliss in thee!

Seek, accept of nothing in the room of God. Let all the springs of your happiness be in him. *Seek first, just as you did before, the kingdom of God and his righteousness: the knowledge and love of God; fellowship with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ: and all other things shall be added unto you: particularly joy in the Holy Ghost.* Again,

Know God, and teach thyself to know  
The joys that from Religion flow:  
Then ev'ry grace shall be thy guest;  
And peace be there to crown the rest!

Lisburn, June 11, 1785.

## THOUGHTS UPON DISSIPATION.

1. PERHAPS nothing can be more seasonable at the present time, than to bestow a few thoughts on this. It is a fashionable subject, very frequently spoken of, especially in good company. An ingenious writer has lately given us an Essay upon the subject. When it fell into my hands a few days since, I was filled with a pleasing expectation of seeing it thoroughly explained: But my expectation was not answered: for although many just and lively things are said there, yet in above twenty pages I could find no definition of *Dissipation*, either bad or good.

2. But "the love of dissipation," says the Author, "is the reigning evil of the present day." Allowing it is; I ask, What do you mean by dissipation? Sometimes you use the word *pleasure* as an equivalent term. But what pleasure do you mean? The pleasures of sense, or of the imagination in general? Or any particular pleasure of one or the other? At other times you seem to make dissipation the same with luxury; at least with a high degree of it. Sometimes again you use "the love of amusement," as the same with "love of dissipation." But the question recurs, What amusement do you mean? For there are numberless sorts. So that still, after talking about them so long, we have only a vague, indeterminate notion of a dissipated age, a dissipated nation, or a dissipated man; without having any clear or distinct idea, what the word *dissipation* means!

3. Those who are content with slight and superficial views of things, may rest in the general account, that a *dissipated age* is one, wherein the bulk of mankind, especially those of any rank or fashion, spend the main of their time in eating and drinking, and diversions, and the other pleasures of sense and imagination. And that we live in a dissipated age, in this meaning of the word, is as plain as that the sun shines at noon day. Most of those that are commonly termed *innocent amusements*, fall under this head, the Pleasures of Imagination. Whenever, therefore, a general fondness of these prevail, that is a *dissipated age*. A *dissipated nation* is one, where the people in general are vehemently attached to the pleasures of sense and imagination. The smaller vulgar in England are at present passionately fond of the lowest pleasures both of sense and fancy: while the great vulgar are equally engrossed by those they account a higher kind. Meantime they are all equally dissipated, although in different ways. And so indeed is every man and woman, that is passionately attached to external pleasure.

4. But without dwelling any longer on the surface of things, let us search the matter to the bottom, and inquire, Wherein lies the original ground of *human dissipation*? Let this be once pointed out, and it will place the whole question in the clearest light.

5. Man is an immortal spirit, created in the image, and the for en-

joyment of God. This is the one, the only end of his being; he exists for no other purpose. God is the centre of all spirits; and while they cleave to him, they are wise, holy, and happy: but in the same proportion as they are separated from him, they are foolish, unholy, and unhappy. This disunion from God is the very essence of human dissipation: which is no other than the scattering the thoughts and affections from the Creator to the creature. Wherefore fondness for sensual enjoyments of any-kind, love of silly, irrational pleasures, love of trifling amusements, luxury, vanity, and a thousand foolish desires and tempers, are not so properly dissipation itself, as they are the fruits of it, the natural effects of being unhinged from the Creator, the Father, the Centre of all intelligent spirits.

6. It is this against which the Apostle guards in his advice to the Christians at Corinth; *This I speak, that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.* It might as well be rendered *without dissipation*, without having your thoughts any way scattered from God. The having our thoughts and affections centred in God, this is *Christian simplicity*. The having them in any degree uncentred from God, this is *dissipation*. And it little differs in the real nature of things and in the eye of God, the Judge of all, whether a man be kept in a state of dissipation from God, by crowns, and empires, and thousands of gold and silver, or by cards, and dancing, and drinking, and dressing, and mistressing, and masquerades, and picking straws.

7. Dissipation is then, in the very root of it, separation from God: in other-words, Atheism, or the being without God in the world. It is the negative branch of Ungodliness. And in this true sense of the word, certainly England is the most dissipated nation that is to be found under heaven. And whether our thoughts and affections are dissipated, scattered from God, by women, or food, or dress, or one or ten thousand petty trifles, that dissipation (innocent as it may seem) is equally subversive of all real virtue and all real happiness. It carries its own punishment: though we are loaded with blessings, it often makes our very existence a burden; and by an unaccountable anxiety gives a foretaste of what it is to be *punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord!*

*Hilton Park, March 26, 1783.*

## A CLEAR AND CONCISE DEMONSTRATION OF THE DIVINE INSPIRATION OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES.

THERE are four grand and powerful arguments which strongly induce us to believe that the Bible must be from God, viz. miracles, prophecies, the goodness of the doctrine, and the moral character of the penmen. All the miracles flow from Divine Power; all the prophecies from Divine Understanding; the goodness of the doctrine from Divine Goodness; and the moral character of the penmen from Divine Holiness.

Thus Christianity is built upon four grand pillars, viz. the Power, Understanding, Goodness, and Holiness of God: Divine Power is the source of all the miracles; Divine Understanding of all the prophecies; Divine Goodness of the goodness of the doctrine; and Divine Holiness of the moral character of the penmen.

I beg leave to propose a short, clear, and strong argument to prove the Divine Inspiration of the Holy Scriptures.

The Bible must be the invention either of good men or angels, bad men or devils, or of God.

1. It could not be the invention of good men or angels, for they neither would nor could make a book and tell lies all the time they were writing it, saying, Thus saith the Lord, when it was their own invention.

2. It could not be the invention of bad men or devils, for they would not make a book which commands all duty, forbids all sin, and condemns their own souls to hell to all eternity.

3. Therefore I draw this conclusion, That the Bible must be given by Divine Inspiration.

---

## SOME THOUGHTS ON AN EXPRESSION OF ST PAUL, IN THE FIRST EPISTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS, CHAP V VER. 23.

1. THE words, as literally translated as the English tongue will bear, run thus: *May the whole of you, the spirit, and the soul, and the body, be preserved blameless.*

What does St. Paul here mean, by dividing man into three parts, *the spirit, and the soul, and the body.*

This creates what has been thought an insurmountable difficulty, by those who argue thus:

“How is it possible to contradistinguish the Soul, both from the Spirit and from the Body? For it must be either material or im-

material, matter or not matter : there is no medium. But if it be matter, does it not coincide with *the body* ? If it be not matter, does it not coincide with *the spirit* ?”

But perhaps a way may be found of untying this knot, of unraveling this difficulty, by simply declaring the (at least probable) meaning of these three terms.

May not *the Spirit* mean (so it has been understood by the Christians in all ages) the highest principle in man, the immortal Spirit made in the image of God, endued (as all Spirits are, so far as we can conceive) with self-motion, understanding, will, and liberty ?

Is not *the Body*, that portion of organized matter, which every man receives in the womb, with which he is born into the world, and which he carries with him to the grave ? At present it is connected with flesh and blood. But these are not the body. They are only the temporary clothing of the body, which it wholly puts off in the grave.

*The Soul* seems to be the immediate clothing of the Spirit, the vehicle with which it is connected from its first existence, and which is never separated from it, either in life or in death. Probably it consists of ethereal or electric fire, the purest of all matter. It does not seem to be affected by the death of the body, but envelopes the separate as it does the embodied spirit : neither will it undergo any essential change, when it is *clothed upon* with the immortal body at the resurrection.

May not the apostle have an eye to this, in those remarkable words, (2 Cor. v. 4,) *We that are in this tabernacle* (this corruptible flesh and blood) *do groan, being burdened : not for that we would be unclothed*, (divested of all covering, which belongs only to the Father of Spirits,) *but clothed upon* with the glorious resurrection-body, covering both our soul and spirit. This will *swallow up*, totally destroy το σωμα *that which was mortal*, namely, the flesh and blood, which alone was liable to death.

If we understood the words of the apostle in this sense, all the difficulty vanishes away. We allow, there can be no medium between material and immaterial. But still there is room for a wide and essential difference, between the soul and the body : the latter implying that original portion of matter which is now clothed with flesh and blood : the former, that vehicle of ethereal fire, which immediately covers the immortal spirit.

CONGLETON, March 31, 1786.

## THOUGHTS ON SUICIDE.

IT is a melancholy consideration, that there is no country in Europe, or perhaps in the habitable world, where the horrid crime of self-murder is so common as it is in *England*! One reason of this may be, that the English, in general, are more ungodly and more impatient than other nations. Indeed we have laws against it, and officers with juries are appointed, to inquire into every fact of the kind. And these are to give in their verdict upon oath, whether the self-murderer was sane or insane? If he is brought in insane, he is excused, and the law does not affect him. By this means it is totally eluded; for the juries constantly bring him in insane. So the law is not of the least effect, though the farce of a trial still continues.

This morning I asked a coroner, "Sir, did you ever know a jury bring in the deceased *Felo-de-se*?" He answered, "No, Sir: and it is a pity they should." What then is the law good for? If all self-murderers are mad, what need of any trial concerning them?

But it is plain our ancestors did not think so, or those laws had never been made. It is true, every self-murderer is mad in some sense, but not in that sense which the law intends. This fact does not prove him mad in the eye of the law: the question is, was he mad in other respects? If not, every juror is perjured who does not bring him in *Felo-de-se*.

But how can this vile abuse of the law be prevented, and this execrable crime effectually discouraged?

By a very easy method. We read in ancient history, that at a certain period, many of the women in Sparta murdered themselves. This fury increasing, a law was made, that the body of every woman that killed herself, should be exposed naked in the streets. The fury ceased at once.

Only let a law be made and rigorously executed, That the body of every self-murderer, lord or peasant, shall be hanged in chains, and the *English* fury will cease at once.

LIVERPOOL, *April 8, 1790.*

## THOUGHTS UPON TASTE.

1. A FEW weeks ago I read with care and attention, a celebrated *Essay on Taste*. I cannot say, but I entered upon it with great expectation, as I knew the author to be a man of understanding, and one whose natural abilities were improved by a considerable

share of learning. I knew likewise that the performance itself had been highly and generally applauded: yea, that the Doctor had been honoured with the medal, which is yearly given by the Society, to him that produces the best performance on the subject proposed.

2. Yet to speak the plain truth, I cannot affirm, that it altogether answered my expectation. It did not appear to me, to be written upon a good plan, neither to be well digested. And there are assertions almost in every chapter, which are exceedingly disputable. Many of these I could not clearly assert: some of them I utterly deny. Neither could I find in the whole tract, any clear, just definition of the subject. So that after all he has said, one would still be puzzled to answer the question, "What is Taste?"

3. But is there any better book upon the subject extant? I do not conceive there is. At least I have not seen it: although there are some ingenious thoughts of Mr. Addison upon it in the *Spectator*. And nearly related to this, is his fine "Essay on the Pleasures of Imagination." But *Taste* is a more extensive word. It does not relate to the imagination only.

4. It may be the more difficult to understand the precise meaning of the word, because there are so few words that are synonymous to it. I do not recollect any, either in Greek or Latin; no, nor yet in the English language. Indeed we have some which are generally supposed to be nearly equivalent with it. So a man of *taste* is almost the same with a man of *genius*, a man of *sense*, or a man of *judgment*: but none of these mean exactly the same thing.

5. "Most languages," says Mr. Addison, "make use of this metaphor to express that faculty of mind which distinguishes the most concealed faults and nicest perfections in writings." But this definition is far too narrow. For taste refers to other things as well as writings. And when he adds, It "is that faculty of the soul, which discovers the beauties of an author with pleasure, and his imperfections with dislike:" this is too narrow still: for Taste is concerned with many things beside authors.

6. What then is *Taste*, in the general meaning of the word? It is certainly a faculty of the mind, analogous to the sense of taste. By the external sense we *relish* various foods, and *distinguish* one from the other. By the internal, we *relish* and *distinguish* from each other various foods offered to the mind. Taste is, therefore, that internal sense, which relishes and distinguishes its proper object. By *relishes*, I mean, *perceives with pleasure*: for in the common acceptation of the word, we are not said, to have a taste for displeasing, but only for pleasing objects. And as various as those objects are, so various are the species of Taste.

7. Some of these are objects of the understanding. Such are all speculative truths; particularly those of a metaphysical or mathematical nature. So we say, a man has a *taste* for metaphysics; which is more than to say, He has *judgment* therein. It implies over and above, that he has a *relish* for them; that he finds a sweetness in the study of them. And when we say, a man has a *taste* for the

mathematics, we mean by that expression, not only that he is capable of understanding them, but that he takes pleasure therein.

8. Another species of Taste, is that which relates to the objects that gratify the imagination. Thus we are accustomed to say, a man has a *taste* for grandeur, for novelty, or for beauty: meaning thereby, that he takes pleasure in grand, in new, or in beautiful objects, whether they are such by nature or by art. And herein there is an unbounded variety. I mean, in the different tastes of men: some having a taste for grandeur, some for beauty. Some again have a taste for one kind of beauty: and others for another. Some have a taste for the beauties of nature; others for those of art. The former for flowers, meadows, fields, or woods; the latter for painting or poetry. But some have a taste both for the one and the other.

9. But is there not likewise a kind of internal sense, whereby we relish the happiness of our fellow-creatures, even without any reflection on our own interest, without any reference to ourselves? Whereby we bear a part in the prosperity of others, and rejoice with them that rejoice? Surely there is something still in the human mind, in many, if not in all, (whether by nature, or from a higher principle,) which interests us in the welfare, not only of our relatives, our friends, and our neighbours, but of those who are at the greatest distance from us, whether in time or place. And the most generous minds have most of this taste for human happiness.

10. May we not likewise observe, that there is a *beauty* in virtue, in gratitude, and disinterested benevolence? And have not many at least a taste for this? Do they not discern and relish it, wherever they find it? Yea, does it not give them one of the most delicate pleasures, whereof the human mind is capable? Is not this taste of infinitely more value, than a taste for any or all the pleasures of imagination? And is not this pleasure infinitely more delicate than any that ever resulted, yea, or can result, from the utmost refinements of music, poetry, or painting?

11. As to Taste in general, internal as well as external Taste seems to belong to all mankind: although infinitely diversified, both as to the objects, and the degrees of it. When therefore we say, "A man has no taste," the words are not to be taken strictly, as if he had absolutely no taste at all, in any of the foregoing senses: seeing every man living has more or less, an internal, as well as external taste. But they are to be understood in a limited sense. He has *no taste*, suppose, for metaphysics: he has no discernment, and he has no pleasure in things of this abstracted nature. Another man has *no taste* for mathematics: he has neither pleasure nor judgment therein. Meantime the mathematician has *no taste* either for poetry or music. He does not discern, and he does not relish the beauties, either of one or the other. But every one of these has some internal taste, how dull soever it be.

12. A *dull Taste* is properly one that is faint and languid, that has no lively perception of its object. But sometimes, by a man of a dull taste, we mean one that relishes dull things: suppose dull, low

compositions in music or poetry, or coarse and worthless pictures. But this is more properly termed a *bad taste*. So one is hugely pleased with the daubing of a sign-post, another, with doggerel verses, and a third, with the heavenly music of a pair of bag-pipes ! Almost every town and every village supplies us with instances of the same kind. We sometimes call this a *false taste*, as it supposes things to be excellent which are not. In many it is natural : they have had this wrong turn ever since they were born. But in others it is gradually acquired, either by reading or conversation. Then we term it a *vitiated taste* : of this, too, there are abundant instances.

13. On the other hand, he has a *good*, a *just*, or a *true taste*, which discerns and relishes whatever, either in the works of nature or of art, is truly excellent in its kind. This is sometimes termed a *correct taste* : especially when it is delighted more or less, according to the greater or smaller degree of excellence that is in the object. This differs very little, if at all, from a *fine taste* : especially as Mr. Addison defines it, "That faculty of the mind which discerns with pleasure all the beauties of writing:" should it not be rather, "Which discerns all that is grand or beautiful, in the works both of art and nature?"

14. Such a taste as this is much to be desired : and that on many accounts. It greatly increases those pleasures of life, which are not only innocent but useful. It qualifies us to be of far greater service to our fellow-creatures. It is more especially desirable for those whose profession calls them to converse with many : seeing it enables them to be more agreeable, and consequently more profitable in conversation.

15. But how shall a man know, whether he is possessed of this faculty or not? Let him, says Mr. Addison, "Read over the celebrated works of antiquity," (to know whether he has a taste for fine writing,) "which have stood the test for so many ages and countries : or those works among the moderns, which have the sanction of the politer part of our contemporaries. If, upon the perusal of such writings, he does not find himself delighted in an extraordinary manner, or if, upon reading the admired passages in such authors, he find a coldness and indifference in his thoughts, he ought to conclude, not (as is most common among tasteless readers,) that the author wants those perfections, which have been admired in them, but that he himself wants the faculty of discerning them."

16. But how can a man acquire this taste? It "must in some degree be born with us : as it often happens, that those who have other qualities in perfection, are wholly void of this. But though it may, in some measure, be born with us, there are several means of improving it, without which it will be very imperfect and of little use to the person that possesses it. The most natural means is, to be conversant with the writings of the best authors. One that has any taste, either discovers new beauties, or receives stronger impressions from the masterly strokes of a great author, every time he peruses him."

17. "Conversation with men of genius is another means of improving our natural taste. It is impossible for a man of the greatest parts, to consider any thing in its whole extent. Every man, beside general observations upon an author, forms some that are peculiar to his own way of thinking. So that conversation will naturally furnish us with hints which we did not attend to, and make us enjoy other men's parts and reflections as well as our own." Besides, if we converse freely with men of taste, and incite them to "open the window in their breast," we may learn to correct whatever is yet amiss in our taste, as well as to supply whatever we or they perceive to be still wanting: all which may be directed to that glorious end, *The pleasing all men, for their good, unto edification.*

### THOUGHTS ON THE POWER OF MUSIC.

1. BY the *Power of Music*, I mean, its power to affect the hearers; to raise various passions in the human mind. Of this we have very surprising accounts in ancient history. We are told the ancient Greek musicians in particular, were able to excite whatever passions they pleased: to inspire love or hate, joy or sorrow, hope or fear, courage, fury, or despair: yea, to raise these one after another, and to vary the passion, just according to the variation of the music.

2. But how is this to be accounted for? No such effects attend the modern music: although it is confessed on all hands, that our instruments excel theirs beyond all degrees of comparison. What was their lyre, their instruments of seven or ten strings, compared to our violin? What were any of their pipes, to our hautboy or German flute? What all of them put together, all that were in use two or three thousand years ago, to our organ? How is it then, that with this inconceivable advantage, the modern music has less power than the ancient?

3. Some have given a very short answer to this, cutting the knot which they could not untie. They have doubted, or affected to doubt the fact: perhaps have even denied it. But no sensible man will do this, unless he be utterly blinded by prejudice. For it would be denying the faith of all history: seeing no fact is better authenticated. None is delivered down to us by more unquestionable testimony; such as fully satisfies in all other cases. We have, therefore, no more reason to doubt of the power of Timotheus' music, than that of Alexander's arms: and we may deny his taking Persepolis, as well as his burning it through that sudden rage, which was excited in him by that musician. And the various effects which were successively wrought in his mind, (so beautifully described by Dryden, in his Ode on Cecilia's-day,) are astonishing instances of the power of a single harp, to transport, as it were, the mind out of itself.

4. Nay, we read of an instance, even in modern history, of the

power of music not inferior to this. A musician being brought to the king of Denmark, and asked, whether he could excite any passion, answered in the affirmative, and was commanded to make the trial upon the King himself: Presently the monarch was all in tears; and upon the musician's changing his mood, he was quickly roused into such fury, that snatching a sword from one of his assistant's hands, (for they had purposely removed his own) he immediately killed him, and would have killed all in the room, had he not been forcibly withheld.

5. This alone removes all the incredibility of what is related concerning the ancient music. But why is it that modern music, in general, has no such effect on the hearers? The grand reason seems to be no other than this; the whole nature and design of music is altered. The ancient composers studied *melody* alone: the due arrangement of single notes: and it was by melody alone, that they wrought such wonderful effects. And as this music was directly calculated to move the passions, so they *designed* it for this very end. But the modern composers study *harmony*, which in the present sense of the word is quite another thing, namely, a contrast of various notes, opposite to, and yet blended with each other, wherein they,

“ Now high, now low, pursue the resonant fugue.”

Dr. Gregory says, this *harmony* has been known in the world little more than two hundred years. Be that as it may, ever since it was introduced, ever since *counterpoint* has been invented, as it has altered the grand design of music, so it has well nigh destroyed its effects.

6. Some indeed have imagined, and attempted to prove, that the ancients were acquainted with this. It seems, there needs but one single argument to demonstrate the contrary. We have many capital pieces of ancient music, that are now in the hands of the curious. Dr. Pepusch, who was well versed in the music of antiquity, (perhaps the best of any man in Europe,) showed me several large Greek folios which contained many of their musical compositions. Now is there, or is there not, any *counterpoint* in these? The learned know, there is no such thing. There is not the least trace of it to be found: it is all *melody*, and no *harmony*.

7. And as the *nature* of music is thus changed, so is likewise the *design* of it. Our composers do not aim at moving the passions, but at quite another thing: at varying and contrasting the notes a thousand different ways. What has *counterpoint* to do with the passions? It is applied to a quite different faculty of the mind: not to our joy, or hope, or fear; but merely to the ear, to the imagination, or internal sense. And the pleasure it gives is not upon this principle; not by raising any passion whatever. It no more affects the passions, than the judgment: both the one and the other lie quite out of its province.

8. Need we any other, and can we have any stronger proof of

this, than those modern overtures, voluntaries, or concertos, which consist altogether of artificial sounds, without any words at all! What have any of the passions to do with these? What has judgment, reason, common sense? Just nothing at all. All these are utterly excluded, by delicate, unmeaning sound!

9. In this respect the modern music has no connexion with common sense, any more than with the passions. In another it is glaringly, undeniably contrary to common sense: namely, in allowing, nay, appointing different words, to be sung by different persons at the same time! What can be more shocking to a man of understanding than this? Pray which of those sentences am I to attend to? I can attend to only one sentence at once: and I hear three or four at one and the same instant! And, to complete the matter, this astonishing jargon has found a place even in the worship of God! It runs through (O pity! O shame!) the greatest part even of our Church music! It is found even in the finest of our anthems, and in the most solemn parts of our public worship! Let any impartial, any unprejudiced person say, whether there can be a more direct mockery of God!

10. But to return. Is it strange, that modern music does not answer the end it is not designed for? And which it is in nowise calculated for? It is not possible it should. Had Timotheus "pursued the resonant fugue," his music would have been quite harmless. It would have affected Alexander no more than Bucephalus: the finest city then in the world had not been destroyed: but

*Persepolis stares, Cyrique arx alta maneres.*

11. It is true, the modern music has been sometimes observed to have as powerful an effect as the ancient: so that frequently single persons, and sometimes numerous assemblies have been seen in a flood of tears. But when was this? Generally, if not always, when a fine solo was sung: when "the sound has been an echo to the sense:" when the music has been extremely simple and inartificial, the composer having attended to *melody* not *harmony*. Then, and then only, the natural power of music to move the passions has appeared. This music was calculated for that end, and effectually answered it.

12. Upon this ground it is, that so many persons are so much affected by *Scotch* or *Irish* airs. They are composed, not according to art, but nature: they are simple in the highest degree. There is no *harmony*, according to the present sense of the word, therein; but there is much *melody*. And this is not only heard, but *felt* by all those who retain their native taste: whose taste is not biassed, (I might say, corrupted,) by attending to *counterpoint* and complicated music. It is this, it is *counterpoint*, it is *harmony* (so called) which destroys the power of our music. And if ever this should be banished from our composition, if ever we should return to the simplicity and melody of the ancients, then the effects of our music will be as surprising as any that were wrought by theirs: yea, perhaps they

will be as much greater, as modern instruments are more excellent than those of the ancients.

INVERNESS, *June 9, 1779.*

### THOUGHTS UPON JACOB BEHMEN.

I HAVE considered the Memoirs of Jacob Behmen, of which I will speak very freely.

I believe he was a good man. But I see nothing extraordinary either in his life or in his death. I have known many, both men and women, who were far more exemplary in their lives, and far more honoured of God in their deaths.

I allow he wrote many truths ; but none that would have appeared at all extraordinary, had he thrown aside his hard words, and used plain and common language.

What some seem most to admire in his writings, is what I most object to : I mean his philosophy, and his phraseology. These are really *his own* : and they are quite *new* : therefore they are quite wrong.

I totally object to his blending religion with philosophy ; and as vain a philosophy as ever existed : crude, indigested, supported neither by Scripture nor reason ; nor any thing but his own *ipse dixit*.

I grant, Mr. Law, by taking immense pains, has licked it into some shape. And he has made it hang tolerably together. But still it admits of no manner of proof.

And all he writes concerning religion is what very many have said before him, and in a far better manner.

To his whole scheme I object,

1. The whole foundation of it is wrong : the very attempt to explain religion, which is the most simple thing in the world, by an abstruse, complicated, philosophical theory, is the most absurd thing that can be conceived.

I pray, consider, but one argument against it. Either St. Paul and St. John knew this theory, or they did not. Mr. Law supposes they did not know it ; but that Jacob knew more than they both. I verily think, this needs no confutation. Let him believe it that can. But if they did know it, how did they dare to conceal any part of the counsel of God ?

Upon the theory itself, I shall only repeat a very little of what I observed in my printed Letter to Mr. Law, p. 8, &c.

“ All that can be conceived,” (says Mr. Law, quoting from Jacob,) “ is *God, or Nature, or Creature.*”

Is *Nature* created or not created ? It must be one or the other ;

for there is no medium. If not created, it is God. If created, is it not a creature? How then can there be three, *God, Nature, and Creature*? Since Nature must coincide either with God or Creature.

“*Nature* is in itself a *hungry, wrathful, fire of life. Nature* is and can be only a *Desire. Desire* is the very *Being of Nature.*”  
 “*Nature* is only a *Desire*, because it is for the sake of *something else!*  
*Nature* is only a *Torment*: because it cannot help itself to what it wants.”

Shame to human understanding! That any man should fall in love with such stark staring nonsense as this!

“*Nature*, as well as God, is antecedent to all Creature. There is an *eternal Nature*, as universal and as *unlimited* as God.” Is then Nature God! Or, are there two *Eternal, Universal, Infinite Beings*?

“Nothing is *before Eternal Nature*, but God.” Nothing but! Is any thing before that which is *Eternal*?

“*Nature*, and *Darkness*, and *Self*, are but three different expressions for one and the same thing. Nature has *all Evil* and *no Evil* in it.”

“*Nature* has seven *chief properties*, and can have neither more nor less, because it is a *Birth from the Deity in Nature.*” (Is *Nature* a *Birth from the Deity in Nature*? Is not this a flat contradiction?) “For God is triune, and Nature is triune:” (Nature triune! Prove it who can.) “And hence arise properties, three and three:” Why not four and four? “And that which brings three and three into union, is another property.” Sublime jargon!

“The three first properties of Nature are the *whole essence* of that *Desire*, which is, and is called *Nature.*” A *part* of its properties are the *whole essence* of it! Flat contradiction again!

“The three first properties of Nature are, *Attraction, Resistance, and Whirling.* In these three Properties of the *Desire*, you see the reason of the three great laws of matter and motion.”

How does it appear, that these are any of the properties of *Nature*, if you mean by *Nature* any thing distinct from *matter*? And how are they properties of *desire*?

“The fourth property is *fire*: the fifth, the form of light and love:” (what is the *form of love*? And are light and love the same thing?) “The sixth, sound or understanding,” (the same thing doubtless!) “The seventh, a *life of triumphing joy.*” Is then a *life of triumphing joy*, “that which brings the three and three properties into union?” If so, how is it “the *result* of that union?”

Once more. “*Attraction* is an incessant working of three contrary properties, *drawing, resisting, and whirling.*” That is, in plain terms, “*drawing* is incessant drawing, resistance, and whirling.”

Such is the *philosophy* which Jacob received by *immediate inspiration!* (to mention only the first principles of it.) And by which he is to explain all religion, and the whole *Revelation* of God!

I. As to his divinity, I object, first, to the very design of explaining religion by any philosophy whatever. The Scripture gives us

no direction, no, nor any permission so to do. I object much more, to the execution of his design: the attempting to explain it by that base, unmeaning, self-contradictory jargon, which is as far remote from all true, genuine philosophy, as it is from the Scripture itself.

II. But be the foundation as it may, he builds no superstructure upon it, but what we knew before, either with regard to internal or external holiness. We knew before, "Neither circumcision avail-eth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but Faith that worketh by Love." And what does he teach us by all his hard, uncouth words, more than this plain truth?

We knew before, that we "must be born again;" inwardly changed from all evil tempers to all good; from an "earthly, sensual, devilish mind," to "the mind that was in Christ Jesus." And what more does he teach us on this head, by all his vain, precarious mystical philosophy?

We knew before, that "the loving God with all our heart," and "the loving our neighbour as ourselves," is the fulfilling of the law," the "end of the commandment," the sum of all religion. And what has he told us more than this, in all his nineteen volumes?

We knew before, that the whole of religion is, a heart and life totally devoted to God. Has he told us, or can he tell us any thing more? No, nor all the angels in heaven.

We knew before, that the *foundation* and the *superstructure* of religion are comprised in those words, "We love him, because he first loved us." Does he teach us any thing higher or deeper? In a word, Does he teach any single point, either of inward or outward holiness, which we did not know before? If he does, what is it? I cannot find out one in all his writings.

III. But if his matter is not new, if this is nothing uncommon, his manner of speaking is new indeed! His language is utterly new: it was never used since the world began. And this is the very reason, for which he is so admired. Because he *speaks* (which cannot be denied) as never man spake. indeed I hardly know, for which he is most admired, the *novelty* or the *obscurity* of his *language*.

But I cannot admire it at all: because it is quite unscriptural. There is no trace of it to be found in any part either of the Old or New Testament. Therefore I cannot reconcile it to that express command, "If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God."

I cannot admire it, because, secondly, it is *barbarous* in the highest degree; whatever is peculiar in his phraseology, is not authorized by any good writer whatever. It is queerness itself. It is mere dog-*latin*. It is an insult upon the ear and the understanding of all mankind.

One allows, "None can understand it without much pains; perhaps not without reading him thrice over." I would not read him thrice over on any consideration. 1. Because it would be enough to crack any man's brain to brood so long over such unintelligible nonsense: and, 2. Because such a waste of time, might provoke God to give me up to a strong delusion, to believe a lie.

But I doubt, whether any man understands it at all. For it is so dark and indeterminate, that I have not found any two persons in England, who understand it alike. I thought, if any man living understood Behmen, Mr. Law did. "No, (says one who has been studying him these forty years,) Mr. Law never understood a page of him."

IV The whole of *Behmenism*, including both phrase and sense, is useless. It stuns and astonishes its admirers. It fills their heads; but it does not change their hearts. It makes no eminent Christians. For many years I have diligently inquired, concerning the grand patrons of it. And I have found none of them who were burning and shining lights; none who adorned the doctrine of God our Saviour.

V. But it is not barely useless: it is *mischievous*: and that in a high degree. For it strikes at the root of both internal and external religion, (suppose Mr. Law understood it,) by sapping the foundation of Justification by Faith. For Jacob affirms, "God was never angry at sinners." But if so, he was never reconciled to them. His wrath was never turned away, if it never existed. And admitting this, there is no place for justification: nor consequently, for faith in a pardoning God, which is the root of both inward and outward holiness.

More particularly it strikes at the root of *humility*, tending to make men admire themselves, and despise others. Never was a more melancholy proof of this than Mr. Law, who seriously believed himself the most knowing man in the kingdom, and despised all that contradicted him, even in the tenderest manner, as the mire in the streets. It strikes at the root of *charity*, inspiring into its strictest votaries deep *ensoriousness* toward the world in general, and an inexpressible *bitterness* toward all who do not receive their new Apostle. This may be observed, in all the Authors of the Memoirs, though, in other respects, good men; and in all I have conversed with in my life who were thorough *Behmenists*.

Above all, it strikes at the root of *external religion*, by destroying zeal for good works: by laying little stress on either works of piety or mercy, and still less, upon Christian society: it particularly tends to make all men of sense and learning bury their talent in the earth, the natural effect of continually declaiming, in a loose and indiscriminate manner against reason and learning.

It strikes at the root of *all revealed religion*, by making men think meanly of the Bible: a natural effect of thinking Behmen *more highly illuminated* than any or all of the apostles. So Mr. S. frankly acknowledged, "While I admired him, I thought St. Paul and St. John very mean writers."

Indeed it quite spoils the *taste* for plain, simple religion, such as that of the Bible is, and gives a false taste, which can relish nothing so well, as high, obscure, unintelligible jargon.

December 22, 1780.

## THOUGHTS UPON BARON MONTESQUIEU'S SPIRIT OF LAWS.

1. AS some of my friends desire I would give them my thoughts on "The Spirit of Laws," I do it willingly, and in the plainest manner I can; that if I am wrong, I may be the sooner set right. I undertook the reading of it with huge expectation, hoping to find an invaluable treasure; as the author is seldom spoken of, but as the phoenix of the age, a prodigy of understanding, and the book is every where spoken of, as the highest effort of genius that ever was. Accordingly, as late as it has appeared in an English dress, it is already come to the eleventh edition. And who knows, but in a few years more, it may come to the two and twentieth?

2. Yet I cannot but observe, that in several places the translator does not seem to understand the original: that there is in the last London edition, a great number of typographical errors: and that, not in a few places, either the translator or the printer has made absolute nonsense.

3. But whence is it, that such a multitude of people, so hugely admire, and highly applaud this treatise? Perhaps nine in ten of them do this, because others do: they follow the cry, without why or wherefore. They follow one another like a flock of sheep; they run on, because many run before them. It is quite the fashion: and who would be out of the fashion? As well be out of the world. Not that one half of these have read the book over; nor does one in ten of them understand it. But it is enough that "every one commends it. And why should not I too?" Especially, as he seems greatly to admire himself; and, upon occasion, to commend himself too: though in a modest, decent way; not in that fulsome manner, which is common among modern writers.

4. Others admire him because of his vast learning, testified by the numerous books he refers to: and yet others, because he is no bigot to Christianity, because he is a free and liberal thinker. I doubt whether many gentlemen do not admire him on this account, more than all the others put together: and the rather, because he does not openly attack the religion of his country, but wraps up, in the most neat and decent language, the remarks which strike at the root of it.

5. But it cannot be denied, that he deserves our commendation upon several accounts. He has an extremely fine imagination, and no small degree of understanding. His style is lively: and even under the disadvantage of a translation, terse, and elegant. Add to this, that he has many remarks, which I suppose are perfectly his own: at least, I never remember to have seen them, in any either ancient or modern writer. Now when all these things are considered, is it any wonder that he should be received with so high and general applause?

6. "Why then do not you concur with the general voice? Why do not you pay him the same admiration?" Without any preface or apology, I will tell you my reasons. And then let you or any candid man, judge whether they are not sufficient.

I do not greatly admire him, 1. Because so large a part of his book, I believe little less than half of it, is dry, dull, unaffecting and unentertaining: at least to all but Frenchmen. What have I, or any Briton to do, with the petty changes in the French government? What have we to do with a long, tedious detail, of the old, obsolete feudal laws? Over and above, that we cannot find any use therein, that the knowledge of these things answers no one reasonable purpose, it touches none of the passions: it gives no pleasure, no entertainment to the thinking mind. It is heavy and tedious to the last degree. It is as insipid as the travels of Thomas Coryatt.

7. I do not admire him, 2. Because I think, he makes very many remarks that are not just, and because he gives us many assertions, which are not true. But all these he pronounces as *ex cathedra*, with an air of infallibility: as though he were the dictator not only of France, but of Europe; as though he expected all men to bow before him.

8. But what I least of all admire is, his laying hold on every opportunity to depreciate the inspired writers—Moses in particular. Indeed here his prudence and decency seem to fail him, and he speaks of the Jewish lawgiver with as little respect or reserve, as he would of Lycurgus, Romulus, or Numa Pompilius.

9. These are some of the reflections which readily occurred to me, from a cursory reading of this celebrated Author. I add but one more, What is the meaning of his title-page? I am afraid of stumbling at the threshold. What does he mean by "The Spirit of Laws?" After reading the whole book, I really do not know. The words give me no idea at all. And the more I study, the less I comprehend them. The author never defines them at all. I verily believe, he did not comprehend them himself. I believe he had no clear or determinate ideas affixed to those words. And was he not likely, when he set out with his head in a mist, to go on in a wonderful manner? Other talents he undoubtedly had: but two he wanted, Religion and Logic. Therefore he ought to be read warily by those who are not well grounded in both.

10. Upon the whole, I think Baron Montesquieu was wholly unworthy of the violent encomiums which have been bestowed upon him. I think he excelled in imagination, but not in judgment, any more than in solid learning. I think, in a word, that he was a child to Monsieur Pascal, Father Malebranche, or Mr. Locke.

## THOUGHTS ON THE CHARACTER AND WRITINGS OF MR. PRIOR.

1. A VERY ingenious writer has lately given us a particular account of the character and works of Mr. Prior. But it was not likely to be a just one, as he formed it chiefly on the testimony of very suspicious witnesses. I mean Mr. Pope, and Mr. Spence: I object both to one and the other. They depreciated him, to exalt themselves. They viewed him with no friendly eye; looking upon him, (particularly Mr. Pope,) as a rival: whom, therefore, they rejoiced to depress.

2. Mr. Pope gives it as his opinion, That "he was fit only to make verses." What can be more unjust? He was fit for transactions of the most difficult and delicate nature. Accordingly he was intrusted with them at Paris, and acquitted himself to the full satisfaction of his employers. He was really fit for every thing; for writing either in verse or prose; for conversation, and for either public or private business.

3. But Mr. Spence says, "His life was irregular, negligent, and sensual. He descended to the meanest company. The woman with whom he cohabited was a despicable drab of the lowest species. One of his wenches, perhaps Chloe, stole his plate and ran away with it."

I do not believe one word of this: although I was often in his neighbourhood, I never heard a word of it before. It carries no face of probability. Would Bishop Atterbury have kept up an acquaintance with a man of such a character? Would that accomplished nobleman, the then Earl of Oxford, have given him a place even in his friendship? I am well assured, my eldest Brother would have had no acquaintance with him, had he been such a wretch as Mr. Spence describes.

4. Others say, "His Chloe was ideal." I know the contrary. I have heard my eldest Brother say, Her name was Miss Taylor: that he knew her well: and that she once came to him (in Dean's Yard, Westminster,) purposely to ask his advice. She told him, "Sir, I know not what to do. Mr. Prior makes large professions of his love: but he never offers me marriage." My Brother advised her to bring the matter to a point at once. She went directly to Mr. Prior, and asked him plainly, "Do you intend to marry me, or not?" He said many soft and pretty things: on which she said, "Sir, in refusing to answer, you *do* answer. I will see you no more." And she did see him no more to the day of his death. But afterwards she spent many hours, standing and weeping at his tomb in Westminster Abbey.

5. As to his Writings, I cannot but think Mr. Prior had not only more learning, but a stronger natural understanding, than Mr. Pope. But this is the less observable, because Mr. Prior always wrote, *curr.*

*rente calamo*, having little time to correct any thing. Whereas Mr Pope laboured every line, and polished it with the utmost exactness. Prior's praise is by no means "that of correctness." He has many unpolished, hasty, half-formed lines, which he would not (or did not) take the pains to correct. I can, therefore, by no means subscribe to that sentence, "What he obtains above mediocrity, seems to be the effort of struggle and travail." Surely not. What he frequently obtains, as far above Pope's Messiah, as that is above Quarle's Emblems, seems to be the effort of a genius not inferior in strength to any beside Milton. But "his words are put by constraint into their places, where they do their duty, but do it sullenly." Nay I reply, most of his words are so natural and unconstrained, as even those of Waller: though they would certainly have done their duty better, had he taken more pains with them. "He extends his sense from one couplet to another; but without success." I think with great success. I will give the first instance that occurs to my memory:

"Happiness, object of that waking dream,  
Which we call life, mistaking; fugitive theme  
Of my pursuing verse; ideal shade,  
Notional good, by fancy only made,  
And by tradition nurst: fallacious fire  
Whose dancing beams mislead our fond desire  
Cause of our care and error of our mind!  
O hadst thou ever been by heav'n design'd  
For Adam and his mortal race, the boon  
Entire had been reserv'd for Solomon."——

Were ever lines extended from couplet to couplet with more success than these? Is there any *constraint* here? What lines can flow more freely? More easily? More naturally?

6. But "his numbers commonly want ease, airiness, lightness, and facility." I cannot possibly be of this opinion. Wherever this is proper, as in all his tales, and in *Alma*, his numbers have certainly the greatest airiness, lightness, and facility. Nay, "but even what is *smooth* is not *soft*." No? What think you of the *Lady's Looking-Glass*, (to take one instance out of fifty.) Where will you show me any *softer numbers* than these?

"Celia and I the other day  
Walk'd o'er the sand-hills to the sea:  
The setting sun adorn'd the coast,  
His beams entire, his fierceness lost;  
And on the bosom of the deep  
The waves lay only not asleep.  
The nymph did like the scene appear,  
Serenely pleasant, calmly fair:  
Soft fell her words, as flew the air."

In truth, the general fault of Prior's poetry is this; it is not too much, but too little laboured. Pope filed and polished every line: Prior set his words down as fast as he could write, and scarcely polished any of them, with any accuracy, at least only here and there. And the reason is plain: Pope lived by his writings; Prior did not. And again: Pope was a man of much leisure: Prior a man of much business.

7. But to descend from generals to particulars. His tales are certainly the best told of any in the English tongue. And it matters not, whether they were ever told before or not. They never were in the English language. I instance only in two of them, *The Lady's Looking-Glass*, (mentioned before,) and *The English Padlock*. In both, the diction is pure, terse, easy, and elegant, in the highest degree. And the moral, both of one and the other, may be of excellent use : particularly that of the latter :

" Be to her virtues very kind :  
Be to her faults a little blind :  
Let all her ways be unconfid'd,  
And clap your padlock—on her mind."

8. But "his amorous effusions have neither gallantry, nor tenderness. They are the dull exercises of one trying to be amorous by dint of study. When he tries to act the Lover, his thoughts are unaffected and remote. In his amorous pedantry he exhibits the College."

Surely never was any thing more distant from the truth ! "Neither gallantry nor tenderness !" For gallantry, I know not well what it means. But never man wrote with more *tenderness*. Witness the preface to *Henry and Emma*, with the whole inimitable Poem : witness the story of *Abraham*. Are these "the dull exercises of one trying to be amorous by dint of study ?" Are the thoughts in these "unaffected and remote ?" Yea, "amorous pedantry of a College ?" O no ! They are the genuine language of the heart. "Unaffected ?" So far from it, that I know not what man of sensibility can read them without tears.

9. But it is said, "*Henry and Emma* is a dull and tedious dialogue, which excites neither esteem for the man, nor tenderness for the woman." Does it not ?—Then I know not with what eyes, or with what heart a man must read it ! "Dull and tedious !" See how doctors differ ! One who was no bad Poet himself, and no bad judge of Poetry, describing Love, says,

" Th' immortal glories of the nut-brown maid,  
Emblazon'd lively on his shield appear :"

and always spoke of this very Poem as one of the finest in the English language.

10. However, "*Alma* never had a plan, nor any drift or design." The drift and design of it are tolerably plain. It is a strong satire on that self-conceited tribe of men, who pretend to philosophize upon every thing, natural or spiritual. It keenly exposes those who continually obtrude their own systems upon the world, and pretend to *account* for every thing. His design is, if possible, to make these men less wise in their own conceit, by showing them how plausibly a man may defend the oddest system that can be conceived : and he intermixes many admirable reflections, and closes with a very striking conclusion : which points out, where one would least expect it, that *all is vanity*.

11. The strangest sentence of all, is that which is passed upon *Solomon*. "It wants the power of engaging attention. Tedious-

ness is the most fatal of all faults. The tediousness of this Poem.— Did any one ever discern it before? I should as soon think of tediousness in the second or sixth Æneid! So far from it, that if I dip in any of the three books, I scarce know where to leave off. No! This Poem does not “want the power of engaging the attention of any that have a taste for Poetry: that have a taste for the strongest sense expressed in some of the finest verses that ever appeared in the English tongue.”

I cite but one passage for all. It stands in the first book.

“ Now when my mind has all the world survey'd,  
 And found that nothing by itself was made:  
 When thought has rais'd itself by just degrees,  
 From valleys crown'd with flowers, and hills with trees—  
 From all the living that four-footed rove  
 Along the shore, the meadow, or the grove;  
 From all that can with fins or feathers fly  
 Through th' aerial or the wat'ry sky;  
 From the poor reptile with a reasoning soul,  
 That miserable master of the whole:  
 From this great object of the body's eye,  
 This fair half-round, this ample azure sky,  
 Terribly large and wonderfully bright,  
 With stars unnumber'd and unmeasur'd light:  
 From essences unseen, celestial names,  
 Enlight'ning spirits, ministerial flames,  
 Angels, dominions, potentates, and thrones;  
 All that in each degree the name of creature owns:  
 Lift we our reason to that sov'reign cause,  
 Who blest the whole with life, and bounded it with laws:  
 Who forth from nothing call'd this comely frame,  
 His will and act, his word and work the same.  
 To whom a thousand years are but a day,  
 Who bade the Light her genial beams display,  
 And set the Moon, and taught the Sun his way;  
 Who waking Time, his creature, from the source  
 Primeval, order'd his predestin'd course:  
 Himself, as in the hollow of his hand,  
 Holding obedient to his high command,  
 The deep abyss, the long-continu'd store,  
 Where months, and days, and hours, and minutes pour  
 Their floating parts, and thenceforth are no more.  
 This Alpha and Omega, first and last,  
 Who like the potter in a mould has cast  
 The world's great frame, commanding it to be  
 Such as the eyes of sense or reason see.  
 Yet, if he wills, may change or spoil the whole:  
 May take yon beauteous, mystic, starry roll,  
 And burn it, like an useless parchment scroll.  
 May from its basis in one moment pour  
 This melted earth  
 Like liquid metal, and like burning ore:  
 Who, sole in power, at the beginning said,  
 Let sea, and air, and earth, and heav'n be made.  
 And it was so: and when he shall ordain,  
 In other sort, has but to speak again,  
 And they shall be no more: of this great theme,  
 This glorious, hallow'd, everlasting Name,  
 This God I would discourse.

12. Now what has Mr. Pope, in all his eleven volumes, which will bear any comparison with this? As elegant a piece as he ever wrote

was, "Verses to the Memory of an unfortunate Lady." But was ever any thing more exquisitely injudicious? First, what a subject! An eulogium on a self-murderer! And the execution is as bad as the design: it is a commendation not only of the person, but the act!

"Is it in heav'n a crime to *love too well*?  
To bear too tender or too *firm* a heart?  
To act a Lover's, or a Roman's part?"

Yes, whatever men may think, it is a crime and no small one, with Him that sitteth in heaven, for any worm of earth to violate "the canon he hath fixed against self-murder." Nor did any one ever do this out of *firmness* of heart, but for want of *firmness*. "A Roman's part!" Nay, no Roman ever acted this part, but out of rank cowardice. This was the case of Cato in particular. He *did not dare* to receive a favour from Cæsar.

13. But go on:

"Ambition first sprung from your high abodes,  
The glorious fault of angels and of gods."

Consummate nonsense! Of *angels* and of *gods*! What is the difference? Are not these angels and gods the very same? That is, in plain English, Devils! Are these subjects of panegyric? Or fit to be recommended to our imitation? And if the fault they were guilty of were so *glorious*, what cruelty was it, to cast them into hell for it?

But what comfort does the Poet provide for the woman that was guilty of this glorious fault? Why this,

"Yet shall thy grave with rising flowers be drest,  
And the green turf lie light upon thy breast."

Who would not go to hell, to have the green turf grow upon his grave! Nay, and primroses too! For the Poet assures her,

"There the first roses of the spring shall blow!"

The conclusion of this celebrated Poem is not the least remarkable part of it.

"Life's idle business at one gasp be o'er,  
The Muse forgot, and thou belov'd no more!"

Idle business indeed! If we had no better business than this, it is pity that ever we were born! But was this all the business of his life? Did God raise him from the dust of the earth, and breathe into him a living soul, for no other business, than to court a mistress and to make verses! O what a view is here given of an immortal spirit, that came forth from God, and is going back to God!

14. Upon the whole, I cannot but think, that the natural understanding of Mr. Prior, was far stronger than that of Mr. Pope: that his judgment was more correct, his learning more extensive, his knowledge of religion and of the Scriptures far greater. And I conceive his poetical abilities were at least equal to those either of Pope or Dryden. But as Poetry was not his business, but merely the employment of his leisure hours, few of his pieces are so highly

finished as most of Mr. Pope's are. But those which he has taken the pains to polish, (as the Ode to the Memory of Col. Villiers, the Paraphrase on the Thirteenth of the Corinthians, and several parts of Solomon) do not yield to any thing that has been written either by Pope, or Dryden, or any English Poet, except Milton.

## THOUGHTS ON NERVOUS DISORDERS

*Particularly that which is usually termed Lowness of Spirits.*

1. WHEN physicians meet with disorders which they do not understand, they commonly term them *Nervous*: a word that conveys to us no determinate idea, but it is a good cover for learned ignorance. But these are often no natural disorder of the body, but the hand of God upon the soul, being a dull consciousness of the want of God, and the unsatisfactoriness of every thing here below. At other times it is conviction of sin, either in a higher or a lower degree. It is no wonder that those who are strangers to religion, should not know what to make of this: and that consequently all their prescriptions should be useless, seeing they quite mistake the cause.

2. But undoubtedly there are Nervous Disorders, which are purely natural. Many of these are connected with other diseases, whether acute or chronical. Many are the forerunners of various distempers, and many the consequences of them. But there are those, which are not connected with others, being themselves a distinct, original distemper. And this frequently arises to such a height, that it seems to be one species of madness. So one man imagines himself to be made of glass: another thinks he is too tall to go in at the door. This is often termed the *spleen* or *vapours*: often *lowness of spirits*: a phrase that having scarcely any meaning, is so much the fitter to be given to this unintelligible disorder. It seems to have taken its rise from hence. We sometimes say, A man is in *high spirits*. And the proper opposite to this is, *he is low-spirited*. Does not this imply, that a kind of faintness, weariness, and listlessness affects the whole body, so that he is disinclined to any motion, and hardly cares to move hand or foot? But the mind seems chiefly to be affected, having lost its relish of every thing, and being no longer capable of enjoying the things it once delighted in most. Nay, every thing round about is not only flat and insipid, but dreary and uncomfortable. It is not strange if to one in this state, life itself is become a burden: yea so insupportable a burden, that many who have all this world can give, desperately rush into an unknown world, rather than bear it any longer.

3. But what are the causes of this strange disorder? One cause

is, the use of spirituous liquors. This is one of the horrid effects, which naturally follow the swallowing that fashionable poison. That liquid fire lays the foundation of numberless diseases, and of this in particular. It is amazing that the preparing or selling this poison, should be permitted, I will not say in any Christian country, but in any civilized state. "O; it brings in a considerable sum of money to Government." True; but is it wise to barter men's lives for money? Surely that gold is bought too dear, if it is the price of blood. Does not the strength of every country consist in the number of its inhabitants? If so, the lessening their number is a loss, which no money can compensate. So that it is inexcusable ill-husbandry, to give the lives of useful men for any sum of money whatever.

4. But a more extensive cause of this disorder than the use of drams, I apprehend is the use of tea: particularly where it is taken either in large quantities, or strong, or without cream and sugar. "Nay, weak tea is far more hurtful." This is a senseless, shameless falsehood. I long drank hot water and sugar instead of tea; and it did me no hurt at all. But three cups of strong tea will now make my hand shake, so that I can hardly write. And let any try the experiment: if any tea make his hand shake, it will not be weak tea, but strong. This has exceedingly increased the number of nervous complaints throughout the three kingdoms. And this furnishes us with a satisfactory answer to the common question, "Why are these complaints so general now, which were scarcely heard of two or three centuries ago?" For this plain reason, Two or three centuries ago, no tea was drank in either Britain or Ireland.

5. But allowing both tea and spirituous liquors to have contributed largely to the increase of Nervous Disorders, yet it may be doubted, whether one or both of them are the principal causes of them. The particular causes of them, (particularly among those who do not work for their living,) are, as Dr. Cadogan justly observes, Indolence, Intemperance, and irregular Passions.

First, Indolence, the not using such a degree of exercise as the constitution requires. To illustrate this. Our body is composed of earth, water, air, and fire; and the two latter are as necessary as the two former. To supply these, that curious engine, the lungs, continually take in the air, to every particle of which a particle of fire is attached, which being detached from it, is mingled with the blood. Now exercise quickens the motion of the lungs, and enables them to collect from the air, a due quantity of fire. The nerves are the conductors of this ethereal fire, vulgarly called the animal spirits. If this is duly diffused through the whole body, we are lively and vigorous. If it is not (which without exercise it cannot be) we soon grow faint and languid. And if other disorders do not ensue, those termed Nervous surely will, with that whole train of symptoms which are usually comprised in what is termed *lowness of spirits*.

6. Intemperance is another principal cause of this: if not intemperance in drink, which is not quite so common, yet intemperance in

meat : the taking more of it than nature requires. Dr. Cheyne well observes, it is not generally the quality, but the quantity of what we eat which hurts us. What hurts the nerves in particular is the eating too much animal food, especially at night: much more the eating at one meal, food of several different kinds. If we consider, how few observe this, we shall not wonder that so many have nervous disorders : especially among those that have an opportunity of indulging themselves daily in variety, and who are hereby continually tempted to eat more than nature requires.

7 But there is another sort of intemperance, of which, I think, Dr. Cadogan does not take the least notice. And yet it is the source of more nervous disorders than even intemperance in food: I mean, intemperance in sleep: the sleeping longer than nature requires. This alone will account for the weak nerves of most of our nobility and gentry. Not that I would insist upon the old rule,

*Sex horas quivis poscit, septemque scholaris ;  
Octo viator habet ; nebulo quisque novem.*

I would allow between six and seven hours at an average, to a healthy man : or an hour more, between seven and eight hours, to an unhealthy man. And I do not remember, that in threescore years, I have known either man or woman, who laid longer in bed than this (whether they slept or not) but in some years they complained of *lowness of spirits*.

The plain reason of which seems to be, while we sleep, all the springs of nature are unbent. And if we sleep longer than is sufficient, they are relaxed more than is sufficient, and of course grow weaker and weaker. And if we lie longer in bed, though without sleep, the very posture relaxes the whole body : much more when we are covered up with clothes, which throw back on the body whatever perspires from it. By this means it is stewed in the moist vapour : it sucks in again, what nature had cast out, and the flesh is as it were parboiled therein, and becomes more and more soft and flabby. And the nerves suffer at least as much hereby as any other part of the habit. I cannot, therefore, but account this, the lying too long in bed, the grand cause of our nervous disorders.

8. And this alone sufficiently answers this question, "Why are we more nervous than our forefathers?" Because we lie longer in bed: they, rich and poor, slept about eight, when they heard the Curfew-bell, and rose at four; the bell ringing at that hour, (as well as at eight) in every parish in England. We rise (if not obliged to work for our living) at ten, eleven, or twelve. Is it any wonder then, were there no other cause, that we complain of *lowness of spirits*?

9. Yet something may be allowed to *irregular passions*. For as long as the soul and body are united, these undoubtedly affect the body; the nerves in particular. Even violent joy, though it raises the spirits for a time, does afterwards sink them greatly. And every one knows, what an influence fear has upon our whole frame. Nay even *hope deferred maketh the heart sick*; puts the mind all out of

tune. The same effect have all foolish and hurtful desires. *They pierce us through with many sorrows.* They occasion a deep depression of the spirits: so, above all, does inordinate affection: whereby so many refusing to be comforted, sorrow even unto death.

10. But is there no cure for this sore evil? Is there no remedy for lowness of spirits? Undoubtedly there is, a most certain cure, if you are willing to pay the price of it. But this price, is not silver, or gold, nor any thing purchaseable thereby. If you would give all the substance of your house for it, it would be utterly despised. And all the medicines under the sun avail nothing in this distemper. The whole *Materia Medica* put together, will do you no lasting service: they do not strike at the root of the disease: but you must remove the cause, if you wish to remove the effect.

But this cannot be done by your own strength: it can only be done by the mighty power of God. If you are convinced of this, set about it, trusting in him, and you will surely conquer.

First, Sacredly abstain from all *spirituous liquors*. Touch them not, on any pretence whatever. To others they may sometimes be of use; but to nervous persons they are deadly poison.

Secondly, If you drink any, drink but little tea, and none at all without eating, or without sugar and cream. "But you like it without." No matter: prefer health before taste.

Thirdly, Every day of your life, take at least an hour's exercise, between breakfast and dinner. (If you will, take another hour, before supper, or before you sleep) If you can, take it in the open air; otherwise, in the house. If you cannot rise, or walk abroad, use within, a dumb bell, or a wooden horse. If you have not strength to do this for an hour at a time, do it at twice or thrice. Let nothing hinder you. Your life is at stake. Make every thing yield to this.

Fourthly, Take no more food than nature requires. Dine upon one thing (except pudding or pye.) Eat no flesh at supper; but something light and easy of digestion.

Fifthly, Sleep early and rise early; unless you are ill, never lie in bed much above seven hours. Then you will never lie awake. Your flesh will be firm, and your spirits lively.

Sixthly, Above all,

"Give not to your passions way;  
God gave them to thee under lock and key."

Beware of anger! Beware of worldly sorrow! Beware of the fear that hath torment! Beware of foolish and hurtful desires! Beware of inordinate affection! Remember the kind command, "My son, give me thy heart!" Then shall there be no more complaining of *lowness of spirits*! But the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep thy heart and mind in Christ Jesus!

*Melville-House, May 20, 1784.*

## THOUGHTS ON GENIUS.

1. I HAVE for many years desired to see something, long, or short, accurately written on the term *Genius*. It is a word almost in every one's mouth, and one that is used by abundance of writers. Yet I doubt, it is not well understood by one in a hundred of them that use it. I rejoiced therefore to hear, that so eminent a writer as Dr. Gerrard had published an *Essay* on the subject. But when I read it, I was disappointed of my hope: it did not in any degree answer my expectations. The ingenious and very learned author did not seem to understand the term at all: nor could I find one proper definition of it throughout the whole *Treatise*.

2. I hoped, however, to find full satisfaction on the head in Mr. Daff's "*Essay on Original Genius*:" although I was surprised to observe, it had been published above twenty years before the other. But I was disappointed again. Indeed it undoubtedly contains many judicious remarks. But even here, what should have been done in the very beginning, is not done at all. I want to know first of all, What do you mean by *Genius*? Give me a definition of it. Pray tell me this, before you say any thing more about it: this is common sense. Without this, you may ramble as long as you please; and leave me just as wise as I was.

3. The word *Genius* was used by the ancient Romans, for a superior Being, good or bad, who they supposed, attended every one from his birth to his death. But in this sense of the word it has nothing to do with the present question: wherein it means, either a quality of the human mind, or a man endued with that quality. Thus we say indifferently, "*He is a genius, or has a genius.*" I would here take it in the latter sense, for the quality which denominates a man a genius.

4. It is evident, that genius, taken in this sense, is not *invention*: although that may possibly bear some relation to it. It is not *imagination*: although this may be allowed to be one ingredient of it. Much less is it an *association of ideas*: all these are essentially different from it. So is *sensation*, on the one hand; and so are *memory* and *judgment* on the other: unless by *judgment* we mean, (as many do,) strength of understanding. It seems to be an extraordinary capacity of mind; sometimes termed extraordinary talents. This may be more or less extensive: there may be a kind of general genius, or an extraordinary capacity for many things. Or a particular genius, an extraordinary capacity for one particular thing: it may be, for one particular science, or one particular art. Thus Homer and Milton had a genius, an extraordinary capacity, for Poetry. Thus Euclid and Archimedes had a genius, an extraordinary capacity, for Geometry. So Cicero had a genius for Oratory,

and Sir Isaac Newton for Natural Philosophy. Thus Raphael and Michael Angelo had a genius, an extraordinary capacity, for Painting. And so Purcell and Handel (to mention no more,) had a genius, an extraordinary capacity, for Music. Whereas, Aristotle, Lord Bacon, and a very few besides, seem to have had an universal genius, an extraordinary capacity to excel in whatever they took in hand.

5. It may be allowed that the word is frequently taken in a lower sense. But it has then a word prefixed to it, to restrain its signification. So we say, a man has a *middling genius*; or a *little genius*. But it is generally taken for an extraordinary capacity of whatever kind.

6. Genius in philosophy, poetry, and oratory, seems to imply a strong and clear understanding, connected with an unusually extensive and lively imagination. In which respect it may truly be said, not only of a poet, but also of an orator and philosopher, *nascitur non fit*: he has this endowment by nature, not by art. Yet it may be granted, that art may exceedingly improve, what originally sprung from nature. It may receive assistance likewise from the memory, (nearly related to the imagination :) and also from the passions, which on various occasions enliven and strengthen the imagination.

7. It may be observed, I purpose to abstain from using the word *reason or judgment*: because the word understanding is less equivocal: and I would always use one and the same word, to express one and the same idea.

8. Both the writers above mentioned, suppose *taste* also to be essential to genius. And indeed it does seem to be, if not an essential part, yet an essential property of it: *taste* is here a figurative word, borrowed from the sense of *tasting*, whereby we are enabled, first to judge of, and then to relish our food: so the intellectual *taste* has a twofold office: it *judges* and it *relishes*. In the former respect it belongs to the understanding; in the latter to the imagination.

9. To sum up all. Perhaps genius may be defined, an extraordinary capacity for philosophy, oratory, poetry, or any other art or science: the constituent parts whereof are a strong understanding, and a lively imagination; and the essential property, a just taste.

Lambeth, Nov. 8, 1787.

## THOUGHTS ON MEMORY.

THERE is a near relation between memory, reminiscence, and recollection. But what is the difference between them? Wherein do they differ from each other? Is not memory a natural faculty of the mind, which is exerted various ways? And does it not exert itself, sometimes in simply *remembering*, sometimes in *reminiscence*, or *recollection*? In simply *remembering* things, the mind of man appears to be rather passive than active. Whether we will or not, we *remember* many things which we have heard or seen, said or done: especially if they were attended with any remarkable pleasure or pain. But in *reminiscence*, or recalling what is past, the mind appears to be active. Most times, at least, we may or may not recall them as we please. *Recollection* seems to imply something more than simple *reminiscence*; even the studious collecting and gathering up together all the parts of a conversation or transaction, which had occurred before, but had in some measure escaped from the memory.

But there is one sort of memory, which it seems more difficult to understand than any other. You pronounce or hear a discourse, or copy of verses, which fixes upon your memory. Afterwards you can repeat, in your mind, the words you spoke or heard, without ever once opening your lips, or uttering any articulate sound. There is a kind of inward voice (so we may term it for want of a better expression) which, like an echo, not only repeats the same words without the least variation, but with exactly the same accent, and the same tone of voice. The same echo repeats any tune you have learned, without the least alteration. Now how is this done? By what faculty of the mind, or the body, or both conjointly? I am as sure of the fact, as I am that I am alive. But who is able to account for it? O! how shall we comprehend the ever-blessed God, when we cannot comprehend ourselves?

*Yarmouth, Oct. 21, 1789.*

## A LETTER TO THE REV MR. HERVEY

*Oct. 15, 1756.*

DEAR SIR,

A CONSIDERABLE time since, I sent you a few hasty thoughts which occurred to me on reading the Dialogues between Theron and Aspasio. I have not been favoured with any answer. Yet upon another and a more careful perusal of them, I could not but set down some obvious reflections, which I would rather have communicated before those dialogues were published.

In the first dialogue there are several just and strong observations, which may be of use to every serious reader. In the second, is no!

the description often too laboured, the language too stiff and affected? Yet the Reflections on the Creation (in the 31st and following pages) make abundant amends for this. (I cite the pages according to the Dublin edition, having written the rough draught of what follows, in Ireland.)

P. 39. Is *justification* more or less, than God's pardoning and accepting a sinner through the merits of *Christ*? That God herein "reckons the righteousness and obedience which *Christ* performed as *our own*:" I allow, if by that ambiguous expression, you mean only as you here explain it yourself, "They are as effectual for obtaining our salvation, as if they were our own personal qualifications." p. 41.

P. 43. "We are not solicitous as to any *particular* set of *phrases*. Only let men be humbled, as repenting criminals at *Christ's* feet, let them rely as devoted pensioners on his merits, and they are undoubtedly in the way to a blissful immortality." Then for *Christ's* sake, and for the sake of the immortal souls which He has purchased with his blood, do not dispute for that *particular phrase*, *The imputed righteousness of Christ*. It is not scriptural; it is not necessary; men who scruple to use, men who never heard the expression, may yet "be humbled, as *repenting criminals*, at his feet, and rely as *devoted pensioners* on his merits." But it has done immense hurt. I have had abundant proof, that the frequent use of this unnecessary phrase, instead of "furthering men's progress in vital holiness," has made them satisfied without any holiness at all; yea, and encouraged them to work all uncleanness with greediness.

P. 45. "To ascribe pardon to *Christ's passive*, eternal life to his *active* righteousness, is fanciful rather than judicious. His universal obedience from his birth to his death, is the one foundation of my hope."

This is unquestionably right. But if it be, there is no manner of need, to make the imputation of his *active* righteousness, a separate and laboured head of discourse. O that you had been content with this plain, scriptural account, and spared some of the dialogues and letters that follow!

The third and fourth dialogues contain an admirable illustration and confirmation of the great doctrine of *Christ's* Satisfaction. Yet even here I observe a few passages, which are liable to some exception.

P. 54. "Satisfaction was made to the divine law." I do not remember any such expression in Scripture. This way of speaking of the law as a *person injured* and to be *satisfied*, seems hardly defensible.

P. 74. "The *death* of *Christ* procured the *pardon* and *acceptance* of believers, even before he came in the flesh." Yea, and ever since. In this we all agree. And why should we contend for any thing more?

P. 120. "All the benefits of the new covenant, are the *purchase* of *his blood*." Surely they are. And after this has been fully proved, where is the need, where is the use, of contending so strenuously, for the *imputation* of *his righteousness*, as is done in the fifth and sixth dialogues?

P. 135. "If He was our Substitute as to *penal sufferings*, why not, as to *justifying obedience*?"

The former is expressly asserted in Scripture. The latter is not expressly asserted there.

P. 145. "As sin and misery have *abounded* through the first Adam, merey and grace have *much more abounded* through the second. So that none can have any reason to complain." No, not if the second Adam died for all. Otherwise all for whom he did not die, have great reason to complain. For they inevitably *fall* by the first Adam, without any *help* from the second.

P. 148. "The whole world of believers" is an expression which never occurs in Scripture: nor has it any countenance there: the world in the inspired writings being constantly taken either in a universal or in a bad sense: either for the whole of mankind, or for that part of them who know not God.

P. 149. "In the LORD shall all the house of Israel be justified." It ought unquestionably to be rendered, "By or through the LORD." This argument therefore proves nothing. "Ye are complete in him." The words literally rendered are, *Ye are filled with him*. And the whole passage, as any unprejudiced reader may observe, relates to sanctification, not justification.

P. 150. "They are accepted for Christ's sake: this is justification through *imputed righteousness*." That remains to be proved. Many allow the former, who cannot allow the latter.

THERON. "I see no occasion for such *nice distinctions and metaphysical subtleties*."

ASP. You oblige us to make use of them by confounding these very different ideas, that is, Christ's active and passive righteousness."

I answer, We do not *confound* these: but neither do we *separate* them. Nor have we any authority from Scripture, for either thinking or speaking of one separate from the other. And this whole debate on one of them separate from the other, is a mere *metaphysical subtlety*.

P. 151. "The righteousness which justifies us, is already *wrought out*."—A crude, unscriptural expression! "It was *set on foot, carried on, completed*." O vain philosophy! The plain truth is, *Christ lived and tasted death for every man*. And through the merits of his life and death, every believer is justified.

P. 152. "Whoever perverts so glorious a doctrine, shows he never believed." Not so. They who *turn back as a dog to the vomit*, had once *escaped the pollutions of the world by the knowledge of Christ*.

P. 153. "The goodness of God leadeth to repentance." This is unquestionably true. But the *nice, metaphysical* doctrine of *imputed righteousness*, leads not to repentance, but to licentiousness.

P. 154. "The believer *cannot but* add to his faith, works of righteousness." During his first love, this is often true. But it is not true afterwards, as we know and feel by melancholy experience.

P. 155. "We no longer obey, *in order* to lay the foundation for our final acceptance." No: that foundation is already laid in the merits of Christ. Yet we obey, *in order* to our final acceptance

through his merits. And in this sense, by obeying we *lay a good foundation, that we may attain eternal life.*

P. 156. "We establish the law: we provide for its honour, by the perfect obedience of Christ." Can you possibly think, St. Paul meant this? That such a thought ever entered into his mind? The plain meaning is, We establish both the true sense, and the effectual practice of it: we provide for its being both understood and practised in its full extent.

P. 157. "On those who reject the atonement, just severity." Was it ever possible for them, not to reject it? If not, how is it just, to cast them into a lake of fire, for not doing what it was impossible they should do? Would it be just (make it your own case) to cast *you* into hell, for not touching heaven with your hand?

P. 159. "Justification is *complete* the first moment we believe, and is incapable of *augmentation.*"

Not so: there may be as many *degrees* in the *favour* as in the *image* of God.

P. 190. "St. Paul often mentions *a righteousness imputed:*" (not a righteousness; never once; but simply *righteousness.*) "What can this be, but *the righteousness of Christ?*" He tells you himself, Rom. iv. 6, *To him that believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, faith is imputed for righteousness.* "Why is Christ styled *Jehovah our Righteousness?*" Because we are both justified and sanctified through him.

P. 191. "My death, the cause of their forgiveness; my righteousness, the ground of their acceptance."

How does this agree with p. 45, "To ascribe pardon to Christ's *passive*, eternal life to his *active* righteousness, is fanciful rather than judicious?"

P. 195. "He commends such kinds of beneficence *only*, as were exercised to a disciple as such." Is not this a slip of the pen? Will not our Lord then commend, and reward eternally, all kinds of beneficence, provided they flowed from a principle of loving faith? Yea, that which was exercised to a Samaritan, a Jew, a Turk, or a Heathen? Even these I would not term "transient bubbles," though they do not *procure* our justification.

P. 197. "How must our righteousness exceed that of the Scribes and Pharisees? Not only in being sincere, but in possessing a *complete* righteousness, even that of Christ." Did our Lord mean this? Nothing less. He specifies in the following parts of his sermon, the very instances wherein the righteousness of a Christian exceeds that of the Scribes and Pharisees.

P. 198. "He brings this specious *hypocrite* to the test." How does it appear, that he was a *hypocrite*? Our Lord gives not the least intimation of it. Surely he *loved him*, not for his hypocrisy, but his sincerity!

Yet he loved the world, and therefore could not keep any of the commandments in their spiritual meaning. And the keeping of these is undoubtedly the *way* to, though not the *cause* of, eternal life.

P. 200. "*By works his faith was made perfect:* appeared to be true."

No: the natural sense of the words is, *By* the grace superadded while he wrought those *works, his faith was literally made perfect.*

*Ibid.* "He that doeth righteousness is righteous——manifests the truth of his conversion." Nay; the plain meaning is, *He alone is truly righteous, whose faith worketh by love.*

P 201. "St. James speaks of the *justification of our faith.*" Not unless you mean by that odd expression, our *faith being made perfect*: for so the Apostle explains his own meaning. Perhaps the word *justified* is once used by St. Paul for *manifested*. But that does not prove it is to be so understood here.

P. 202. "Whoso doeth these things shall never fall into total apostacy." How pleasing is this to flesh and blood! But David says no such thing. His meaning is, *Whoso doeth these things to the end, shall never fall into hell.*

The seventh dialogue is full of important truths. Yet some expressions in it I cannot commend.

P. 216. "*One thing thou lackest, the imputed righteousness of Christ.*" You cannot think, this is the meaning of the text. Certainly the *one thing* our Lord meant was, the love of God. This was the thing he lacked.

P 222. "Is the *obedience* of Christ insufficient to *accomplish* our justification?" Rather I would ask, Is the *death* of Christ insufficient to *purchase* it?

P 226. "The saints in glory ascribe *the whole* of their salvation to the *blood* of the Lamb." So do I: and yet I believe he "obtained for all a *possibility* of salvation."

P. 227. "The terms of acceptance for *fallen* man were a *full satisfaction* to the Divine Justice, and a *complete conformity* to the Divine Law." This you take for granted, but I cannot allow.

The *terms* of acceptance for fallen man are *repentance* and *faith*. *Repent ye, and believe the gospel.*

*Ibid.* "There are but two methods whereby any can be justified, either by a *perfect obedience* to the law, or because Christ hath kept the law in our stead." You should say, "Or by *faith* in Christ." I then answer, This is true. And fallen man is justified, not by *perfect obedience*, but by *faith*. What Christ has done is the *foundation* of our justification, not the *term* or *condition* of it.

In the eighth Dialogue likewise there are many great truths, and yet some things liable to exception.

P 253. "David, God himself dignifies with the *most exalted* of all characters." Far, very far from it. We have more exalted characters than David's, both in the Old Testament and the New. Such are those of Samuel, Daniel, yea, and Job, in the former; of St. Paul and St. John in the latter.

"But God styles him *a man after his own heart.*" This is the text which has caused many to mistake! for want of considering, first, That this is said of David in a *particular respect*, not with regard to his *whole character*: secondly, The time at which it was spoken. When was David *a man after God's own heart*? *When God found him following the ewes great with young, when he took him from the*

*sheep-folds*, Ps. lxxiii. 71. It was in the second or third year of Saul's reign, that Samuel said to him, *The Lord hath sought him a man after his own heart, and hath commanded him to be captain over his people*, 1 Sam. xiii. 14. But was he a man after God's own heart all his life? Or in all particulars? So far from it, that we have few more exceptionable characters, among all the men of God, recorded in Scripture.

P 261. "*There is not a just man upon earth that sinneth not.*" Solomon might truly say so before Christ came. And St. John might after he came, say as truly, *Whosoever is born of God sinneth not. But in many things we offend all.*" That St. James does not speak this of himself, or of real Christians, will clearly appear, to all who impartially consider the context.

The ninth dialogue proves excellently well, that we cannot be justified by our works.

But have you thoroughly considered the words which occur in the 270th page?

"O children of Adam, you are *no longer* obliged to love God with all your strength, nor your neighbour as yourselves. *Once* indeed I insisted on absolute purity of heart: *now* I can dispense with some degrees of evil desire. Since Christ"—has fulfilled the law for you, "You need not fulfil it. I will *connive* at, yea, accommodate my demands to your weakness."

I agree with you, That "this doctrine makes the Holy One of God a minister of sin." And is it not your own? Is not this the very doctrine which you espouse throughout your book?

I cannot but except to several passages also in the tenth dialogue. I ask, first,

P 291. "Does the *righteousness of God* ever mean" (as you affirm) "*The merits of Christ?*" I believe not once in all the Scripture. It often means, and particularly in the Epistle to the Romans, God's *method of justifying* sinners. When therefore you say,

P 292. "The *righteousness of God* means, such a righteousness as may justly challenge his acceptance;" I cannot allow it at all: and this capital mistake must needs lead you into many others. But I follow you step by step.

*Ibid.* "In order to entitle us to a reward, there must be an imputation of righteousness." There must be an interest in Christ. And then *every man shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour.*

P 293. "A rebel may be *forgiven*, without being restored to the dignity of a son." A rebel against an earthly king may; but not a rebel against God. In the very same moment that God forgives us, we are made the sons of God. Therefore this is an idle dispute. For *pardon* and *acceptance*, though they may be *distinguished*, cannot be *divided*. The words of Job, which you cite, are wide of the question. Those of Solomon prove no more than this, (and who denies it?) That justification implies both *pardon* and *acceptance*.

P. 295. "*Grace reigneth through righteousness unto eternal life,*"—that is, the free love of God brings us through justification and sanctification to glory *Ibid.* "That they may receive *forgiveness*, and a lot

*among the sanctified:*" that is, that they may receive pardon, holiness, heaven.

*Ibid.* "Is not the satisfaction made by the death of Christ, sufficient to obtain both our full pardon and final happiness?" Unquestionably it is, and neither of the texts you cite proves the contrary.

P 296. "If it was requisite for Christ to be baptized, much more to fulfil the moral law."

I cannot prove that either one or the other was requisite *in order* to his *purchasing* redemption for us.

P 297. "By Christ's sufferings alone, the law was not satisfied." Yes it was; for it required only the alternative, obey or die. It requires no man to obey and die too. If any man had perfectly obeyed, he would not have died. *Ibid.* "Where Scripture ascribes *the whole* of our salvation to the death of Christ; a *part* of his humiliation is put for the *whole*." I cannot allow this without some proof. *He was obedient unto death*, is no proof at all; as it does not necessarily imply any more, than that *he died in obedience* to the Father. In some texts there is a *necessity*, of taking a part for the whole. But in these there is no such *necessity*.

P 300. "Christ *undertook* to do every thing necessary for our redemption:" namely, in a *covenant* made with the Father. It is sure, he *did* every thing necessary: but how does it appear, that he *undertook* this before the foundation of the world, and that by a positive *covenant* between him and the Father?

You think this appears from four texts, 1. From that, *Thou gavest them to me*. Nay, when any believe, *the Father gives them to Christ*. But this proves no such previous contract. 2. *God hath laid upon him the iniquities of us all*. Neither does this prove any such thing. 3. That expression, *The counsel of peace shall be between them*, does not necessarily imply any more, than that both the Father and the Son would concur in the redemption of man. 4. *According to the counsel of his will*,—that is, in the way or method he had chosen. Therefore neither any of these texts, nor all of them, prove what they were brought to prove. They do by no means prove, that there ever was any such covenant made between the Father and the Son.

P. 301. "The *conditions* of the covenant are recorded, *Lo, I come to do thy will*." Nay, here is no mention of any covenant, nor any thing from which it can be inferred. "The recompense stipulated in this glorious *treaty*"—But I see not one word of the treaty itself. Nor can I possibly allow the existence of it without far other proof than this. *Ibid.* "Another copy of this grand *treaty* is recorded Isaiah xlix. from the first to the sixth verse." I have read them, but cannot find a word about it, in all those verses. They contain neither more nor less than a prediction of the salvation of the Gentiles.

P 302. "By the covenant of works, man was bound to obey *in his own person*." And so he is under the covenant of grace; though not in order to his justification. "The obedience of *our Surety* is accepted instead of *our own*." This is neither a safe nor a scriptural

way of speaking. I would simply say, *We are accepted through the Beloved. We have redemption through his blood.*

P. 303. "The second covenant was not made with Adam, or any of his posterity, but with Christ in those words, *The Seed of the woman shall bruise the serpent's head.*" For any authority you have from these words, you might as well have said, It was made with the Holy Ghost. These words were not spoken to Christ, but of him, and give not the least intimation of any such *covenant* as you plead for. They manifestly contain, if not a covenant made with, a promise made to Adam and all his posterity.

P. 303. "Christ, we see, *undertook* to execute the conditions." We see no such thing in this text. We see here only a promise of a Saviour, made by God to man.

*Ibid.* "It is true, I cannot fulfil the conditions." It is not true. The conditions of the new covenant are, *repent* and *believe*. And these you can fulfil, through Christ strengthening you. "It is equally true, this is not required at my hands." It is *equally* true, that is, absolutely false. And most dangerously false. If we allow this, Antinomianism comes in with a full tide. "Christ has performed all that was *conditional* for me." Has he *repented* and *believed* for you? You endeavour to evade this by saying, "He performed all that was *conditional* in the *covenant of works.*" This is nothing to the purpose; for we are not talking of that, but of the *covenant of grace*. Now he did not perform all that was *conditional* in this covenant, unless he repented and believed. "But he did unspeakably more." It may be so. But he did not do this.

P. 308. "But if Christ's *perfect obedience* be our's, we have no more need of pardon than Christ himself." The consequence is good. You have started an objection which you cannot answer. You say indeed, "Yes, we do need pardon; for *in many things we offend all.*" What then, if his *obedience* be our's, we still *perfectly obey in him.*

P. 309. "Both the branches of the law, the *perceptive* and the *penal*, in the case of guilt contracted, must be satisfied." Not so. "Christ by his death alone, (so our church teaches) fully satisfied for the sins of the whole world." The same great truth is manifestly taught in the thirty-first Article. Is it therefore fair, is it honest, for any one to plead the Articles of our Church in defence of absolute Predestination? Seeing the seventeenth Article barely *defines* the term, without either affirming or denying the thing: whereas the thirty-first totally overthrows and razes it from the foundation.

*Ibid.* "Believers who are notorious transgressors *in themselves*, have a sinless obedience *in Christ.*" O siren song! Pleasing sound, to James Wheatley! Thomas Williams! James Reiley!

I know not one sentence in the eleventh dialogue, which is liable to exception: but that grand doctrine of Christianity, Original Sin, is therein proved by irrefragable arguments.

The twelfth likewise is unexceptionable, and contains such an illustration of the wisdom of God in the structure of the human body, as I believe cannot be paralleled, in either ancient or modern writers.

The former part of the thirteenth dialogue is admirable. To the latter, I have some objections.

Vol. II. P. 44. "Elijah failed in his resignation, and even Moses spake unadvisedly with his lips." It is true: but if you could likewise fix some blot upon venerable Samuel and beloved Daniel, it would prove nothing. For no scripture teaches, that the holiness of Christians is to be measured by that of any Jew.

P. 46. "Do not the *best* of men frequently feel disorder in their affections; do not they often complain, *When I would do good, evil is present with me?*" I believe not. You and I are only able to answer for ourselves. "Do not they say, *We groan, being burthened*,—with the workings of inbred corruption?" You know, this is not the meaning of the text. The whole context shows, the cause of their groaning was their longing *to be with Christ*.

P. 47. "The cure" of sin "will be perfected in heaven." Nay surely, in paradise, if not sooner. "This is a noble prerogative of the beatific vision." No: it would then come too late. If sin remains in us till the day of judgment, it will remain for ever. "Our present blessedness does not consist in being *free from sin*." I really think it does. But whether it does or not, if we are not *free from sin*, we are not Christian believers. For to all these the Apostle declares. *Being made free from sin, ye are become servants of righteousness*, Rom. vi. 18.

"If we were perfect in piety, (St. John's word is, *perfect in love*,) Christ's priestly office would be superseded." No: we should still need his Spirit (and consequently his intercession) for the continuance of that love from moment to moment. Besides, we should still be encompassed with infirmities, and liable to mistakes, from which words and actions might follow, even though the heart were all love, which were not exactly right. Therefore in all these respects we should still have need of Christ's priestly office: and therefore as long as he remains in the body, the greatest saint may say,

Every moment, Lord, I need  
The merit of thy death.

The text cited from Exodus asserts nothing less than that *iniquity* "cleaves to all *our holy things* till death."

P. 84. "Sin remains, that the righteousness of faith may have its due honour." And will the righteousness of faith have its due honour no longer than sin remains in us? Then it must remain, not only on earth and in paradise, but in heaven also.—"And the sanctification of the Spirit its proper esteem." Would it not have more esteem, if it were a perfect work?

*Ibid.* "It (sin) will make us lowly in our own eyes." What, will pride make us lowly? Surely the utter destruction of pride would do this more effectually. "It will make us compassionate." Would not an entire renewal in the image of God make us much more so? "It will teach us to admire the riches of grace." Yea, but a fuller experience of it, by a thorough sanctification of spirit, soul, and body, will make us admire it more. "It will reconcile us to death." Indeed it will not: nor will any thing do this like perfect love.

P. 49. "It will endear the blood and intercession of Christ." Nay, these can never be so dear to any; as to those who experience their full virtue, who are *filled with the fulness of God*. Nor can any "feel their continual need" of Christ, or "rely on him" in the manner which these do.

Dialogue 14. P. 57. "The claims of the Law are all answered." If so, Count Zinzendorf is absolutely in the right: neither God nor man can claim my obedience to it. Is not this Antinomianism without a mask?

P. 59. "Your sins are expiated through the death of Christ, and a *righteousness given you*, by which you have free access to God." This is not scriptural language. I would simply say, *By him we have access to the Father*.

There are many other expressions in this Dialogue, to which I have the same objection, namely, 1. That they are unscriptural, 2. That they directly lead to Antinomianism.

The first Letter contains some very useful heads of self-examination. In the second,

P. 91. I read, "There is a *righteousness* which supplies all that the creature needs. To prove this *momentous* point, is the design of the following sheets."

I have seen such terrible effects of this unscriptural way of speaking, even on those *who had once clean escaped from the pollutions of the world*, that I cannot but earnestly wish, you would speak no otherwise than do the oracles of God. Certainly this *mode of expression* is not *momentous*. It is always *dangerous*, often *fatal*.

Letter III. P. 93. "*Where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: that as sin had reigned unto death, so might grace—the free love of God—reign through righteousness*, through our justification and sanctification, *unto eternal life*," Rom. v. 20, 21. This is the plain, natural meaning of the words. It does not appear, that one word is spoken here about *imputed righteousness*: neither in the passage cited in the next page, from the Common Prayer and the Article. In the Homily, likewise, that phrase is not found at all, and the main stress is laid on *Christ's shedding his blood*. Nor is the *phrase* (concerning the thing, there is no question) found in any part of the Homilies.

P. 101. "If the fathers are not explicit with regard to the imputation of *active* righteousness, they abound in passages which evince the *substitution* of Christ in our stead: passages which disclaim all dependence on any duties of our own, and fix our hopes wholly on the *merits* of our Saviour. When this is the case, I am very little solicitous about any *particular forms of expression*." O lay aside, then, those questionable, dangerous forms, and keep closely to the scriptural.

Letter IV P. 105. "The authority of our Church and of those eminent divines," does not touch those *particular forms of expression*: neither do any of the texts which you afterwards cite. As to the doctrine, we are agreed.

*Ibid.* “*The righteousness of God* signifies, the righteousness which God-Man wrought out.” No. It signifies God’s method of justifying sinners.

P. 107. “The victims figured the *expiation* by Christ’s death ; the clothing with skins, the *imputation* of his righteousness.” That does not appear. Did not the one rather figure our justification, the other our sanctification ?

P. 109. Almost every text quoted in this and the following Letter, in support of that *particular form of expression*, is distorted above measure from the plain, obvious meaning, which is pointed out by the context. I shall instance in a few, and just set down their true meaning, without any farther remarks.

To *show unto man his uprightness*. To convince him of God’s justice, in so punishing him.

P. 110. *He shall receive the blessing—pardon—from the Lord, and righteousness—holiness—from the God of his salvation*, the God who saveth him both from the guilt and from the power of sin.

P. 111. *I will make mention of thy righteousness only*.—Of thy *mercy*.—So the word frequently means in the Old Testament. So it unquestionably means in that text, *In (or by) thy righteousness shall they be exalted*.

P. 112. *Sion shall be redeemed with judgment—after severe punishment—and her converts with righteousness—with the tender mercy of God*, following that punishment.

P. 113. *In (or through) the Lord I have righteousness and strength, justification and sanctification. He hath clothed me with garments of salvation*,—saved me from the guilt and power of sin : both of which are again expressed by, *He hath covered me with the robe of righteousness*.

P. 114. *My righteousness—my mercy—shall not be abolished*.

P. 116. *To make reconciliation for iniquity—to atone for all our sins—and to bring in everlasting righteousness*, spotless holiness into our souls. And this righteousness is not *human*, but *divine*. It is the gift and work of God.

P. 117. *The Lord our righteousness*—The Author both of our justification and sanctification.

P. 127. “What righteousness shall give us peace at the last day, inherent or imputed ?” Both. Christ died for us and lives in us, *that we may have boldness in the day of judgment*.

Letter V. P. 131. *That have obtained like precious faith through the righteousness—the mercy—of our Lord. Seek ye the kingdom of God and his righteousness—the holiness which springs from God reigning in you*.

P. 132. *Therein is revealed the righteousness of God*—God’s method of justifying sinners.

P. 135. “*We establish the Law*, as we expect no salvation without a perfect conformity to it—namely, by Christ.” Is not this a mere quibble ? And a quibble, which after all the laboured evasions of Witsius and a thousand more, does totally *make void the Law* ? But not so does St. Paul teach. According to him, *without holiness, personal holiness, no man shall see the Lord*. None who is not *himself* conformed to the Law of God here, *shall see the Lord* in glory.

This is the grand, palpable objection to that whole scheme. It directly *makes void the law*. It makes thousands content to live and die *transgressors of the law*, because Christ fulfilled it *for them*. Therefore, though I believe he hath *lived* and *died* for me, yet I would speak very tenderly and sparingly of the former, (and *never*, separately from the latter,) even as sparingly as do the Scriptures, for fear of this dreadful consequence.

P. 138. "*The gift of righteousness* must signify a righteousness not their own" Yes, it signifies the righteousness or holiness which God gives to and works in them.

P. 139. "*The obedience of one* is Christ's actual performance of the whole law." So here his passion is fairly left out! Whereas his *becoming obedient unto death*, that is, dying for man, is certainly the chief, if not the whole, which is meant by that expression.

*Ibid.* "*That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us*—that is, by our Representative in our nature." Amazing! But this, you say, "agrees with the tenor of the apostle's arguing. For he is demonstrating we cannot be justified by our own conformity to the law." No: not here. He is not speaking here of the *cause* of our justification, but the *fruits* of it. Therefore that unnatural sense of his words does not at all "agree with the tenor of his arguing."

P. 140. I totally deny the criticism on *δικαιοσύνη* and *δικαιοσύνη*, and cannot conceive on what authority it is founded. O how deep an aversion to inward holiness does this scheme naturally create!

P. 142. "The righteousness they attained could not be any personal righteousness." Certainly it was. It was *implanted* as well as *imputed*.

P. 145. "*For instruction in righteousness*, in the righteousness of Christ." Was there ever such a comment before! The plain meaning is, *For training up in holiness* of heart and of life.

P. 146. *He shall convince the world of righteousness*—that I am not a sinner, but innocent and holy.

P. 148. "*That we might be made the righteousness of God in him*. Not intrinsically, but imputatively." Both the one and the other. God *through him*, first *accounts* and then *makes us righteous*. Accordingly,

P. 152. *The righteousness which is of God by faith*, is both *imputed* and *inherent*.

P. 153. "My faith fixes on them both, the *meritorious life* and *atoning death* of Christ." Here we clearly agree. Hold then to this, and never talk of the former without the latter. If you do, you cannot say, "Here we are exposed to no hazard." Yes, you are to an exceeding great one: even the hazard of living and dying without holiness. And then we are lost for ever.

The sixth Letter contains an admirable account of the earth and its atmosphere, and comprises abundance of sense in a narrow compass, and expressed in beautiful language.

P. 177. Gems have "a seat on the virtuous fair one's breast." I cannot reconcile this with St. Paul. He says, *Not with pearls*: by a parity of reason, Not with diamonds. But in all things, I perceive,

you are too favourable, both to *the desire of the flesh* and *the desire of the eye*. You are a gentle casuist as to every self-indulgence which a plentiful fortune can furnish.

P. 182. "Our Saviour's obedience"—O say with the good old Puritans, our Saviour's *death* or *merits*. We swarm with Antinomians on every side. Why are you at such pains to increase their number?

P. 194. *My mouth shall show forth thy righteousness and thy salvation—thy mercy which brings my salvation.*

The eighth Letter is an excellent description of the supreme greatness of Christ. I do not observe one sentence in it, which I cannot cheerfully subscribe to.

The ninth Letter, containing a description of the sea, with various inferences deduced therefrom, is likewise a masterpiece, for justness of sentiment, as well as beauty of language. But I doubt whether, "mere *shrimps*," p. 241, be not too low an expression: and whether you might not as well have said nothing of "cod, the standing repast of Lent:" or concerning "the exquisite relish of turbot, or the deliciousness of sturgeon." Are not such observations beneath the dignity of a minister of Christ? I have the same doubt concerning what is said, p. 264, of "delicately flavoured tea, finely scented coffee: the *friendly bowl*, the pyramid of Italian figs, and the pasticcia nut of Aleppo." Beside that, the mentioning these in such a manner is a strong encouragement of luxury and sensuality. And does the world need this? The *English* in particular? *Si non insaniunt satis sua sponte, instiga.*

Letter X. P. 271. "Those treasures which spring from the imputation of *Christ's righteousness*." Not a word of his *atonement* or *atoned blood*? Why do so many men love to speak of his righteousness rather than his atonement? I fear, because it affords a fairer excuse for their own unrighteousness. To cut off this, is it not better, to mention both together? At least never to name the former without the latter?

P. 285. "Faith is a persuasion that Christ has shed his blood for me, and fulfilled all righteousness *in my stead*." I can by no means subscribe to this definition. There are hundreds, yea, thousands of true believers, who never once thought one way or the other, of Christ's fulfilling all righteousness *in their stead*. I personally know many, who to this very hour have no idea of it; and yet have each of them a divine evidence and conviction, *Christ loved me, and gave himself for me*. This is St. Paul's account of faith: and it is sufficient. He that *thus* believes is justified.

P. 287. "It is a *sure* means of purifying the heart, and *never fails* to work by love." It *surely* purifies the heart—if we *abide in it*; but not if we *draw back to perdition*. It *never fails* to work by love, while it continues; but if itself fail, farewell both love and good works.

"Faith is the hand which receives all that is laid up in Christ." Consequently, if we *make shipwreck of the faith*, how much soever is laid up in Christ, from that hour we receive nothing.

Letter XI. P. 288. "Faith in the *imputed righteousness* of Christ,

is a fundamental principle in the Gospel." If so, what become of all those who think nothing about *imputed righteousness*? How many who are full of faith and love, if this be true, must perish everlastingly!

P. 297. "Thy hands must urge the way of the deadly weapon through the shivering flesh, till it be plunged in the throbbing heart." Are not these descriptions far too strong? May they not occasion unprofitable reasonings in many readers?

*Ne puerum coram populo Media trucidet.*

P. 298. "How can he *justify* it to the world?" Not at all. Can this then *justify his faith* to the world?

P. 304. "You take the certain way to obtain comfort, the righteousness of Jesus Christ." What, without the atonement? Strange fondness for an unscriptural, dangerous *mode of expression*!

P. 306. "So the merits of Christ are derived to all the faithful." Rather the fruits of the Spirit: which are likewise plainly typified by the oil in Zachariah's vision.

P. 310. "Has the Law any demand? It must go to him for satisfaction." Suppose, "Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." Then I am not obliged to love my neighbour. *Christ* has satisfied the demands of the law *for me*. Is not this the very quintessence of Antinomianism?

P. 311. "The righteousness wrought out by Jesus Christ, is wrought for *all his people*, to be the cause of their justification, and the purchase of their salvation. *The righteousness* is the cause, the purchase." So the *death* of Christ is not so much as named! "For *all his people*." But what becomes of *all other people*? They *must inevitably* perish for ever. The die was cast or ever they were in being. The doctrine to *pass them by*, has

Consign'd their unborn souls to hell;  
And damn'd them from their mother's womb!

I could sooner be a Turk, a Deist, yea, an Atheist, than I could believe this. It is less absurd to deny the very being of God, than to make him an Almighty Tyrant.

P. 318. "The whole world and all its seasons, are rich with our Creator's goodness. His tender mercies are over all his works." Are they over the bulk of mankind? Where is his goodness to the non-elect? How are his tender mercies over *them*? "His temporal blessings are given *to them*." But are they to them blessings at all? Are they not all curses? Does not God *know* they are? That they will only increase their damnation? Does not he *design* they should? And this you call *goodness*! This is *tender mercy*!

P. 321. "May we not discern pregnant proofs of goodness in each individual object?" No; on your scheme not a spark of it in this world or the next, to the far greater part of the work of his own hands!

P. 334. "Is God a generous Benefactor to the meanest animals, to the lowest reptiles? And will he deny my friend what is neces-

sary to his present comfort, and his final acceptance?" Yea, will he deny it to any soul that he has made? Would *you* deny it to any, if it were in *your* power?

But if you *lov'd* whom God abhorr'd  
The servant were above his Lord.

P. 337. The *wedding-garment* here means holiness.

P. 340. "This is his tender complaint, They *will not* come unto me!" Nay, that is not the case; they *cannot*. He himself has *decreed*, not to give them that grace without which their coming is impossible!

"The grand end which God proposes in all his favourable dispensations to fallen man, is to demonstrate the sovereignty of his grace." Not so: to impart happiness to his creatures, is his grand end herein. "Barely to demonstrate his sovereignty," is a principle of action fit for the great Turk, not the Most High God.

P. 341. "God hath pleasure in the prosperity of his servants. He is a boundless ocean of good." Nay, that ocean is far from boundless, if it wholly passes by nine tenths of mankind.

P. 342. "You cannot suppose God would enter into a fresh covenant with a rebel." I both suppose and know he did. "God made the new covenant with *Christ*, and charged him with the performances of the conditions." ~I deny both these assertions, which are the central point wherein Calvinism and Antinomianism meet. "*I have made a covenant with my chosen.*"—Namely, with *David my servant*. So God himself himself explains it.

P. 362. "He will wash you in the blood which atones, and invest you with the righteousness which justifies." Why should you thus continually put asunder what God has joined?

P. 440. "God himself at the last day pronounces them righteous, because they are interested in the obedience of the Redeemer." Rather, because they are washed in his blood, and renewed by his Spirit.

Upon the whole, I cannot but wish that the plan of these Dialogues had been executed in a different manner. Most of the grand truths of Christianity are herein both explained and proved with great strength and clearness. Why was any thing intermixed, which could prevent any serious Christian's recommending them to all mankind? Any thing which must necessarily render them exceptionable to so many thousands of the children of God? In practical writings I studiously abstain from the very shadow of controversy. Nay, even in controversy, I do not knowingly write one line, to which any but my opponent would object. For *opinions* shall I destroy the work of God? Then am I bigot indeed. Much more if I would not drop any *mode of expression*, rather than offend either Jew or Gentile, or the church of God.

I am, with great sincerity, dear Sir,

Your affectionate brother and servant,

J. W.

## LETTERS.

TO THE REV. MR. HERVEY.

*London, Nov. 29, 1758.*

DEAR SIR,

A WEEK or two ago, in my return from Norwich, I met with Mr. Pierce, of Bury, who informed me of a conversation which he had had a few days before. Mr. Cudworth, he said, then told him, "that he had prevailed on Mr. Hervey to write against me, who likewise in what he had written referred to the book which he (Mr. Cudworth) had lately published."

Every one is welcome to write what he pleases concerning me. But would it not be well for you to remember, that before I published any thing concerning you, I sent it to you in a private letter. That I waited for an answer for several months; but was not favoured with one line: so that when at length I published part of what I had sent you, I did it in the most inoffensive manner possible; in the latter end of a larger work, purely designed to *preserve* those in connexion with me from being tossed to and fro by various doctrines. What therefore I may fairly expect from my friend, is, to mete me with the same measure. To send to me first in a private manner, any complaint he has against me; to wait as many months as I did; and if I give you none, or no satisfactory answer, then to lay the matter before the world, if you judge it will be to the glory of God.

But whatever you do in this respect, one thing I request of you. Give no countenance to that insolent, scurrilous, virulent libel, which bears the name of William Cudworth. Indeed, how you can converse with a man of his spirit, I cannot comprehend. O leave not your old, well-tryed friends! The new is not comparable to them. I speak not this because I am *afraid* of what any one can say or do to me. But I am really concerned for you: an evil man has gained the ascendant over you, and has persuaded a dying man, who had shunned it all his life, to enter into controversy as he is stepping into eternity! Put off your armour, my brother! You and I have no moments to spare; let us employ them all in promoting peace and good-will among men. And may the peace of God keep your heart and mind in Christ Jesus! So prays,

Your affectionate brother and servant,  
J. WESLEY

## TO THE REV MR. WALKER.

## DIFFICULTIES WITH REGARD TO THE CHURCH.

*Bristol, September 24, 1755*

REV. AND DEAR SIR,

1. YOU greatly oblige me by speaking your thoughts so freely, and the more by giving me hopes of seeing your further sentiments on so nice and important an affair. I did not delay one day to follow your advice with regard to Mr. Adams, but sent him, by the very next post, a copy of those papers; although I am satisfied already as to the publishing them, and have laid aside that design: the reasons you urge against the expediency of it, being abundantly sufficient. But you seem a little to misapprehend what we speak of, hearing predestinarian preachers. We find by long experience, that this is "deadly poison," not *in itself*, but *to the members of our Societies*. This we know to be an unquestionable truth: and it was a truth necessary to be observed, nay, and strongly insisted on (though without any design of bearing hard on any particular person) when many were enlarging on "the poisonous doctrines" which they heard at many of their parish churches.

2. All that you say concerning the inexpediency of a separation from the Church, I readily allow: as likewise, that the first and main question must be, Is it lawful to separate? Accordingly, this was debated first, and that at large, in seven or eight long conversations. And it was then only, when we could not agree concerning this, that we proceeded to weigh the expediency of it.

3. As to the grounds on which those who plead for a separation from the Church proceed, some of them have weighed the point long and deeply. They have very particularly, and with earnest and continued prayer, considered the lawfulness of it. And they allow, "If it be lawful to abide therein, then it is not lawful to separate." But they aver, "It is not lawful to abide therein:" and that for the following reasons:

First, With regard to the Liturgy itself: though they allow it is, in the general, one of the most excellent human compositions that ever was, yet they think it is both absurd and sinful to declare such an assent and consent as is required, to a merely human composition. Again, though they do not object to the use of forms, yet they dare not confine themselves to them. And in this form (the book of Common Prayer) there are several things which they apprehend to be contrary to Scripture.

Secondly, As to the laws of the Church, if they include the Canons and Decretals, (both which are received as such in our courts,) they think "the latter are the very dregs of Popery, and that

many of the former, the Canons of 1603, are as grossly wicked as absurd." And over and above the objections which they have to several particular ones, they think, "1. That the spirit which they breathe is throughout truly Popish and antichristian. 2. That nothing can be more diabolical, than the *ipso facto* excommunication so often denounced therein. 3. That the whole method of executing these Canons, the process used in our spiritual courts, is too bad to be tolerated (not merely in a Christian; but even) in a Mahometan or Pagan nation."

Thirdly, With respect to the ministers, they doubt, "Whether there are not many of them whom God hath not sent, inasmuch as they neither live the gospel, nor teach it; neither indeed can, seeing they do not know it." They doubt the more, "because themselves disclaim that inward call to the ministry, which is at least as necessary as the outward." And they are not clear, "Whether it be lawful to attend the ministrations of those whom God has not sent to minister?"

Fourthly, the doctrines actually taught by these, and indeed by a great majority of the Church-ministers, they think "are not only wrong, but fundamentally so, and subversive of the whole Gospel." They therefore doubt, "Whether it be lawful to bid them God speed, or to have any fellowship with them."

I will freely acknowledge, that I cannot answer these arguments to my own satisfaction. So that my conclusion, which I cannot yet give up, 'That it is lawful to continue in the Church,' stands, I know not how, almost without any premises that are able to bear its weight.

My difficulty is very much increased by one of your observations, I know the original doctrines of the Church are sound: I know her worship is (in the main) pure and scriptural. But if "the essence of the Church of England, considered as such, consists in her Orders and Laws," (many of which I myself can say nothing for,) "and not in her Worship and Doctrines," those who separate from her, have a far stronger plea than I was ever sensible of.

4. At present I apprehend those, and those only, to separate from the Church, who either renounce her fundamental doctrines, or refuse to join in her public worship. As yet we have done neither: nor have we taken one step further than we were convinced was our bounden duty. It is from a full conviction of this, that we have, 1. Preached abroad; 2. Prayed extempore; 3. Formed Societies; and, 4. Permitted Preachers who were not episcopally ordained. And were we pushed on this side; were there no alternative allowed, we should judge it our bounden duty, rather wholly to separate from the Church, than to give up any one of these points. Therefore, if we cannot stop a separation without stopping lay-preachers, the case is clear we cannot stop it at all.

5. "But if we permit them, should we not do more? Should we not appoint them rather? Since the bare permission puts the matter quite out of our hands, and deprives us of all our influence?" In a

great measure, it does : therefore to appoint them is far more expedient, if it be lawful. But is it lawful for Presbyters, circumstanced as we are, to appoint other ministers ? This is the very point wherein we desire advice, being afraid of leaning to our own understanding.

It is undoubtedly needful (as you observe) to come to some "resolution in this point ;" and the sooner the better. I therefore rejoice to hear, that you think "this matter may be better, and more inoffensively ordered ;" and, that a method may be found, which, conducted with prudence and patience, will reduce the constitution of Methodism to due order, and render the Methodists, under God, more instrumental to the ends of practical religion."

This, Sir, is the very thing I want. I must therefore beg your sentiments on this head ; and that as particularly as your other engagements will allow. Wishing you more and more of the wisdom from above, I remain, Rev. Dear Sir,

Your obliged and affectionate  
Brother and Servant,  
JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO THE SAME.

*Kingswood, Sept. 3, 1756.*

REV. AND DEAR SIR,

I HAVE one point in view, To promote, so far as I am able, vital, practical religion ; and, by the grace of God, to beget, preserve, and increase, the life of God in the souls of men. On this single principle I have hitherto proceeded, and taken no step but in subserviency to it. With this view, when I found it to be absolutely necessary for the continuance of the work which God had begun in many souls (which their regular pastors generally used all possible means to destroy,) I permitted several of their brethren, whom I believed God had called thereto, and qualified for the work, to comfort, exhort, and instruct those who were athirst for God, or who walked in the light of his countenance. But as the persons so qualified were few, and those who wanted their assistance very many, it followed that most of these were obliged to travel continually from place to place ; and this occasioned several regulations from time to time, which were chiefly made in our Conferences.

So great a blessing has, from the beginning, attended the labours of these itinerants, that we have been more and more convinced every year, of the more than lawfulness of this proceeding. And the inconveniences, most of which we saw from the very first, have been both fewer and smaller than were expected. Rarely two in one year, out of the whole number of preachers, have either separated themselves, or been rejected by us. A great majority have all

along behaved as becometh the gospel of Christ, and I am clearly persuaded, still desire nothing more than to spend and be spent for their brethren.

But the question is, "How may these be settled on such a footing, as one would wish they might be after my death?" It is a weighty point, and has taken up many of my thoughts for several years: but I know nothing yet. The steps I am now to take are plain. I see broad light shining upon them; but the other part of the prospect I cannot see; clouds and darkness rest upon it.

Your *general* advice on this head, "To follow my own conscience, without any regard to consequences, or prudence, so called," is unquestionably right. And it is a rule which I have closely followed for many years, and hope to follow to my life's end. The first of your *particular* advices is, "To keep in full view the interests of Christ's Church in general, and of practical religion; not considering the Church of England, or the cause of Methodism, but as subordinate thereto." This advice I have punctually observed from the beginning, as well as at our late Conference. You advise, 2. "To keep in view also the unlawfulness of a separation from the Church of England." To this likewise I agree. It cannot be lawful to separate from it, unless it be unlawful to continue in it. You advise, 3. "Fully to declare myself on this head, and to suffer no dispute concerning it." The very same thing I wrote to my brother from Ireland. And we have declared ourselves without reserve. Nor was there any at the Conference otherwise minded. Those who would have aimed at dispute had left us before. 4. All our preachers as well as ourselves, purpose to continue in the Church of England. Nor did they ever before, so freely and explicitly declare themselves on this subject.

Your last advice is, "That as many of our preachers as are fit for it, be ordained; and that the others be fixed to certain societies, not as preachers, but as readers or inspectors."

You oblige me by speaking your sentiments so plainly: with the same plainness I will answer. So far as I know myself, I have no more concern for the reputation of Methodism, or my own, than for the reputation of Prester John. I have the same point in view as when I set out. The promoting as I am able, vital, practical religion: and in all our discipline, I still aim at the continuance of the work which God has already begun in so many souls. With this view, and this only, I permitted those whom I believed God had called thereto, to comfort, exhort, and instruct their brethren. And if this end can be better answered some other way, I shall subscribe to it without delay.

But is that which you propose a better way? This should be coolly and calmly considered.

If I mistake not, there are now in the county of Cornwall, about four and thirty of these little Societies, part of whom now experience the love of God; part are more or less earnestly seeking it. Four preachers, Peter Jaco, Thomas Johnson, W Crabb, and Wm.

Alwood, design for the ensuing year, partly to call other sinners to repentance, but chiefly to feed and guide those few feeble sheep: to forward them, according to the ability which God giveth, in vital, practical religion.

Now suppose we can effect, That Peter Jaco, and Thomas Johnson, be ordained and settled in the Curacies of Buryan and St. Just: and suppose William Crabb, and William Alwood, fix at Launceston and the Dock, as readers and exhorters: will this answer the end which I have in view, so well as travelling through the county?

It will not answer it so well, even with regard to those societies with which Peter Jaco and Thomas Johnson have settled. Be their talents ever so great, they will, ere long, grow dead themselves, and so will most of those that hear them. I know, were I myself to preach one whole year in one place, I should preach both myself and most of my congregation asleep. Nor can I ever believe, it was ever the will of our Lord, That any congregation should have one teacher only. We have found by long and constant experience, that a frequent change of teachers is best. This preacher has one talent, that another. No one whom I ever yet knew, has all the talents which are needful for beginning, continuing, and perfecting the work of grace in a whole congregation.

But suppose this would better answer the end with regard to those two societies, would it answer in those where W Alwood and W Crabb, were settled, as inspectors or readers? First, who shall feed them with the milk of the word? The ministers of their parishes? Alas, they cannot: they themselves neither know, nor live, nor teach the gospel. These readers? Can then either they, or I, or you, always find something to read to our congregation, which will be as exactly adapted to their wants, and as much blessed to them as our preaching? And here is another difficulty still: what authority have I to forbid their doing what I believe God has called them to do? I apprehend, indeed, that there ought, if possible, to be both an outward and inward call to this work: yet, if one of the two be supposed wanting, I had rather want the outward than the inward call. I rejoice that I am called to preach the gospel both by God and man. Yet I acknowledge, I had rather have the divine without the human, than the human without the divine call.

But waiving this, and supposing these four societies to be better provided for than they were before: what becomes of the other thirty? Will they prosper as well when they are left as sheep without a shepherd? The experiment has been tried again and again; and always with the same event: even the strong in faith grew weak and faint: many of the weak made shipwreck of the faith. The awakened fell asleep, sinners changed for a while, returned as a dog to the vomit. And so, by our lack of service, many of the souls perished for whom Christ died. Now had we willingly withdrawn our service from them, by voluntarily settling in one place, what account of this could we have given to the great Shepherd of all our souls.

I cannot, therefore, see how any of those four preachers, or any others in like circumstances, can ever, while they have health and strength, ordained or unordained, fix in one place, without a grievous wound to their own conscience, and damage to the *general* work of God. Yet I trust I am open to conviction; and your farther thoughts on this or any subject, will be always acceptable to,

Rev. and dear Sir,

Your very affectionate Brother  
and Fellow-Labourer,  
J. W.

---

### TO THE REV. MR. WALKER,

ON HIS ADVISING TO GIVE UP THE METHODIST SOCIETIES TO  
THEIR SEVERAL SOCIETIES.

*Helston, Sept. 16, 1757*

REV. AND DEAR SIR,

NOTHING can be more kind than the mentioning to me whatever you think is amiss in my conduct. And the more freedom you use in doing this, the more I am indebted to you. I am thoroughly persuaded, that you "wish me well;" and that it is this, together with a "concern for the common interests of Religion," which obliges you to speak with more plainness than otherwise you would. The same motives induce me to lay aside all reserve, and tell you the naked sentiments of my heart.

Two years since, eleven or twelve persons of Falmouth were members of our Society. Last year I was informed, that a young man there had begun to teach them new opinions, and that soon after, offence and prejudice crept in, and increased till they were all torn asunder. What they have done since, I know not: for they have no connection with us. I do "exert myself" so far, as to separate from us, those that separate from the Church. But in a thousand other instances I feel the want of more resolution and firmness of spirit. Yet sometimes that may appear irresolution which is not so. I exercise as little authority as possible, because I am afraid of people's depending upon me too much, and paying me more reverence than they ought.

But I proceed to the substance of your letter. You say, I. "If you still hold the essence of justifying faith to be an Assurance, why did you encourage J. H. to believe his state good?"

Assurance is a word I do not use, because it is not scriptural. But I hold, that a divine evidence or conviction, that *Christ loved me*, and gave himself for *me*, is essential to, if not the very essence of justifying faith. J. H. told me he had more than this; even a clear conviction that his sins were forgiven: although he said, that conviction was not so clear now, as it had been in times past.

2. "If you believed Mr. V to be a gracious person, and a gospel minister, why did you not in justice to your people, leave them to him?"

J. H. assured me, That Mr. V. also had a clear conviction of his being reconciled to God. If so, I could not deny his being a gracious person. And I heard him preach the *true*, though not the whole Gospel. But had it been the whole, there are several reasons still, why I did not give up the people to him. 1. No one mentioned or intimated any such thing, nor did it once enter into my thoughts. But if it had, 2. I do not know, that every one who preaches the truth has wisdom and experience to guide and govern a flock: I do not know that Mr. V in particular has. He may, or he may not. 3. I do not know, whether he would or could give that flock, all the advantages for holiness which they now enjoy: and to leave them to him, before I was assured of this, would be neither justice nor mercy. 4. Unless they were also assured of this, they could not, in conscience, give up themselves to him. And I have neither right nor power to dispose of them contrary to their conscience.

"But they are his already by legal establishment." If they receive the Sacrament from him thrice a year, and attend his ministrations on the Lord's Day, I see no more which the law requires. But, to go a little deeper into this matter of *legal establishment*. Does Mr. Canon or you think, that the King and Parliament have a right to prescribe to me, what pastor I shall use? If they prescribe one which I know God never sent, am I obliged to receive him? If he be sent of God, can I receive him with a clear conscience till I know he is? And even when I do, if I believe my former pastor is more profitable to my soul, can I leave him without sin? Or has any man living a right to require this of me?

I "extend this to every gospel minister in England." Before I could with a clear conscience, leave the Methodist Society even to such an one, all these considerations must come in.

And with regard to the people: far from thinking, that "the withdrawing our preachers" from such a society without their consent, would prevent a separation from the Church, I think it would be the direct way to cause it. While we are with them, our advice has weight, and keeps them to the Church. But were we totally to withdraw, it would be of little or no weight. Nay, perhaps resentment of our unkindness (as it would appear to them) would prompt them to act in flat opposition to it. "And will it not be the same at your death?" I believe not: for I believe there will be no resentment in this case. And the last advice of a dying friend, is not likely to be so soon forgotten.

3. But "was there no inconsistency in your visiting Mr. V as a minister of the Gospel, when you do not give up your people to him?" My visiting him as a gospel minister, did not imply any obligation so to do.

4. "If that was not the design of the visit, you should not have visited him at all." Does that follow, I visited him as a brother and a fellow-labourer, because he desired it.

5. "Does not this conduct on the whole, savour of a party spirit? And show a desire to please the Methodists, as Methodists?"

I am not conscious of any such spirit, or of any desire but that of pleasing all men, for their good, to edification. And I have as great a desire thus to please you, as any Methodist under heaven.

You add one thing more, which is of deep importance, and deserves a particular consideration. "You spake to Mr. Vowler of your being as one man. Nothing is so desirable. But really before it can be effected, something must be done on your part, more than paying us visits, which, as far as I can see, can serve no other purpose in the present circumstances, than to bring us under needless difficulties."

I did indeed speak to Mr V. of our being as *one man*. And not to him only, but to several others; for it lay much upon my heart. Accordingly I proposed that question to all who met at our late conference, "What can be done, in order to a close union with the clergy, who preach the truth?" We all agreed, that nothing could be more desirable. I, in particular, have long desired it; not from any view to my own ease, or honour, or temporal convenience in any kind: but because I was deeply convinced, it might be a blessing to my own soul, and a means of increasing the general work of God.

But you say, "Really before it can be effected, something must be done on your part." Tell me what, and I will do it without delay; however contrary it may be to my ease, or natural inclination: provided only, that it consists with my keeping a conscience void of offence toward God and toward man. It would not consist with this to give up the flock under my care, to any other minister, till I and they were convinced, they would have the same advantages for holiness under him which they now enjoy. But "paying us visits, can serve no other purpose, than to bring us under needless difficulties." I will speak very freely on this head. Can our conversing together serve no other purpose? You seem then not to have the least concern of *your own* wanting any such thing! But whether you do or not, I feel I do: I am not *in memet totus teres atque totundus*. I want more light, more strength, for my personal walking with God. And I know not, but He may give it me through you. And whether you do or not, I want more light and strength, for guiding the flock committed to my charge. May not the Lord send this also by whom he will send? And by you as probably as by any other. It is not improbable that he may by you give me clearer light, either as to doctrine or discipline. And even hereby, how much comfort and profit might redound to thousands of those for whom Christ hath died? Which, I apprehend, would abundantly compensate any *difficulties* that might arise from such conversation.

But what difficulties are those? All that are the necessary consequence of sharing our reproach. And what reproach is it which we bear? Is it the reproach of Christ, or not? It arose first, while my brother and I were at Oxford, from our endeavouring to be real

Christians. It was increased abundantly when we began to preach repentance and remission of sins: and insisting, that we are justified by faith. For this cause were we excluded from preaching in the churches: (I say, for *this*: as yet there was no field-preaching.) And this exclusion occasioned our preaching elsewhere, with the other irregularities that followed. Therefore all the reproach consequent thereon, is no other than the reproach of Christ.

And what are we worse for this? It is not displeasing to flesh and blood: but is it any hinderance to the work of God? Did he work more by us when we were honourable men? By no means. God never used us to any purpose, till we were a proverb of reproach. Nor have we now a jot more of dishonour, of evil report, than we know is necessary both for us and for the people, to balance that honour and good report, which otherwise could not be borne.

You need not, therefore, to be so much afraid of, or so careful to avoid this. It is a precious balm: it will not break your head, neither lessen your usefulness. And indeed, you cannot avoid it, any otherwise than by departing from the work. You do not avoid it by standing aloof from us; what you call *Christian*, I call *worldly* prudence.

I speak as a fool: bear with me. I am clearly satisfied, that you have far more faith, more love, and more of the mind that was in Christ than I have. But have you more gifts for the work of God? Or more fruit of your labour? Has God owned you more? I would he had, a thousand fold! I pray God, that he may! Have you at present more experience of the wisdom of the world and the devices of Satan? Or of the manner and method wherein it pleases God to counter-work them in this period of his Providence? Are you sure, God would add nothing to you by me, (besides what He might add to me by you?) Perhaps when the time is slipped out of your hands, when I am no more seen, you may wish you had not rejected the assistance of, even

Your affectionate brother,  
J. W.

---

TO THE REV MR. WALKER.

October, 1758.

REV. AND DEAR SIR,

I RETURN you many thanks for the welcome letter from Mr. Adam, as well as for your own. I have answered his, (which is written in a truly Christian spirit,) and now proceed to consider yours. After having observed, That two of our preachers are gone from us, and none of these remaining (to my knowledge,) have at present, any *desire* or *design* of separating from the Church, yet I observe,

1. Those ministers who truly feared God near a hundred years ago, had undoubtedly much the same objections to the Liturgy, which some (who never read their works,) have now. And I myself so far allow the force of several of those objections, that I should not dare to declare my assent and consent to that book in the terms prescribed. Indeed they are so strong, that I think they cannot safely be used, with regard to any book but the Bible. Neither dare I confine myself wholly to forms of prayer, not even in the Church. I use indeed all the forms: but I frequently add extemporary prayer, either before or after sermon.

2. In behalf of many of the Canons, I can say little; of the Spiritual courts, nothing at all. I dare not, therefore, allow the authority of the former, or the jurisdiction of the latter. But I am not yet required to do it. So that difficulty does not lie in my way yet.

3. "Whether it be lawful to attend the ministrations of one whom I know God has not sent to minister, seeing he expressly disclaims that call of God, which is at least as necessary as the call of man:" is really a question which (as I said before) I cannot answer to my own satisfaction. Neither can I tell,

4. How far that command of our Lord, *Beware of false prophets*, obliges me to refrain from hearing such as put darkness for light and light for darkness. I am still in doubt, whether quietly attending them while they do this, be not, in effect, the *bidding them God speed*: the strengthening their hands in evil, and encouraging others to hear them, till they fall into hell together.

I am still desirous of knowing, in what particular manner you think the present work of God could be carried on, without the assistance of Lay-preachers. This I will fairly weigh, and give you my thoughts upon it.

Some little things occurred to me in reading over your Sermons, which I had a desire to communicate to you. In the great points I cannot observe any difference between us. We both contend for the inward kingdom, the mind that was in Christ Jesus, the image of God to be new stamped upon the heart. I am sometimes much discouraged at finding so little of this in myself. Assist both with your advice and prayers,

Dear Sir,  
Your very affectionate Brother and Servant,  
JOHN WESLEY.

## FROM MR. WESLEY TO HIS FATHER.

Lincoln, Dec. 19, 1729.

DEAR SIR,

AS I was looking over, the other day, Mr. Ditton's Discourse on the Resurrection of Christ, I found toward the end of it, a sort of Essay on the Origin of Evil. I fancied the shortness of it, if nothing else, would make you willing to read it; though very probably you will not find much in it which has not occurred to your thoughts before.

Page 424. "Since the Supreme Being must needs be infinitely and essentially good, as well as wise and powerful, it has been esteemed no little difficulty, to show how evil came into the world. *Unde Malum*, has been a mighty question."

There were some, who, in order to solve this, supposed two supreme, governing principles; the one, a good, the other, an evil one: which latter was independent on, and of equal power with the former, and the author of all that was irregular or bad in the universe. This monstrous scheme the Manichees fell into and much improved; but were sufficiently confuted by St. Austin, who had reason to be particularly acquainted with their tenets.

But the plain truth is, the hypothesis requires no more to the confutation of it, than the bare proposing it. Two supreme, independent principles, is next door to a contradiction in terms. It is the very same thing, in result and consequence, as saying two absolute Infinites: and he that says two, had as good say ten or fifty, or any other number whatever. Nay, if there can be two essentially, distinct, absolute Infinites, there may be an infinity of such absolute Infinites: that is as much as to say, none of them all would be an absolute Infinite, or that none of them all would be properly and really infinite. ('For real infinity is strict and absolute infinity, and only that.')

"From the nature of liberty and free-will, we may deduce a very possible and satisfactory (perhaps the only possible just) account of the origin of evil.

"There are, and necessarily must be, some original, intrinsic agreements and disagreements, fitnesses and unfitnesses, of certain things and circumstances, to and with each other; which are antecedent to all positive institutions, founded on the very nature of those things and circumstances, considered in themselves, and in their relation to each other."

"As these all fall within the comprehension of an infinite, discerning mind, who is likewise infinite, essential rectitude and reason; so those on the one side must necessarily (to speak after the manner of men) be chosen or approved of by him, as the other disliked and

disapproved: and this on the score of the eternal, intrinsic agreeableness and disagreeableness of them."

"Farther, it no way derogated from any one perfection of an infinite Being, to endow other beings, which he made, with such a power as we call liberty; that is, to furnish them with such capacities, dispositions, and principles of action, that it should be possible for them either to observe or to deviate from those eternal rules and measures of fitness, and agreeableness, with respect to certain things and circumstances, which were so conformable to the infinite rectitude of his own will, and which infinite reason must necessarily discover. Now evil is a deviation from those measures of eternal, unerring Order and Reason: not to choose what is worthy to be chosen, and is accordingly chosen by such a will as the divine. And to bring this about, no more is necessary, than the exerting certain acts of that power we call free-will: by which power we are enabled to choose or refuse, and to determine ourselves to action accordingly. Therefore, without having recourse to any ill principle, we may fairly account for the origin of evil, from the possibility of a various use of our liberty; even as that capacity or possibility itself is ultimately founded on the defectibility and finiteness of a created nature."

I am, dear Sir, your dutiful and affectionate Son,  
JOHN WESLEY.

---

A little larger answer to his famous Question, we have in a *Treatise DE ORIGINE MALI*, written by Dr. King, Archbishop of Dublin, of which I sent my Father the following Extract.

*January, 1731.*

DEAR SIR,

THOUGH some of the Postulata, upon which Archbishop King builds his hypothesis of the Origin of Evil, be such as very few will admit of, yet since the superstructure is regular and well contrived, I thought you would not be unwilling to see the scheme of that celebrated work. He divides it into five chapters.

The sum of the first chapter is this: the first notions we have of outward things, are our conceptions of Motion, Matter, and Space. Concerning each of these we soon observe, that it does not exist of itself, and consequently, that there must be some First Cause, to which all of them owe their existence. Although we have no faculty for the direct perception of this First Cause, and so can know very little more of him than a blind man of light, yet thus much we know of him by the faculties we have, that He is one, infinite in nature and power, free, intelligent, and omniscient; that consequently he proposes to himself an end in every one of his actions, and that the end of his creating the world was the exercise of his power, and wisdom,

and goodness: which he therefore made as perfect as it could be made, by infinite goodness, and power, and wisdom.

Chap. II. But if so, how came evil into the world? If the world was made by such an agent, with such an intention, how is it; that either imperfection, or natural or moral evils have a place in it? Is not this difficulty best solved by the Manichæan supposition, that there is an evil as well as a good principle? By no means: for it is just as repugnant to Infinite Goodness to create what it foresaw would be spoiled by another, as to create what would be spoiled by the constitution of its nature: their supposition therefore leaves the difficulty as it found it. But if it could be proved, that to permit evils in the world is consistent with, nay, necessarily results from Infinite Goodness, then the difficulty would vanish; and to prove this is the design of the following Treatise.

Chap. III. All created beings, as such, are necessarily imperfect; nay, infinitely distant from supreme perfection. Nor can they all be equally perfect, since some must be only parts of others. As to their properties too, some must be perfecter than others: for suppose any number of the most perfect beings created; infinite goodness would prompt the Creator to add less perfect beings to those, if their existence neither lessened the number nor conveniences of the more perfect. The existence of Matter, for instance, neither lessens the number nor the conveniences of pure Spirits. Therefore, the addition of material beings to spiritual, was not contrary to, but resulted from, infinite goodness.

Chap. IV. As the evils of imperfection necessarily spring from this, that the imperfect things were made out of nothing, so natural evils necessarily spring, from their being made out of matter. For matter is totally useless, without motion, or even without such a motion as will divide it into parts; but this cannot be done without a contrariety of motions; and from this necessarily flows generation and corruption.

The material part of us being thus liable to corruption, pain is necessary to make us watchful against it, and to warn us of what tends toward it, as is the fear of death likewise, which is of use in many places that pain does not reach. From these all the passions necessarily spring; nor can these be extinguished while those remain. But if pain, and the fear of death, were extinguished, no animal could long subsist. Since, therefore, these evils are necessarily joined with more than equivalent goods; the permitting these is not repugnant to, but flows from, infinite goodness. The same observation holds as to hunger, thirst, childhood, age, diseases, wild beasts, and poisons. They are all, therefore, permitted because each of them is necessarily connected with such a good as outweighs the evil.

Chap. V. Touching moral evils (by which I mean, “Inconveniences arising from the choice of the sufferer,”) I purpose to show,  
 1. What is the nature of Choice or Election. 2. That our happiness consists in the elections or choices we make. 3. What elec-

tions are improper to be made. 4. How we come to make such elections ; and, 5. How our making them is consistent with the divine power and goodness.

1. By liberty I mean, an active, self-determining power, which does not choose things because they are pleasing, but is pleased with them because it chooses them.

That God is endued with such a power, I conclude, 1. Because nothing is good or evil, pleasing or displeasing to him, before he chooses it. 2. Because his will or choice is the cause of goodness in all created things. 3. Because if God had not been endued with such a principle, he would never have created any thing.

But it is to be observed farther, that God sees and chooses whatever is connected with what he chooses, in the same instant ; and that he likewise chooses whatever is convenient for his creatures in the same moment wherein he chooses to create them.

That man partakes of this principle I conclude, 1. Because experience shows it. 2. Because we observe in ourselves the signs and properties of such a power. We observe we can counteract our appetites, senses, and even our reason, if we so choose ; which we can no otherwise account for, than by admitting such a power in ourselves.

3. The more of this power any being possesses, the less subject he is to the impulses of external agents ; and the more commodious is his condition. Happiness rises from a due use of our faculties : if therefore this be the noblest of all our faculties, then our chief happiness lies in the due use of this ; that is, in our elections. And farther, election is the cause why things please us : he, therefore, who has an uncontrolled power of electing, may please himself always : and if things fall out contrary to what he chooses, he may change his choice and suit it to them, and so still be happy. Indeed in this life his natural appetites will sometimes disturb his elections, and so prevent his perfect happiness : yet is it a fair step towards it, that he has a power that can at all times find pleasure in itself, however outward things vary.

4. True it is, that this power sometimes gives pain, namely, when it falls short of what it chooses : which may come to pass, if we choose either things impossible to be had, or inconsistent with each other, or such as are out of our power, (perhaps because others chose them before us ; ) or, lastly, such as unnecessarily lead us into natural evils.

5. And into these foolish choices we may be betrayed either by ignorance, negligence, by indulging the exercise of liberty too far, by obstinacy or habit ; or, lastly, by the importunity of our natural appetites. Hence it appears how cautious we ought to be in choosing : for though we may alter our choice, yet to make that alteration is painful ; the more painful, the longer we have persisted in it.

6. There are three ways by which God might have hindered his creatures from thus abusing their liberty. First, By not creating any being free ; but had this method been taken, then, 1. The whole

universe would have been a mere machine. 2. That would have been wanting which is most pleasing to God of any thing in the universe, namely, the free service of his reasonable creatures. 3. His reasonable creatures would have been in a worse state than they are now; for only free agents can be perfectly happy; as, without a possibility of doing wrong, there can be no freedom.

The second way by which God might prevent the abuse of liberty, is, by overruling this power, and constraining us to choose right. But this would be to do and undo, to contradict himself, to take away what he had given.

The third way by which God might have hindered his creatures from making an ill use of liberty, is, by placing them where they should have had no temptation to abuse it. But this too would have been the same in effect, as to have given them no liberty at all.

I am, dear Sir, your affectionate and dutiful Son,

JOHN WESLEY

### TO DR. ROBERTSON.

*Bristol, Sept. 24, 1753.*

DEAR SIR,

I HAVE lately had the pleasure of reading Mr. Ramsay's Principles of Religion, with the notes you have annexed to them. Doubtless he was a person of a bright and strong understanding, but, I think, not of a very clear apprehension. Perhaps it might be owing to this, that not distinctly perceiving the strength of some of the objections to his hypothesis; he is very peremptory in his assertions, and apt to treat his opponent with an air of contempt and disdain. This seems to have been a blemish even in his moral character. I am afraid the using guile is another. For surely it is a mere artifice to impute to the *schoolmen* the rise of almost every opinion which he censures. Seeing he must have known that most, if not all of those opinions, preceded the *schoolmen* several hundreds of years.

The Treatise itself gave me a stronger conviction than ever I had before, both of the fallaciousness and unsatisfactoriness of the mathematical method of reasoning on religious subjects. Extremely fallacious it is; for if we slip but in one line, a whole train of errors may follow: and utterly unsatisfactorily, at least to me, because I can never be sufficiently assured that this is not the case.

The two first books, although, doubtless they are a fine chain of reasoning, yet gave me the less satisfaction, because I am clearly of Mr. H——'s judgment, that all this is beginning at the wrong end: that we can have no idea of God, nor any sufficient proof of his very being, but from the creatures: and that the meanest plant is a far stronger proof hereof, than all Dr. Clark's or the Chevalier's demonstrations.

Among the latter, I was surprised to find a demonstration of the



Why not, if God created the world gradually, as we are assured he did?

In the fifth book, p. 334, I read a more extraordinary assertion than any of the preceding. "The infusion of such supernatural habits, by one instantaneous act is impossible. We *cannot* be confirmed in immutable habits of good, but by a long and continued repetition of free acts." I dare not say so. I am persuaded God can, this moment, confirm me immutably good.

"Such is the nature of finite spirits, that after a certain degree of good habits contracted, they become unpervertible and immutable in the love of order," p. 335. If so, "After a certain degree of evil habits contracted, must they not become unconvertible and immutable in the hatred of order?" And if Omnipotence *cannot* prevent the one, neither can it prevent the other.

P. 343. "No creature can suffer, but what has merited punishment." This is not true; for the man Christ Jesus was a creature. But he suffered; yet he had not merited punishment: unless our sins were imputed to him. But if so, Adam's sin might be imputed to us; and on that account even an infant may suffer.

Now if these things are so, if a creature may suffer for the sin of another imputed to him, then the whole frame of reasoning for the pre-existence of souls, raised from the contrary supposition, falls to the ground.

P. 347. "There are but three opinions concerning the transmission of original sin." i. e. There are but three ways of accounting, "*How* it is transmitted." I care not, if there were none. The fact I know, both by Scripture and by experience. I know it is transmitted: but *how* it is transmitted, I neither know nor desire to know.

P. 353. "By this insensibility and spiritual lethargy in which all souls remain, e'er they awake into mortal bodies; the habits of evil in some are totally extinguished."

Then it seems there is a third possible way of curing moral evil. And why may not all souls be cured this way, without any pain or suffering at all?

Ibid. "If any impurity remains in them, it is destroyed in a middle state after death."

I read nothing of either of these purgations in the Bible. But it appears to me, from the whole tenor of his writings, that the Cavalier's notions are about one quarter Scriptural; one quarter Popish, and two quarters Mystic.

P. 360. "God dissipated the chaos introduced into the solar system by the fall of angels." Does sacred writ affirm this? Where is it written? Except in Jacob Behmen.

P. 366. "Physical evil is the only means of curing moral evil." This is absolutely contrary both to Scripture, experience, and his own words, p. 353. And, "This great principle," as he terms it, is one of those fundamental mistakes which runs through the whole Mystic divinity.

Almost all that is asserted in the following pages, may likewise be confuted by simply denying it.

P. 373. "Hence we see the necessity of sufferings and expiatory pains, in order to purify lapsed beings.—The intrinsic efficacy of physical to cure moral evil."

"Expiatory pains," is pure, unmixed Popery: but they can have no place in the Mystic scheme. This only asserts, "The intrinsic efficacy of physical to cure moral evil, and the absolute necessity of sufferings, to purify lapsed beings." Neither of which I can find in the Bible: though I really believe there is as much of this efficacy in sufferings, as in spiritual lethargy.

P. 374. "If beasts have any souls, they are either material, or immaterial to be annihilated after death; or degraded intelligences." No: they may be immaterial, and yet not to be annihilated.

If you ask, But how are they to subsist after death? I answer, He that made them knows.

The sixth book, I fear, is more dangerously wrong than any of the preceding, as it effectually undermines the whole scriptural account of God's reconciling the world unto himself, and turns the whole redemption of man by the blood of Christ into a mere metaphor. I doubt whether Jacob Behmen does not do the same. I am sure he does, if Mr. Law understands him right.

I have not time to specify all the exceptionable passages; if I did, I must transcribe part of almost every page.

P. 393. "The Divinity is unsusceptible of anger." I take this to be the *πρωτον ψευδος* of all the Mystics. But I demand the proof. I take anger to have the same relation to justice, as love has to mercy.

But if we grant them this, then they will prove their point. For if God was never angry, his anger could never be appeased: and then we may safely adopt the very words of Socinus, *Tota redemptionis nostræ per Christum Metaphora*: seeing Christ died, only to "show to all the celestial quires, God's infinite aversion to disorder."

P. 394. "He suffered, because of the sin of men, infinite agonies, as a tender father suffers to see the vices of his children. He felt all that lapsed *angels* and men should have suffered to all eternity. Without this sacrifice, celestial spirits could never have known the horrible deformity of vice. In *this sense*, he substituted himself as a victim to take away the sins of the world: not to appease vindictive justice, but to show God's infinite love of justice."

This is as broad Socinianism as can be imagined. Nay, it is more. It is not only denying the satisfaction of Christ, but supposing that he died for devils as much, and for the angels in heaven much more than he did for man.

Indeed he calls him an expiatory sacrifice, a propitiatory victim: but remember, it was only *in this sense*. For you are told again, p. 399, "See the deplorable ignorance of those who represent the expiatory sacrifice of Christ, as destined to appease vindictive justice, and avert divine vengeance. It is by such frivolous and blasphemous notions that the schoolmen have exposed this divine mystery."

“These frivolous and blasphemous notions,” do I receive, as the precious truths of God. And so deplorable is my ignorance, that I verily believe all who deny them, deny the Lord that bought them.

P. 400. “The immediate, essential, necessary means of reuniting men to God, are prayer, mortification, and self-denial.”

No: the immediate, essential, necessary mean of reuniting me to God, is living faith. And that alone, without this, I cannot be reunited to God. With this, I cannot but be reunited.

Prayer, mortification, and self-denial, are the fruits of faith, and the grand means of continuing and increasing it.

But I object to the account Mr. R. (and all the Mystics) give of those. It is far too lax and general. And hence those who receive all he says, will live just as they did before, in all the ease, pleasure, and state, they can afford.

P. 403. “Prayer, mortification, and self-denial, produce, necessarily in the soul, faith, hope, and charity.”

On the contrary, faith must necessarily precede both prayer, mortification, and self-denial, if we mean thereby, “Adoring God in spirit and in truth, a continual death to all that is visible, and a constant, universal suppression and sacrifice of all the motions of false love.” And the Chevalier talks of all these like a mere parrot, if he did not know and feel in his inmost soul, that it is absolutely false that any of these should subsist in our heart, till we truly believe in the Son of God.

“True faith is a divine light in the soul that discovers the laws of eternal order, the all of God, and the nothingness of the creatures.” It does; but it discovers first of all, that Christ loved me and gave himself for me, and washes me from my sins in his own blood.

I am, dear sir, your affectionate brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

TO MR. ———.

DEAR SIR,

July 1, 1749.

CONSIDERING the variety of business which must lie upon you, I am not willing to trouble you too often. Yet cannot any longer delay to return thanks, for your favour of May 21st. How happy is it that there is a higher Wisdom than our own, to guide us through the mazes of life! That we have an unction from the Holy One, to teach us of all things where human teaching fails! And it certainly must fail in a thousand instances. General rules cannot reach all particular cases: in some of which there is such a complication of circumstances, that God alone can show what steps we should take. There is one circumstance in your case, which claims your peculiar attention, and makes it necessary often to check that

boldness and simplicity, which otherwise would be both your duty and pleasure. But, Oh! how easily may you comply too far, and hurt yourself, in hopes of gaining another! Nay, perhaps hurt the other too! by that very compliance which was designed to help? And who is able to lay the line? To determine how far you should comply, and where fix your foot? May the God of wisdom direct you in all your steps! And I conceive he will rather do this, by giving you light directly from himself, in meditation and private prayer, than by the advice of others, who can hardly be impartial, in so tender a point. Is it not then advisable, that you should much commune with God and your own heart? You may then lay aside all the trappings that naturally tend to hide you from yourself, and appear naked as a poor, sinful worm, before the great God, the Creator of heaven and earth! The great God, who is your Father and your Friend! Who hath prepared for you a kingdom! Who calls you to forget the little things of earth, and to sit down with him on his throne! O may you dwell on these things, till they possess your whole soul, and cause you to *love* the honour which cometh of God only.

I am, dear sir, Your obedient servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

TO MR. ————. ON PRUDENCE.

DEAR SIR,

May 16, 1759.

SINCE I received your favour, I have had many thoughts on worldly and Christian prudence. What is the nature of each? How do they differ? How may we distinguish one from the other?

It seems *worldly prudence*, either pursues *worldly ends*, riches, honour, ease, or pleasure; or pursues Christian ends, on *worldly maxims*, or by *worldly means*. The grand maxims which obtain in the world are, the more power, the more money, the more learning, and the more reputation a man has, the more good he will do. And whenever a Christian, pursuing the noblest ends, forms his behaviour by these maxims, he will infallibly (though perhaps by insensible degrees) decline into worldly prudence. He will use more or less of conformity to the world, if not in sin, yet in doing some things that are good in themselves, yet (all things considered) are not good to him; and perhaps at length using guile, or disguise, simulation or dissimulation, either seeming to be what he is not, or not seeming to be what he is. By any of these marks may worldly prudence be discerned from the wisdom which is from above.

This, *Christian prudence* pursues *Christian maxims* and by *Christian means*. The ends it pursues are holiness in every kind, and in the highest degree; and usefulness in every kind and degree. And herein it proceeds on the following maxims, The help that is

done upon earth, God doth it himself: it is he that worketh all in all. And that, not by human power: generally he uses weak things to confound the strong: not by men of wealth; most of his choicest instruments may say, "Silver and gold have I none:" not by learned or "wise men after the flesh:" no, the foolish things hath God chosen: not by men of reputation; but by the men that were as the filth and off-scouring of the world: all which is for this plain reason, "That no flesh may glory in his sight."

Christian prudence pursues these ends upon these principles, by only Christian means. A truly prudent Christian, while, in things purely indifferent, he becomes all things to all men, yet wherever duty is concerned, regards the example of all mankind no more than a grain of sand. His word is then,

—————*Non me qui cetera vincit*  
*Impetus, at rapido contrarius evehor orbi.*

He will not, to gain the favour, or shun the hate of all, omit the least point of duty. He cannot prevail upon himself, on any account or pretence, to use either simulation, or dissimulation. There is no guile in his mouth: no evasion or ambiguity. Having one desire, one design, to glorify God with his body and with his spirit; having only one fear,

Lest a motion, or a word,  
Or a thought arise, to grieve his Lord.

Having one rule, the word of God; one guide, even his Spirit, he goes on in child-like simplicity. Continually seeing him that is invisible, he walks in open day. Looking unto Jesus, and deriving strength from him, he goes on in his steps, in the work of faith, the labour of love, the patience of hope, till he is called up, to be ever with the Lord.

Oh, that this were in all points your own character! Surely you desire it above all things. But how shall you attain? Difficulties and hinderances surround you on every side! Can you bear with my plainness? I believe you can. Therefore I will speak without any reserve. I fear, you have scarcely one friend who has not more or less of the prudence which is not from above. And I doubt you have (in or near your own rank) hardly one example of true Christian prudence! Yet I am persuaded, your own heart advises you right, or rather God in your heart. Oh, that you may hearken to his voice alone, and let all creatures keep silence before him! Why should they encumber you with Saul's armour? If you essay to go forth thus, it will be in vain. You have no need of this, neither of his sword or spear: for you trust in the Lord of Hosts. Oh, go forth in his strength; and with the stones of the brook, you shall overthrow all your enemies!

I am, dear sir,

Your obedient seryant for Christ's sake,  
JOHN WESLEY

## LETTER TO MISS L——. ON FEMALE STUDY.

*A Female Course of Study ; only intended for those who have a good understanding and much leisure.*

1. YOU want to know God, in order to enjoy him in time and in eternity.

2. All that you want to know of him is contained in one book, the Bible. Therefore, your one point is, to understand this. And all you learn is to be referred to this, as either directly or, remotely conducive to it.

3. Might it not be well then to spend, at least two hours every day in reading and meditating upon the Bible ? Reading every morning, (if not every evening too,) a portion of the Old and then of the New Testament ? If you would save yourself the trouble of thinking, add Mr. Henry's Comment : if you would only be assisted in thinking, add the " Explanatory Notes."

4. But I find a difficulty already. Can you help me over it ? Have you more candour, than almost any one in the world ? Will you not blame me for recommending, as they come in the way, Tracts published by myself ? I think you will not. So I will set down these (in their place) as freely as other books.

5. Your studying hours (if your constitution will bear it) might be five or six hours a day. Perhaps from nine to twelve in the morning, and from two to four or five in the afternoon. And whenever you begin to be tired with books that require a strong and deep attention, relax your mind by interposing History or Poetry, or something of a lighter nature.

6. The first thing you should understand a little of, is *Grammar* : in order to which it will suffice to read first the Kingswood English Grammar, (which is exceedingly short,) and then Bishop Lowth's Introduction.

7. Next it would be worth your while to acquire a little knowledge in *Arithmetic* : and Dilworth's Arithmetic would give you full as much as you want.

8. You might proceed to *Geography*. But in this I would not advise you to encumber yourself with many books. You need only master one, Randal's Geographical Grammar, and then betake yourself to the *Globes*. I believe those of Mr. Adams are the best ; to which you may add his little book of Instructions.

9. *Logic* naturally follows : and I really think it is worth all the rest put together. But here I am at a full stop ; for I know no good treatise on the subject in English, except Aldrich's Logic, and that I am afraid you cannot understand, without an instructor. I shall be glad to give you a little assistance, in the short time we have together.

10. As to *Ethics* (or *Moral Philosophy*;) there is full as much of it as you want in Langbain's Compendium.

11. In *Natural Philosophy* you have a larger field. You may begin with a "Survey of the wisdom of God in the Creation." This contains the substance of Ray, Derham, Nieuwentyt, Nature Displayed, and all the other celebrated books on the subject. You may add that fine book, Mr. Jones's *Principles of Natural Philosophy*. Thence you will easily pass to the Glasgow Abridgment of Mr. Hutchinson's Works. The abridgers give not only all his sense, but all his spirit. You may add to these the beautiful tracts of Lord Forbes; and if you would go a little farther, Mr. Baker's ingenious Treatise on the Microscope.

12. With any or all of the foregoing studies you may intermix that of History. *Geography* and *Chronology* are termed the two eyes of *History*. *Geography* has been mentioned before. And I think all you want of *Chronology* may be learned from *Marshall's Chronological Tables*.

13. You may begin with Rollin's *Ancient History*: and afterwards read in order, Puffendorf's Introduction to the History of Europe, the Concise Church History, Burnet's History of the Reformation, the "Concise History of England," Clarendon's History of the great Rebellion, Neal's History of the Puritans; his History of New England, and Sale's History of the Conquest of Mexico.

14. Whitby's Compendium of Metaphysics will introduce you to that science. You may go on with Locke's Essay on Human Understanding. Bishop Brown on the nature, procedure, and limits of human understanding, and Malebranche's Search after Truth.

15. For Poetry; you may read Spenser's Fairy Queen: Fairfax's or Hoole's Godfrey of Bulloign; select parts of Shakspeare; Paradise Lost, the Night Thoughts, and Moral and Sacred Poems.

16. You are glad to begin and end with Divinity. But I must not expatiate here. I will only recommend to your careful perusal, Bishop Pearson upon the Creed, Mr. Nalson's Sermons, and the Christian Library.

This course of study, if you have the resolution to go through it, will, I apprehend, take you up, three, four, or five years, according to the degree of your health and of your application. And you will then have knowledge enough for any reasonable Christian. But remember, before all, in all, and above all, your great point is, to know the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom he hath sent.

I am, dear Miss L——, your affectionate brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

## TO MISS ———.

February 21, 1759.

PROBABLY, Miss ———, this may be the last trouble of the kind, which you will receive from me. Therefore you may forgive me this : and the rather when you consider my motives to it. You know, I can have no temporal view : I can have none but a faint, distant hope, (because with God all things are possible,) of doing some service to one whom I love. And this may answer the question which you might naturally ask, "What would you have ? What do you want with *me* ?" I want you, not to be a convert to my opinions ; but to be a member of Christ, a child of God, and an heir of his kingdom ! Be any thing, as to outward profession, so you are lowly in heart : so you resist and conquer every motion of pride, and have that mind in you, which was also in Christ Jesus. Be what you please besides ; only be meek and gentle, and in patience possess your soul : so that one may truly say to you,

Calm thou ever art within,  
All unruffled, all serene !

Hear what preacher you will : but hear the voice of God, and beware of prejudice and every unkind temper ! Beware of foolish and hurtful desires, or they will pierce you through with many sorrows. In one word, be any thing but a trifler : a trifler with God and your own soul. It was not for this, that God gave you

"A mind superior to the vulgar herd !"

No, Miss ———, no ! But that you might employ all your talents to the glory of him that gave them. O do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God ! Is he not still striving with you ? Striving to make you, not almost, but altogether a Christian ? Indeed *you* must be all or nothing : a saint, or a Devil ! Eminent in sin, or holiness. The good Lord deliver you from every snare, and guide your feet in the way of peace ! How great a pleasure would this give to all your real friends, and in particular to,

Your affectionate servant, for Christ's sake,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

 TO THE MONTHLY REVIEWERS.

September 9, 1756.

GENTLEMEN,

FOR a considerable time I have had a desire to trouble you with a few lines ; but have been prevented, partly by a variety of other business, partly by the small probability of your impartially considering what was said. I will, however, make the trial : if you *can* read candidly, well ; if not, it is but a little labour lost.

The question I would propose is this: Is it prudent, is it just, is it humane, to jumble whole bodies of people together, and condemn them by the lump? Is it not a maxim now almost universally received, that there are good and bad in every Society? Why then do you continually jumble together and condemn by the lump, the whole body of people, called *Methodists*? Is it prudent (just to touch even on so low a consideration) to be constantly insulting and provoking those who do you no wrong, and had far rather be your friends than your enemies? Is it consistent with humanity, to strike again, one who gives no provocation, and makes no resistance? Is it common justice, to treat with such contempt as you have done in the last month's Review, those who are by no means contemptible writers? Be persuaded, gentlemen, to give yourselves the pains of reading either Mr. Herbert's *Providence*, or the verses which Norris entitles, *The Meditation*, and you will find them scarcely inferior, either in sense or language, to most compositions of the present age. To speak more freely still: where is the justice of coupling the hymns of Methodists and Moravians together? Lay prejudice aside; and read with candour but the very first hymn in our first hymn-book; and then say, whether your prose is not as nearly allied to John Bunyan's, as our verse to Count Z-----'s.

As probably you have never seen the books which you condemn, I will transcribe a few lines.

Thce, when morning greets the skies  
 With rosy cheeks and humid eyes;  
 Thee, when sweet declining day  
 Sinks in purple waves away;  
 Thee will I sing, O Parent Jove!  
 And teach the world to praise and love.

Yonder azure vault on high,  
 Yonder blue, low, liquid sky,  
 Earth on its firm basis plac'd,  
 And with circling waves embrac'd,  
 All creating power confess,  
 All their mighty Maker bless.  
 Thou shak'st all nature with thy nod,  
 Sea, earth, and air, confess thee God:  
 Yet does thy pow'rful hand sustain  
 Both earth and heav'n, both firm and main.

The feather'd souls that swim the air,  
 And bathe in liquid ether there,  
 The lark, precentor of their choir,  
 Leading them higher still and higher,  
 Listen and learn, the angelic notes  
 Repeating in their warbling throats:  
 And, ere to soft repose they go,  
 Teach them to their lords below:  
 On the green turf, their mossy nest,  
 The evening anthem swells their breast,  
 Thus, like the golden chain from high,  
 Thy praise unites the earth and sky.

O, ye nurses of soft dreams,  
 Reedy brooks and winding streams,

Or murmuring o'er the pebbles sheen,  
 Or sliding through the meadows green,  
 Or where through matted sedge you creep,  
 Trav'ling to your parent deep :  
 Sound his praise by whom you rose,  
 That sea, which neither ebbs nor flows.

O ye immortal woods and groves,  
 Which the enamour'd student loves :  
 Beneath whose venerable shade,  
 For thought and friendly converse made,  
 Fam'd Hecadem, old hero, lies,  
 Whose shrine is shaded from the skies,  
 And, through the gloom of silent night,  
 Projects from far its trembling light ;  
 You, whose roots descend as low,  
 As high in air your branches grow ;  
 Your leafy arms to heaven extend,  
 Bend your heads, in homage bend :  
 Cedars, and pines, that wave above,  
 And the oak belov'd of Jove !

Now, gentlemen, can you say between God and your own souls, that these verses deserve the treatment you have given them ? I think, you cannot. You are men of more understanding. You know they are not contemptible. If any of you will strike a real blot, if you will point out even in public (though that is not the most obliging way) any thing justly reprobable in our writings, probably we shall acknowledge and correct what is amiss ; at least, we shall not blame you. But every impartial man must blame that method of proceeding, which neither consists with justice nor humanity.

Perhaps you may say, "You have been provoked." By whom ? "By Mr. Romaine." I answer, I am not Mr. Romaine ; neither am I accountable for his behaviour. And what equity is this ? One man has offended you : therefore you fall upon another. Will it excuse you to say, but he is called by the same name ? Especially, when neither is this his own name, but a term of derision ? Gentlemen, do to others, as you would have them do to you. Then you will no more injure one who never offended you, (unless this offend you, that he does really believe Jesus Christ to be God over all, blessed for ever,) then you will not return hatred for good will, even to so insignificant a person as

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## TO THE SAME.

October 3, 1756.

REALLY, Gentlemen, you do me too much honour. I could scarcely expect so favourable a regard from those who are professed admirers of Mr. Aaron Hill's verse, and Mr. Caleb Fleming's prose.

Nevertheless I cannot but observe a few small mistakes in the eight lines with which you favour me. You say, "We suppose the specimen of Mr. Wesley's Hymns (the false spelling is of little consequence) *was sent us for this purpose*;" namely, to publish. Truly it was not; it never entered my thought. As I apprehend may appear from the whole tenor of the letter wherein those lines were inserted. "And if the Moravians please to *select* a like sample of what has been done by them, they may expect from us the same justice." Another little mistake, those lines are not *selected*; but are found in the very first hymn (as I observed in my last) that occurs in the first verses which my brother and I ever published. "We have received a letter complaining of our having *jumbled* the poetry of the Methodists and Moravians in an indiscriminate censure." Not so. The thing chiefly complained of was, 1. Your "jumbling whole bodies of people together, and condemning them by the lump, without any regard either to prudence, justice, or humanity:" 2. Your "treating with such contempt those who are by no means contemptible writers, Mr. Norris and Mr. Herbert." The last and least thing was, "your coupling the hymns of Moravians and Methodists together." It was here I added, "As probably you have never seen the books which you condemn, I will transcribe a few lines:" but neither did I give the least intimation of "appealing hereby to the public, in proof of our superiority over the Moravians." This is another mistake.

At first I was a little inclined to fear, a want of integrity had occasioned this misrepresentation. But, upon reflection, I would put a milder construction upon it, and only impute it to a want of understanding. Even bodies of men do not see all things, and are then especially liable to err, when they imagine themselves hugely superior to their opponents, and so pronounce *ex cathedra*.

Another instance of this is just now before me. A week ago, one put a Tract into my hands, in which I could discern nothing of the Christian, gentleman, or scholar; but much of low, dull, ill-natured scurrillity and blasphemy. How was I surprised when I read in your 315th page, "We have read this little piece with great pleasure!" When I found you so smitten with the author's "*spirit, sense, and freedom*," his *smart animadversions* and *becoming severity*! O gentlemen! Do not you speak too plain? Do not you discover too much at once? Especially when you so keenly ridicule Mr. Pike's supposition, that "the Son and Spirit are truly divine." May I ask, if the Son of God is not *truly divine*, is he divine at all? Is he a little God, or no God at all? If no God at all, how came he to say, I and the Father are one? Did any prophet before, from the beginning of the world, use any one expression, which could possibly be so interpreted as this and other expressions were, by all that heard Jesus speak? And did he ever attempt to undeceive them? Be pleased then to let me know, if he was not God, how do you clear him from being the vilest of men? I am, gentlemen,

Your well wisher, though not admirer,

JOHN WESLEY.

TO THE REV. MR. CLARKE. *Of a Catholic Spirit.*

REV. SIR,

Castlebar, July 3, 1756.

I AM obliged to you for the openness and candour with which you write, and will endeavour to follow the pattern which you have set me. I sent that sermon with no particular view, but as a testimony of love to a fellow-labourer in the gospel.

From the text of that sermon, I do not *infer*, That "Christians are not to inquire into each other's opinions." Indeed from that text I do not infer any thing: I use it to *illustrate*, not to *prove*. I am very sensible, "Jehu had more regard to state policy, than to religion," p. 5, and have no objection at all to the very fair explication, which you have given of his words. Accordingly, I say, p. 13, "What is implied in the question? *I do not mean*, What did Jehu imply therein? But what should a follower of Christ understand thereby, when he proposes it to any of his brethren?"

Of these only I speak. My general proposition, you may please to remember, is this, "All the children of God may unite in love, notwithstanding difference in opinions or modes of worship."

From this persuasion, whenever I meet with any whom I have reason to believe "children of God," I do not ask of him with whom I would unite in love, (never at the entrance upon our conversation, seldom till we are a little acquainted,) "Do you agree with my opinions and mode of worship? Particularly with regard to church government, baptism, and the Lord's Supper." I "let all these stand by," till we begin to know, and have confirmed our love to each other. Then may come "a more convenient season" for entering into controversy. My only question *at present* is, "Is thy heart right?" p. 13.

*At present*, I say, keep your own opinion, I mine. I do not desire you to dispute these points. Whether we shall dispute them hereafter, is another question. Perhaps we may, perhaps we may not. This will depend on a great variety of circumstances; particularly, on a probability of success: for I am determined never to dispute at all, if I have no hope of convincing my opponent.

As to my own judgment, I still believe "the episcopal form of church government to be scriptural and apostolical." I mean, well agreeing with the practice and writings of the apostles. But that it is *prescribed* in scripture, I do not believe. This opinion, which I once zealously espoused, I have been heartily ashamed of, ever since I read Bishop Stillingfleet's *Irenicon*. I think he has unanswerably proved, That, "neither Christ nor his apostles *prescribe* any particular form of church government, and that the plea of *divine right* for diocesan episcopacy, was never heard of in the primitive church."

But were it otherwise, I should still call these "smaller points" than the "loving God and all mankind," p. 18. And could any man answer those questions, "Dost thou believe in the Lord Jesus

Christ, God over all, blessed for ever," (which indeed no Arian or Semi-Arian, and much less, Socinian, can do.) "Is God the centre of thy soul? The sum of all thy desires? Art thou more afraid of displeasing God, than either of death or hell!" p. 15, (which no wicked man can possibly do; none who is not a real child of God.) If, I say, a man could answer these in the affirmative, I would then gladly give "him my hand."

This is certainly a principle held by those who are in derision termed Methodists. And to whom a popish priest in Dublin gave the still more unmeaning title of *Swaddlers*. They all desire to be of a Catholic spirit; meaning thereby, "not an indifference to all opinions;" not "indifference as to the manner of public worship." This they know to be quite another thing. "Love, they judge, gives a title to this character. Catholic Love is a Catholic Spirit," p. 25.

As to *Heresy* and *Schism*, I cannot find one text in the Bible, where they are taken in the modern sense. I remember no one scripture wherein *Heresy* signifies, "Error in opinion," whether fundamental or not. Nor any wherein *Schism* signifies a "separation from the Church," whether with cause or without. I wish, Sir, you would reconsider this point, and review the scriptures wherein those terms occur.

Yet I would take some pains to recover any one from error, or to reconcile him to our Church. I mean, to the Church of England; from which I do not separate yet, and probably never shall. The little Church (in the vulgar sense of the word) which I occasionally mentioned at Holy Mount, is that wherein I read prayers, and preach, and administer the sacrament, every Sunday, when I am in London. But I would take much more pains to recover any one from sin. One who lives and dies in error, or in dissent from our Church, may yet be saved: but one who lives and dies in sin, must perish. O Sir! let us bend our main force against this. Against all sin, both in ourselves and them that hear us! I would to God we could all agree both in opinions and outward worship. But if this cannot be, may we not agree in holiness? May we not all agree in being holy, as he that hath called us is holy, both in heart and in all manner of conversation? This is the great desire of,

Rev. Sir, your very humble Servant,  
J. W.

---

## TO A FRIEND. ON PUBLIC WORSHIP.

DEAR SIR,

Sept. 20, 1757.

THE longer I am absent from London, and the more I attend the service of the Church in other places, the more I am convinced of the unspeakable advantage which the people called Methodists enjoy. I mean, even with regard to public worship, particularly on the Lord's-Day. The church where they assemble is not gay or splen-

did : which might be a hinderance on the one hand : nor sordid or dirty, which might give distaste on the other : but plain, as well as clean. The persons who assemble there, are not a gay giddy crowd, who come chiefly to see and be seen : nor a company of goodly, formal, outside Christians, whose religion lies in a dull round of duties : but a people most of whom do, and the rest earnestly seek to worship God in spirit and in truth. Accordingly, they do not spend their time there in bowing and curtsying, or in staring about them : but in looking upward and looking inward, in hearkening to the voice of God, and pouring out their hearts before him.

It is also no small advantage that the person who reads prayers, (though not always the same,) yet is always one, who may be supposed to speak from his heart, one whose life is no reproach to his profession ; and one who performs that solemn part of divine service, not in a careless, hurrying, slovenly manner, but seriously and slowly, as becomes him who is transacting so high an affair between God and man.

Nor are their solemn addresses to God interrupted either by the formal drawl of a parish clerk, the screaming of boys, who bawl out what they neither feel nor understand, or the unseasonable and unmeaning impertinence of a voluntary on the organ. When it is seasonable to sing praise to God, they do it with the spirit, and with the understanding also : not in the miserable, scandalous doggerel of Hopkins and Sternhold, but in psalms and hymns which are both sense and poetry : such as would sooner provoke a critic to turn Christian, than a Christian to turn critic. What they sing is therefore a proper continuation of the spiritual and reasonable service ; being selected for that end, (not by a poor hum-drum wretch, who can scarcely read what he drones out with such an air of importance, but) by one who knows what he is about, and how to connect the preceding with the following part of the service. Nor does he take just "two staves," but more or less, as may best raise the soul to God : especially when sung in well-composed and well-adapted tunes, not by a handful of wild unawakened striplings, but by a whole serious congregation : and these not lolling at ease, or in the indecent posture of sitting, drawing out one word after another, but all standing before God, and praising him lustily and with a good courage.

Nor is it a little advantage as to the next part of the service, to hear a preacher whom you know to live as he speaks, speaking the genuine gospel of present Salvation through Faith, wrought in the heart by the Holy Ghost : declaring present, free, full justification, and enforcing every branch of inward and outward Holiness. And this you hear done in the most clear, plain, simple, unaffected language ; yet with an earnestness becoming the importance of the subject, and with the demonstration of the Spirit.

With regard to the last and most awful part of divine service, the celebration of the Lord's Supper, although we cannot say that either the unworthiness of the minister, or the unholiness of some of the communicants, deprives the rest of a blessing from God, yet do they

greatly lessen the comfort of receiving. But these discouragements are removed from you : you have proof that he who administers, fears God : and you have no reason to believe, that any of your fellow-communicants walk unworthy of their profession. Add to this, that the whole service is performed in a decent and solemn manner, is enlivened by hymns suitable to the occasion, and concluded with prayer that comes not out of feigned lips.

Surely then of all the people in Great Britain, the Methodists would be the most inexcusable, should they let any opportunity slip of attending that worship which has so many advantages, should they prefer any before it ; or not continually improve by the advantages they enjoy ! What can be pleaded for them, if they do not worship God in spirit and in truth ; if they are still outward worshippers only, approaching God with their lips, while their hearts are far from him ? Yea, if having known him, they do not daily grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ !

J. W.

---

TO MISS H———. ON CHRISTIAN PERFECTION.

*Dublin, April 5, 1756.*

IT is with great reluctance that I at length begin to write : first, because I abhor disputing, and never enter upon it, but when I am, as it were, dragged into it by the hair of the head ; and next, because I have so little hope, that any good will arise from the present dispute. I fear your passions are too deeply interested in the question to admit the force of the strongest reason. So that, were it not for the tender regard I have for you, which makes your desire a motive I cannot resist, I should not spend half an hour in so thankless a labour, and one wherein I have so little prospect of success.

“The doctrine of Perfection, you say, has perplexed you much, since some of our preachers have placed it in so dreadful a light : one of them affirming, a believer, till perfect, is under the curse of God, and in a state of damnation : another, if you die before you have attained it, you will surely perish.”

By *Perfection*, I mean *perfect love*, or the loving God with all our heart, so as to rejoice evermore, to pray without ceasing, and in every thing to give thanks. I am convinced, every believer may attain this ; yet I do not say, he is in a state of damnation, or under the curse of God, till he does attain. No, he is in a state of grace, and in favour with God, as long as he believes : neither would I say, “If you die without it, you will perish :” but rather, “Till you are saved from unholy tempers you are not ripe for glory. There will, therefore, more promises be fulfilled in your soul, before God take you to himself.”

“But none can attain Perfection, unless they first believe it attainable.” Neither do I affirm this. I know a Calvinist in London, who never believed it attainable, till the moment she did attain it :

and then lay declaring it aloud for many days, till her spirit returned to God.

“But you yourself believed twenty years ago, that we should not put off the infection of nature, but with our bodies.” I did so. But I believe otherwise now, for many reasons, some of which you afterwards mention. How far Mr. Roquet or Mr. Walsh may have mistaken these, I know not: I can only answer for myself.

“The nature and fitness of things” is so ambiguous an expression, that I never make use of it. Yet if you ask me, Is it fit or necessary, in the nature of things, that a soul should be saved from all sin, before it enters into Glory? I answer, It is. And so it is written, *No unclean thing shall enter into it.* Therefore, whatever degrees of holiness they did, or did not attain, in the preceding parts of life, neither Jews nor Heathens, any more than Christians, ever did, or ever will enter into the New Jerusalem, unless they are cleansed from all sin before they enter into eternity.

I do by no means exclude the Old Testament from bearing witness to any truths of God. Nothing less: but I say, the experience of the Jews is not the standard of Christian experience: and that therefore, were it true, the Jews did not love God with all their heart and soul, it would not follow, therefore no Christian can. Because we may attain what they did not.

But you say, “Either their words do not contain a promise of *such perfection*, or God did not fulfil this promise to them to whom he made it.” I answer, he surely will fulfil it, to *them to whom he made it*; namely, to the Jews, *after their dispersion into all lands*; and to these is the promise made: as will be clear to any, who impartially considers the thirtieth Chapter of Deuteronomy, wherein it stands.

I doubt, whether this Perfection can be proved by Luke vi. 40. From 1 John iii. 9, (which belongs to all the children of God,) I never attempted to prove it; but I still think it is clearly described in those words, *As he is so are we in this world.* And yet it doth not now appear *what we shall be*, when this vile body is *fashioned like unto his glorious body*, when we shall see him, not in a glass, but face to face, and be transformed into his likeness.

Those expressions, John xiv. *Ye are clean: clean every whit*, are allowed to refer to justification only. But that expression, *If we walk in the light as he is in the light*, cannot refer to justification only. It does not relate to justification at all, whatever the other clause may do. Therefore those texts are by no means parallel, neither can the latter be limited by the former: although it is sure the privileges described in both, belong to every adult believer.

But not only abundance of particular texts, but the whole tenor of Scripture declares, Christ came to *destroy the works of the Devil*, to *save us from our sins*: all the works of the Devil, all our sins, without any exception or limitation. Indeed should *we say, we have no sin* to be saved or cleansed from, we should make him come in vain. But it is at least as much for his glory, to cleanse us from them all, before our death as after it.

“But St. James says, *In many things we offend all*; and whatever *we* might mean, if alone, the expression, *we all*, was never before understood to exclude the person speaking.” Indeed it was. It is unquestionably to be understood, so as to exclude Isaiah, the person speaking, chap. lxiv. 6, *We are all as an unclean thing—We all do fade as a leaf, and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.* For this was not the case with Isaiah himself. Of himself he says, (chap. lxi. 10.) *My soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation; he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness*: here the prophet, like the apostle, uses the word *we* instead of *you*, to soften the harshness of an displeasing truth.

In this chapter the apostle is not cautioning them against censuring others; but entering upon a new argument: wherein the second verse has an immediate reference to the first; but none at all to the thirteenth of the preceding chapter.

I added, “*We offend all*, cannot be spoken of all Christians; for immediately there follows the mention of *one, who offends not*, as the *we* before mentioned did.” You answer, “His not offending *in word* will not prove that he does not offend *in many things*.” I think St. James himself proves it, in saying, *He is able to bridle also the whole body*: to direct all his actions as well as words, according to the holy, perfect will of God: which those and those only, are able to do, who love God with all their hearts. And yet those very persons can sincerely say, “Forgive us our trespasses.” For as long as they are in the body, they are liable to *mistake*, and to speak or act according to that mistaken judgment. Therefore they cannot abide the rigour of justice, but still need mercy and forgiveness.

Were *you* to ask, “What if I should die this moment?” I should answer, I believe you would be saved: because I am persuaded none that has faith can die before he is made ripe for glory. This is the doctrine, which I continually teach, which has nothing to do with justification by works. Nor can it discourage any, who have faith, neither weaken their peace nor damp their joy in the Lord. True believers are not distressed hereby, either in life or in death: unless in some rare instance, wherein the temptation of the Devil is joined with a melancholy temper.

Upon the whole, I observe your great argument turns all along on a mistake of the doctrine. Whatever warm expressions may drop from young men, we do not teach, that any believer is under condemnation. So that all the inferences drawn from this supposition, fall to the ground at once.

Your other letter I hope to consider hereafter: though I have great reason to apprehend your prejudice will still be too strong for my arguments. However, whether you expect it or not, I must wish for *your perfection*. You, of all people, have most need of perfect love; because this alone casts out fear. I am, with great sincerity,

Your affectionate Brother and Servant,

JOHN WESLEY

## TO MR. ———. ON HERESY AND SCHISM.

REV. SIR,

London, Sept. 10, 1749.

YESTERDAY I received your favour of July 9. As you therein speak freely and openly, I will endeavour to do the same; at which, I am persuaded, you will not be displeas'd.

1. Of the words imputed to Mr. Langston, I said nothing: because he denied the charge. And I had not an opportunity of hearing the accused and the accuser face to face.

2. That there are *Enthusiasts* among the Methodists I doubt not; and among every other people under heaven. But, that they are "made such either *by* our doctrine or discipline," still remains to be proved. If they are such in spite of our doctrine and discipline, their madness will not be laid to our charge.

I know nothing of that anonymous *pamphlet* on inspiration. How does it appear to be written by a disciple of mine? Be it good, bad, or indifferent, I am not concerned, or any way accountable for it.

3. I believe, several who are not *episcopally ordained*, are call'd of God to preach the Gospel. Yet I have no objection to the twenty-third Article, though I judge there are exempt cases.

That the seven deacons were outwardly ordained even to that low office, cannot be denied. But when Paul and Barnabas were *separated for the work to which they were call'd*, this was not ordaining them. St. Paul was ordained long before, and that *not of man, nor by man*. It was only inducting him to the province for which our Lord had appointed him from the beginning. For this end the *prophets* and *teachers* fasted, prayed, and *laid their hands upon them*: a rite which was us'd, not in ordination only, but in blessing, and on many other occasions.

4. Concerning *Diocesan Episcopacy*, there are several questions I should be glad to have answer'd. 1. Where is it prescribed in Scripture? 2. How does it appear, that the apostles "settled it in all the churches they plant'd?" 3. How does it appear, that they so settled it in any, as to make it of perpetual obligation? It is allow'd, "Christ and his apostles did put the churches under some form of government or other. But, 1. Did they put all churches under the same precise form? If they did, 2. Can we prove this to have been the very same which now remains in the Church of England?"

5. How Favorinus and many more may define both *heresy* and *schism*, I am not concerned to know. I well know, Heresy is vulgarly defined, "A false opinion, touching some necessary article of faith;" and Schism, "A causeless separation from a true church." But I keep to my Bible, as our Church in her sixth Article teaches me to do. Therefore, I cannot take Schism for "a separation from a church," true or false: because I cannot find it is ever so taken in

Scripture. The first time I read the term there, is, 1 Cor. i. 10. I met with it again, chap. xi. 18. But it is plain, by schisms in both places 's meant, Not any *separation* from the church, but uncharitable *divisions* in it. For the Corinthians continued to be one church; and notwithstanding all their strife and contention, there was no separation of any one party from the rest, with regard to external communion. It is in the same sense the word is used, chap. xii. 25. And these are the only places in the New Testament where it occurs. Therefore, the indulging any unkind temper toward our fellow-christians, is the true, scriptural *schism*.

Indeed, both *heresies* (which are also *works of the flesh*, and consequently *dammable*, if not repented of,) and *schisms*, are here mentioned by the apostle in very near the same sense: unless by *schisms* be meant those inward *animosities* which occasioned *heresies*, that is, outward *divisions* and *parties*. So that while one said, *I am of Paul; another, I am of Apollos*; this implied both schism and heresy. So wonderfully have later ages distorted the words *Heresy* and *Schism*, from their scriptural meaning. *Heresy* is not, in all the Bible, taken for "an error in fundamentals," or in any thing else: nor *Schism* for any separation made from the outward communion of others. Therefore, both *Heresy* and *Schism*, in the modern sense of the words, are sins that the Scripture knows nothing of.

6. But though I aver this, am I "quite indifferent as to any man's opinion in religion?" Far, very far from it, as I have declared again and again in the very sermon under consideration; in the Character of a Methodist; in the Plain Account; and twenty tracts besides. Neither do I "conceal my sentiments." Few men less. I have written severally, and printed against Deists, Papists, Mystics, Quakers, Anabaptists, Presbyterians, Calvinists, and Antinomians. An odd way of ingratiating myself with them, to strike at the apple of their eye! Nevertheless, in all things indifferent (but not at the expense of truth) I rejoice to *please all men for their good to edification*. If haply I may "gain the more proselytes" to genuine, scriptural Christianity. If I may prevail upon the more to love God and their neighbour, and to walk as Christ walked.

So far as I find them obstructive of this, I oppose *wrong opinions* with my might: though even then, rather by guarding those who are yet free, than by disputing with those who are deeply infected. I need not dispute with many of these, to know there is no probability of convincing them. A thousand times have I found my father's words true; "You may have peace with the Dissenters, if you do not so humour them as to dispute with them. But if you do, they will *out-face* and *out-lung* you, and at the end you will be where you were at the beginning."

I have now, Sir, humoured you so far as to dispute with you a little. But with what probability of success? Suppose you have a single eye in this debate; suppose you aim not at victory, but at truth only; yet what man of threescore (unless perchance one in an age) was ever *convinced* of any thing? Is it not an old man's

motto, *Non persuadebis etiamsi persuaseris?* When we are past middle age, does not a kind of stiffness and inflexibility steal upon the mind as well as the body? And how does this bar the gate against all conviction? Even before the eye of the soul too grows dim, and so less and less capable of discerning things which we are not already well acquainted with.

7. Yet on one point I must add a few words, because it is of the last importance. I said, "Orthodoxy or right opinions is never more than a slender part of religion; sometimes no part of it at all." And this I explained thus: "In a child of God, it is but a slender part of religion: it is no part at all in a child of the Devil." The religion of a child of God is righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. Now if orthodoxy be any part of this, (which itself might admit of a question,) it is a *very slender part*. Though it is a considerable help both of love, peace, and joy. Religion is, in others, the love of God and man, producing all holiness of conversation. Now are *right opinions* any more (if they are so much) than a *very slender part* of this? Once more, religion is, the mind that was in Christ, and the walking as Christ walked. But how *very slender a part* of this are opinions, how right soever!

By a child of the Devil, I mean, one who has no true religion at all; one who neither loves, nor fears, nor serves God. But it is certain, such a man may still be *orthodox*; may entertain right opinions: and yet, it is equally certain, these are *no part* of religion in him that has *no religion* at all.

Permit me, Sir, to speak exceeding plainly. Are you not an *orthodox* man? Perhaps there is none more so in the diocess. And yet possibly you may have no religion at all; If it be true, that you frequently drink to excess, you may have *orthodoxy*, but you can have no *religion*. If when you are in a passion, you call your brother, thou fool! you have no religion at all. If you even curse, and take the name of God in vain, you can have no other religion than *orthodoxy*: a religion of which the Devil and his angels may have full as much as you.

O Sir, what an idle thing is it for you to dispute about lay-preachers! Is not a lay-preacher preferable to a drunken preacher? To a cursing, swearing preacher? *Unto the ungodly, saith God, Why takest thou my covenant in thy mouth, whereas thou hatest to be reformed, and hast cast my words behind thee?* In tender compassion I speak this. May God apply it to your heart! Then you will not receive this as an affront, but as the highest instance of brotherly love, from

Rev. Sir,

Your truly affectionate servant,

J. W.

## FROM MR. T. ADAMS TO MR. J. WESLEY.\*

ON LEAVING THE CHURCH.

REV. SIR,

*Wintringham, Oct. 10, 1755.*

AS you are pleased to desire my opinion of a matter which is, and is judged by yourself to be, of very great importance, "A formal separation of the Methodists from the Church of England;" I shall make no apology for giving it to you in as explicit, though short, a manner as I can, so far as relates to yourself; and the difficulties you are under about it.

As you are not satisfied in your conscience of the lawfulness of a separation in form; but, on the contrary, have advanced many reasons against it, which seem weighty to yourself, and at the same time judge it to be inexpedient; methinks your way is plain before you: separation from an establishment, without a clear and full conviction of the lawfulness, expedience, and absolute necessity, of it, being *utterly unlawful*. And if any considerable number of the Methodists should persist in carrying the design of a separation into execution, you and others, your present scruples subsisting, will be obliged in conscience to disavow, and declare openly against it. What confusion among yourselves, and what detriment to religion in general, would follow upon this? What occasion of triumph it will give to your opposers, and what a contradiction it is to your avowed design of restoring practical, vital religion, especially in the Church of England, may easily be discerned.

Be pleased, Sir, to keep your eye and heart steadily fixed upon this single point, and let no bye-respects, no personal considerations, no retrospects, nor concern for Methodism in its present state, influence you in your determination, viz. What is the one conscionable, scriptural way of extricating yourself from your present embarrassments? Which, all things considered, must be owned to be very great, and should be a warning to all how they venture upon a revolt from the authority and standing rules of the Church to which they belong. I fear, Sir, that your saying you do not appoint, but only approve of the lay-preachers, from a persuasion of their call and fitness, savours of disingenuity. Where is the difference? Under whose sanction do they act? Would they generally think their call a sufficient warrant for commencing preachers, or be received in that capacity by your people, without your approbation, tacit, or express? And what is their preaching upon this call, but a manifest breach upon the order of the Church, and an inlet to confusion? Which, in all probability, will follow upon your death; and, if I mistake not, you are upon the point of knowing by your own experience.

\* This Letter is inserted in order to elucidate Mr. Wesley's Answer.

Upon the whole, therefore, it is humbly submitted to your most serious consideration, Whether the separation is not wide enough already, particularly in the instance of unordained persons preaching, and gathering societies to themselves whenever they can; and whether all the Methodists might not serve the interests of Christ better, as witnesses and examples of a living faith, and expect a greater blessing from the God of order upon their talents, gifts, and graces, whatever they are, by returning to a closer union with the Church, and repairing the breach they have made, than by making it still wider, and separating, what they think, the gospel-leaven from the lump?

I pray God direct you to judge and act in this, and every thing else, for the good of his Church and your own future peace; and am,

Rev. dear Sir,  
Your unworthy brother and servant, T. A.

---

MR. WESLEY'S ANSWER TO MR. ADAMS.

*London, October 31, 1755.*

REV. SIR,

ONE good effect, at least, has arisen already, from the moving of the present question. It has been the occasion of my having some little acquaintance with Mr. Walker and you, which, I doubt not, would be enlarged, were it not for what you probably think to be Christian (I think to be worldly) *prudence*.

You have much obliged me by your clear and friendly answer; with the main of which I fully agree: for I am still in my former sentiment, "We will not *go out*: if we are *thrust out*, well." And of the same judgment are, I believe, at least nineteen in twenty of our preachers, and an equal majority of the people. We are fully convinced that to separate from an established church, is never lawful but when it is of absolute necessity: and we do not see any such necessity yet. Therefore, we have at present no thoughts of separation.

With regard to the steps we have hitherto taken, we have used all the caution which was possible. We have done nothing rashly, nothing without deep and long consideration (hearing and weighing all objections,) and much prayer. Nor have we taken one deliberate step, of which we as yet, see reason to repent. It is true, in some things we vary from the rules of our Church: but no further than we apprehend is our bounden duty. It is from a full conviction of this that we preach abroad, use extemporary prayer, form those who appear to be awakened into societies, and permit laymen, whom we believe God has called, to preach.

I say, *permit*, because we ourselves have hitherto viewed it in no other light. This we are clearly satisfied we *may* do: that we *may do more*, we are not satisfied. It is not clear to us, that Presbyters,

so circumstanced as we are, may *appoint* or *ordain* others : but it is, that we may *direct*, as well as *suffer* them to do, what we conceive they are *moved to by the Holy Ghost*. It is true, that in *ordinary* cases, both an *inward* and an *outward* call are requisite. But we apprehend there is something far from *ordinary* in the present case. And upon the calmest view of things, we think, they who are only called of God, and not of man, have *more* right to preach than ~~they~~ who are only called of man, and not of God. Now that many of the clergy, though called of man, are not called of God to preach his Gospel, is undeniable : 1. Because they themselves utterly disclaim, nay, and ridicule the inward call. 2. Because they do not know what the Gospel is : of consequence they *do not* and *cannot* preach it.

Dear Sir, coolly and impartially consider this, and you will see on which side the difficulty lies. I do assure you, this at present is my chief embarrassment. That I have not gone too far yet, I know : but whether I have gone far enough, I am extremely doubtful. I see those running whom God hath not sent ; destroying their own souls, and those that hear them ; perverting the right ways of the Lord, and blaspheming the truth as it is in Jesus. I see the blind leading the blind, and both falling into the ditch. Unless I warn, in all ways I can, these perishing souls of their danger, am I clear of the blood of these men ? Soul-damning clergymen lay me under more difficulties than soul-saving laymen !

Those among ourselves who have been in doubt, Whether they ought so to beware of these false prophets, as not to hear them at all, are not men of “forward, uncharitable zeal ;” but of a calm, loving, temperate spirit. They are perfectly easy as to their own call to preach ; but they are troubled for these poor, uncalled, blind guides ; and they are sometimes afraid, that the countenancing these is a dead weight even on those clergymen, who are really called of God. “Why else,” say they, “does not God bless their labours ?” Why do they still “stretch forth their hands in vain ?” We know several regular clergymen who do preach the genuine gospel : but to no effect at all. There is one exception in England : Mr. Walker at Truro. We do not know one more, who has converted one soul in his own parish. If it be said, “Has not Mr. Grimshaw and Mr. Baddiley ?” No, not one, till they were *irregular* : till both the one and the other formed *irregular* societies, and took in laymen to assist them. Can there be a stronger proof, that God is pleased with *irregular*, even more than with *regular* preaching ?

“But might not the Methodists in general serve the interests of Christ better, as witnesses and examples of a living faith, by returning to a closer union with the Church, than by separating still further ?” We have no design at present of separating further, (if we have yet separated at all.) Neither dare we return to a closer union, if that means either prohibiting lay-preachers, or ceasing to watch over each other in love, and regularly meeting for that purpose.

If there be any further advices, whether with regard to doctrines or practice, which you judge might be of service to us, they would be thankfully received and considered, by

Rev. and dear Sir,  
Your obliged and affectionate Brother and Servant,  
JOHN WESLEY.

TO THE REV. MR. G——.

REV. SIR,

April 2, 1761.

I HAVE no desire to dispute; least of all with one whom I believe to fear God and work righteousness. And I have no time to spare. Yet I think it my duty to write a few lines with regard to those you sent to Mr. Bennet.

You therein say, "If you sent me the books to inform me of an error which I had publicly advanced, pardon me, if I say, I know numbers, who call themselves Methodists, assert their assurance of salvation, at the very time they wallow in sins of the deepest dye." Permit me, Sir, to speak freely. I do not doubt the fact. But, 1. Those who are connected with *me*, do not *call themselves* Methodists. Others call them by that nickname, and they cannot help it: but I continually warn them, not to pin it upon themselves. 2. We rarely use that ambiguous expression of "Christ's righteousness imputed to us." 3. We believe a man may be a real Christian, without being "assured of his salvation." 4. We know no man can be assured of salvation, while he lives in any sin whatever. 5. The wretches who talk in that manner, are neither Methodists nor Moravians, but followers of William Cudworth, James Relly, and their associates, who abhor us as much as they do the Pope, and ten times more than they do the Devil. If *you* oppose these, so do *I*, and have done, privately and publicly, for these twenty years.

But you say, "Such as do not profess this doctrine, will not be affected by my sermon." Indeed they will: for the world (as you yourself did) lump all that are called Methodists together. Consequently, whatever you then said of Methodists in general, falls on *us* as well as them. And so *we* are condemned for those very principles, which we totally detest and abhor. A small part of the *Preservative* (had you taken the pains to read it) would have convinced you of this. "Did you send them to convince me of some important truth? I have the New Testament." So have I: and I have read it for above these fifty years; and for near forty, with some attention. Yet I will not say, that Mr. G—— may not convince me of some truth, which I never yet learned from it. I want every help, especially from those who strive both to preach and to live the gospel. Yet certainly I must dissent from you, or you from me, wherever either conceives the other to vary from it. Some of my writings you "have read." But allow me to ask, Did not you

read them with much prejudice? or little attention? Otherwise surely you would not have termed them *perplexing*. Very few lay obscurity or intricacy to my charge. Those who do not allow them to be *true*, do not deny them to be *plain*. And if they believe me to have done any good at all by writing, they suppose it is by this very thing, by speaking on practical and experimental religion more plainly than others have done.

I quite agree, we “neither can be better men, nor better Christians, than by continuing members of the Church of England.” And not only her doctrines, but many parts of discipline I have adhered to at the hazard of my life. If in any point I have since varied therefrom, it was not by choice but necessity. Judge, therefore, if they do well, who throw me into the ditch, and then beat me, because my clothes are dirty!

Wishing you much of the love of God in your heart, and much of his presence in your labours, I remain, Rev. Sir, your affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO THE REV. MR. D——.

DEAR SIR,

*Liverpool, April 6, 1761.*

LET who will speak, if what is spoken be true, I am ready to subscribe it. If it be not, I accept no man's person. *Magis amica Veritas*. I had an agreeable conversation with Mr. Venn, who I suppose is near you. I think, he is exactly as regular as he ought to be. I would observe every punctilio of order, except where the salvation of souls is at stake. There I prefer the end before the means.

I think it great pity that the few clergymen in England, who preach the three grand, scriptural doctrines, Original Sin, Justification by Faith, and Holiness consequent thereon, should have any jealousies or misunderstandings between them. What advantage must this give to the common enemy! What a hinderance is it to the great work wherein they are all engaged! How desirable is it that there should be the most open, avowed intercourse between them! So far indeed as they judge it would be for the glory of God, they may openly declare wherein they disagree.

But surely if they are ashamed to own one another, in the faces of all mankind, they are ashamed of Christ: they are ashamed of him that sends, if they dare not avow whom he has sent. Excuses indeed will never be wanting. But will these avail before God? For many years I have been labouring after this: labouring to unite, not scatter, the messengers of God. Not that I want any thing from them. As God has enabled me to stand, almost alone, for these twenty years, I doubt not but he will enable me to stand, either with them or without them. But I want all to be helpful to

each other : and all the world to know we are so. Let them know, who is on the Lord's side. You, I trust, will always be of that number. O let us preach and live the whole gospel ! The grace of our Lord be with your spirit !

I am, dear Sir,  
Your ever affectionate Brother and Servant,  
JOHN WESLEY.

---

### TO MR. JOHN TREMBATH.

*Tiverton, Sept. 21, 1755.*

THE plain reason why I did not design to speak with you at Launceston, was, because I had no hope of doing you good. I observed long ago, that you are not patient of reproof. And I fear you are now less so than ever. But, since you desire it, I will tell you once more what I think, fear, or hear, concerning you.

I think you tasted of the powers of the world to come thirteen or fourteen years ago, and were then simple of heart, and willing to spend and be spent for Christ. But not long after, not being sufficiently on your guard, you suffered loss by being applauded. This revived and increased your natural vanity, which was the harder to be checked, because of your constitutional stubbornness : two deadly enemies which have lain in wait for you many years, and have given you many deep, if not mortal, wounds.

I fear it is near ten years since you were so weakened by these, that you no longer set a watch over your mouth, but began frequently to speak what was not strictly true, to excuse yourself, divert others, or gain applause. I am afraid this has prevailed over you more and more, as there was less and less of the life of God in the soul : so that I should almost wonder if you do not judge a diverting lie to be a very innocent thing.

After your first marriage, being not used to, nor fond of reading, and not spending many hours in private prayer, time grew heavy on your hands ; especially as you could not bear the cross of being a regular travelling preacher : so you betook yourself to farming, and other country employments, and grew more and more dead to God. Especially when you began to keep company (whether by necessity or choice) with the men "whose talk is of bullocks," who have little to do either with religion or reason, and have but just wit enough to smoke, drink, and flatter you.

By these dull wretches you have been an unspeakable loser. Perhaps it was in company with some of these, that you first thought of taking a little sport, and catching a few fish, or killing a partridge or a hare. Miserable employment for a Preacher of the Gospel ! for a Methodist Preacher above all others ! Though I do not at all wonder, if after practising it for some time, you should be so infatuated as even to defend it. I am afraid these same poor creatures afterwards taught you (if that report be true) even to coun-

tenance that wickedness for which Cornwall stinks in the nostrils of all who fear God, or love King George ; I mean that of smuggling : though surely they could not persuade you to receive stolen goods ! That is an iniquity to be punished by the judges. Is there any truth in that other charge, (you must not ask who tells me so ; if so, I have done,) that you imposed on Mrs. H——, in the writings ; and fraudulently procured 100*l.* a year to be engaged for, instead of four-score ? I hope this was a mistake ; as well as that assertion, that you encouraged drunkenness, by suffering it in your company, if not in your own house.

O remember from whence you are fallen ! repent and do the first works ! First recover the life of God in your own soul, and walk as Christ walked. Walk with God as you did twelve years ago. Then you might again be useful to his children. Supposing you were truly alive to God yourself, how profitably then (leaving the dead to bury their dead,) might you spend three months in a year at Bristol, or London, three in Cornwall, and six in spreading the Gospel wherever it might be needful. I have now told you all that is in my heart ; I hope you will receive it not only with patience but profit.

You must be much in the way, or much out of the way : a good soldier for God, or for the Devil. O choose the better part !—now !—to-day !

I am your affectionate Brother,  
JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO MR. JOHN TREMBATH.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*Cork, Aug. 17, 1760.*

THE conversation I had with you yesterday in the afternoon, gave me a good deal of satisfaction. As to some things which I had heard, (with regard to your wasting your substance, drinking intemperately, and wronging the poor people at Silberton,) I am persuaded they were mistakes : as I suppose it was that you *converse much* with careless unawakened people. And I trust you will be more and more cautious in all these respects, abstaining from the very appearance of evil.

That you had not always attended the preaching, when you might have done it, you allowed, but seemed determined to remove that objection as well as the other, of using such exercises or diversions, as give offence to your brethren. I believe you will likewise endeavour to avoid light and trifling conversation, and to talk and behave in company with that seriousness and usefulness, which become a preacher of the Gospel.

Certainly some years ago you were alive to God. You experienced the life and power of religion. And does not God intend, that the trials you meet with, should bring you back to this ? You

cannot stand still; you know this is impossible. You must go forward or backward. Either you must recover that power, and be a Christian altogether, or in awhile you will have neither power, nor form, inside nor outside.

Extremely opposite both to one and the other, is that aptness to ridicule others, to make them contemptible, by exposing their real or supposed foibles. This I would earnestly advise you to avoid. It hurts yourself. It hurts the hearers. And it greatly hurts those who are so exposed, and tends to make them your irreconcilable enemies. It has also sometimes betrayed you into speaking what was not strictly true. O beware of this, above all things; never amplify; never exaggerate any thing. Be rigorous in adhering to truth. Be exemplary therein. Whatever has been in time past, let all men know, that John Trembath abhors lying: that he never promises any thing, which he does not perform. That his word is equal to his bond. I pray, be exact in this. Be a pattern of truth, sincerity, and godly simplicity.

What has exceedingly hurt you in time past, nay, and I fear to this day, is want of reading. I scarcely ever knew a preacher read so little. And, perhaps, by neglecting it, you have lost the taste for it. Hence your talent in preaching does not increase. It is just the same as it was seven years ago. It is lively, but not deep: there is little variety; there is no compass of thought. Reading only can supply this, with daily meditation and daily prayer. You wrong yourself greatly by omitting this. You can never be a deep preacher without it: any more than a thorough Christian. O begin! Fix some part of every day for private exercises. You may acquire the taste which you have not: what is tedious at first, will afterwards be pleasant. Whether you like it or not, read and pray daily. It is for your life: there is no other way; else you will be a trifler all your days, and a pretty, superficial preacher. Do justice to your own soul: give it time and means to grow. Do not starve yourself any longer. Take up your cross and be a Christian altogether. Then will all the children of God rejoice (not grieve) over you; and, in particular, yours, &c.

JOHN WESLEY.

## TO A FRIEND,

CONCERNING A PASSAGE IN THE MONTHLY REVIEW.

DEAR SIR,

*City-Road, Jan. 25, 1781.*

YESTERDAY, looking over the Monthly Review for last October, at page 307, I read the following words:

“Sir William’s Vindication” (of his own conduct) “is *not a feeble attempt* to rescue his reputation from the obloquy thrown upon it. Mr. Galloway’s book is here answered, paragraph by paragraph, and several misrepresentations of important facts and circumstances proved.”

I cannot quite agree with this. I think, 1. No unjust obloquy has been thrown upon it : 2. That his Vindication is a *very feeble attempt*, to justify his conduct : 3. That he has not answered, in a satisfactory manner, any one paragraph in Mr. Galloway's book : and, 3. That he has not proved any misrepresentation of any one important fact or circumstance.

I think also, that the account he gives of Mr. Galloway is a *very feeble attempt* to blacken his character ; for a full confutation whereof, I refer the candid reader to his own Answer. As to the *scurrility* Sir William speaks of, I see not the least trace of it in any thing Mr. G. has published. He is above it. He is no "*venal instrument of calumny*:" he abhors calumny as he does rebellion. But let him answer for himself : read only the tracts referred to, and then condemn him if you can.

I am, dear Sir, yours, &c.

JOHN WESLEY.

P S. I have been frequently attacked by the Monthly Reviewers, but did not answer, because we were not on even ground. But that difficulty is now over. Whatever they object in their Monthly Review, I can answer in my Monthly Magazine. And I shall think it my duty so to do, when the objection is of any importance.

---

TO ———, ON LAY PREACHING.

DEAR SIR,

*April 10, 1761.*

1. IN order to answer the question more clearly, which Mr. ——— has proposed to you, it may be well to look a little backward. Some years since, two or three clergymen of the Church of England, who were above measure zealous for all her rules and orders, were convinced, that religion is not an external thing, but righteousness, and peace, and joy, in the Holy Ghost : and that this righteousness, and peace, and joy, are given, only to those who are justified by faith. As soon as they were convinced of these great truths, they preached them ; and multitudes flocked to hear. For these reasons, and no others, real or pretended, (for as yet they were strictly *regular*.) because they *preached such doctrine*, and because *such multitudes followed* them, they were forbidden to preach in the churches. Not daring to be silent, they preached elsewhere, in a school, by a river-side, or upon a mountain. And more and more sinners forsook their sins, and were filled with peace and joy in believing.

2. But at the same time huge offence was taken at their "gathering congregations" in so *irregular* a manner. And it was asked,

(1.) "Do you judge that the Church, with the authority of the State, has power to enact laws for her own government?" I answer, If a dispensation of the gospel is committed to me, no church has power to enjoin me silence. Neither has the State ; though it may *abuse* its power, and enact laws whereby I suffer for preaching the gospel.

(2.) “Do you judge it your duty to submit to the laws of the Church and State, as far as they are consistent with a good conscience?”

I do. But wo is me, if I *preach not* the gospel. This is not consistent with a good conscience.

(3.) “Is it a law of the Church and State, that none of her ministers shall *gather congregations*, but by the appointment of the bishop? If any do, does not she forbid her people to attend them? Are they not subversive of the good order of the Church? Do you judge there is anything sinful in such a law?”

I answer, 1. If there is a law, that a minister of Christ, who is not suffered to preach the gospel in the Church, should not preach it elsewhere, I do judge that law to be absolutely sinful. 2. If that law forbids Christian people to hear the gospel of Christ out of their parish-church, when they cannot hear it therein, I judge it would be sinful for them to obey it. 3. This preaching is not subversive of any *good order* whatever. It is only subversive of that vile *abuse of the good order* of our Church, whereby men, who neither preach nor live the gospel, are suffered publicly to overturn it from the foundation: and in the room of it to palm upon their congregations a wretched mixture of dead form and maimed morality.

(4.) “If these premises be allowed”—They cannot be allowed. So, from nothing, nothing follows.

3. It was objected farther,

(1.) “In every nation there must be *some settled order* of government, ecclesiastical and civil.”

There must. But put *civil* out of the question. It only tends to puzzle the cause.

(2.) “The Scriptures likewise enjoin this.” They do, that *all things* in the church be *done in order*.

(3.) “There is an ecclesiastical order established in England. And it is a lawful one.”

I believe it is, in general, not only lawful, but highly commendable.

(4.) But Mr. ——— tells you, “You are born under this establishment. Your ancestors supported it, and were ennobled on that account.” These points, I think, are not very material. But that which follows is. “You have, by deliberate and repeated acts of your own, engaged yourself to defend it. Your very rank and station constitute you a formal and eminent guardian of it.”

A guardian of what? What is it that you have “deliberately engaged yourself to defend?” The constitution of the Church of England. And is not her *doctrine* a main part of this constitution? A far more essential part thereof, than any rule of external *order*? Of this then you are a formal guardian, and you have deliberately engaged yourself to defend it. But have you deliberately engaged to defend her *orders*, to the destruction of her *doctrine*? Are you a guardian of this *external circumstance*, when it tends to destroy the *substance* of her constitution? And if you are engaged, at all events, to defend her *order*, are you also to defend the *abuse* of it? Surely

not. Your rank, your station, your honour, your conscience, all engage you to oppose this.

(5.) "But how can it consist with the duty arising from all these, to give *encouragement, countenance, and support*, to principles and practices that are a direct renunciation of the established constitution? and that, in their genuine issue" (or natural tendency) "are totally subversive of it?"

Are "the principles of those clergymen a *direct renunciation* of the established constitution?" Are "their practices so?" Are either the one or the other "totally subversive of it?" Not so. Their fundamental principles are the very principles of the established Church. So is their practice too; save in a very few points, where-in they are constrained to deviate. Therefore, it is no ways inconsistent with your duty to *encourage, countenance, and support* them; especially seeing they have no alternative. They must either be *thus far* irregular, or destroy their own souls, and let thousands of their brethren perish for lack of knowledge.

(6.) Nay, but their "principles and practices are of this character. For, 1. They gather congregations and exercise their ministerial office therein, in every part of this kingdom, directly contrary to the restraint laid on them at their ordination, and to the design of that parochial distribution of duty, settled throughout this nation. 2. They maintain it lawful for men to preach, who are not episcopally ordained, and thereby contradict the twenty-third Article. 3. They disclaim all right in the bishops to control them in any of these matters, and say, That rather than be so controlled, they would renounce all communion with the Church. 4. These principles they industriously propagate among their followers."

I answer, 1. They do gather congregations every where, and exercise their ministerial office therein. But this is not "contrary to any restraint which was laid upon them at their ordination." For they were not ordained to serve any particular parish. And it is remarkable that *Lincoln College* was founded "*Ad propagandam Christianam Fidem et extirpandas Hæreses.*" But were it otherwise suppose a parish-minister to be either ignorant or negligent of his duty, and one of his flock adjures me, for Christ's sake, to tell him what he must do to be saved: was it ever the design of our Church, that I should refuse to do it, because he is not of my parish? 2. "They maintain it lawful for men to preach, who are not episcopally ordained." In some circumstances, they do: particularly where thousands are rushing to destruction, and those who are *ordained* and appointed to watch over them, neither care for, nor know how to help them. "But hereby they contradict the twenty-third Article, to which they have subscribed." They subscribed it in the simplicity of their hearts, when they firmly believed none but episcopal ordination valid. But Bishop Stillingfleet has since fully convinced them, this was an entire mistake. 3. "They disclaim all right in the bishops to control them in any of these matters." In every point of an indifferent nature, they obey the bishops, for conscience' sake. But they think *episcopal* authority cannot reverse what is fixed by *divine* authority

Yet they are determined, never "to renounce communion with the Church," unless they are cast out head-long. "If it be said, Nay, but if I varied from the Church at all, I would throw off my gown, and be a professed Dissenter." What! would you *profess* to dissent, when you did not? If *you* would, they dare not do it. They love the Church, and therefore keep to all her doctrines and rules, as far as possibly they can. And if they vary *at all*, it shall not be a hair's breadth farther than they cannot help. 4. "These principles they industriously propagate among their followers." Indeed they do not: the bulk of their followers know just nothing of the matter. They industriously propagate among them, nothing but inward and outward holiness.

(7.) "Now these are oppositions to the *most fundamental principles*, and *essentially constituent* parts of our establishment: and not of ours only, but of every ecclesiastical establishment, that is or ever has been in the Christian world."

"The most fundamental principles!" No more than the tiles are "the most fundamental principles" of a house. Useful doubtless they are: yet you must take them off, if you would repair the rotten timber beneath. "Essentially constituent parts of our establishment!" Well, we will not quarrel for a word. Perhaps the doors may be "essentially constituent parts" of the building we call a church. Yet if it were on fire, we might innocently break them open, or even throw them for a time off the hinges. Now this is really the case. The timber is rotten, yea, the main beams of the house. And they want to place that firm beam, salvation by faith, in the room of salvation by works. A fire is kindled in the Church, the house of the living God. The fire of love of the world, ambition, covetousness, envy, anger, malice, bitter zeal; in one word, of ungodliness and unrighteousness! O who will come and help to quench it? Under disadvantages and discouragements of every kind, a little handful of men have made a beginning. And I trust they will not leave off, till the building is saved, or they sink in the ruins of it.

4. To sum up the whole. A few irregular men openly witness those truths of God, which the regular clergy (a few excepted) either suppress or wholly deny.

Their word is accompanied with the power of God, convincing and converting sinners. The word of those is not accompanied with power. It neither wounds nor heals.

The former, witness the truth and the power of God, by their own life and conversation. Therefore the world, men who know not God, hate them, and speak all manner of evil against them falsely. The latter, are of the world. Therefore the world loves its own, and speaks honourably of them.

Which of these ought you to hear? Those who declare, or those who deny the truth of God? That word which is the power of God unto salvation? Or that which lulls men on to destruction? The men who live, as well as preach the gospel? Or those whose lives are no better than their doctrine?

"But they are irregular." I answer,

1. That is not their choice. They must either preach irregularly, or not at all. 2. Is such a circumstance of weight to turn the scale against the substance of the gospel? If it is; if none ought to speak or hear the truth of God, unless in a *regular* manner, then (to mention but one consequence) there never could have been any reformation from Popery. For here the entire argument for *Church-order* would have stood in its full force. Suppose one had asked a German nobleman to hear Martin Luther preach, might not his priest have said, (without debating, whether he preached the truth or not,) "My Lord, in every nation there must be *some settled order* of government, ecclesiastical, and civil. There is an *ecclesiastical order* established in Germany. You are born under this establishment. Your ancestors supported it, and your very rank and station constitute you a formal and eminent guardian of it. How then can it consist with the duty arising from all these, to give *encouragement, countenance, and support*, to principles and practices that are a direct renunciation of the *established constitution*?" Had the force of this reasoning been allowed, what had become of the reformation?

Yet it was right. Though it really was a subversion of the whole *ecclesiastical constitution*, with regard to doctrine as well as discipline. Whereas, this is no such thing. The *doctrine* of the *established Church*, which is far the most essential part of her *constitution*, these preachers manifestly confirm, in opposition to those who *subvert* it. And it is the opposition made to them by those subverters, which constrains them, in *some* respects, to deviate from her discipline, to which, in *all others*, they conform for conscience. O what pity, that any who preach the same doctrine, and whom those subverters have not yet been able to thrust out, should join with them against their brethren in the common faith, and fellow-witnesses of the common salvation!

I am, dear Sir, your willing Servant for Christ's sake,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## TO THE REV MR. FURLEY.—ON A GOOD STYLE.

DEAR SIR,

Liverpool, July 15, 1764.

I HAVE had many thoughts since we parted, on the subject of our late conversation. I send you them just as they occur. "What is it that constitutes a *good style*?" Perspicuity, purity, propriety, strength, and easiness, joined together. When any one of these is wanting, it is not a good style. Dr. Middleton's style wants easiness. It is *stiff* to a high degree. And stiffness in writing is full as great a fault as stiffness in behaviour. It is a blemish hardly to be excused, much less to be imitated. He is *pedantic*. "It is pedantry," says the great Lord Boyle, "to use a hard word, where an easier will serve." Now this the Doctor continually does, and that of set purpose. His style is abundantly too *artificial*: *artis est celare artem*; but *his* art glares in every sentence. He continually says, "Observe how finely

I speak." Whereas a good speaker seems to forget he speaks at all. His full, round curls, naturally put one in mind of Sir Cloudesly Shovel's peruke, that "eternal buckle takes in Parian stone." Yet this very fault may appear a beauty to you, because you are apt to halt on the same foot. There is a stiffness both in your carriage and speech, and something of it in your very familiarity. But for this very reason, you should be jealous of your self, and guard against your natural infirmity. If you imitate any writers, let it be South, Atterbury, or Swift, in whom *all* the properties of a good writer meet. I was myself once much fonder of Prior than Pope: as I did not then know that *stiffness* was a fault. But what in all Prior can equal, for beauty of style, some of the first lines that Pope ever published?

"Poets themselves must die, like those they sung,  
Deaf the prais'd ear, and mute the tuneful tongue,  
Ev'n he whose heart now melts in tender lays,  
Shall shortly want the gen'rous tear he pays.  
Then from his eyes thy much-lov'd form shall part;  
And the last pang shall tear thee from his heart:  
Life's idle business at one gasp be o'er,  
The Muse forgot, and thou belov'd no more."

Here is style! How clear; how pure, proper, strong, and yet how amazingly *easy*! This crowns all: no stiffness, no hard words: no *apparent* art, no affectation: all is natural, and therefore consummately beautiful. Go thou and *write* likewise. As for *me*, I never think of my style at all, but just set down the words that come first. Only when I transcribe any thing for the press, then I think it my duty to see that every phrase be clear, pure, and proper. Conciseness (which is now as it were natural to me) brings *quantum sufficit* of strength. If, after all, I observe any stiff expression, I throw it out, neck and shoulders.

Clearness in particular is necessary for you and me: because we are to instruct people of the lowest understanding. Therefore, we above all, if we *think* with the wise, yet must speak with the *vulgar*. We should constantly use the most common, little, easy words, (so they are pure and proper,) which our language affords. When I had been a member of the University about ten years, I wrote and talked much as you do now. But when I talked to plain people in the castle, or the town, I observed they gaped and stared. This quickly obliged me to alter my style, and adopt the language of those I spoke to. And yet there is a dignity in this simplicity, which is not disagreeable to those of the highest rank.

I advise *you* sacredly to abstain from reading any stiff writer. A by-stander sees more than those that play the game. Your style is much hurt already. Indeed something might be said, if you were a learned *Infidel*, writing for money or reputation. But that is not the case: you are a Christian minister, speaking and writing to save souls. Have this end always in your eye, and you will never designedly use any hard word. Use all the sense, learning, and time you have: forgetting yourself, and remembering only those are the souls for whom Christ died; heirs of a happy, or miserable eternity!

I am your affectionate Friend and Brother, J. WESLEY.

TO THE REV. MR. VENN.—ON UNION AMONG  
GOSPEL MINISTERS.

REV. AND DEAR SIR,

*Birmingham, June 22, 1765.*

HAVING at length a few hours to spare, I sit down to answer your last, which was particularly acceptable to me, because it was written with so great openness. I shall write with the same. And herein you and I are just fit to converse together, because we both like to speak bluntly and plainly, without going a great way round about. I shall likewise take this opportunity of explaining myself on some other heads. I want you to understand me inside and out. Then I say, "*Sic sum : Si placeo, utere.*"

Were I allowed to boast myself a little, I would say, I want no man living, I mean, none but those who are now connected with me, and who bless God for that connexion. With these I am able to go through every part of the work, to which I am called. Yet I have laboured after union with all whom I believe to be united with Christ. I have sought it again and again; but in vain. They were resolved to stand aloof. And when one and another sincere minister of Christ has been inclined to come nearer to me, others have diligently kept them off, as though thereby they did God service.

To this poor end the doctrine of Perfection has been brought in head and shoulders. And when such concessions were made as would abundantly satisfy any fair and candid man, they were no nearer: rather farther off: for they had no desire to be satisfied. To make this *dear* breach wider and wider, stories were carefully gleaned up, improved, yea, invented and retailed, both concerning me and "the perfect ones." And when any thing very bad has come to hand, some have rejoiced as though they had found great spoils.

By this means chiefly, the distance between you and me, has increased ever since you came to Huddersfield, and perhaps it has not been lessened by that honest, well-meaning man, Mr. Burnet, and by others who have talked largely of my dogmaticals, love of power, errors, and irregularities. My dogmaticalness is neither more nor less than a "custom of coming to the point at once," and telling my mind flatly and plainly, without any preface or ceremony. I could indeed premise something of my own imbecility, littleness of judgment, and the like: but, First, I have no time to lose. I must despatch the matter as soon as possible. Secondly, I do not think it frank or ingenuous. I think these prefaces are mere artifice.

The *power* I have I never *sought*. It was the undesired, unexpected result of the work God was pleased to work by me. I have a thousand times sought to devolve it on others: but as yet I cannot. I therefore suffer it till I can find any to ease me of my burden.

If any one will convince me of my *errors*, I will heartily thank him. I believe all the Bible as far as I understand it, and am ready to be convinced. If I am a heretic, I became such by reading the Bible. All my notions I drew from thence: and with little help

from men, unless in the single point of Justification by Faith. But I impose my notions upon none: I will be bold to say, there is no man living farther from it. I make no opinion the term of union with any man: I think and let think. What I want, is holiness of heart and life. They who have this, are my brother, sister, and mother.

“But you hold perfection.” True: that is, loving God with *all* our heart, and serving him with *all* our strength: I teach nothing more, nothing less, than this. And whatever infirmity, defect, *ανομια*, is consistent with this, any man may teach, and I shall not contradict him.

As to *irregularity*, I hope none of those who cause it, do then complain of it. Will they throw a man into the dirt, and beat him because he is dirty? Of all men living, those clergymen ought not to complain, who believe I preach the gospel, (as to the substance of it.) If they do not ask me to preach in their churches, *they* are accountable for my preaching in the fields.

I come now directly to your letter, in hopes of establishing a good understanding between us. I agreed to suspend, for a twelvemonth, our stated preaching at Huddersfield, which had been there these many years. If this answered your end, I am glad: my end it did not answer at all. Instead of coming nearer to me, you got farther off. I heard of it from every quarter: though few knew that I did; for I saw no cause to speak against *you*, because you did against *me*. I wanted you to do more, not less good, and therefore durst not do or say any thing to hinder it. And lest I should hinder it, I will make a farther trial, and suspend the preaching at Huddersfield for another year.

1. To clear the case between us a little farther, I must now adopt your words, “I, no less than you, preach Justification by Faith only, the absolute necessity of Holiness, the increasing mortification of sin, and the rejection of all past experiences and attainments. I abhor, as you do, all Antinomian abuse of the doctrine of Christ, and desire to see my people walking even as he walked. Is it then worth while, in order to gratify a few bigotted persons, or for the sake of the minute differences between us,” to encourage “all the train of evils which follow *contentions for opinions*, in little matters as much as in great?”

2. If I was as strenuous with regard to Perfection on one side, as you have been on the other, I should deny you to be *a. sufficient* preacher: but this I never did. And yet I assure you, I can advance such reasons for all I teach, as would puzzle you and all that condemn me, to answer: but I am sick of disputing. Let *them* beat the air, and triumph without an opponent.

3. “None, you say, preach in your houses, who do not hold the very same doctrine with you.” This is not exactly the case. You are welcome to preach in any of those houses: as I know we agree in the main points: and wherein soever we differ, you would not preach there contrary to me. “But would it not give you pain to have any other teacher come among those committed to your charge,

so as to have your plan disconcerted, your labours depreciated, and the affections of your flock alienated?" It has given me pain when I had reason to fear this was done, both at Leeds, Birstal, and elsewhere. And I was "under a temptation of speaking against you:" but I refrained even among my intimate friends. So far was I from publicly warning my people against one I firmly believed to be much better than myself.

4. Indeed I trust "the bad blood is now taken away." Let it return no more. Let us begin such a correspondence as has never been yet, and let us avow it before all mankind. Not content with not weakening each other's hands, or speaking against each other, directly or indirectly, (which may be effectually done under the notion of exposing this and that error,) let us defend each other's characters to the uttermost against either ill or well-meaning evil-speakers. I am not satisfied with, "Be very civil to the Methodists, but have nothing to do with them." No: I desire to have a league offensive and defensive, with every soldier of Christ. We have not only one faith, one hope, one Lord, but are directly engaged in one warfare. We are carrying the war into the Devil's own quarters, who therefore summons all his hosts to war. Come then, ye that love him, to the help of the Lord, to the help of the Lord against the mighty! I am now well nigh *Miles emeritus, Senex, Sexagenarius*. Yet I trust to fight a little longer. Come and strengthen the hands, till you supply the place of

Your weak, but affectionate Brother,  
JOHN WESLEY

---

TO MRS. A. F——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

October 12, 1764.

THAT great truth, "That we are saved by Faith," will never be *worn out*: and that sanctifying as well as justifying faith, is the free gift of God. Now, with God one day is as a thousand years. It plainly follows, that the quantity of time is nothing to him: centuries, years, months, days, hours, and moments, are exactly the same. Consequently, he can as well sanctify in a day after we are justified, as a hundred years. There is no difference at all, unless we suppose him to be such an one as ourselves. Accordingly we see in fact, that *some* of the most unquestionable witnesses of sanctifying grace, were sanctified within a *few days* after they were justified. I have seldom known so devoted a soul, as E—— H——, at Macclesfield, who was sanctified within nine days after she was *convinced of sin*. She was then twelve years old, and I believe was never afterwards heard to speak an *improper word*, or known to do an *improper thing*. Her look struck an awe into all that saw her. She is now in Abraham's Bosom.

Although, therefore, it *usually* pleases God to interpose *some time* between justification and sanctification, yet, (as is expressly observed

in the Farther Thoughts) we must not fancy this to be an invariable rule. All who think this, must think we are sanctified by works, or (which comes to the same) by sufferings. For otherwise, what is *time* necessary for? It must be either to do or to suffer. Whereas if nothing be required but simple faith, a moment is as good as an age.

The truth is, we are continually forming *general rules* from our own *particular* experience. Thus S— R—, having gone about, and about, herself, which took up a considerable time, might very naturally suppose, all who are sanctified must stay for it near as long a time as she did. Again, if God has so rooted and grounded her in love, (which I neither affirm nor deny) that she *cannot* now fall from him, she very naturally thinks, this is the case with *all* that are sanctified. Formerly S. C. drew the same inference from her own experience, and was as positive that she *could not fall* from that state, as S. R— can be now.

But “none can be sanctified without a deep knowledge of themselves, and of the devices of Satan.” They may, without the latter; which God will give them in due time. And the former he can give in a moment: and frequently does, of which we have fresh instances almost every day.

In the “Thoughts on Perfection,” it is observed, that before any can be assured, they are saved from sin, they must not only feel no sin, but “have a direct witness” of that salvation. And this several have had as clear as S. R— has, who afterwards fell from that salvation: although S. R—, to be consistent with her scheme, must deny they ever had it; yea, and must affirm, that witness was either from nature or from the Devil. If it was really from God, is he well pleased with this?

I know not how to reconcile speaking *sharply or roughly*, or even a seeming want of *meekness*, with perfection. And yet I am fearful of condemning whom God has not condemned. What I cannot understand I leave to Him.

How is it, that you make me write longer letters to you than I do almost to any one else? I know not how, I find a greater concern for your welfare. I want you to be exactly right. This occasions my not thinking much of any pains, that may give you help or satisfaction. The Lord touch your heart *now*, that all your tempers, thoughts, words, and works, may be holiness unto our God!

I am your's, &c.

JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO MR. HOSMER.—ON THE ADAMIC LAW.

*Newcastle-upon-Tyne, June 7, 1761.*

MY DEAR BROTHER,

I APPREHEND if you will give another careful reading to those four pages, 244—247, you will find ally our objections antici-

pated or answered. However, I do not think much of answering them over again. Your words are,

You say, "A mistake is not a sin, if love is the sole principle of action. Yet it is a transgression of the *perfect law*." Therefore *perfect love* is not the *perfect law*! Most sure. For by the *perfect law* I mean, that given to Adam at his creation. But "The loving God with all his heart" was not the *whole of that law*: it implied abundantly more: even *thinking, speaking, and acting right* in every instance, which he was then *able*, and therefore *obliged* to do. But none of his descendants are able to do this. Therefore love is the fulfilling of *their law*.

Perhaps you had not adverted to this. The law of love, which is the *whole law* given to us, is only *one branch* of that *perfect law*, which was given to Adam in the beginning. His law was far wider than ours, as his faculties were more extensive. Consequently, many things might be transgressions of the latter, which were not of the former.

"But if ignorance be a transgression of the perfect law"—Whoever said or thought so? Ignorance is not: but *mistake* is. And this Adam was able to avoid: that kind of ignorance which was in him not constraining him to mistake, as ours frequently does.

"But is 'a voluntary transgression of a known law,' a proper definition of *sin*?" I think it is, of all such sin as is imputed to *our* condemnation. And it is a definition which has passed uncensured in the church, for at least fifteen hundred years.

To propose any objections that naturally arise, is right: but beware you do not *seek* objections. If you once begin this, you will never have done. Indeed this whole affair is a *strife of words*. The thing is plain. All in the body are liable to mistakes, practical as well as speculative. Shall we call them *sins* or not? I answer again and again, *Call* them just what you please.

JOHN WESLEY

---

### TO MR. ALEXANDER COATS.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

Otley, July 7, 1761.

THE perfection I teach, is perfect love; loving God with all the heart: receiving Christ as Prophet, Priest, and King, to reign alone over all our thoughts, words, and actions. The Papists neither teach nor believe this: give even the Devil his due. They *teach*, there is no perfection here, which is not consistent with *venial sins*: and among venial sins, they commonly reckon simple fornication. Now I think this is so far from the perfection I teach, that it does not come up to any but Mr. Reilly's Perfection. To say, Christ will not reign alone in our hearts in this life; will not enable us to give him all our hearts: this, in my judgment, is making him a *half Saviour*; he

can be no more, if he does not *quite save* us from our sins. I pray then, be not quite so peremptory. Who exalts Christ most? those who call on him to be *sole Monarch* of the heart? or those who allow him only to *share* the power, and to govern *most* of the thoughts and tempers? Who honour him most? those who believe he heals all our sickness, takes away *all* our ungodliness? or those who say, he heals only the *greater part* of it, till death does what He cannot do? I know no creature (of us) who says, "Part of our salvation belongs to Christ, and part to us." No: we all say, Christ alone saves us from *all* sin: and your question is not about the *Author*, but the measure of salvation. Both agree it is *all Christ*: but is it *all salvation*, or only *half salvation*, he will give? Who was Pelagius? By all I can pick up from ancient authors, I guess he was both a wise, and a holy man. But we know nothing but his name: for his writings are all destroyed: not one line of them left. But, Brother Coats, *This way of talking* is highly offensive. I advise you, 1. (If you are willing to labour with us,) preach no doctrine contrary to ours. I have preached twenty years in some of Mr. Whitefield's societies: yet to this day, I never contradicted him among his own people: I did not think it honest: neither necessary at all. I could preach salvation by faith, and leave all controversy untouched. I advise you, 2. Avoid all those strong rhetorical exclamations, "O horrid! O dreadful!" and the like; unless when you are strongly exhorting sinners, to renounce the Devil and all his works. 3. Acquaint yourself better with the doctrine we preach, and you will find it not dreadful, but altogether lovely. 4. Observe, that if forty persons think and speak wrong, either about justification or sanctification, (and perhaps fancy they have attained both,) this is no objection to the doctrines themselves. They must bear their own burden. But this does not at all affect the point in question. 5. Remember, as sure as you are that "believers cannot fall from grace," others (wise and holy men too) are equally sure, they can: and you are as much obliged to bear with them, as they are to bear with you. 6. Abstain from all controversy in public. Indeed, you have not a talent for it. You have an honest heart, but not a clear head. Practical religion is your point. Therefore, 7. Keep to this, repentance toward God, faith in Christ, holiness of heart and life, a growing in grace, and in the knowledge of Christ, the continual need of his atoning blood, a constant confidence in him, and all these every moment to your life's end. In none of these will any of our preachers contradict you, or you them.

When you leave this plain path, and get into controversy, then they think you "invade the glories of our adorable King, and the unspeakable right, and privileges, and comforts, of his children;" and can *they* then "tamely hold their peace?"

O Sander, know the value of peace and love!

I am, your affectionate Brother,  
JOHN WESLEY.

TO MR. S. F.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*Bristol, Oct. 13, 1752.*

IN general, when I apprehend, "Certainly this is a contradiction:" if I find other persons of equal sagacity with myself, of equal natural and acquired abilities apprehend, it is not; I immediately suspect my own judgment; and the more so, because I remember, I have been many times *full as sure* as I am now: and yet afterwards, I found myself mistaken.

As to this particular question, I believe I am able to answer every objection which can be made. But I am not able to do it without expending much time, which may be better employed. For this reason I am persuaded, it is so far from being my duty to enter into a formal controversy about it, that it would be a wilful sin; it would be employing my short residue of life, in a less profitable way than it may be employed.

The proposition which I will hold is this: "A person may be cleansed from all *sinful tempers*, and yet need the atoning blood. For what? For "negligences and ignorances:" for both words and actions (as well as omissions) which are, in a sense, transgressions of the perfect law. And I believe, no one is clear of these, till he lays down this corruptible body.

Now, Sammy, dropping the point of contradiction, tell me simply what you would have more? Do you believe evil tempers remain till death? All, or some? If some only, which?

I love truth wherever I find it, so if you can help me to a little more of it, you will oblige, dear Sammy, yours, &c.

JOHN WESLEY.

TO MRS. S. R.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Norwich, Nov. 22, 1757.*

MAY the peace and love of God spring up in your heart, as in time past, and more abundantly! You have refreshed my bowels in the Lord: I feel your words, and praise God on your behalf. I not only excuse, but love your simplicity, and whatever freedom you use, it will be welcome.

Surely God will never suffer me to be ashamed of my confidence in you. I have been censured for it by some of your nearest friends; but I cannot repent of it. Will not you put forth all your strength, (which indeed is not yours; it is the Spirit of the Father which now worketh in you,) 1. In managing all things pertaining to the house, so as to adorn the gospel of God our Saviour? 2. In feeding the sheep he has committed to your immediate care, and carrying the weak and sickly in your bosom? 3. In assisting, quickening, and directing the family at Kingswood, whom I trust you will always bear upon your heart? 4. In reproof, stirring up, or confirming all

whom the providence of God shall put into your hands? And, lastly, in watching over, and helping forward in the ways of God, one who has more need of help than all the rest? And who is always willing to receive it from *you*, because you always speak the truth in love.

Do you find no interruption or abatement at any time of your joy in the Lord? Do you continually see God? And that without any cloud, or darkness, or mist, between? Do you pray without ceasing, without ever being diverted from it, by any thing inward or outward? Are you never hindered by any person or thing? By the power or subtlety of Satan, or by the weakness or disorders of the body pressing down the soul? Can you be thankful for every thing without exception? And do you feel all working together for good? Do you do nothing, great or small, merely to please yourself? Do you feel no touch of any desire or affection, but what springs from the pure love of God? Do you speak no words but from a principle of love, and under the guidance of his Spirit? O how I long to find you unblamable in all things, and holy as he that hath called you is holy!

I am your's, &c. J. W.

---

### TO THE SAME.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Dec. 14, 1757.

I FIND by Mr. P—n's last letter, that he is deeply offended: that his former affection (so he speaks) "is degenerated into a cold esteem, and that he no longer regards me as a dear friend, but as an austere master." Has he not a little affected *you*? He does not speak with passion; but his words distil as the dew. The God whom you serve send forth his light and his truth, and direct you in every thought!

Do you never find any *wandering thoughts* in prayer? Or useless thoughts at other seasons? Does the corruptible body never press down the soul, and make it muse about useless things? Have you so great a command over your imagination, as to keep out all unprofitable images? At least to banish them the moment they appear, so that they neither trouble, nor sully your soul? Do you find every *reasoning* brought into captivity to the obedience of Christ? Is there no vanity or folly in your *dreams*? No temptation that almost overcomes you? And are you then as sensible of the presence of God, and as full of prayer, as when you are waking?

I can hardly avoid trembling for you still: upon what a pinnacle do you stand! Perhaps few persons in England have been in so dangerous a situation, as you are now? I know not whether any other was ever so regarded both by my brother and me at the same time. What can I do to help you? The Father of mercies help you, and with his favourable kindness surround you on every side! May the eternal Spirit help you in every thought, word, and work, to serve the living God!

I am, your affectionate Brother, J. W.

## TO THE SAME.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Jan. 20, 1758.*

HOW did you feel yourself under your late trial? Did you find no stirring of resentment? No remains of your own will? No desire or wish, that things should be otherwise? In one sense, you *do* desire it: because you desire that God should be glorified in all things. But did not the falling short of that desire lessen your happiness? Had you still the same degree of communion with God? The same joy in the Holy Ghost? I never saw you so much moved as you appeared to be that evening. Your soul was then greatly troubled. And was not your heart unhinged at all? Was it not ruffled or discomposed? Was your soul all the time calmly stayed on God? Waiting upon him without distraction? Perhaps one end of this close trial was to give you deeper knowledge of yourself and of God? Of his power to save, and of the salvation he hath wrought in you.

Most of the trials you have lately met with, have been of another kind; but it is expedient for you to go through both evil and good report.—The conversing with you, either by speaking or writing, is an unspeakable blessing to me. I cannot think of you, without thinking of God. Others often lead me to him; but it is, as it were, going round about: you bring me straight into his presence.

I am your affectionate brother, J. W

## TO THE SAME.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Dublin, April 4, 1758.*

O THAT I could be of some use to you! I long to help you forward in your way. I want to have your understanding a mere lamp of light, always shining with light from above! I want you to be full of divine knowledge and wisdom, as Jordan in the time of harvest. I want your words to be full of grace, poured out as precious ointment. I want your every work to bear the stamp of God, to be a sacrifice of a sweet smelling savour! Without any part weak, earthly, or human: all holy; divine! The great God, your Father and your Love, bring you to this self-same thing! Begin, soldier of Christ, child of God! Walk worthy of the vocation wherewith thou art called! Remember the faith! Remember the Captain of thy salvation! Fight! Conquer! Die—and live for ever!

I am your's, &c. J. W

## TO LADY ———.

MY LADY,

March 18, 1760.

IT was impossible to see the distress, into which your ladyship was thrown, by the late unhappy affair, without bearing a part of it, without sympathizing with you. But may we not see God therein? May we not both hear and understand his voice? We must allow it is generally "small and still:" yet sometimes he speaks in the whirlwind. Permit me to speak to your ladyship with all freedom; not as to a person of quality, but as to a creature whom the Almighty made for himself, and one that is in a few days to appear before him.

You *were* not only a nominal, but a real Christian. You *tasted* of the powers of the world to come. You knew; God the Father had accepted you through his eternal Son. And God the Spirit bore witness with your spirit, that you were a child of God.

But you fell among thieves, and such as were peculiarly qualified to rob you of your God. Two of these in particular were sensible, learned, well-bred, well-natured, moral men. These did not assault you in a rough, abrupt, offensive manner. No; you would then have armed yourself against them, and have repelled all their attacks. But by soft, delicate, unobserved touches, by pleasing strokes of raillery, by insinuations rather than surly arguments, they, by little and little, sapped the foundation of your faith; perhaps, not only of your *living faith*, your "evidence of things not seen;" but even of your *notional*. It is well if they left you so much as an assent to the Bible, or a belief, that Christ is God over all! And what was the consequence of this? Did not your love of God grow cold? Did not you "measure back your steps to earth again?" Did not your love of the world revive? Even of those poor, low trifles, which in your very childhood you utterly despised?

Where are you now? Full of faith? Looking into the Holiest, and seeing Him that is invisible? Does your heart now glow with love to Him, who is daily pouring his benefits upon you? Do you now even desire it? Do you now say, (as you did almost twenty years ago)

Keep me dead to all below,  
Only Christ resolv'd to know!  
Firm, and disengag'd, and free,  
Seeking all my bliss in Thee!

Is your taste now for heavenly things? Are not you a lover of pleasure, more than a lover of God? And, O! what pleasure? What is the pleasure of visiting? Of modern conversation? Is there any more reason than religion in it? I wonder, what rational appetite does it gratify? Setting religion quite out of the question, I cannot conceive, how a woman of sense can—*relish*, should I say? No. but *suffer* so insipid an entertainment.

O that the time past may suffice ! Is it not now high time that you should awake out of sleep ? Now God calls aloud ! My dear lady, now hear the voice of the Son of God and live ! The trouble in which your tender parent is now involved may restore all that reverence for her, which could not but be a little impaired, while you supposed she was “righteous over-much.” O how admirably does God lay hold of, and “strengthen the things that remain in you ?” Your gratitude, your humane temper ; your generosity ; your filial tenderness ? And why is this, but to improve every right temper, to free you from all that is irrational or unholy, to make you all that you *were*, yea, all that you *should* be ; to restore you to the whole image of God !

I am, my Lady, your's, &c.

J. WESLEY.

TO LORD ———.

MY LORD,

July 26, 1764.

UPON an attentive consideration, it will appear to every impartial person, that the uniting of the serious clergy, in the manner I proposed in a former letter, is not a matter of indifferency ; but what none can reject, unless at the peril of his own soul. For every article therein mentioned, is undeniably contained in the royal law, the law of love ; and consequently the observance thereof, is bound upon every man, as indispensably necessary to salvation. It will appear farther, that every single person may observe it whether the other will or not. For many years, I, for instance, have observed this rule in every article. I labour to do so now, and will, by God's help, whatever others do, observe it to the end.

I rejoice that your lordship so heartily concurs in doing what is in your power, to promote a general observance of it. Certainly this is not possible to be effected by merely human means : but it seems your lordship has taken one good step towards it, by communicating it to several. I am persuaded, at the same time, your lordship's approbation and wish is, that it might take place every where. The same step I purpose to take, by sending to each of those gentlemen, the substance of what I wrote to your lordship, and desiring them to tell me freely, whatever objections they have against such a union. As many of those as are grounded on reason, I doubt not, will be easily answered. Those only which spring from some wrong temper must remain, till that temper is subdued. For instance : first, we cannot unite, says one, because we cannot trust one another. I answer to your *reason* or *understanding*, no matter whether we can or not. Thus far we must unite, trust or not, otherwise we sin against God : secondly, I can trust *you*, why cannot you trust me ? I can have no private end herein. I have neither personal hopes nor fears from you. I want nothing which you can give me ; and I am not afraid of your doing me any hurt ; though

you may hurt yourself and the cause of God. But I cannot answer your *envy, jealousy, pride, or credulity*, as long as those remain. Objections, however cut off, will spring up again like hydras' heads.

If your lordship has heard any objections, I should be glad to know them. May I be permitted to ask, have not the objections you have heard, made some impression upon your lordship? Have they not occasioned (if I may speak freely) your lordship's standing aloof from me? Have they not set your lordship farther and farther off, ever since I waited upon you at ——? Why do I ask? Indeed not upon my own account. *Quid mea? Ego in porto navigo.* I can truly say, I neither fear, nor desire any thing from your lordship: to speak a rough truth, I do not desire any intercourse with any persons of quality in England. I mean, for my own sake: they do me no good, and I fear I can do none to them. If it be desired, I will readily leave all those to the care of my fellow-labourers. I will article with them so to do, rather than this shall be any bone of contention.

Were I not afraid of giving your lordship pain, I would speak yet still further. Methinks you desire I should: that is, to tell you once for all, every thought that rises in my heart. I will then. At present I do not want *you*, but I really think you want me. For have you a person in all England, who speaks to your lordship so plain and downright as I do? Who remembers not the *Peer* but the *man*? not the *Earl*, but the *immortal Spirit*? Who rarely commends, but often blames, and perhaps would do it oftener if you desired it: who is jealous over you with a godly jealousy, lest you should be less a Christian by being a nobleman? Lest, after having made a fair advance towards heaven, you should measure back your steps to earth again. O my lord, is not such a person as this needful for you in the highest degree? If you have any such, I have no more to say, but that I pray God to bless him to your soul. If you have not, despise not even the assistance which it may please God to give you by my lord,

Your Lordship's ready Servant, J. WESLEY.

---

TO THE REV MR. H.

DEAR SIR,

*March 27, 1764.*

YOUR book on the Millennium and the Mystic Writers, was lately put into my hands. I cannot but thank you for your strong and seasonable confirmation of that comfortable doctrine: of which I cannot entertain the least doubt, as long as I believe the Bible. I thank you likewise for your remarks on that bad performance of the Bishop of G—, which undoubtedly tears up by the roots, all real, internal religion. Yet at the same time I cannot but bewail, your vehement attachment to the Mystic Writers: with whom I conversed much for several years, and whom I then admired, perhaps more than you do now. But I found at length an absolute necessity, of giving up either them, or the Bible. So after some time, I fixed my

choice, to which I hope to adhere to my life's end. It is only the extreme attachment to these, which can account for the following words. "Mr. W does, in several parts of his Journals, lay down some marks of the new-birth, not only doubtful, but exceptionable: as particularly where persons appeared agitated or convulsed, under the ministry: which might be owing to other causes rather than any regenerating work of God's Spirit," p. 385.

Is this *true*? In what *one* part of my Journals do I lay down any doubtful, much less exceptionable, marks of the new-birth? In *no* part do I lay down those agitations or convulsions as any marks of it at all. Nay, I *expressly declare* the contrary, in those very words which the Bishop himself cites from my Journal. I declare, "These are of a disputable nature; they may be from God; they may be from nature; they may be from the Devil." How is it then that you tell all the world, "Mr. W lays them down in his Journals as marks of the new-birth?"

Is it *kind*? Would it not have been far more kind, suppose I had spoken wrong, to tell me of it in a *private* manner? How much more unkind was it, to accuse me to all the world, of a fault which I never committed?

Is it *wise* thus to put a sword into the hands of our common enemy? Are we not both fighting the battles of our Lord, against the world, as well as the flesh and the Devil? And shall I furnish them with weapons against *you*, or you against *me*? Fine diversion for the children of the Devil! And how much more would they be diverted, if *I* would furnish my quota of the entertainment; by falling upon *you* in return? But I bewail the change in your spirit: you have not gained *more* lowliness or meekness since I knew you! O beware! You did not use to *despise* any one. This you have *gained* from the authors you admire. They do not express *anger* toward their-opponents, but *contempt* in the highest degree. And this, I am afraid, is far more antichristian, more diabolical, than the other. The God of love deliver you and me from this spirit, and fill us with the mind that was in Christ. So prays,

Dear Sir, your still affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

---

### TO THE REV MR. PLENDELEITH,

REV. AND DEAR SIR,

May 23, 1768.

SOME years ago it was reported, that I recommended the use of a crucifix, to a man under sentence of death. I traced this up to its author, Dr. Stennet, an Anabaptist teacher. He was charged with it. He answered, "Why, I saw a crucifix in his cell, (a picture of Christ on the cross.) And I knew Mr. Wesley used to visit him. So I *supposed* he had brought it." This is the whole of the matter. Dr. Stennet himself I never yet saw. Nor did I ever see such a picture in the cell. And I believe the whole tale is pure invention

I had for some time given up the thought of an interview with Mr. Erskine, when I fell into the company of Dr. Oswald. He said, "Sir, you do not know Mr. Erskine. I know him perfectly well. Send and desire an hour's conversation with him, and I am sure he will understand you better." I am glad I did send. I have done *my* part, and am now entirely satisfied.

I am likewise glad, that Mr. E. has spoken his mind. I will answer with all simplicity, in full confidence of satisfying *you*, and all impartial men.

He objects, First, that I attack Predestination as subversive of all religion, and yet suffer my followers in Scotland, to remain in that opinion. Much of this is true. I did attack Predestination eight and twenty years ago. And I do not believe now, any Predestination which implies irrespective Reprobation. But I do not believe, it is *necessarily subversive* of all religion. I think hot disputes are much more so. Therefore I never willingly dispute with any one about it. And I advise all my friends, not in Scotland only; but all over England and Ireland, to avoid all contention on the head, and let every man remain in his own opinion. Can any man of candour blame me for this? Is there any thing *unfair* or *disingenuous* in it?

He objects, Secondly, That I "assert the attainment of Sinless Perfection by all born of God." I am sorry Mr. E. should affirm this again. I need give no other answer, than I gave before, in the seventh page of the little tract I sent him two years ago.

"I do not maintain this. I do not believe it. I believe Christian Perfection is not attained by any of the children of God, till they are what the Apostle John terms *Fathers*. And this I expressly declare in that sermon which Mr. E. so largely quotes."

He objects, Thirdly, That I "deny the imputation of Christ's active obedience." Since I believed Justification by Faith, which I have done upwards of thirty years, I have constantly maintained that we are pardoned and accepted wholly and solely for the sake of what Christ hath both *done and suffered* for us.

Two or three years ago Mr. Madan's sister showed him what she had written down of a sermon which I had preached on this subject. He entreated me, to write down the whole and print it, saying, It would satisfy all my opponents. I was not so sanguine as to expect this: I understood mankind too well. However, I complied with his request: a few were satisfied. The rest continued just as they were before.

As long as Mr. E. continues of the mind expressed in his *Theological Essays*, there is no danger that he and I should agree, any more than light and darkness. I love and reverence him; but not his doctrine. I dread every approach to Antinomianism. I have seen the fruits of it, over the three kingdoms. I never said, that Mr. E. and I were agreed. I will make our disagreement as public as ever he pleases: only I must specify the particulars. If he *will* fight with me, it must be on this ground. And then let him do what he will, and what he can.

Retaining a due sense of your friendly offices, and praying for a blessing on all your labours,

I remain, Rev. and dear Sir,

Your affectionate brother and servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO MR. S. AT ARMAGH.

DEAR BROTHER,

*April 24, 1769.*

I SHALL now tell you the things which have been more or less upon my mind, ever since I have been in the North of Ireland. If you forget them, you will be a sufferer, and so will the people: if you observe them, it will be good for both

1. To begin with little things. If you regard your health, Touch no supper, but a little milk, or water-gruel. This will entirely, by the blessing of God, secure you from nervous disorders; especially if you rise early every morning, whether you preach or not.

2. Be steadily serious. There is no country upon earth where this is more necessary than Ireland: as you are generally encompassed with those who, with a little encouragement, would laugh, or trifle from morning to night.

3. In every town visit all you can from house to house. I say, all you can; for there will be some whom you cannot visit: and if you examine, instruct, reprove, exhort, as need requires, you will have no time hanging on your hands. It is by this means that the societies are increased wherever T. R. goes; he is preaching from morning to night. Warning every one, that he may present every one perfect in Christ Jesus.

4. But on this, and every other occasion, avoid all familiarity with women. This is deadly poison both to *them* and *you*. You cannot be too wary in this respect. Therefore begin from this hour.

5. The chief matter of your conversation, as well as your preaching, should doubtless be, The weightier matters of the law. Yet there are several (comparatively) little things which you should earnestly inculcate from time to time, (for "He that despiseth small things, shall fall by little and little.") Such are,

1. Be active, be diligent: avoid all laziness, sloth, indolence. Flee from every degree, every appearance of it; else you will never be more than half a Christian.

2. Be cleanly. In this let the Methodists take pattern by the Quakers. Avoid all nastiness, dirt, slovenliness, both in your person, clothes, house, and all about you. Use all diligence to be clean, as one says,

"Let thy mind's sweetness have its operation,  
Upon thy person, clothes, and habitation."

3. Whatever clothes you have, let them be whole: no rents,

no tatters, no rags. These are a scandal to either man or woman ; being another fruit of vile laziness. Mend your clothes, or I shall never expect you to mend your lives. Let none ever see a ragged Methodist.

6. Use no tobacco, unless prescribed by a physician. It is an uncleanly, and an unwholesome self-indulgence : and the more customary it is, the more resolutely should you break off from every degree of that evil custom.

7. Use no snuff, unless prescribed by a physician. I suppose no other nation in Europe is in such vile bondage to this silly, nasty, dirty custom, as the Irish are ; but let Christians be in this bondage no longer. Assert your liberty, and that all at once : nothing will be done by degrees. But just now you may break loose through Christ strengthening you.

8. Touch no dram. It is a liquid fire. It is a sure, though slow poison. It saps the very springs of life. In Ireland, above all countries in the world, I would saeredly abstain from this, because the evil is so general : and to this, and snuff, and smoky cabins, I impute the blindness which is so exceedingly common throughout the nation.

I am, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

TO ———.

DEAR SIR,

———, 1770.

I BLESS God that you are not disgusted at the great plainness-with which I wrote. Indeed I know not but it might be termed roughness, which was owing partly to the pressure of mind I then felt, and partly to my being straitened for time ; otherwise I might have found softer expressions. I am thankful likewise for your openness, which obliges me to be open and unreserved, and to say *all I mean*, and that in the most simple manner, on each of the articles that lie before us.

I must do this, even with regard to my fellow-labourers, lest I should *seem* to mean more than I do. But I am sensible this is a tender point, and one so extremely difficult to treat upon, that I should not venture to say one word, did I not know to whom I speak. What I mean is this : from many little circumstances that have occurred, I have been *afraid* (just so far I went) that those clergymen with whom you are most acquainted, were jealous of your being acquainted with *me*. I was the more afraid, when I heard the sudden exclamation of one, whom you well know. “ Good God ! Mr. Wesley is always speaking well of these Gentlemen, and they can never speak well of him. But I am entirely satisfied by that full declaration which you make, “ I do not know of any impression that has been made upon me to your disadvantage.”

.I had once the opportunity of speaking a few minutes to you, on

the head of Christian Perfection. And I believe you had not much objection to any thing which was then spoken. When I spoke nearly to the same effect to one of the late bishops of London, Bishop Gibson, he said earnestly, "Why, Mr. Wesley, if this is what you mean by perfection, who can be against it?" I believe verily, there would need no more than a single hour, spent in free and open conversation, to convince you, that none can *rationaly* or scripturally say any thing against the perfection I have preached for thirty years.

The union which I desire among the persons I mentioned, is an entire union of heart, constraining them to labour together as one man, in spreading vital religion through the nation. But this I do not hope for, though I know a few who would cordially rejoice therein. The union which I *proposed* is of a lower kind: I proposed that they should *love as brethren*, and behave as such. And I particularized what I think is implied in this: I imagined, in so plain a manner, as was hardly possible, without great skill, to be either misunderstood, or misrepresented. I really do not conceive, what ambiguity there can be in any part of *this* proposal? Or what objection can lie against our going thus far, whether we go farther or not.

With regard to you, I have frequently observed that there are two very different ranks of Christians, both of whom may be in the favour of God; a higher and a lower rank. The latter avoid all known sin, do much good, use all the means of grace, but have little of the life of God in their souls, but are much conformed to the world. The former make the Bible their *whole rule*, and their *sole aim* is the will and the image of God. This they steadily and uniformly pursue, through honour and dishonour, denying themselves, and taking up their cross daily; considering one point only, "How may I attain most of the mind that was in Christ, and how may I please him most?" Now I verily believe, never was a person of rank more prepared for this state, than you were, the first time I had the pleasure of seeing you. Nay, I doubt not but you pant after it now: your soul is athirst to be *all devoted* to God. But who will press you forward to this? Rather, who will not draw you back? It is in this respect that I think one that uses plain dealing is needful for you *in the highest degree*: so needful, that without this help you will inevitably stop short. I do not mean, stop short of heaven; but of that degree of holiness, and consequently of happiness both in time and eternity, which is now offered to your acceptance.

It is herein that I am jealous over you. I am afraid of your sinking beneath your calling, degenerating into a common Christian, who shall indeed be saved, but saved as by fire. I long to see both you and your lady a little more than *common* Christians: Christians of the first rank in the kingdom of God, full of goodness and truth. I want you to be living witnesses of *all* gospel-holiness! And what shall hinder, if you seek it by faith? Are not all things ready? The Lord God give you to experience, That all things are possible to them that believe!

O God, let *all* their life declare,  
 How happy these thy servants are ;  
 How far above these earthly things,  
 How pure when wash'd in Jesu's blood !  
 How intimately one with God,  
 A heav'n-born race of priests and kings.

I am, honoured Sir, your friend and servant,  
 J. WESLEY.

---

TO THE REV MR. L——.

DEAR BROTHER,

*Lewisham, Dec. 14, 1771.*

FOR some time I have been in doubt, whether it was best for me to write, or to leave you to your own reflections. But at length love turns the scale. I cannot be silent any longer, without being wanting in affection. I will therefore state the case as impartially as I can, and may God give you a right judgment in all things !

It has pleased God to intrust you with several talents : a measure of his grace, of natural understanding, improved by reading and conversation ; and a tolerable utterance. And what are you doing with these talents ? You are well-nigh burying them in the earth. A dispensation of the Gospel is committed to you : and yet you preach not the Gospel, or but now and then ; instead of continually stirring up the gift of God that is in you. Is this inactivity, this losing so many precious opportunities, owing to any temporal views ? Do you expect to get *more money* by delay ? I hope not. Do you want to avoid labour, shame, or censure ? I would fain think better things of you. Surely you have not so learned Christ !

But you have promised (not indeed to man, but) before God, that you will not leave the Church. What do you mean by this ? What ideas do you affix to that confused expression ? In what sense can the officiating at West-street or Spitalfields chapels (both of them *consecrated* places, if that avails any thing) be called *leaving the Church* ? Does Mr. Dodd, one of the king's chaplains, *leave the Church*, by officiating at Charlotte-street chapel ? Although this was never consecrated yet, neither is it under any episcopal jurisdiction ?

But if you had made that promise ten times, still I ask, Would it not be "more honoured in the breach, than in the observance ?" For what was it you promised ? To wait for dead men's shoes ? Was not this a *foolish* promise ? To bury your talent in the earth ? Was not this a *sinful* promise ? To incur the wo of not preaching the Gospel ? Is not this both foolish and sinful ? "But you do not intend to stand in the vineyard all the day idle. You will but wait awhile longer." Well, how long will you be as a dumb dog ? Twenty years ? Or ten ? Or one and a half ? If you have a lease of your life, well : but what if you are called in one year to give an account of your stewardship ? O live *to-day* ! Do all the good you can

while it is called to-day ! *Now* stir up the gift of God which is in you ! *Now*, save as many souls as you can ; and do all you can to ease the labour, and prolong the life of,

Your affectionate friend and brother,

JOHN WESLEY

---

TO MISS A——.

DEAR MISS A——,

~ *London, Aug. 21, 1766.*

YOUR letters will always be agreeable to me, and the more largely and freely you write, the better. I am deeply concerned for your happiness ; and a measure of happiness you may enjoy, as long as you feel any love in your heart to God, though it be but in a small degree. Be thankful for what you have ; and in peace and love wait for the whole promise. God has not only promised, but confirmed that promise by an oath, that “ being delivered from *all* your enemies, you shall serve him in righteousness and holiness, *all the days* of your life.” By what art can this be made to mean, *the last day*, or the last moment of your life ? Look for it now ! *To-day* hear his voice ! Do not reason against God, against yourself : *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with ALL thy heart.* The mouth of the Lord hath spoken it,

I advise you, 1st, Get all the opportunities you can, of hearing the preaching, and conversing with the children of God. 2dly, Avoid disputing, with your might. 3dly, Spend some time every day in private prayer, in meditation, and in reading the Notes on the New Testament, the first volume of Sermons, and the Appeals. 4thly, When you may be free, use it rather. Peace be with your spirit.

I am, &c.

J. W.

---

LETTER II. TO MISS A——.

DEAR MISS A——.

*London, Jan. 15, 1767*

TIME changes thought, especially in youth, and amidst variety of company. So that it would be nothing strange, if you should forget those for whom you once had a regard ; but you need not. Every reasonable affection is intended to last to eternity. And the true affection for our friends is, as Milton says,

—————“ A scale  
Whereby to heav’nly love thou mayst ascend.”

For the present, you seem to be in your place, the place which the wisdom of God has assigned you ; and the crosses you now meet with, as they are not of your own choosing, will surely work together for good. Your want of more public opportunities may, in a good measure, be supplied by private exercises. Let no day pass without

more or less private prayer, reading, and meditation. And does not God see in secret? Does he not now read your heart, and see if it pants for his pure love? If so, are not all things ready? May you not now find what you never did before? Ask him that loves you! whose nature and whose name is Love!

I am, &c.

J. W.

---

TO THE SAME.

DEAR SISTER,

*London, Feb. 20, 1767.*

YOUR letter was exceedingly acceptable to me, and the more so because I was almost afraid you had forgotten me. I am glad to find you have not forgotten the blessing which God gave you when at Newcastle, and the resolutions which you formed there; and I trust you never will, till God gives you the full enjoyment of the glorious liberty which you then tasted. Do not imagine that this is afar off; or that you must do and suffer a great deal before you attain it;—I dare not affirm that.—Has not Christ done and suffered enough for you? The purchase is made; the price is paid already; you have only to believe and enter into rest; to take the purchased possession: all is ready: and to-day is the day of salvation! Why should you not now be all LOVE? All devoted to him that loves you? Is it not the language of your heart,

Henceforth may no profane delight  
Divide this consecrated soul;  
Possess it Thou, who hast the right,  
As LORD and MASTER of the whole.

You are to obey your parent *in the Lord only*, not in opposition to HIM. If, therefore, any means should offer whereby you might enjoy that full liberty of conscience, which every creature has a right to, I judge it would be not only lawful, but your bounden duty to accept of such an offer.

Mrs. Wilberforce's charity is a good omen: what is it God will not do if we can trust him.—Only cast your whole care upon him, and he will do all things well: He will withhold from you no manner of thing that is good.—O let him have all your heart.

I am, dear Sister, &c.

J. W.

---

TO THE SAME.

DEAR SISTER,

*Londonderry, April 20, 1767.*

CERTAINLY the point we should always have in view is, what is best for eternity? And I believe it would be best for you to change your condition, if a proper person offers.—But I should scruple doing this without a parent's consent. If your mother is

willing, I see no objection to your marrying one that fears God, and is seeking salvation through Christ. Such an one is not an unbeliever, in the sense wherein that word is taken, 2 Cor. vi. xiv.

I love to think of you and hear from you. I want you to be always holy and happy. And why not? You have a strong Helper, and shall not his strength be made perfect in your weakness? Why then should you stop short of his *whole promise*. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with *all thy heart*.—Hold him to his word, and let not your hope be weakened by the subtle reasonings of men. Still let the language of your heart be——

Big-with-earnest expectation  
Let me sit—at thy feet,  
Longing for salvation!

As long as you are in this spirit you will not forget

Your's, &c.

J. W.

---

### TO THE SAME.

DEAR SISTER,

*Newcastle, Aug. 8, 1767.*

WE have many instances of this: persons cold and dull, and scarcely knowing how to believe their own words, have asserted as they could, the truths of the gospel, and enforced them upon others, and at that very time God has caused light and love to spring up in their own hearts. Therefore, however you feel in your own breast, speak as well as you can for God. Many times you will see some fruit upon others; if not, you shall have a recompense in your own bosom. In one sense, you do believe, That God is both able and willing to cleanse you from all unrighteousness, and to do it *now*. But not in that sense, wherein all things are possible to him that believeth. But what if he should give you *this* faith also? Yea, while you have this paper in your hand! To-day hear his voice! O listen! And heaven springs up in your heart.

Among the hearers of Mr. Maden and Mr. Romaine (much more among those of Mr. Whitefield) there are many gracious souls, and some who have deep experience of the ways of God. Yet, the hearing them would not profit *you*; it would be apt to lead you into unprofitable reasonings, which would probably end in your giving up all hope of a full salvation from sin in this life. Therefore I advise you, check all curiosity of this kind, and keep quite out of the way of danger.

Hannah Harrison is a blessed woman. I am glad you had an opportunity of conversing with her; and why should not you enjoy the same blessing? The Lord is at hand!

I am, &c.

J. W.

## TO THE SAME.

DEAR SISTER,

*Oct. 14, 1767.*

AT length I get a little time (after having been some weeks almost in a perpetual motion) to write a few lines to one I sincerely love. Grow in grace every hour; the more the better. Use *now*, all the grace you have; this is certainly right: but also *now* expect all the grace you want! This is the secret of heart religion. At the present moment to *work*, and to *believe*. Here is Christ your Lord: the lover of your soul. Give yourself up to him without delay; and as you can, without reserve. And simply tell him all you desire, and all you want. What situation is it that hurries you? Is it not determined whether you shall change your condition or not? Be it either way, God sitteth on the throne, and ruleth all things well.

I am, &amp;c.

JOHN WESLEY.

## TO MR. JOSEPH COWNLEY.\*

MY DEAR BRETHREN,

*Bristol, Sept. 20, 1746.*

AS many of you as have set your hands to the plough, see that you go on, and look not back. The prize and the crown are before you, and in due time, you shall reap, if you faint not. Meantime, fight the good fight of faith, enduring the cross, and despising the shame. Beware that none of you return evil for evil, or railing for railing, but contrary-wise, blessing. Show forth out of a loving heart, your good conversation, with meekness and wisdom. Avoid all disputes as you would avoid fire: so shall ye continue kindly affectionate one toward another. The God of peace be with you. I am, your affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

## TO THE SAME, AT NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*Dublin, April 12, 1750.*

I DOUBT you are in a great deal more danger from honour, than from dishonour. So it is with me. I always find there is most hazard in sailing upon smooth water. When the winds blow and the seas rage, even the sleepers will rise and call upon God.

From Newcastle to London, and from Loudon to Bristol, God is every where reviving his work. I find it is so now in Dublin: although there has been great imprudence in some, whereby grievous wolves have lately crept in among us: not sparing the flock: by whom some souls have been utterly destroyed, and others wounded; who are not yet recovered. Those who ought to have stood in the gap, did not. But I trust they will be wiser for the time to come. After a season, I think it will be highly expedient

\* This letter, directed to Mr. Cownley, at Leominster, in Herefordshire, appears to be intended chiefly for the Society in that place, where Mr. Cownley then resided.

for you to labour in Ireland again. Mr. Lunell has been on the brink of the grave by a fever. Yesterday we had hopes of his recovery. I see a danger you are in, which, perhaps, you do not see yourself. Is it not most pleasing to me, as well as you, to be always preaching of the love of God? And is there not a time when we are peculiarly led thereto, and find a peculiar blessing therein? Without doubt, so it is. But yet it would be utterly wrong and unscriptural to preach of nothing else. Let the Law always prepare for the Gospel. I scarcely ever spoke more earnestly here, of the love of God in Christ, than last night. But it was after I had been tearing the unawakened in pieces. Go thou and do likewise. It is true, the love of God in Christ, alone feeds his children. But even they are to be guided as well as fed. Yea, and often physiced too. And the bulk of our hearers must be purged before they are fed. Else we only feed the disease. Beware of all honey. It is the best extreme: but it is an extreme.

I am, your affectionate Brother, JOHN WESLEY.



IN 1755, Mr. Cownley was afflicted, in consequence of a severe fever, with a violent pain in the head, which no medicine could remove. After consulting the most able physicians in Ireland, he stated his case to Mr. Wesley, and received the following answer.

#### TO THE SAME, AT CORK.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Jan. 10, 1756.*

I HAVE no objection to any thing but the blister. If it does good, well. But if I had been at Cork, all the physicians in Ireland should not have put it upon your head. Remember poor Bishop Pearson. An apothecary, to cure a pain in his head, covered it with a large blister. In an hour, he cried out, "O my head, my head!" and was a fool ever after to the day of his death. I believe cooling things (if any thing under heaven) would remove that violent irritation of your nerves, which probably occasions the pain. Moderate riding may be of use; I believe of more than the blister. Only do not take more labour upon you than you can bear. Do as much as you can, and no more. Let us make use of the present time. Every day is of importance. We know not how few days of peace remain. We join in love to you and yours: I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Friend and Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.



SOME persons, not remarkable for being volunteers in faith, or for an excess of that charity which hopeth all things, have doubted whether the late Mr. Wesley was ever truly awakened, and brought from trusting in his own righteousness. Let such persons read the following letter, and then let them judge.

## TO THE REV. WILLIAM LAW.

REV. SIR,

*May 14, 1738.*

IT is in obedience to what I think to be the call of God, that I, who have the sentence of death in my own soul, take upon me to write to you, of whom I have often desired to learn the first elements of the Gospel of Christ. If you are born of God, you will approve of the design though it may be but weakly executed. If not, I shall grieve for you, not for myself. For as I seek not the praise of men; so neither regard I the contempt either of you or of any other. For two years (more especially) I have been preaching after the model of your two practical treatises: and all that heard, have allowed, that the law is great, wonderful, and holy. But no sooner did they attempt to fulfil it, but they found that it is too high for man: and that by doing the works of the law shall no flesh living be justified.

To remedy this, I exhorted them, and stirred up myself to pray earnestly for the grace of God, and to use all the other means of obtaining that grace, which the all-wise God hath appointed. But still, both they and I were more and more convinced,—That this is a law by which a man cannot live: the law in our members continually warring against it, and bringing us into deeper captivity to the law of sin.

Under this heavy yoke I might have groaned till death, had not a holy man, to whom God lately directed me, upon my complaining thereof, answered at once, “Believe, and thou shalt be saved. Believe in the Lord Jesus Christ with all thy heart, and nothing shall be impossible to thee. This faith, indeed, as well as the salvation it brings, is the free gift of God. But seek, and thou shalt find. Strip thyself naked of thy own works, and thy own righteousness, and flee to him. For whosoever cometh unto him, he will in nowise cast out.”

Now, Sir, suffer me to ask, How will you answer it to our common Lord, that you never gave me this advice? Did you never read the Acts of the Apostles, or the answer of Paul to him who said, “What must I do to be saved?” Or are you wiser than he? Why did I scarcely ever hear you name the name of Christ? Never so as to ground any thing upon faith in his blood? Who is this who is laying another foundation? If you say, you advised other things as preparatory to this. What is this but laying a foundation below the foundation? Is not Christ then the first as well as the last? If you say, you advised them, because you knew that I had faith already. Verily you knew nothing of me: you discerned not my spirit at all. I know that I had not faith unless the faith of a Devil, the faith of Judas, that speculative, notional, airy shadow, which lives in the head, not in the heart. But what is this to the living, justifying faith in the blood of Jesus? The faith that cleanseth from sin: that gives us to have free access to the Father: to rejoice

in the hope of the glory of God : to have the love of God shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us : and the Spirit itself bearing witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God ?

I beseech you, sir, by the mercies of God, to consider deeply and impartially, whether the true reason of your never pressing this upon me, was not this,—That you had it not yourself? Whether that man of God was not in the right, who gave this account of a late interview he had with you? “I began speaking to him of faith in Christ: he was silent. Then he began to speak of mystical matters. I spake to him of faith in Christ again: he was silent. Then he began to speak of mystical matters again. I saw his state at once.” And a very dangerous one, in his judgment, who I know to have the Spirit of God.

Once more, sir, let me beg you to consider, whether your extreme roughness, and morose and sour behaviour, at least on many occasions, can possibly be the fruit of a living faith in Christ? If not, may the God of peace and love fill up what is yet wanting in you.

I am, Rev. Sir, your humble servant, JOHN WESLEY.

---

## LETTER II. TO THE REV WM. LAW

REV. SIR,

*May 30, 1738.*

I SINCERELY thank you for a favour I did not expect, and presume to trouble you once more.

How I have preached all my life; how qualified or unqualified I was to correct a translation of Kempis, and to translate a preface to it. Whether I have now, or how long I have had living faith. Whether Peter Bohler spoke truth in what he said, when two others were present besides me, are circumstances on which the main question does not turn; which is this, and no other: “Whether you ever advised me, or directed me to books, that did advise me to seek first a living faith in the blood of Christ, and that thereby alone I could be justified.” You appeal to three facts to prove that you did. 1st, That you put into my hands *Theologia Germanica*. 2d, That you published an Answer to “*The Plain Account of the Sacrament*.” And, 3d, That you are governed through all that you have written and done by these two fundamental maxims of our Lord, “Without me ye can do nothing: and, If any man will come after me, let him take up his cross and follow me.”

The facts I allow, but not the consequence. In *Theologia Germanica*, I remember something of Christ our pattern; but nothing express of Christ our atonement. The Answer to the Plain Account of the Sacrament, I believe to be an excellent book, but not so as to affect the main question. Those two maxims may imply, but do not express the thing itself, He is our propitiation through faith in his blood.

But how are you chargeable with my not having had this faith? If you intimate that you discerned my spirit, then you are chargeable

thus : 1. You did not tell me plainly I had it not. 2. You never once advised me to seek or to pray for it. 3. Your advice to me was only proper for such as had faith already. Advices which led me further from it, the closer I adhered to them. 4. You recommended books to me which had no tendency to this faith, but a direct one to destroy good works. However "Let the fault be divided (you say) between me and Kempis." No : if I understood Kempis wrong, it was your part, who discerned my spirit, and saw my mistake, to have explained him, and to have set me right. I ask pardon, Sir, if I have said any thing inconsistent with the obligations I owe you, and the respect I bear to your character.

I am, Rev. Sir, your most obedient Servant,

J. WESLEY.

---

TO MR. FLETCHER.

DEAR SIR,

*Birmingham, March 20, 1768.*

I WAS told yesterday, that you are sick of the conversation even of them who profess religion, that you find it quite unprofitable, if not hurtful, to converse with them; three or four hours together, and are sometimes almost determined to shut yourself up, as the less evil of the two. I do not wonder at it at all. Especially considering with whom you have chiefly conversed for some time past, namely, the hearers of Mr. \*\*\*\* and Mr. \*\*\*\*. The conversing with them I have rarely found to be profitable to my soul. Rather it has damped my desires, and has cooled my resolutions, and I have commonly left them with a dry, dissipated spirit.

And how can you expect it to be otherwise? For do we not naturally catch their spirit with whom we converse? And what spirit can we expect them to be of, considering the preaching they sit under. Some happy exceptions, I allow. But, in general, do men gather grapes of thorns? Do they gather the necessity of inward and outward self-devotion, of constant, universal self-denial, or of the patience of hope, or the labour of love, from the doctrine they hear? Do they gather from that amorous way of praying to Christ, or that luscious way of preaching his righteousness, any real holiness? I never found it so. On the contrary, I have found that even the precious doctrine of Salvation by Faith, has need to be guarded with the greatest care, or those who hear it will slight both inward and outward holiness.

I will go a step further. I seldom find it profitable to converse with any who are not athirst for full salvation; and who are not big with earnest expectation of receiving it every moment. Now you find none of these among those we are speaking of; but many on the contrary, who are in various ways, directly or indirectly, opposing this blessed work of God. The work I mean, which God is carrying on throughout this kingdom, by unlearned and plain men.

You have, for some time, conversed a good deal with the genteel Methodists. Now it matters not a straw what doctrine they hear. Whether they frequent the Lock, or West-street, if they are as salt which has lost its savour. If they are conformed to the maxims, the spirit, the fashions, and customs of the world. Certainly then, if you converse much with such persons, you will return less a man than you were before. But were either the one or the other of ever so excellent a spirit, you conversed with them too long. One had need be an angel, not a man, to converse three or four hours at once, to any good purpose. In the latter part of such a conversation, we shall be in great danger of losing all the profit we had gained before.

But have you not a remedy for all this in your hands? In order to converse profitably, may you not select a few persons who stand in awe of him they love; persons who are vigorously working out their salvation: who are athirst for full redemption, and every moment expecting it, if not already enjoying it?

Though it is true, these will generally be poor and mean, seldom possessed of either riches or learning, unless there be now and then one of higher rank: if you converse with such as these, humbly and simply, an hour at a time, with earnest prayer for a blessing, you will not complain of the unprofitableness of conversation, or find any need of turning hermit. Do you not observe, that all the lay-preachers who are engaged with me, are maintainers of General Redemption? And it is undeniable that they are instrumental in saving souls. God is with them, and he works by them, and has done so for near these thirty years. Therefore, the opposing them is neither better nor worse than fighting against God.

I am, your ever affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.



TO MR. KNOX.

DEAR SIR,

*Sligo, May 30, 1765.*

PROBABLY this will be the last trouble of the kind which you will receive from me. If you receive it in the same spirit wherein it is written, I shall be glad. If not, my reward is with the Most High. I did not choose it should be delivered till I was gone, lest you should think I wanted something from you. By the blessing of God, I want nothing, only that you should be happy in time and in eternity. Still I cannot but remember, the clear light you had with regard to the nature of real, scriptural Christianity. You saw what heart religion meant, and the gate of it, *justification*. You had earnest desires to be a partaker of the whole gospel-blessing: and you discovered the sincerity of those desires, by the steps you took in your family. So that in every thing you were hastening to be, not almost, but altogether a Christian.

Where is that light now? Do you now see that true religion is

not a negative, or an external thing. But the life of God in the soul of man. The image of God stamped upon the heart? Do you now see, that in order to this, we are justified freely, through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus? Where are the desires after this, which you once felt; the hungering and thirsting after righteousness? And where are the outward marks of a soul groaning after God, and refusing to be comforted with any thing less than his love?

Will you say, "*But if I had gone on in that way, I should have lost my friends and my reputation?*" This is partly true. You would have lost most of those friends who neither love nor fear God. Happy loss! These are the men who do you more hurt than all the world besides. These are the men whom, if ever you would be a real Christian, you must avoid as you would avoid hell-fire. "*But then they will censure me.*" So they will. They will say you are a fool, a madman, and what not. But what are you the worse for this? Why, the Spirit of glory and of Christ shall rest upon you. "*But it will hurt me in my business.*" Suppose it should, the favour of God would make large amends. But very probably it would not. For the winds and the seas are in God's hands, as well as the hearts of men. "*But it is inconsistent with my duty to the Church.*" Can a man of understanding talk so, and talk so in earnest? Is it not rather a copy of his countenance? Indeed if you mean—"Inconsistent with my pleasing this or that clergyman,"—I allow it. But let them be pleased or displeased, please thou God. But are these clergymen the Church? Unless they are holy men, earnestly loving and serving God, they are not even members of the Church; they are no part of it. And unless they preach the doctrines of the Church, contained in her Articles and Liturgy, they are no true ministers of the Church, but are eating her bread and tearing out her bowels!

"*But you will not leave the Church.*" You never will by my advice: I advise just the contrary: I advise you to lose no opportunity of attending the service of the Church, and receiving the Lord's Supper, and of showing your regard for all her appointments. I advise, steadily to adhere to her doctrine in every branch of it. Particularly with regard to the two fundamental points, Justification by Faith, and Holiness. But above all, I cannot but earnestly entreat you, not to rest till you experience what she teaches. Till (to sum up all in one word) God cleanses the thoughts of your heart by the inspiration of his Holy Spirit, that you may perfectly love him, and worthily magnify his holy name. Unless this be done, what will it profit you to increase your fortune, to preserve the fairest reputation, and to gain the favour of the most learned, the most ingenious, and the most honourable clergymen in the kingdom? What will it profit a man to gain all these, and to lose his own soul?

I know that to God all things are possible: therefore it is possible you may take this kindly. If so, I shall hope to receive a line from you. If not, let it be forgotten till we meet at the judgment seat of Christ. I am, dear Sir, your affectionate Servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

## TO MISS BISHOP.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Feb. 7, 1778.

IT is no great matter, whether those doubts arose in your mind by conversing with Mr. H. by reading Mr. Law's later works, or by your own reasoning. But, doubtless, what you mention, is a point of the last importance, and deserves our most serious consideration. The rather, because the strange account given of it by some, has induced others to deny, *The doctrine of Atonement*: although this is the distinguishing point between Deism and Christianity. "The morality of the Bible (said Lord Huntingdon to me) I admire: but the doctrine of Atonement, I cannot comprehend." Here, then, we divide. Give up the Atonement, and we are all agreed.

This point, therefore, deserves to be largely considered: but that my time will not permit. And it is the less needful, because I have done it already in my letter to Mr. Law; to which I beg you will give a serious reading, whether you have read it before or not. [See Volume Ninth, p. 118.] But it is true, I can no more comprehend it than his Lordship: perhaps I might say, than the angels of God; the highest created understanding. If we attempt to expatiate in this field, we "shall find no end, in wandering mazes lost!" But the question is, (the only question with me; I regard nothing else;) What saith the Scripture? It says, "God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himself." "That he made him, who knew no sin, to be a sin-offering for us." It says, "He was wounded for our transgressions, and bruised for our iniquities." It says, "We have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous, and he is the Atonement for our sins."

But it is certain, had God never been angry, he could never have been reconciled. So that in affirming this, Mr. Law strikes at the very root of the Atonement, and finds a shorter method of converting Deists, than Mr. Lesley's! Although, therefore, I do not term God, as Mr. Law supposes, "a wrathful being," which conveys a wrong idea; yet I firmly believe he was angry with all mankind, and that he was reconciled to them by the death of his Son. And I know he was angry with me, till I believed in the Son of his love: and yet this is no impeachment to his mercy. But he is just, as well as merciful.

Undoubtedly, as long as the world stands, there will be a thousand objections to this scriptural doctrine. For still the preaching of Christ crucified, will be foolishness to the wise men of the world. However, let us hold it fast in our heart, as well as in our understanding; and we shall find by happy experience, that this is to us the wisdom of God, and the power of God.

I am, your affectionate Friend and Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

## TO MRS. MAITLAND.

DEAR MADAM,

*May 12, 1763.*

BOTH in the former and in the farther Thoughts on Christian Perfection, I have said all I have to say on that subject. Nevertheless, as you seem to desire I should, I will add a few words more. As to the word Perfection, it is scriptural. Therefore neither you nor I can in conscience object to it, unless we would send the Holy Ghost to school, and teach him to speak, who made the tongue. By Christian Perfection I mean, (as I have said again and again,) The so loving God and our neighbour, as to "rejoice evermore, pray without ceasing, and in every thing give thanks." He that experiences this, is scripturally perfect. And if you do not, yet you may experience it; you surely will, if you follow hard after it, for the Scripture cannot be broken.

What then does their arguing reprove, who object against Christian Perfection? Absolute or infallible Perfection, I never contended for. Sinless Perfection, I do not contend for, seeing it is not scriptural: a perfection such as enables a person to fulfil the whole law, and so needs not the merits of Christ. I acknowledge no such perfection; I do now, and always did protest against it.

But is there no sin in those who are perfect in love? I believe not: but be that as it may, they feel none, no temper contrary to pure love, while they rejoice, pray, and give thanks, continually. And whether sin is suspended, or extinguished, I will not dispute, it is enough that they feel nothing but love. This, you allow, we should daily press after. And this is all I contend for. O may the Lord give you to taste of it to-day.

I am, dear Madam, your very affectionate Servant,  
JOHN WESLEY.

## TO MR. HART.

DEAR SIR,

*July 11, 1763.*

ABUNDANCE of business has prevented my writing so soon as I desired and intended, nor have I time now to write so largely as I could wish, and as your openness and frankness would otherwise constrain me to do. But I cannot delay any longer to write a little, lest I should seem to slight your correspondence.

What you before observed is of great importance, viz. "If it be the professed aim of the Gospel to convince us that JESUS is the CHRIST: if I, a sinner, am convinced of the reality of this fact, am not I, who believe, authorized to expect life, not through any condition, or any act inward or outward performed by me, but singly through the name which Jesus assumed, which stands for his whole character or merit?" Here is the hinge on which Mr. Sandiman's whole system turns. This is the strength of his cause, and you have

proposed it with all the strength and clearness which he himself could devise.

Yet suffer me to offer to your consideration a few queries concerning it. Is every one who is convinced of the reality of this fact, "*Jesus is the Christ*," a Gospel believer? Is not the Devil convinced of the reality of this fact? Is then the Devil a Gospel believer? I was convinced of the reality of this fact when I was twelve years old, when I was without God in the world. Was I then a Gospel believer? Was I then a child of God? Was I then in a state of salvation? Again, you say, "I who believe am authorized to expect life, not through any condition or act, inward or outward, performed by me." "*I who believe*." But cannot you as well expect it without believing? If not, what is believing but a condition? For it is something *sine qua non*. And what else do you, or I, or any one living, mean by a condition? And is not believing an inward act? What is it else? But you say, "*Not performed by me*." By whom then? God gives me the power to believe. But does he believe for me? He works faith in me. But still is it not I that believe? And if so, is not believing an inward act performed by me?

Is not then this hypothesis (to waive all other difficulties) contradictory to itself? I have just set down a few hints as they occurred. Wishing you an increase of every blessing, I am, dear Sir, your very affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

—  
TO LADY ———.

MY DEAR LADY,

London, June 19, 1771.

MANY years since, I saw, that "without holiness no man shall see the Lord." I began following after it, and inciting all with whom I had any intercourse to do the same. Ten years after, God gave me a clearer view than I had before, of the way how to attain this; namely, By faith in the Son of God. And immediately I declared to all, "We are saved from sin, we are made holy, by faith." This I testified in private, in public, in print;—and God confirmed it by a thousand witnesses. I have continued to declare this, for above thirty years. And God hath continued to confirm the word of his grace: but during this time, well nigh all the religious world hath set themselves in array against me, and among the rest, many of my own children, following the example of one of my eldest sons, Mr. W. Their general cry has been, "He is unsound in the faith; he preaches another Gospel!" I answer, Whether it be the same which they preach or not, it is the same which I have preached for above thirty years. This may easily appear from what I have published during that whole term. I instance only in three sermons: that on "Salvation by Faith," printed in the year 1738. That on "The Lord our Righteousness," printed a few years since: and that on Mr. Whitefield's Funeral, printed only some months ago. But it is said, "O but you printed ten lines in August last, which contradict

all your other writings." Be not so sure of this. It is probable, at least, that I understand my own meaning as well as you do: and that meaning I have yet again declared in the sermon last referred to. By that, interpret those ten lines, and you will understand them better. Although I should think that any one might see, even without this help, that the lines in question do not refer to the condition of obtaining, but of continuing in the favour of God. But whether the sentiment contained in those lines be right or wrong, and whether it be well or ill expressed, the gospel which I now preach, God does still confirm by new witnesses in every place; perhaps never so much in this kingdom as within these last three months. Now, I argue from glaring, undeniable fact; God cannot bear witness to a lie. The gospel, therefore which he confirms, must be true in substance. There may be opinions maintained at the same time which are not exactly true; and who can be secure from these? Perhaps I thought myself so once; when I was much younger than I am now, I thought myself almost infallible. But I bless God, I know myself better now.

To be short. Such as I am, I love you well. You have one of the first places in my esteem and affection: and you once had some regard for me. But it cannot continue if it depends upon my seeing with your eyes, or on my being in no mistake. What if I was in as many as Mr. Law himself? If you were, I should love you still, provided your heart was still right with God. My dear friend, you seem not to have well learned yet the meaning of those words, which I desire to have continually written upon my heart, "Whosoever doth the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother." I am, my dear lady, your affectionate,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

## TO THE REV. GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

March 20, 1739.

WOULD you have me speak to you freely? Without any softening or reserve at all? I know you would. And may our loving Saviour speak to your heart, so my labour shall not be in vain. I do not commend you with regard to our brothers S— and C—. But let me speak tenderly. For I am but a little child. I know our Lord has brought good out of their going to you: good to you, and good to them: very much good: and may he increase it a thousand fold, how much soever it be! But is every thing good, my brother, out of which he brings good? I think that does not follow. O my brother, is it well for you or me, to give the least hint of setting up our will or judgment, against that of our whole Society? Was it well for you once to mention a desire, which they had all solemnly declared they thought unreasonable; was not this abundant cause to drop any design which was not manifestly grounded

on a clear command of our Lord? Indeed, my brother, in this I commend you not. If our brother R— or P—, desired any thing, and our other brethren disapproved of it, I cannot but think he ought immediately to let it drop. How much more, ought you or I? They are upon a level with the rest of their brethren. But I trust you and I are not; we are the servants of all. Thus far have I spoken, with fear and trembling, and with many tears. O may our Lord speak the rest; for what shall such an one as I say to a beloved servant of my Lord? O pray that I may see myself a worm and no man. I wish to be your brother in Jesus Christ.

JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO MRS. S. R.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Whitehaven, June 28, 1766.

FOR some time I have been convinced it was my duty to tell you, what was on my mind. I will do it with all plainness. You may answer or not, as you judge best. Many things I have observed in you which gave me pleasure: some which gave me concern: the former I need not mention: the latter I must, or I should not myself be clear before God. The first of these is something which looks like pride. You sometimes seem to think too highly of yourself, and (comparatively) to despise others. I will instance in two or three particulars:

1. You *appear* to be above instruction; I mean instruction from man. I do not doubt but you are taught of God. But that does not supersede your being taught by man also. I believe there is no saint upon earth, whom God does not teach by man.

2. You *appear* to think, (I will not affirm you do,) that none understands the doctrine of sanctification like *you*. Nay, you sometimes speak *as if* none understood it *besides* you: whereas (whether you *experience* more or less of it than some) I know several, both men and women, who both think and speak, full as scripturally of it as you do: and perhaps more clearly: for there is often something dark and confused in your manner of speaking concerning it.

3. You *appear* to undervalue the experience of almost every one, in comparison of your own. To this it *seems* to be owing, that you, some way or other, beat down almost all who believe they are *saved from sin*. And so some of them were, in the only sense wherein I either teach or believe it, unless they tell flat and wilful lies, in giving an account of their experience.

A second thing which has given me concern is, I am afraid, you are in danger of *enthusiasm*. We know there are divine dreams and impressions. But how easily may you be deceived herein? How easily, where something is from God, may we mix something which is from nature! especially if we have a lively imagination, and are not aware of any danger.

I will mention one thing more. It has frequently been said, and with some *appearance* of truth, that you endeavour to *monopolize* the affections of all that fall into your hands: that you destroy the nearest and dearest connexion they had before; and make them quite cool and indifferent to their most intimate friends. I do not at all speak on my own account; I set myself out of the question. But if there be any thing of the kind, with regard to other people, I should be sorry, both for them and you. I commend you all to God; and to the word of his grace. I am, my dear sister, your affectionate brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO MR. J. VALTON.

*London, June 30, 1764.*

IT is certainly right, with all possible care, to abstain from all outward occasions of evil. But this profits only a little: the *inward change* is the one thing needful for *you*. You must be born again, or you will never gain an uniform and lasting liberty. Your whole soul is diseased, or rather dead,—dead to God,—dead in sin. Awake then, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. To seek for a particular deliverance from one sin only, is mere lost labour. If it could be attained, it would be of little worth; for another would rise in its place;—but indeed it cannot, before there is a general deliverance from the guilt and power of all sin. This is the thing which you want, and which you should be continually seeking for. You want to be freely justified from all things, through the redemption that is in Jesus. It might be of use if you would read over the first volume of Sermons, seriously, and with prayer. Indeed nothing will avail without prayer. Pray, whether you can or not:—when you are cheerful, when you are heavy, pray;—with many, or few words, or none at all. You will surely find an answer of peace. And why not now?

I am your servant for Christ's sake, JOHN WESLEY.

---

EXTRACTS FROM LETTERS WRITTEN BY THE  
REV. MR. WESLEY, TO A MEMBER OF HIS SOCIETY.

LETTER I.

CERTAINLY the more freedom you use, the more advantage you will find. But at the same time it will be needful, continually to remember, from whom every good and perfect gift cometh. If he blesses our intercourse with each other, then we shall never repent of the labour. It is a blessing indeed, when God uncovers our hearts.

and clearly shows us, what spirit we are of. But there is no manner of necessity, that this self-knowledge should make us *miserable*. Certainly the highest degree of it, is well consistent, both with peace and joy in the Holy Ghost. Therefore, how deeply soever you may be convinced of pride, self-will, peevishness, or any other inbred sin, see that you do not let go that confidence, whereby you may still rejoice in God your Saviour. Some indeed have been quite unhappy, though they retained their faith, through desire on the one hand, and conviction on the other: but that is nothing to you: you need never give up any thing which you have already received. You will not, if you keep close to that,—

*For this my vehement soul stands still :  
Restless, resign'd, for this I wait.*

We have a fuller, clearer knowledge of our own members, than of those belonging to other societies, and may therefore, without any culpable partiality, have a better opinion of them.

It is a great thing to spend all our time to the glory of God. But you need not be scrupulous, as to the precise time of reading and praying; I mean, as to the dividing it between one and the other. A few minutes, one way or the other, are of no great importance.

May He who loves you, fill you with his pure love!

I am, your affectionate Brother,                      JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

*March 29, 1760.*

HAVING a little longer reprieve, I snatch the opportunity of writing a few lines before we embark. Prayer is certainly the grand means of drawing near to God: and all others are helpful to us only so far, as they are mixed with, or prepare us for this. The comfort of it may be taken away by wandering thoughts, but not the benefit; violently to fight against these, is not the best and speediest way to conquer them: but rather humbly and calmly to ask and wait for his help, who will bruise Satan under your feet. You may undoubtedly remain in peace and joy, until you are perfected in love. You need neither enter into a dispute, when persons speak wrong, nor yet betray the truth; there is a middle way. You may simply say, "I believe otherwise; but I think, and let think; I am not fond of contending on this or any other head, lest I receive more hurt than I do good." Remember your calling: be

*"A simple follower of the Lamb,  
And harmless as a little child."*

J. W

## LETTER III.

*April 16, 1760.*

ELTHAM is a barren soil indeed. I fear scarcely any are to be found there, who know any thing of the power of religion: and not many that have so much as the form. But God is there; and he can supply every want. Nothing contributes to seriousness more than humility, because it is a preparation for every fruit of the Holy Spirit; and the knowledge of our desperate state by sin, has a particular

tendency to keep us earnest after deliverance; and that earnestness can hardly consist with levity, either of temper or behaviour.

Those who have tasted of the goodness of God, are frequently wanting in declaring it. They do not as they ought, stir up the gift of God, which is in every believer, by exciting one another to continual thankfulness, and provoking each other to love and good works. We should never be content to make a drawn battle, to part neither better nor worse than we met. Christian conversation is too precious a talent to be thus squandered away. It does not require a large share of natural wisdom to see God in all things; in all his works of creation, as well as of providence. This is rather a branch of spiritual wisdom, and is given to believers more and more, as they advance in purity of heart. Probably it would be of use to you, to be as regular as you can: I mean, to allot such hours to such employments; only not to be troubled when Providence calls you from them. For the best rule of all is, *To follow the Will of God.*

J. W.

#### LETTER IV.

*June 27, 1760.*

A DAY or two ago, I was quite surprised to find among my papers a letter of your's, which, I apprehend, I have not answered. Every one, though born of God in an instant, yet undoubtedly grows by slow degrees, both after the former and the latter change: But it does not follow from thence, that there must be a considerable tract of time between the one and the other. A year, or a month, is the same with God as a thousand: if he wills, to do is present with him; much less is there any necessity for much suffering: God can do his work by pleasure, as well as by pain. It is therefore undoubtedly our duty to pray, and look for full salvation, every day, every hour, every moment, without waiting till we have either done or suffered more. Why should not this be the accepted time?

Certainly your friend will suffer loss, if he does not allow himself time every day for private prayer. Nothing will supply the want of this: praying with others is quite another thing. Besides, it may expose us to great danger. It may turn prayer into an abomination to God. For

Guilty we speak, if subtle from within  
Blows on our words the self-admitting sin!

O make the best of every hour!

J. W.

#### LETTER V

*Nov. 11, 1760.*

CONVICTION is not condemnation. You may be convinced, yet not condemned: convinced of useless thoughts or words, and yet not condemned for them. You are condemned for nothing, if you love God, and continue to give him your whole heart. Certainly, spiritual temptations will pass through your spirit; else you could not feel them. I believe I understand your state better than you do yourself. Do not perplex yourself at all about what you shall call it. You are a child of God, a member of Christ, an heir of the kingdom.

What you have, hold fast, (whatever name is given to it,) and you *shall have* all that God has prepared for them that love him. Certainly you do need more faith: for you are a tender, sickly plant. But see,—

“ Faith, while yet you ask, is given :  
God comes down, the God and Lord,  
That made both earth and heaven ?”

You cannot live on what he did yesterday. Therefore he comes to day ! He comes to destroy that tendency to levity, to severe judging, to any thing that is not of God. Peace be with your spirit !

J. W

#### LETTER VI.

Dec. 12, 1760.

YOU may blame yourself, but I will not blame you, for seeking to have your every temper, and thought, and word, and work, suitable to the will of God. But I doubt not you seek this *by* faith, not *without* it: and you seek it *in* and *through* Christ, not *without* him. Go on: you shall have all you seek; because God is Love. He is showing you the littleness of your understanding, and the foolishness of all natural wisdom. Certainly peace and joy in believing are the grand means of holiness, therefore love and value them as such.

“ Why is the law of works superseded by the law of love ?” Because Christ died. “ Why are we not condemned for coming short even of this ?” Because he lives and intercedes for us. I believe it is impossible not to come short of it, through the unavoidable littleness of our understanding. Yet the blood of the covenant is upon us, and *therefore* there is no condemnation. I think the extent of the law of love is exactly marked out, in the thirteenth of the Corinthians. Let faith fill your heart with love to him and all mankind;—then follow this loving faith to the best of your understanding:—Meantime crying out continually,—“ Jesus is all in all to me.”

J. W.

#### LETTER VII.

June 17, 1761.

I APPREHEND your great danger now is this, to think you *never shall receive that blessing*, because you have not received it yet. Nay, perhaps you may be tempted to believe that there is no such thing, and that those who *thought* they had received it, were mistaken, as well as you. This danger will be increased, if some, who professed to be sanctified long ago, and yet have not received this blessing, affirm there is no such thing, and begin to warn others against falling into *this delusion*. But keep close to your rule, the WORD OF GOD, and to your guide, the SPIRIT OF GOD, and never be afraid of expecting *too much*: as yet you are but a babe. O what heights of holiness are to come ! I hope you do not forget to pray for me Adieu !

J. W

#### LETTER VIII.

May 13, 1762.

YOU did well to write. “ It is good to hide the secrets of a king;—but to declare the loving kindness of the Lord.” Have you never

found any wandering since? Is your mind *always* stayed on God? Do you find *every* thought brought into captivity to the obedience of Christ? Do no *vain* thoughts (useless, trifling, unedifying) lodge within you? Does not the corruptible body at *some times* more or less, press down the soul? Has God made your very *dreams* devout? I have known Satan assault in their sleep (endeavouring to terrify or affright) those whom he could not touch when they were awake.

As to your band, there are two sorts of persons with whom you may have to do; the earnest, and the slack: the way you are to take with the one, is quite different from that one would take with the other. The latter you must *search* and find out, why they are slack: Exhort them to repent, be zealous, do the first works. The former you have only to encourage, to exhort, to push forward to the mark, to bid them grasp the prize so nigh! And do so yourself. Receive a thousand more blessings: believe more, love more: you cannot love enough. Beware of sins of omission. So shall you fulfil the joy of your affectionate Brother,

J. W.

## LETTER IX.

*October 9, 1762.*

THOUGH I have very little time, I must write a few lines. I thank you for your comfortable letter. Some have more of heat, and some of light. The danger is, that one should say to the other, "I have no need of thee:" or that any should mistake his place, and imagine himself to be what he is not. Be not backward to speak to any whom you think are mistaken, either in this, or other things. A loving word, spoken in faith, shall not fall to the ground. And the more freely you speak to *me*, at any time, or on any head, the more you will oblige your ever affectionate Brother,

J. W.

## LETTER X.

*April 7, 1763.*

THE true gospel touches the very edge both of Calvinism and Antinomianism: so, that nothing but the mighty power of God can prevent our sliding either into the one or the other. The nicest point of all which relates to Christian perfection, is that which you inquire of. Thus much is certain: They that love God with all their heart, and all men as themselves, are scripturally perfect. And surely such there are; otherwise the promise of God would be a mere mockery of human weakness. Hold fast this: but then remember, on the other hand, you have this treasure in an earthen vessel: you dwell in a poor shattered house of clay, which presses down the immortal spirit. Hence all your thoughts, words, and actions, are so imperfect. So far from coming up to the standard, (that law of love, which but for the corruptible body, your soul would answer in all instances,) that you may well say, till you go to Him you love,—

"Every moment, Lord, I need  
The merit of thy death."

J. W.

## LETTER XI.

*October 13, 1764.*

I DO not see that you can speak otherwise than you do in your band. If you sought their approbation, that would be wrong. But you may suffer it without blame. Indeed in these circumstances you must: since it is undeniably plain that the doing otherwise would hurt rather than help their souls. I believe Miss F—— thought she felt evil before she did, and by that very thought, gave occasion to its re-entrance. You ought not to speak explicitly to many, very few would understand, or know how to advise you. For some time I thought M— did, and was therefore glad of your acquaintance with him, hoping he would lead you by the hand in a more profitable manner, than I was able to do. But I afterwards doubted. The Lord send you help by whom he will send!

From what, not only you, but many others likewise, have experienced, we find there is very frequently a kind of wilderness state, not only after justification, but even after deliverance from sin; and I doubt whether the sermon upon that state, might not give you light in this case also. But the most frequent cause of this second darkness or distress, I believe, is evil-reasoning. By this, three in four of those who cast away their confidence, are gradually induced so to do. And if this be the cause, is there any way to regain that deliverance, but by resuming your confidence? And can you receive it, unless you receive it freely? not of works, but by mere grace? This is the way; walk thou in it. Dare to believe! Look up and see thy Saviour near! When, to-morrow, or to-day? Nay, to-day hear his voice! At this time;—at this place! Lord, speak! Thy servant heareth!

## LETTER XII.

*Aug. 9, 1765.*

I HAVE many fears concerning you, lest you should sink beneath the dignity of your calling, or be moved to the right hand or the left from the simplicity of the gospel. Is your heart still whole with God? Do you still desire and seek no happiness but in him? Are you always, or generally sensible of his presence? Do you generally, at least, find communion with him? And do you expect all that you enjoyed once, and more? To be sanctified throughout, before you go hence?

I hope no inward or outward reasonings are able to move you from walking exactly according to the gospel. O beware of voluntary humility: of thinking, "Such a one is better than I, and why should I pretend to be more strict than she." "What is that to thee? follow thou me!" You have but one Pattern; follow him inwardly and outwardly. If other believers will go step for step with you, well;—but if not, follow Him! Peace be with your spirit. J. W

## LETTER XIII.

*August 31, 1765.*

YOU may be assured, it is not a small degree of satisfaction to me, to hear that your soul prospers. I cannot be indifferent to any

thing which concerns either your present or future welfare. As you covet, so I want you to enjoy the most excellent gifts. To your outward walking I have no objection. But I want you to walk inwardly in the fulness of love, and in the broad light of God's countenance. What is requisite to this, but to believe always? Now—to believe with your whole heart;—and to hold fast the beginning of this confidence steadfast unto the end. And yet a self-complaisant thought; yea, or a blasphemous one, may steal across your spirit: but I will not say,—that is your own thought. Perhaps an enemy hath done this. Neither will I blame you for “feeling deeply the perverseness of others;”—or for “feeling your spirit tried with it.” I do not wish that you should not feel it, (while it remains,) or that you should feel it otherwise than as a trial. But this does not prove, that there is sin in your heart, or, that you are not a sacrifice to love. O my friend, do justice to the grace of God! Hold fast whereunto you have attained! And if you have not yet uninterrupted communion with him, why not this moment,—and from this moment? If you have not, I incline to think it is occasioned by reasoning, or by some inward or outward omission.

J. W.

#### LETTER XIV.

*Bristol, October 13, 1765.*

A YEAR or two ago you were pretty clear of enthusiasm: I hope you are so still. But nothing under heaven is more catching, especially when it is found in those we love: and above all, when it is in those, whom we cannot but believe to be sound of understanding in most instances, and to have received larger measures of the grace of God, than we have ourselves.

There are now about twenty persons here, who believe they are saved from sin: 1. Because they always love, pray, rejoice, and give thanks: and, 2d, Because they have the witness of it in themselves. But if these lose what they have received, nothing will be more easy than to think they never had it. There were four hundred (to speak at the lowest) in London, who (unless they told me lies) had the same experience. If nearly half of these have lost what they had received,—I do not wonder,—if they think they never had it: it is so ready a way of excusing themselves for throwing away the blessed gift of God.

I no more doubt of Miss —— having this once, than I doubt of her sister's having it now. Whether God will restore her suddenly, as well as freely, I know not: whether by many steps, or in one moment. But here again you halt, as S. C— did, and S. R— does. You seem to think pain, yea, much pain, must go before an entire cure. In S. R. it did, and in a very few others: but it need not, pain is no more salutary than pleasure. Saving grace is essentially such, saving pain but accidentally. When God saves us by pain rather than pleasure, I can resolve it only into his justice, or sovereign will. To use the grace we have, and now to expect all we want, is the grand secret. He whom you love will teach you this continually.

## LETTER XV.

June 29, 1767.

FOR some days you have been much on my mind. Are you still making the best of life?—Employing a few days exactly in such a manner as you judge is most to the glory of God? And do you still hold fast what you have received, and expect the fulness of the promise? Surely you may retain all that earnestness of expectation, to which Mr. M— used to incite you, without any prejudice either to humility, or sobriety of spirit. Doubtless it is possible with Mr. Dryden's leave, "to be wise and love" at the same time. And neither of these need interfere with the other, seeing the Spirit of Love is also the Spirit of Wisdom. Are all your family breathing this spirit, and strengthening each other's hands in God? I hope you have the satisfaction of observing the same thing in most of those that are round about you, and of seeing the work of God prosper wherever you have occasion to be. When you are with the genteel part of your acquaintance, you have more immediate need of watching unto prayer, or you will insensibly drink into the lightness of their spirit, and abate a little of the accuracy of your walking: nay, stand fast, walking in every point as Christ also walked. Fashion and custom are nothing to you: you have a more excellent rule. You are resolved to be a Bible-Christian; and that, by the grace of God, not in some, but in all points. Go on in the name of God, and in the power of his might! still let your eye be single! Aim at one point! Retain and increase your communion with God! You have nothing else to do.

Happy and wise, the time redeem,  
And live, my friend, and die to him.

At some times we must look at outward things; such is the present condition of humanity: but we have need quickly to return home, for what avails all, but Christ reigning in the heart? "daily in his grace to grow:" what else have we to care for? Only now to use all the grace we have received, and now to expect all we want! The Lord Jesus swallow you up in his love! J. W.

## LETTER XVI.

March 14, 1768.

THERE are innumerable degrees, both in a justified, and a sanctified state, more than it is possible for us exactly to define. I have always thought the lowest degree of the latter implies,—The having but one desire and one design. I have no doubt but in that general outpouring of the Spirit, God did give \*\*\* this degree of salvation, neither did it ever appear to me that \*\*\* had lost it: rather \*\*\* seemed to stand just on the threshold of Christian Perfection, and I apprehend nothing would be more likely to hurt the soul than undervaluing the grace already received. Without any sin, we may be, *in a sense*, pleased with the approbation of those we esteem and love. But here we have need of much prayer, lest this should degenerate into pride or vanity. I still say to you, as to an almost

new-born babe,—Dare to believe, on Christ lay hold ! without being solicitous about *the name* of what you have, ask and expect all you want ! Is it not nigh ? even at the door ?

The knowledge of ourselves is true humility ; and without this, we cannot be freed from vanity : a desire of praise being inseparably connected with every degree of pride : continual watchfulness is absolutely necessary, to hide this from stealing in upon us. But as long as we steadily watch and pray, we shall not *enter into temptation*. It may and will assault us on every side ; but it cannot prevail.

J. W.

## LETTER XVII.

July 5, 1768.

I AM more inclined to congratulate you, than to condole with you, upon your present situation. Many circumstances concurred to expose you to the greatest of all dangers, that of being generally commended. It is therefore a peculiarly gracious Providence, whereby this danger is turned aside ; and that without any particular fault, or even imprudence, on your part. You may now experience the truth of that fine reflection, “ Nothing is more profitable for us, than to suffer reproach for a good action, done with a single eye.” Nevertheless you cannot be excused from speaking plainly to S—C— and A—, and the sooner this is done the better, lest their want of judgment should produce more ill effects. Certainly you should labour to convince them, that they were altogether in a fault. In anywise they should have spoken to you *first*. Then, if you had not satisfied them, they might have gone farther. But what can be done for the poor young woman ? I am afraid lest she should be turned out of the way.

You will hardly need that tract for a time, as you have Mr. Brainerd’s Life. There is a pattern of self-devotion and deadness to the world ! But how much of his sorrow and pain had been prevented, if he had understood the doctrine of Christian Perfection ! How many tears did he shed, because it was impossible to be freed from sin.

As you have not the same outward trials which many have, it is highly needful you should have some inward ones. Although they need not be either many or long. If you walk closely with God, he is able to give any degree of holiness, either by pleasure or pain. S— continues with you a little longer, to quicken you in the way. Why should not a living Christian be exactly of the same spirit with a dying Christian ? Seeing the difference between her life and ours, is nothing, when compared to eternity ! The last scene of life in dying believers is of great use to those who are about them. Here we see the reality of religion, and of things eternal. And nothing has a greater tendency to solemnize the soul, and make, and keep it dead to all below. We are reasonable creatures, and undoubtedly reason is the candle of the Lord. By enlightening our reason to see the meaning of the Scriptures, the Holy Spirit makes our way plain before us.

J. W.

## LETTER XVIII.

August 12, 1769.

AT some times it is needful to say, "I will pray with the Spirit, and with the understanding also." At other times the understanding has little to do, while the soul is poured forth in *passive prayer*. I believe we found the answer to many prayers at the Conference, particularly on the two last days. At the conclusion, all the preachers were melted down, while they were singing those lines for me.

Thou, who so long hast sav'd me here,  
 A little longer save;  
 Till freed from sin, and freed from fear,  
 I sink into a grave:  
 Till glad I lay my body down,  
 Thy servant's steps attend;  
 And, O! my life of mercies crown  
 With a triumphant end."

Various scriptures show, that we may pray with resignation, for the life or ease of a friend: it is enough that every petition be closed with, "Not, as I will, but as thou wilt." It is true, that a believer knows the devices of Satan to be many and various. But the apostle means more than this, namely, that those who have the unction of the Holy One, are thereby enabled to discern his devices whenever they occur, and to distinguish them from the influences of the good Spirit, how finely soever they are disguised. To answer for ourselves is often a cross; and we had much rather let people think and talk as they please; but it is a cross we must often take up: otherwise, we "walk not charitably," if we do not "reprove our brother;" if we "suffer sin upon him," we "hate our brother in our heart."

If Mrs. — be arrived at London, I wish you would take the first opportunity of conversing with her. She will have more need of a faithful friend now than ever she had in her life. I expect she will hear reasons upon reasons, why she ought, as a point of *duty*, to conform a little to the world, to have a few trifling acquaintance, and not to be so particular in her dress. Now as you have heard all these things before, and have been enabled by the grace of God to discover Satan, even with his angel's face, and to stand firm against all his assaults, you will be better able to assist and confirm her, if you seek her before she is much shaken.

It has a little surprised me, that several who are, I believe, filled with love, yet do not desire to die. It seems, as if God generally does not give this desire, till the time of death approaches. Perhaps in many it would be of little use. First let them learn to live.

Doubtless that rest was given, "to support you under your sickness:" Yet that is no reason why it should be ever taken away: it was certainly a degree of that rest which remaineth for the people of God. But it may be called by this or any other *name*: names are of little consequence. *The thing* you need never let go. You may live *in* and *to* Jesus: yea, and that continually by simple faith, and holy, humble love.

Let M—T— be as sensible as ever she will or can be, of her own helplessness and poverty. But let her not cast away that confidence, which hath great recompense of reward. She did experience the pure love of God; let none take advantage from her being tried by fire, (if it should be so,) to reason her out of it. That general promise, “In blessings I will bless thee,” certainly contains all the promises, whether relating to this life or the next: and all are yours! Peace be multiplied upon you.

J. W.

### LETTER XIX.

*May, 1769.*

BY comparing your own outward state with Mrs. —, you now see clearly the advantages you enjoy: you have nothing external to hinder your waiting upon God, without carefulness, and without distraction. None has a right to interrupt you, while you are exercised in things divine, and labouring to be holy in body and spirit. You may have just so much, and no more connexion with any one, as experience shows is profitable for you. O stand fast in this liberty, glorifying God with all you have, and all you are!

It is remarkable, that St. Paul places this the last of all, that “love endureth all things:” and this is the sum of his wish, with regard to the Colossians; “that they might be strengthened unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness.” They who have attained this, are ripe for the inheritance, and ready to salute their friends in light. There is a time when we grow up towards this, even without any sensible increase; as in the parable, the seed groweth and springs up, *he knoweth not how*: and many times indeed we do know how the power of the Highest suddenly overshadows us: while either the first, or the pure love is shed abroad in our hearts. But at other times he confirms and increases that love, in a gradual and almost insensible manner.

Death has had a large commission this year, with regard to our societies in Ireland as well as England: just as I left Dublin, four or five of our members there were taken away in four or five days: three elder, and two in the bloom of youth; one of whom had been filled with love for some years. They all witnessed a good confession at the last, and died in full assurance of hope. Nancy Rogers, whom I saw just before I left the town, breathed the very spirit of Jane Cooper. I think their kindred spirits are now acquainted with each other, better than you and I are;—but not better than we shall be, when we meet together in the paradise of God.

J. W.

### LETTER XX.

*July 6, 1770.*

WHEN things are viewed at a distance, one would be apt to imagine that no degree of sorrow could be found in a heart that rejoices evermore: that no right temper could be wanting, much

less any degree of a wrong temper subsist, in a soul that is filled with love : and yet I am in doubt, whether there be any soul clothed with flesh and blood, which enjoys every right temper, and in which is no degree of any wrong one : suppose, of ill judged zeal, or more or less affection for some person than that person really deserves. When we say, "This is a natural, necessary consequence of the soul's union with a corruptible body," the assertion is by no means clear, till we add, "because of the weakness of understanding, which results from this union;" admitting this, the case is plain. There is so close a connexion between right judgment and right tempers, as well as right practice, that the latter cannot easily subsist without the former. Some wrong temper, at least in a small degree, almost necessarily follows from wrong judgment ; I apprehend when many say, "Sin *must* remain, while the body remains," this is what they mean, though they cannot make it out.

You say, "my silence usually proceeds from my views and thoughts of myself as a Christian." Bishop Fenelon says, "Simplicity is that grace which frees the soul from all unnecessary reflections upon itself." See here one sort of simplicity which you want ! When I speak or write to you, I have *you* before my eyes, (but generally speaking,) I do not think of myself at all. I do not think whether I am wise or foolish, knowing or ignorant : but I see *you* aiming at glory and immortality, and say just what I hope may direct your goings in the way, and prevent your being weary or faint in your mind. Our Lord will order all things well for sister T— : what can hurt those that trust in him ?

J. W

## LETTER XXI.

*April 14, 1771.*

WHATEVER comes from you is agreeable to me : your letters always give me pleasure : but none more than the last, which brings the welcome news of the revival of the work of God among you. You will encourage I— T— to send me a circumstantial account of God's dealings with her soul. Mr. Norris observes, that no part of history is so profitable, as that which relates to the *great changes* in states and kingdoms : and it is certain, no part of Christian history is so profitable, as that which relates to great changes wrought in our souls : these therefore should be carefully noticed and treasured up for the encouragement of our brethren.

I am glad *you* have at length broke through those evil reasonings, which so long held you down, and prevented you from acknowledging the things, which were freely given to you of God. Always remember the essence of Christian holiness is, simplicity and purity : one design, one desire : entire devotion to God : but this admits of a thousand degrees and variations, and certainly it will be proved by a thousand temptations. But in all these things you shall be more than conqueror.

It takes God (so to speak) abundance of pains to hide pride from

man : and you are in more danger of it than many, were it only on account of outward advantages. Happy are you, if you use those for that single end, to be outwardly and inwardly devoted to God ; and that more entirely than you could be in different circumstances. I have just been conversing with that excellent woman, M— P— : what a mystery, that one of such gifts and such grace, should be fixed in a place, where she is almost useless. So much the more thankful you may be, who have opportunity of employing every talent which God hath given you. If you would retain the talent of health, sleep early, and rise early. I am, &c. J. W

## LETTER XXII.

September 15, 1770.

TO use the grace given, is the certain way to obtain more grace. To use all the faith you have, will bring an increase of faith : but this word is of very wide extent ; it takes in the full exercise of every talent wherewith we are intrusted. This comprises the whole compass both of inward and outward religion. That you may be able steadily and effectually to attend to this, you have need of that prayer, “ Give me understanding that I may keep thy law ; yea, that I may keep it with my whole heart.” This is, to “ make the best of life,” which cannot be done without growing in grace. I believe it would help you,—to read and consider the sermon on Self-Denial, [Volume VI. p. 80,] and that on Universal Conscientiousness, in the Christian Library.

A sense of wants and weaknesses, with various trials and temptations, will do you no real hurt, though they occasion heaviness for a time, and abate your joy in the Lord. It is wrong so to attend to this, as to weaken your faith : and yet in the general, it is not wrong,—“ to form your estimate of the state of your soul from your sensations :” not indeed from these alone ; but from these in conjunction with your words and actions. It is true, we cannot judge of ourselves, by the measure of our joy ; the most variable of all our sensations, and frequently depending in a great degree, on the state of our blood and spirits. But if you take love, joy, peace, meekness, gentleness, and resignation, together, I know no surer rule whereby to judge of your state to God-ward.

What is the difference between “ the frame of my mind and the state of my soul ?” Is there the difference of a hair’s breadth ? I will not affirm it. If there be any at all, perhaps it is this : The *frame* may mean a single, transient sensation ; the *state* a more complicated and lasting sensation ; something which we *habitually feel*. By *frame*, some may mean *fleeting passions* ; by *state*, *rooted tempers*. But I do not know, that we have any authority to use the terms thus, or to distinguish one from the other. He whose mind is in a good frame, is certainly a good man, as long as it so continues. I would therefore no more require you, to cease from judging of your state by your frame of mind, than I would require you to cease from breathing.

Unless you deal very closely with those committed to your care, you will not give an account of them with joy. . . . Advice and admonitions at a distance, will do little harm or good. . . . To those who give in to dress you might read or recommend the "Advice to the Methodists," on that head. It would be proper to go to the root of the matter once or twice: then to let it sleep; and after a few weeks, try again. A Methodist using fine or gay apparel, *must* suffer loss in her soul, although she may retain a little life; but she never will attain a high degree, either of holiness or happiness. J. W.

## LETTER XXIII.

May 31, 1771.

THE dealings of God with man are infinitely varied, and cannot be confined to any general rule: both in justification and sanctification he often acts in a manner we cannot account for.

There cannot be a more proper phrase than that you used, and I well understand your meaning;—yet it is sure you are a *transgressor still*, namely, of the perfect, *adamic law*. But though it be true, *all sin is a transgression of this law*; yet it is by no means true, on the other hand, (though we have so often taken it for granted,) that *all transgressions of this law are sin*: no; not at all: only all voluntary transgressions of it: none else are sins against the Gospel law.

Although we have "faith's abiding impression realizing things to come," yet as long as we are in the body, we have but an imperfect, shadowy knowledge of the things of eternity. For now we only see them in a glass, *a mirror*, which gives us no more than a shadow of them; therefore we see them *darkly*, or *in a riddle*, as St. Paul speaks. The whole invisible world is as yet a riddle to us: and it seems to be in this sense, that some writers speak so much of *the night*, or *darkness of faith*; namely, when opposed to *sight*, i. e. to the view of things which we shall have, when the veil of flesh and blood is removed.

Those reasonings concerning the *measure* of holiness, (a curious, not useful question,) are not *inconsistent* with pure love, but they tend to damp it; and were you to pursue them so far, they would lead you into unbelief.

What you feel is certainly a degree of *anger*, but not of *sinful anger*: there ought to be in us (as there was in our Lord) not barely a perception in the understanding, that this, or that is evil; but also an emotion of mind, a sensation or passion suitable thereto:—this anger at *sin*, accompanied with love and compassion to the *sinner*, is so far from being itself a sin, that it is rather a duty. St. Paul's word is, *not easily provoked*,—to any paroxysm of *anger*: neither are you: nevertheless, I suppose there is in you, when you feel a proper anger at sin, a hurrying motion of the blood and spirits, which is an imperfection, and will be done away. J. W.

## LETTER XXIV

June 25, 1771.

UNDOUBTEDLY the reward which is purchased for us by the blood of the covenant, will be proportioned to what we *are*, (through grace,) what we *do*, and what we *suffer*. Whatever therefore prevents our doing good, prevents our receiving so full a reward: and what can countervail that loss? It is certainly right, that we should bear one another's burdens; that we should weep with them that weep, and for them that weep not for themselves. "When Jesus saw them weeping, he *troubled himself*;"—he willingly sustained that emotion; he voluntarily suffered that sorrow: and it is good for us to tread in his steps. "But how far?" Just so far as does not disqualify us for any other part of our duty; so far as softens, not unnerves the mind; as makes us more, not less zealous of good works.

Undoubtedly there are various kinds, and various degrees of communion with God: we cannot confine it to one only: it may take in the exercise of every affection, either single, or variously mixed together; and may run through all our outward employments. The most desirable prayer is that, where we can quite pour out our soul, and freely talk with God. But it is not this alone which is acceptable to him. "I love one (said a holy man,) that perseveres in dry duty." Beware of thinking even this is labour lost. God does much work in the heart even at those seasons.

"And when the soul, sighing to be approv'd,  
Says—*Could I love!*—and stops;—God writeth—*lov'd!*"

And yet the comfort is, that you need not rest here: you may go on until all your heart is love: till you rejoice evermore, pray without ceasing, and in every thing give thanks. You know *this is the will of God* concerning you, in Christ Jesus. I think M— P— enjoys this, and grows in grace continually. So do two or three more members in this society. But they sadly want more searching preachers; and those that would help them forward, by explaining the deep things of God. Peace be with your spirit. J. W

## LETTER XXV.

July 13, 1771.

AS long as we dwell in a house of clay, it is liable to affect the mind; sometimes by dulling or darkening the understanding, and sometimes more directly by damping and depressing the soul, and sinking it into distress and heaviness. In this state, doubt or fear, of one kind or another, will naturally arise. And the prince of this world, who well knows whereof we are made, will not fail to improve the occasion, in order to disturb, though he cannot pollute the heart, which God hath cleansed from all unrighteousness.

I rejoice with you concerning poor M— M—. Persons who are eminently dutiful to their parents, hardly ever fail of receiving a reward, even in the present world.

My call to America is not yet clear. I have no business there, as long as they can do without me. At present I am a debtor to

the people of England and Ireland, and especially to them that believe.

You have a delicate part to act with regard to P—: there are so many great defects in her natural temper, that a deal of grace will be required to make her altogether a Christian: neither will grace shine in her, as it would in others. You have need carefully to encourage what is of God in her, and tenderly to reprove what is of nature. I am afraid for P— D—, lest she should be less zealous of good works than she was formerly. I doubt she has at present little encouragement thereto.

In the thirteenth of Corinthians you have the height and depth of genuine perfection, and it is observable, St. Paul speaks all along of the love of our neighbour, (flowing indeed from the love of God.) Mr. De Renty is an excellent pattern of this. But many things in his fellowship with God, will not be explained, till the Holy Spirit explains them by writing them on your heart. That darkness which often clouds your understanding, I take to be quite preternatural. I believe the spirit of darkness spreads a mist over your mind, so far as he is permitted; and that the best remedy is simply to look up to God, and the cloud will flee away at *his* presence.

I am, &c.

J. W.

#### LETTER XXVI.

*August 3, 1772.*

HOW wise are all the ways of God! and although in many instances they are past finding out, yet we may even now discern the designs of his providence.

The Appendix to the Philosophy, and the Trinity Hymns, I hope, will settle you on that important point. It is a striking remark of Bishop Brown, That we are not required to “believe any mystery,” in the matter: this mystery does not lie in the fact, Three are One; but in the *manner*, the accounting how they are one. But with this I have nothing to do. I believe the fact;—as to the manner (wherein the whole mystery lies) I believe nothing about it. The quaint device of styling them *three* offices, rather than persons, gives up the whole doctrine.

There is scarcely any word of so extensive a sense as Wisdom. It frequently means the whole of religion. And indeed no one can be termed *thoroughly wise*, until he is altogether a Christian. To devote all our thoughts and actions to God,—this is our highest wisdom: and so far as we inwardly or outwardly swerve from this, we walk as fools, not as wise men. In order to be all devoted to the Lord, even those who are renewed in love, still need the unction of the Holy One, to teach them in all circumstances the most excellent way, and to enable them so to watch and pray, that they may continually walk therein. It seems, my time for writing either on this or other subjects, is pretty well over: only I am ready to add a word now and then, if Providence so require.

Persons are, in one sense, delivered from unbelief, when they are

enabled to believe always ; when they have faith's abiding impression, realizing things to come. For they can then no longer be termed unbelievers. When this is given in a very glorious manner, so that they are filled with faith, and are not able to doubt even for a moment, it is natural for them to say, "They are saved from all unbelief." The soul that is all light (as Lopez, when he said, "All is mid-day now,") may affirm, "I am saved from all darkness : " and is not this the will of the Lord concerning you ? Undoubtedly it is. Fear not then : reason not ; only look up ! Is he not nigh, even at the door ? He is nigh that justifieth ; He is nigh that sanctifieth : He is nigh that supplies all your wants ! Take more out of his fullness, that you may love him more, praise him more, and serve him better. It is desirable to glorify God, like Mr. De Renty or Halyburton, in death, as well as in life ; I am sorry for poor Miss H— : it is a mysterious providence.

## LETTER XXVII.

*July 1, 1772.*

IT is lost time to consider, Whether you write well or ill ;—you speak from the heart, and that is enough. Unbelief is either total, the absence of faith ; or partial, the want of more faith. In the latter sense, every believer may complain of unbelief, unless when he is filled with faith and the Holy Ghost. Then it is all mid-day. Yet even then we may pray, "Lord, increase our faith."

We learn to think,—by reading, and meditating on what we read ; by conversing with sensible people ; and by every thing that improves the heart. Since purity of heart (as Mr. Norris observes,) both clears the medium through which we see, and strengthens the faculty, mechanical rules avail little, unless one had opportunity of learning the elements of logic ; but it is a miserable task to learn them without an instructor.

Entire resignation implies entire love. Give him your will, and you give him your heart.

You need not be at all careful in that matter, whether you apply directly to one person, or the other, seeing HE and the FATHER are One. Pray just as you are led, without reasoning, in all simplicity. Be a little child, hanging on Him that loves you.

I am, &amp;c.

J. W.

## LETTER XXVIII.

*June 17, 1774.*

I AM glad you think of me, when you do not see me : I was almost afraid it was otherwise. Air and exercise you must have : and if you use constant exercise, with an exact regimen, it is not improbable that you will have vigorous health, if you live to four or five and thirty. About that time, the constitution, both of men and women, takes an entire turn. At present you are certainly in your place ; and you need take no thought for the morrow.

The praying much for those we love much, is doubtless the fruit

of affection: but such an affection as is well pleasing to God, and is wrought in us by his own Spirit. Therefore it is certain, the intercession that flows from that affection, is according to the will of God.

That is an exceedingly nice question, "How far we may desire the approbation of good men?" I think it cannot be proved that such a desire is any where forbidden in Scripture. But it requires a very strong influence of the Holy Spirit, to prevent its running to excess.

Friendship is one species of love, and is, in its proper sense, a disinterested reciprocal love between two persons. Wicked persons are, it seems, incapable of friendship. For "he who fears no God, can love no friend." Nor indeed is every one that fears God, capable of friendship. It requires a peculiar turn of mind, without which it can have no being. The properties of Christian friendship, are the same as the properties of love; with those which St. Paul so beautifully describes in the thirteenth chapter of the first epistle to the Corinthians. And it produces, as occasions offer, every good word and work. Many have laid down the rules whereby it should be regulated; but they are not to be comprised in a few lines. One is, "Give up every thing to your friend, except a good conscience toward God."

There has undoubtedly been instances of real friendship among Jews, yea, and among Heathens who were susceptible of it; but they were by no means wicked men; they were men fearing God, and working righteousness, according to the dispensation they were under. I apprehend wicked men, under whatever dispensation, to be absolutely incapable of true friendship. By wicked men, I mean, either men openly profane, or men void of justice, mercy, and truth. There may be a shadow of friendship between those, whether of the same, or of different sexes. But surely the substance is wanting: in all my experience, I have found no exception to this rule.

After an acquaintance of four and thirty years, I myself cannot have freedom with Miss —. Yet I know not but *you* may. In most respects, she judges truly, although her natural understanding is not strong. Miss N—'s is, the more you know her, the more you will taste her spirit. The others you mention want a little more age and experience, then they might make *companions* for you. J. W.

#### LETTER XXIX.

Sept. 16, 1774.

I BELIEVE my displeasure at you, is not likely to rise to any great height; it will hardly have time; for I should tell you very soon, of any thing which I did not like.

You want more simplicity: I will give you the first instance that occurs, of that simplicity which I mean. Some years since, a woman sitting by me, fell into strong convulsions: and presently began to speak as in the name of God. Both her look, motions, and tone of voice, were peculiarly shocking. Yet I found my mind as ready to receive what she said, as if she had spoken with the look, motion, and accent of Cicero.

“Unprofitable,—far from edifying.” Nay, but this does not go to the bottom of the matter. Why is that unprofitable to me, which is edifying to others? Remember that remark in the *Thoughts on Christian Perfection*: If one grain of prejudice be in my mind, I can receive no profit from the preacher. Neither in this case can I form a right judgment of any thing a person says or does. And yet it is possible this prejudice may be innocent, as springing from the unavoidable weakness of human understanding.

I doubt not Mr. M— will be of use to many; he has much sense and much grace, together with uncommon activity and patience. And wherever he goes, the work of God prospers in his hands.

Bishop Brown thought Arianism and Socinianism, were the flood which the dragon is in this age pouring out of his mouth to swallow up the woman: perhaps it may; especially with Dr. Taylor’s emendation. But still the main flood in England seems to be Antinomianism. This has been a greater hinderance to the work of God than any, or all others, put together. But God has already lifted up his standard, and he will maintain his own cause. In the present dispensation, he is undoubtedly aiming at that point to spread holiness over the land. It is our wisdom to have this always in view, inward and outward holiness. A thousand things will be presented by men and devils, to divert us from our point. These we are to watch against continually: as they will be continually changing their shape. But let your eye be single; aim still at one thing,—holy, loving FAITH; giving God the whole heart. And incite all to this;—one love;—one present and eternal heaven.

J. W.

### LETTER XXX.

Nov. 30, 1774.

YOU are in the safer extreme: when I formerly removed from one college to another, I fixed my resolution not to be hastily acquainted with any one: indeed, not to return any visit, unless I had a reasonable hope of receiving or doing good therein. This my new neighbours generally imputed to pride: and I was willing to suffer the imputation.

I “sum up the experience” of persons too, in order to form their general character. But in doing this, we take a different way of making our estimate. It may be, you chiefly regard (as my brother does) the length of their experience: now this I make little account of; I measure the depth and breadth of it. Does it sink deep in humble, gentle love? Does it extend wide in all inward and outward holiness? If so, I do not care whether they are of five, or five and thirty years standing. Nay, when I look at Miss — or Miss —, I am ready to hide my face: I am ashamed of having set out before they were born.

Undoubtedly Miss J— is deep in grace, and lives like an angel here below. Yet some things in her character I do not admire: I impute them to human frailty. Many years ago I might have said, but I do not now,

“Give me a woman made of stone,  
A widow of Pigmalion.”

And just such a Christian, one of the fathers, Clemens Alexandrinus, describes : but I do not admire that description now as I did formerly. I now see a Stoic and a Christian are different characters ; and sometimes I have been a good deal disgusted at Miss J——’s apathy. When God restores our friends to us, we ought to rejoice : it is a defect if we do not. In that and several other instances I take knowledge of S—— R——’s littleness of understanding : and this, as well as our temper, we ought to improve to the utmost of our power ; which can no otherwise be done, than by reading authors of various kinds, as well as by thinking and conversation. If we read nothing but the Bible, we should hear nothing but the Bible, and then what becomes of preaching ?

Many people have clear conceptions of a few things, concerning which they judge and reason. But they have no clear ideas of other things. So if they reason about them, they stumble at every step. None can have general good sense, unless they have clear and determinate ideas of all things.

J. W.

#### LETTER XXXI.

• *December 27, 1774.*

A FEW minutes I spent with Miss M—— when she was in town, two or three years ago. She seemed to be of a soft, flexible temper, and a good deal awakened. From her letters I should judge, that she had still many convictions, and strong desires to be a real Christian. At the same time, it is plain she is surrounded with hindrances, and is sometimes persuaded to act contrary to her conscience. It is extremely difficult to advise a person in such circumstances what to do. Methinks the first thing I would advise her to, at all events, is, “Do nothing against your conscience.” 2. At a proper opportunity, after praying for courage, tell your lady, you scruple such and such things. And I doubt not but she will take effectual care that no one shall press you on those heads. Leaving her place is the last step to be taken, if she finds she cannot save her soul therein.

You know it is very natural for me to estimate wisdom and goodness by years, and to suppose the longest experience must be the best. But although there is much advantage in long experience, and we may trust an old soldier more than a novice : yet God is tied down to no rules : he frequently works a great work in a little time. He makes young men and women wiser than the aged, and gives to many, in a very short time, a closer and deeper communion with himself, than others attain in a long course of years. B—— and P—— B—— are witnesses. They have both borne huge contradiction : and P—— has stood such shocks as might have overset some of the most established souls we have in London.

There is a great calmness and meekness in B—— J—— : but I want more softness and tenderness : I want more of human mingled

with the divine. Nay, sometimes I want it in Miss M—— too. But I do not call that warmth anger : at least not sinful anger : perhaps it would be culpable to be without it : I desire no apathy in religion ; a Christian is very far from a Stoic.

In every case, the last appeal must be made to our own conscience. Yet our conscience is far from being an infallible guide, as every wrong temper tends to bribe and blind the Judge. J. W.

## LETTER XXXII.

Feb. 11, 1775.

THERE seems to be in our excellent friend, something too near a kin to apathy. "A clergyman," said one, (but I do not agree with him in this,) "ought to be all *intellect*,—*no passion*." She appears to be (I will not affirm she is) at no great distance from this. It is true, by this means we might avoid much pain : but we should also lose much happiness. Therefore this is a state which I cannot desire. Rather give me the pleasure and pain too : rather let

"Plain life with heightening passions rise,  
The boast or burden of an hour !

But who has attained this ? Who treads the middle path, equally remote from both extremes ? I will tell you one that *did*, (although the remembrance of her still brings tears into my eyes,) that lovely saint, Jane Cooper ! There was the due mixture of intellect and passion ! I remember one of the last times I saw her, before her last illness, her look, her attitude, her words ! My dear friend, be you a follower of her, as she was of Christ ! J. W.

## LETTER XXXIII.

June 9, 1775.

VERY possibly, if I should live seven years longer, we should be acquainted with each other. I verily think your reserve wears off ; though only by a hair's breadth at a time. Quicken your pace. What you do, do quickly.—"Scarcely any thing important enough to write upon !" Why could you not say something about yourself ? And is there any thing relating to *your* welfare, which is not important to *me* ? Am not I concerned in every thing which concerns you ? which either lessens or increases your happiness ? I want you to be as happy, and in order thereto, as holy as an angel ; that you may do the will of God on earth, as angels do in heaven.

I am less careful about your increase in knowledge, any farther than it tends to love. There is a danger of your laying more stress on this, than sound reason requires. Otherwise you would reap much profit from sermons, which do not improve your knowledge,—which do not apply to the understanding so directly as to the heart. I feel more want of heat than light : I value light : but it is nothing compared to love. Aim at this, my dear friend, in all public exercises : and then you will seldom be disappointed. Then you will not stop on the threshold of perfection ; (I trust you do not now ;)

but will press on to the mark, to the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus: till you experimentally know all that love of God which passeth all (speculative) knowledge.

The lengthening of your life, and the restoring your health, are invaluable blessings; but do you ask how you shall improve them to the glory of the Giver? And are you willing to know? Then I will tell you how. Go and see the poor and sick in their own poor little hovels. Take up your cross, woman! Remember the faith! Jesus went before you, and will go with you. Put off the gentlewoman; you bear a higher character. You are an heir of God, and joint-heir through Christ! Are you not going to meet him in the air, with ten thousand of his saints? O be ready! J. W

#### LETTER XXXIV.

Feb. 7, 1776.

I HAVE found some of the uneducated poor, who have exquisite taste and sentiment; and many, very many, of the rich, who have scarcely any at all. But I do not speak of this: I want you to converse more, abundantly more, with the poorest of the people, who, if they have not taste, have souls, which you may forward in their way to heaven. And they have (many of them) faith, and the love of God, in a larger measure than any persons I know. Creep in among these, in spite of dirt, and a hundred disgusting circumstances: and thus put off the gentlewoman. Do not confine your conversation to genteel and elegant people; I should like this, as well as you do. But I cannot discover a precedent for it, in the life of our Lord, or any of his apostles. My dear friend, let you and I walk *as he walked*.

I now understand you with regard to the P—'s; but I fear, in this you are too delicate. It is certain their preaching is attended with the power of God to the hearts of many, and why not to yours? Is it not owing to a want of simplicity? "Are you going to hear Mr. Wesley?" said a friend to Mr. Blackwell. "No," he answered, "I am going to hear God: I listen to *Him*, whoever preaches, otherwise I lose all my labour."

"You will only be content to convert worlds? You shall hew wood, or carry brick and mortar: and when you do this in obedience to the order of Providence; it shall be more profitable to your own soul than the other." You may remember Mr. De Renty's other remark: "I then saw that a well-instructed Christian is never hindered by any person or thing. For whatever prevents his doing good works, gives him a fresh opportunity of submitting his will to the will of God: which at that time is more pleasing to God, and more profitable to his soul, than any thing else which he could possibly do."

Never let your expenses exceed your income. To servants I would give full as much as others give for the same service: and not more. It is impossible to lay down any general rules, as to "saving all we can," and "giving all we can." In this, it seems, we must

needs be directed, from time to time, by the unction of the Holy One. Evil spirits have undoubtedly abundance of work to do in an evil world: frequently in concurrence with wicked men, and frequently without them.

## LETTER XXXV

Feb. 26, 1776.

WHAT I advise you to, is, not to contract a friendship, or even acquaintance, with poor, inelegant, uneducated persons; but frequently, nay, constantly, to *visit the poor, the widow, the sick, the fatherless, in their affliction*: and this, although they should have nothing to recommend them, but that they are bought with the blood of Christ. It is true, this is not pleasing to flesh and blood. There are a thousand circumstances usually attending it, which shock the delicacy of our nature, or rather of our education. But yet the blessing which follows this labour of love, will more than balance the cross.

“To be uneasy under obligations which we cannot repay,” is certainly a fruit of *diabolical* generosity; and therefore Milton, with great propriety, ascribes it to the Devil, and makes him speak quite in character, when he says, concerning his obligations to God himself,

“So burdensome still paying, still to owe.”

I am quite of another mind: I entirely agree with you, that the more sensible we are of such obligations, the more happy we are. Surely this yoke is easy, and this burden is light!

Perhaps, if you give another reading to “Thoughts upon Dress,” you will clearly see that both reason and religion are more deeply concerned than we are apt to imagine, even in the trifling article of dress: *trifling* if compared with the weightier matters of the law: yet in itself of no small importance: and that, whether you consider yourself as an individual, or as a member of a Christian society. Certainly, Dr. Young can only mean, “None is happy, unless he thinks himself so;”—and truly this is no great discovery. Is it any more than “None is happy unless he is so?” If he means more than this, he means wrong: For we know the *best man* is the happiest; but if I thought myself the best man in the world, I should be very proud, and consequently not happy at all.

J. W.

## LETTER XXXVI.

April 26, 1777.

TO begin at the end: I did not preach any sermon for you in particular, though by accident; I know what sermon you mean, and both you and I have need of it.

I have some fine remains of Charles Perronet’s, wherein he describes his own experience. It exactly agrees with your’s. He too was led at first to Jesus the Mediator, and seemed in a manner to have no concern with the Father and the Holy Ghost. Afterwards he had communion with the Father, next with the Spirit, and then

with the whole Trinity; you therefore are afraid where no fear is. Our Lord is not displeas'd at your following his Spirit.

I do not remember the making mention of covetousness; but it is likely I might; for I am exceedingly afraid of it, lest it should steal unawares, (as it always comes in disguise,) either upon myself or my friends. I know no way to escape it, but (having saved all we can) to give all we can. I think this is at present your rule as well as mine: and I trust it always will be.

We cannot impute too much to divine Providence, unless we make it interfere with our free-agency. I suppose that young woman, by saying she did not believe God had any thing to do with it, only meant, that the passion itself was not at all from God, but altogether from evil nature: She could not mean, that God does not, in a thousand instances, draw good out of evil, yea, that he may not sometimes permit us to be overtaken in a fault, to preserve us from a greater.

General rules are easily laid down. But it is not possible to apply them accurately in particular cases, without the anointing of the Holy One:—This alone, abiding with us, can teach us of all things. Thus our general rule is, "Thou shalt do no murder:" which plainly forbids every thing that tends to impair health; and implies that we use every probable means of preserving, or restoring it. But when we come to apply this to particular instances, we are presently in a labyrinth, and want that anointing which alone can make plain the way before our face, and direct us to do in every minute circumstance, what is acceptable to God.

You have abundant reason to praise God, both for spiritual and temporal blessings. Beware of indulging gloomy thoughts; they are the bane of thankfulness. You are encompassed with ten thousand mercies; let these sink you into humble thankfulness.

J. W

#### LETTER XXXVII.

*Dec. 10, 1777.*

YOU do not at all understand my manner of life. Though I am always in haste, I am never in a hurry; because I never undertake any more work than I can go through with perfect calmness of spirit. It is true, I travel four or five thousand miles in a year. But I generally travel alone in my carriage: and consequently, am as retired ten hours in the day, as if I were in a wilderness. On other days, I never spend less than three hours (frequently ten or twelve) in the day alone. So there are few persons in the kingdom who spend so many hours secluded from all company. Yet I find time to visit the sick and the poor; and I must do it, if I believe the Bible, if I believe these are the marks wherby the Shepherd of Israel will know and judge his sheep at the great day, therefore when there is time and opportunity for it, who can doubt, but this is matter of absolute duty? When I was at Oxford, and lived almost like a hermit, I saw not how any busy man could be saved. I scarcely thought it possible for a man to retain the Christian spirit, amidst the noise and

bustle of the world. God taught me better by my own experience. I had ten times more business in America (that is at intervals) than ever I had in my life. But it was no hinderance to silence of spirit.

Mr. Boehm was Chaplain to Prince George of Denmark, Secretary to him and Queen Anne; principal Manager of almost all the public charities in the kingdom, and employed in numberless private charities. An intimate friend, knowing this, said to him when they were alone, "Sir, are you not hurt by that amazing hurry of business? I have seen you in your office, surrounded with people, listening to one, dictating to another, and at the same time writing to a third:—Could you then retain a sense of the presence of God?" He answered, "All that company, and all that business, no more hindered or lessened my communion with God, than if I had been all alone in a church kneeling before the communion-table." Was it not the same case with him, to whom Gregory Lopez said, "Go and be a hermit in Mexico?" I am concerned for you: I am sorry you should be content with lower degrees of usefulness and holiness than you are called to! But I cannot help it; so I submit;—and am still,—my dear Miss M——, yours in sincere affection.

JOHN WESLEY.

TO THE REV. MR. L——.

Oct. 15, 1786.

LAST night I had a long conversation with a few sensible men, concerning going to church. I asked them what objection they had to the hearing of Mr. L——. They answered, "*They could not hear him*: he generally spoke so low, that they lost a good part of what he said: and that what they *could* hear, was spoken in a dead, cold, languid manner, as if he did not *feel* any thing which he spoke." This would naturally disgust them the more, because Dr. C—— leaned to the other extreme. I doubt there is some ground for their objection. But I should think, you might easily remove it. I asked again, "Have you any objection to any thing in his behaviour?" They answered, "One thing we cannot approve of; his being ashamed of the Methodists. His never recommending or defending them at all, we think, is a full proof of this: for every one knows his near relation and his many obligations to *you*: They know how you have loved and cherished him from a child." They might have added, "You owe your whole education to him: and therefore, in effect, your ordination,—your curacy,—your school,—yea, and your wife: none of which you would in all likelihood, have had, had it not been for him."

I would add a word upon this head myself. I do not think you act wisely. Not one of your genteel friends can be depended on: they are mere summer-flies. Whereas had you condescended to

make the *Methodists* your friends, they would have adhered to you one and all : and they are already no inconsiderable body of people : beside that, they are increasing more and more.

Suffer me now to speak a word between *you* and *me*. Is not the reason of your preaching so languidly and coldly, that you do not *feel* what you say ? And why not ? Because your soul is not alive to God ! Do you know that your sins are forgiven ? I fear not. Can you say, “I know that *my* Redeemer liveth ?” I doubt, if you did know it once, whether you know it now ! Have you fellowship with the Father and the Son ? Alas ! it is well if you know what it means ! And are you content to have your portion *in this world* ? Do you savour only earthly things ? Then I do not wonder, that you are shy to the *Methodists* ; for they are not *to your taste* ! O think and pray to-day ! For I do not promise you, that you shall live another year ! I now give you a full proof that I am,

Your truly affectionate —,  
JOHN WESLEY.

TO MR. C——.

Dundee, May 2, 1786.

I DOUBT not but both ——, and you are in trouble, because —— has “changed his religion.” Nay, he has changed his *opinions*, and *mode of worship* : but that is not *religion* : it is quite another thing. “Has he then,” you may ask, “sustained no loss by the change ?” Yes, unspeakable loss : because his new opinion, and mode of worship, are so unfavourable to religion, that they make it, if not impossible to one that once knew better, yet extremely difficult.”

“What then is religion ?” It is happiness in God, or in the knowledge and love of God. It is “faith working by love.” Producing “righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.” In other words, it is a heart and life devoted to God : or, communion with God the Father and the Son : or, the mind which was in Christ Jesus, enabling us to walk as he walked. Now, either he has this religion, or he has not : if he has, he will not finally perish, notwithstanding the absurd, unscriptural opinions he has embraced, and the superstitious and idolatrous modes of worship. But these are so many shackles, which will greatly retard him in running the race that is set before him. If he has not this religion, if he has not given God his heart, the case is unspeakably worse : I doubt if he ever will ; for his new friends will continually endeavour to hinder him, by putting something else in its place, by encouraging him to rest in the form, notions, or externals, without being born again, without having Christ in him, the hope of glory, without being renewed in the image of him that created him. This is the deadly evil. I have often lamented, that he had not this holiness, without which no man can see the Lord. But though he had it not, yet in his hours of cool

reflection, he did not hope to go to heaven without it : but now, he is, or will be taught, that let him only have a right *faith*, (that is, such and such notions,) and add thereunto such and such *externals*, and he is quite safe: He may indeed roll a few years in purging fire, but he will surely go to heaven at last !

Therefore, you and my dear \* \* \*, have great need to weep over him : but have you not also need to weep for yourselves ? For have you given God your hearts ? Are you holy in heart ? Have you the kingdom of God within you ? Righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost ? The only true religion under heaven ! O cry unto Him that is mighty to save, for this one thing needful : earnestly and diligently use all the means which God hath put plentifully into your hands ! Otherwise, I should not at all wonder, if God permit you also to be given up to a strong delusion : but whether you were, or were not ;—whether you are Protestants or Papists,—neither you nor he can ever enter into glory, unless you are now cleansed from all pollution of flesh and spirit, and perfect holiness in the fear of God !

I am, your affectionate,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO MISS FULLER.

MY DEAR SISTER,

YOU did well in giving me a plain and circumstantial account of the manner wherein God has dealt with your soul. Your part is now to stand fast in the glorious liberty wherewith Christ has made you free. There is no need that you should ever be entangled again in the bondage of pride, or anger, or desire. God is willing to give always what he grants once. Temptations, indeed, you are to expect. But you may tread them all under your feet : his grace is sufficient for you. And the God of all grace, after you have suffered awhile, shall establish, strengthen, and settle you.

I am, my dear Sister, yours, affectionately,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

TO MISS B——.

DEAR MISS B——,

WE have had a society in Bath for about thirty years, sometimes larger, and sometimes smaller. It was very small this autumn, consisting only of eleven or twelve persons, of whom Michael Hemmings was leader. I spoke to these one by one, added nine or ten more, divided them into two classes, and appointed half of them to meet with Joseph Harris. But if you are willing to cast in your lot with us, I had rather that the single women in both classes who desire it, should meet with you, and any others who are not afraid

of the reproach of Christ. In that little tract, *A Plain Account of the People called Methodists*, you see our whole plan. We have but one point in view. To be altogether Christians, scriptural, rational Christians. For which we well know, not only the world, but the almost Christians will never forgive us. From these, therefore, if you join heart and hand with us, you are to expect neither justice nor mercy. If you are determined, let me know. But consider what you do. Can you give up all for Christ. The hope of improving your fortune, a fair reputation, and agreeable friends? Can he make you amends for all these? Is he alone a sufficient portion? I think you will find him so. And if you were as entirely devoted to God as Jenny Cooper was, you would never have cause to repent of your choice, either in time or in eternity. The more freely you write, the more agreeable it will be to your affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

TO MISS B——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Nov. 22, 1769.

IT is exceedingly strange. I should really wonder, (if I could wonder at any weakness of human nature,) that so good a woman as ——, and one who particularly piques herself on her Catholic spirit, should be guilty of such narrowness of spirit. Let us not vary in thought or word from the Methodist principle, "Whosoever doth the will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother."

We have other instances of persons who now enjoy the peace of God, and yet do not know the time when they received it. And God is sovereign: he may make what exceptions he pleases to his general rule. So this objection is easily set aside; and so is that of your age. The Spirit of the Lord can give understanding, either in a longer or in a shorter time. And I doubt not but he will give you favour in the eyes of your sisters. You have only to go on in simplicity, doing the will of God from the heart, and trusting in the anointing of the Holy One, to teach you of all things.

I am glad you are acquainted with Miss Owens. Encourage each other to be altogether Christians. Defy fashion and custom, and labour only to

"Steer your useful lives below,  
By reason and by grace."

Let not the *gentlewoman* intrench upon the Christian. But be a simple follower of the Lamb.

At present you are exactly in your place, and I trust no temptation, inward or outward, shall ever induce you to depart from the work to which God has called you. You must expect to be pushed to both extremes by turns; and you need all the power of God to save you from it. And he will save you to the uttermost, provided you still retain the sense of your poverty and helplessness. It is a good prayer,

"Show me as my soul can bear,  
The depth of inbred sin."

And just so he will deal with you, for he remembers that you are but dust. But you should not wait to be *thus* and *thus* convinced, in order to be renewed in love. No pray *now* for all the mind which was in Christ; and you shall have more and more conviction as it pleases him. Mr. Spencer and Glynn are of excellent spirits, notwithstanding their opinion. I hardly know their fellows. Love is all we want: let this fill our hearts, and it is enough. Peace be with your spirit. I am your affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

THE following letter was written by Mr. Wesley twenty-nine days before his death, and is supposed to be the last that he wrote to America.

TO THE REV EZEKIEL COOPER, OF PHILADELPHIA.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*Near London, Feb. 1, 1791.*

THOSE that desire to write, or say any thing to me, have no time to lose, for time has shaken me by the hand, and death is not far behind. But I have reason to be thankful for the time that is past: I felt few of the infirmities of old age for four-score and six years. It was not till a year and a half ago that my strength and my sight failed. And still I am enabled to scrawl a little, and to creep, though I cannot run. Probably I should not be able to do so much, did not many of you assist me by your prayers. I have given a distinct account of the work of God, which has been wrought in Britain and Ireland, for more than half a century. We want some of you to give us a connected relation of what our Lord has been doing in America, from the time that Richard Boardman accepted the invitation, and left his country to serve you. See that you never give place to one thought of separating from your brethren in Europe. Lose no opportunity of declaring to all men, that the Methodists are one people in all the world, and that it is their full determination so to continue,

“ Though mountains rise, and oceans roll,  
To sever us in vain.”

To the care of our common Lord I commit you, and am, your affectionate Friend and Brother,

JOHN WESLEY

TO MISS H———.

WITHOUT doubt it seems to you, that your's is a peculiar case. You think there is none like you in the world. Indeed there are. It may be, ten thousand persons are now in the same state of mind as you. I myself was so a few years ago. I felt the wrath of God abiding on me. I was afraid every hour of dropping into hell. I knew myself to be the chief of sinners. Though I had been very

innocent, in the account of others, I saw my heart to be all sin and corruption. I was without the knowledge and the love of God, and therefore an abomination in his sight.

But I had an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And so have you. He died for your sins. And he is now pleading for you at the right hand of God. O look unto Him, and be saved! He loves you freely, without any merit of yours. He has atoned for all your sins. See all your sins on Jesus laid! His blood has paid for all. Fear nothing; only believe. His mercy embraces you: it holds you in on every side. Surely you shall not depart hence, till your eyes have seen his salvation. I am, Madam, your affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

TO MISS B——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Nov. 5, 1770.

I AM glad you had such success in your labour of love: in all things you shall reap, if you faint not. And the promise is, "They shall run and not be weary, they shall walk and not faint." How does the little society prosper? Are you all united in love? And are you all aware of that bane of love, tale-bearing and evil-speaking? Do you retain that little spark of faith? Are you going forward, and have you as strong a desire as ever, "to increase with all the increase of God?"

"See the Lord, thy Keeper, stand,  
Omnipotently near!  
Lo, He holds thee by thy hand,  
And banishes thy fear!"

O trust him, love him, and praise him.

I know not that you have any thing to do with fear. Your continual prayer should be for faith and love. I admired a holy man in France, who, considering the state of one who was full of doubts and fears, forbade him to think of his sins at all, and ordered him to think only of the love of God in Christ. The fruit was, all his fears vanished away, and he lived and died in the triumph of faith.

Faith is sight; that is, spiritual sight: and it is light and not darkness: so that the famous Popish phrase, "The darkness of faith," is a contradiction in terms. O beware of all who talk in that unscriptural manner, or they will perplex, if not destroy you. I cannot find in my Bible any such sin as legality. Truly we have been often afraid, where no fear was. I am not half legal enough, not enough under the law of love. Sometimes there is painful conviction of sin, preparatory to full sanctification: sometimes a conviction that has far more pleasure than pain, being mixed with joyful expectation. Always there should be a gradual growth in grace; which need never be intermitted from the time we are justified. Do not wait, therefore, for pain or any thing else, but simply for all-conquering faith. The more freely you write, the more satisfaction you will give to your affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

TO MISS B——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Feb. 16, 1771.

YOU look inward too much, and upward too little.

“ Christ is ready to impart,  
 Life to all, for life who sigh:  
 In thy mouth and in thy heart,  
 The word is ever nigh.”

Encourage yourself to trust in him: that is your point. Then he will do all things well. Legality, with most who use that term, really means tenderness of conscience. There is no propriety in the word, if one would take it for seeking justification by works. Considering, therefore, how hard it is to fix the meaning of that odd term, and how dreadfully it has been abused, I think it highly advisable for all the Methodists to lay it quite aside.

If Mr. S. could find any other doctrine which he thought was peculiarly mine, he would be as angry at it as he is at Christian Perfection. But it is all well, we are to go forward, whoever goes back or turns aside. I hope your class goes on well, and that you are not weary of well-doing. The Lord is at hand. In praying with the children, you have only to ask for those things which you are sensible they want, and that in the most plain, artless, and simple language which you can devise.

Perhaps we may see a new accomplishment of Solomon's words, “ He that reproveth a man, shall afterward find more favour than he who flattereth with his tongue.” But, be that as it may. I have done my duty, I could no otherwise have delivered my own soul: and no offence at all would have been given thereby, had not pride stifled both religion and generosity. But my letter is now out of date, it is mentioned no more, there is a more plausible occasion found: namely, those eight terrible Propositions which conclude the Minutes of our Conference.\* At the instance of some who were sadly frightened thereby, I have revised them over and over: I have considered them in every point of view: and truly, the more I consider them, the more I like them. The more fully I am convinced, not only that they are true, agreeable both to Scripture and to sound experience, but that they contain truths of the deepest importance, and such as ought to be continually inculcated by those who would be pure from the blood of all men.

The imagination which Mr. —— borrowed from another good man, “ That he is not a believer who has any sin remaining in him,” is not only an error, but a very dangerous one, of which I have seen fatal effects. Herein we divided from the Germans near thirty years ago: and the falseness and absurdity of it is shown in my second Journal, and in my sermon on that subject. Your experience reminds me of these lines:—

“ So many tender joys and woes,  
 Have o'er my quiv'ring soul had power;  
 Plain life with height'ning passions rose,  
 The boast or burden of an hour.”

\* The Minutes of the year 1770, which gave occasion to Mr. Fletcher to write his Checks.

They who feel less, certainly suffer less: but the more we suffer, the more we may improve: the more obedience, the more holiness we may learn by the things we suffer. So that upon the whole, I do not know if the insensible ones have the advantage over us.

If you wrote more than once in three months, it would not be amiss. Few are more tenderly concerned for you than your affectionate Brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

TO MISS B——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Sept. 1, 1771.

CONCESSIONS made in the chapel at Bath would not quench the flame kindled over the three kingdoms. Mr. Fletcher's Letters may do this in some measure: but the antidote cannot spread so swift as the poison. However, the Lord reigneth: and consequently all these things shall work together for the increase of his kingdom. Certainly simple faith is the very thing you want; that faith which lives upon Christ from moment to moment. I believe that sermon, *The Scripture Way of Salvation*, might at this time be very useful to you. It is a great thing, to seize and improve the very *Now*. What a blessing you may receive at this instant! Behold the Lamb of God!

What if even before this letter comes to your hands, the Lord should come to your heart! Is he not nigh? Is he not now knocking at the door? What do you say? "Come in, my Lord, come in." Are you not ready? Are you not a mere sinner, and stripped of all? Therefore all is ready for you. Fear not, only believe and enter into rest. How gracious is it in the kind Physician to humble you and prove you, and show you what is in your heart! Now let Christ and love alone be there.

That your every hour is crowded with employment, I account no common blessing. The more employment the better, since you are not doing your own will, but the will of him that sent you. I cannot see that it is by any means his will for you to quit your present situation.

Such a degree of sickness or pain as does not affect the understanding, I have often found to be a great help. It is an admirable help against levity, as well as against foolish desires: and nothing more directly tends to teach us that great lesson, to write upon our hearts, "Not as I will, but as thou wilt."

Mr. Baxter well observes, "That whoever attempts to teach children, will find need of all the understanding God has given them." But indeed natural understanding will go but a little way. It is a peculiar gift of God. I believe he has given you a measure of it already, and you may ask and expect an increase of it. Our dear sisters at Publow enjoy it in as high a degree as any young women I know.

It certainly must be an inordinate affection which creates so many jealousies and misunderstandings. I should think it to be absolutely needful, the very next time you observe any thing of that kind, to come to a full explanation with the parties concerned. To tell them

calmly and roundly, 'I must, and I will choose for myself, whom I will converse with, and when and how: and if any one of you take upon you to be offended at me on this account, you will make it necessary for me, to be more shy and reserved to you than ever I was before.' If you steadily take up this cross, if you speak thus once or twice in the class, in a cool but peremptory manner, I am much inclined to think it will save both you and others a good deal of uneasiness.

When you see those ladies, (with whom I have no acquaintance,) you would do well to speak exceeding plain. I am afraid they are still entire strangers to the religion of the heart.

We must build with one hand while we fight with the other. And this is the great work, not only to bring souls to believe in Christ, but to build them up in our most holy faith. How grievously are they mistaken who imagine, that as soon as the children are born, they need take no more care of them. We do not find it so. The chief care then begins. And if we see this in a true light, we may well cry out, even the wisest men on earth, "Who is sufficient for these things?" In a thousand circumstances, general rules avail little, and our natural light is quickly at an end. So that we have nothing to depend upon, but the anointing of the Holy One. And this will indeed teach us concerning all things. The same you need with regard to your little ones, that you may train them up in the way wherein they should go. And herein you have continual need of patience, for you will frequently see little fruit of all your labour. But leave that with Him. The success is His. The work only is your's. Your point is this: work your work betimes, and, in his time, he will give you a full reward.

I am, your's, affectionately, JOHN WESLEY

TO MISS B——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

June 12, 1773.

"TRUE simplicity (Fenelon says) is that grace whereby the soul is delivered from all unprofitable reflections upon itself;" I add, and upon all other persons and things. This is an unspeakable blessing. And it is the mere gift of God, not naturally annexed either to greatness or littleness of understanding. A single eye is a great help to this. Seek one thing, and you will be far less troubled with unprofitable reasonings.

It has, in all ages, been allowed, that the communion of saints extends to those in Paradise, as well as those upon earth, as they are all one body, united under one Head; and,

"Can death's interposing tide,  
Spirits one in Christ divide?"

But it is difficult to say, either what kind, or what degree of union, may be between them. It is not improbable their fellowship with us, is far more sensible than ours with them. Suppose any of them are present, they are hid from our eyes, but we are not hid from their sight. They, no doubt, clearly discern all our words and actions, if

not all our thoughts too. For it is hard to think, these walls of flesh and blood can intercept the view of an angelic being. But we have, in general, only a faint and indistinct perception of their presence, unless in some peculiar instances, where it may answer some gracious ends of Divine Providence. Then it may please God to permit, that they should be perceptible, either by some of our outward senses, or by an internal sense, for which human language has not any name. But I suppose this is not a common blessing. I have known but few instances of it. To keep up constant and close communion with God is the most likely mean to obtain this also.

Whatever designs a man has, whatever he is proposing to do, either for himself or his friends, when his spirit goes hence, all is at an end. And it is in this sense only, that "all our thoughts perish." Otherwise all our thoughts and designs, though not carried into execution, are noted in his book, who accepts us according to our willing mind, and rewards intentions as well as actions. By aiming at him in all things, by studying to please him in all your thoughts, words, and actions, you are continually sowing to the Spirit, and of the Spirit you will reap life everlasting.

I am, your affectionate Brother, JOHN WESLEY.

TO MISS B——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Sept. 19, 1773.

IT is certainly most profitable for us to have a variety of seasons. We could not bear either to be constantly in storms, or constantly in a calm: but we are not certain, we cannot judge what proportion of one or the other is best for us. So it is well we are not left to our own wisdom, that we do not choose for ourselves. We should make strange work: but we know he that chooses for us, orders all things well.

There are excellent things in most of the Mystic writers. As almost all of them lived in the Romish church, they were lights whom the gracious Providence of God raised up, to shine in a dark place. But they did not give a clear, a steady, or an uniform light. That wise and good man, professor Franck, used to say of them, "They do not describe our common Christianity, but every one has a religion of his own." It is very true. So that if you study the Mystic writers, you will find as many religions as books. And for this plain reason; each of them makes his own experience the standard of religion.

Madam Guion was a good woman, and is a fine writer, but very far from judicious. Her writings will lead any one who is fond of them, into unscriptural *Quietism*. They strike at the root, and tend to make us rest contented without either faith or works.

It is certain, the Scripture by prayer, almost always means *vocal* prayer. And whosoever intermits this for any time, will neither pray with the voice nor the heart. It is therefore our wisdom to force ourselves to prayer: to pray whether we can pray or not. And many times while we are so doing, the fire will fall from heaven, and we shall know our labour was not in vain.

There is, upon the whole, nothing new under the sun : but the spirit which you speak of, as manifesting itself among your young people, is utterly a new thing among the Methodists : I have known nothing like it in the three kingdoms. And yet I do not know that they have either less sense, or less grace, than others of their age or sex. But this is one proof among a thousand, that if God leave us for a moment to ourselves, there is no folly into which our subtle adversary may not drive the wisest of the human race. Yet I do not see that you are at liberty to give up your charge on this account. It seems you should simply lay the whole affair before Mess. Pawson and Allen. They are candid and impartial judges, prejudiced neither on one side nor the other : and I believe they will be able to judge, on any emergency, what steps are the most proper to be taken.

One reason, it may be, why this was permitted, was to confound the pride of your understanding. You had been accounted a woman of sense, and commended for it. And our nature readily receives such commendation. But see how little your sense avails ! You can do no more herein, than if you were almost an idiot. "The help that is done upon earth, he doth it himself," whether with or without instruments. Let your whole soul be stayed upon him, for time and eternity.

When I observe any thing amiss, in your temper or behaviour, I shall hardly fail to tell you of it : for I am persuaded you would not only suffer it, but profit by advice or reproof. I have been sometimes afraid you did not deal plainly enough with the young women under your care. There needs much courage and faithfulness, that you may do all that in you lies, to present them faultless before the throne.

I do not know whether there is any outward employ, which would be so proper for you, as that you are now engaged in. You have scope to use all the talents which God has given you, and that is the most excellent way. You have likewise a most admirable exercise for your patience, either in the dulness or frowardness of your little ones. And some of these will learn from you what is of the greatest importance, to know themselves and to know God. You must not, therefore, relinquish this station lightly ; not without full and clear proof, that God calls you so to do. Meantime bear your cross, and it will bear you. Seek an inward, not an outward change. What you want is only inward liberty, the glorious liberty of the children of God. And how soon may you enjoy this ? Who knows what a day, an hour, a moment, may bring forth ? How soon may you hear the voice that speaks Jehovah near ? Why should it not be to-day ?

I am, your's affectionately,

JOHN WESLEY.

TO MISS B——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*April 17, 1776.*

MR. JONES'S book on the Trinity is both more clear and more strong, than any I ever saw on that subject. If any thing is

VOL. 10.—D d

wanting, it is the application, lest it should appear to be a merely speculative doctrine, which has no influence on our hearts or lives; but this is abundantly supplied by my brother's hymns.

After all the noise that has been made about *Mysteries*, and the trouble we have given ourselves upon that head, nothing is more certain, than that no child of man is required to believe any mystery at all. With regard to the Trinity, for instance; what am I required to believe? Not the *manner* wherein the mystery lies. This is not the object of my faith. But the plain matter of fact, *These Three are One*. This I believe, and only this.

Faith is given according to our present need. You have now such faith as is necessary for your living unto God. As yet you are not called to die. When you are, you shall have faith for this also. To-day improve the faith you now have, and trust God with to-morrow.

Some writers make a distinction, which seems not improper. They speak of the essential part of heaven, and the accessory parts. A man without any learning is naturally led into the same distinction. So the poor dying peasant, in Frederica "To be sure, Heaven is a fine place, a very fine place; but I don't care for that: I want to see God, and to be with him." I do not know whether the usual question be well stated, "Is heaven a *state*, or a *place*?" There is no opposition between these two: it is both the one and the other. It is the *place* where God more immediately dwells with those saints who are in a glorified state. Homer could only conceive of the place, that it was paved with brass. Milton, in one place, makes Heaven's pavement beaten gold. In another, defines it more sublimely, "The house of God, *star-paved*." As full an account of this house of God as it can yet enter into our hearts to conceive, is given us in various parts of the revelation. There we have a fair prospect into the Holiest, where are first, *He that sitteth upon the throne*; then the *four living preachers*; next, the *twenty-four elders*: afterwards, the *great multitude, which no man can number*. And surrounding them all, the various *myriads of angels*, whom God hath constituted in a wonderful order.

But what is the essential part of heaven? Undoubtedly it is *To see God: To know God: To love God*. We shall then know both his Nature, and his works of creation and providence, and of redemption. Even in paradise, in the intermediate state between death and the resurrection, we shall learn more concerning these in an hour, than we could in an age, during our stay in the body. We cannot tell indeed how we shall then exist, or what kind of organs we shall have: the soul will not be encumbered with flesh and blood; but probably it will have some sort of ethereal vehicle, even before God clothes us "with our nobler house of empyrean light."

No, my dear friend, no: it is no selfishness to be pleased when you give pleasure. It proves that your mind was antecedently in a right state, and then God answers you in the joy of your heart. So be more and more athirst for that holiness: and thereby give more and more pleasure to your affectionate Friend, JOHN WESLEY.

TO MISS B——.

MY DEAR SISTER,

December 26, 1776.

EITHER that text in Ezekiel xxxiii. 8, is to be understood literally, or it has no meaning at all. And nothing is more certain, in fact, than that thousands perish through the neglect of others. And yet God is fully justified therein, because the principal cause of their destruction is their *own* neglect; their not working out their own salvation with fear and trembling.

Whatever other ends are answered by prayer, this is one, and it seems a primary one, that we may have the petitions which we ask of him. Asking is the appointed mean of receiving; and that for others, as well as for ourselves, as we may learn partly from reason itself, but more fully from our own experience, and more clearly still from Revelation. Reason teaches us to argue from analogy. If you (because you have a regard for me) would do more for a third person at my request, than otherwise you would have done, how much more will God, at the request of his beloved children, give blessings to those they pray for, which otherwise he would not have given. And how does all experience confirm this! How many times have the petitions of others been answered to our advantage, and ours on the behalf of others.

But the most decisive of all proofs is the Scripture: "Go to my servant Job, and he shall pray for you, for him will I accept." It was not a temporal blessing which was here in question, but a spiritual, the forgiveness of their sin. So when St. Paul said, "Brethren, pray for us;" he did not desire this on a temporal account only, that "he might be delivered out of the mouth of the lion;" but on a spiritual, "that he might speak boldly, as he ought to speak." But the instances of this are innumerable. In proof of the general truth, that God gives us both temporal and spiritual blessings, in answer to each other's prayers, I need only remind you of one scripture more. "Let them pray over him, and the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him." The promise in the following verse, is still more comprehensive; "Pray one for another, and ye shall be healed," of whatsoever you have confessed to each other.

I lament over every pious young woman, who is not as active as possible, seeing every one shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour. O! lose no time! Buy up every opportunity of doing good. It does not appear to me that you ought, on any consideration, to give up the privileges you mention. Neither do I apprehend, that you would be more useful in a boarding-school than you are in your present station. I cannot, therefore, advise you to relinquish it. You have now a large field of action: you have employment enough, both temporal and spiritual: and you have ease enough: abide in your calling. The pious young woman, whom I particularly lament over, does not live at Bath, but Bristol. But I

cannot help her. She allows premises, but holds fast her own conclusion. O! who can bear riches! Who can gain money, without, in some measure, losing grace! I verily believe, if she were as poor as you she would be as advisable.

Our Church Catechism is utterly improper for children of six or seven years old. Certainly you ought not to teach it them against your own judgment. I should imagine it would be far better to teach them the short Catechism, prefixed to the instructions for Children.

I am, your affectionate Friend, J. WESLEY.

---

### TO MISS LOXDALE.

*Douglas, Isle of Man, June 10, 1781.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

I HAD much hope, that at my last return to Shrewsbury I should have seen you; but we are in the hands of him who knows what is best for every one that trusts in him; and if our meeting be hindered for a season, when those hinderances are removed it will be the more blest to us. That man of God, Gregory Lopez, observes of himself, that the large manifestations of God, with which he was favoured, at first overpowered his body, and nearly suspended his understanding, nay, took away the use of his senses; but that after a time they neither interrupted the one nor the other, nor disturbed the operation of any of his faculties. I think if those manifestations which you had, had been continued, the case would have been the same with you: they would no longer have overwhelmed you as they did at first, but have flowed with a calm, even stream.

Many years since, Madam Bourignon's works were put into my hands, particularly the treatises you mention, and her exterior and interior life, written by herself. It was easy to see that she was a person dead to the world, and much devoted to God; yet I take her to have been very many degrees beneath both Mr. De Renty, and Gregory Lopez. Nay, I do not believe she had so much Christian experience as either David Brainerd, or Thomas Walsh. What makes many passages, both in her life and writings, so striking, is, that they are so *peculiar*; they are so entirely *her own*, so different from every thing which we have seen or read elsewhere. But this is in reality not an *excellence*, but a capital *defect*. I avoid, I am afraid of whatever is *peculiar*, either in the experience or the language of any one. I desire nothing, I will accept of nothing but the *common faith*, and *common salvation*: and I want you, my dear sister, to be only just such a *common Christian* as Jenny Cooper was. The new expressions of Madam Bourignon naturally tended to give you a new set of ideas. They would surely set your imagination at work, and make you fancy wonderful things; but they were only shadows. I cannot doubt, in the least, but either Mr. ———, or you, or your

sister, has experienced more of the life of faith, and deeper communion with the Father and the Son, than ever she did in her life. As I apprehend your mind must be a little confused by reading those uncommon treatises, I wish you would give another deliberate reading to the "Plain Account of Christian Perfection;" and you may be assured, there is no religion under heaven, higher or deeper than that which is there described. But it is certainly possible to have your mind, as well as your heart, continually stayed upon God. This you did experience for some time, and you should be continually expecting to receive it again: *Ask, and it shall be given.*

"For all the promises are sure  
To persevering prayer."

I wrote to Mr. Fletcher some time since, and wonder I have had no answer. I hope you will always write, without reserve, my dear Miss Loxdale, to

Your truly affectionate J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

*Nottingham, July 14, 1781.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

AS it has pleased God to restore you in a measure to what you enjoyed once, I make no doubt but he will restore all which you then had: and will add to it what you never had yet. There is no end of his mercies. He will give "exceedingly abundantly beyond all that you are able to ask or think." If that sickness you mention, came (as is the case with some) only at the time of private prayer, I should incline to think it was *preternatural*, a messenger of Satan permitted to buffet you. But as you find it likewise at other times, when you feel any vehement emotion of mind, it seems to be (partly, at least,) a natural effect of what is called weakness of nerves. But even in this case, the prayer of faith will not fall to the ground. You may ask with resignation, and if it be best, this cup will be removed from you.

You have, indeed, reason to rejoice over your sister. Is she not given you in answer to prayer? and have you not encouragement, even from this very thing, to expect, that more of your family will be given you? Those are true words, when in his own strength you wrestle with God,

"My powerful groans thou canst not bear,  
Nor stand the violence of my prayer,  
My prayer omnipotent."

You remind me of what occurred when my dear H. R. first mentioned you to me. I almost wondered I should feel so much regard for one I had never seen! But I can taste your spirit, and rejoice to find that you are so near, my dear Miss Loxdale, to

Your's, in tender affection, JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

*Sheffield, August 15, 1781.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

YOUR letter gave much satisfaction. Whereunto you have attained, hold fast : and “press on toward the mark, the prize of your high calling of God in Christ Jesus.” I do not see any reason to doubt, but that you have tasted of the pure love of God. But you seem to be only a babe in that state, and have, therefore, need to go forward continually. It is by doing and suffering the whole will of our Lord, that we grow up in Him that is our Head ; and if you diligently hearken to his voice, he will show you the way wherein you should go. But you have need to be exceeding faithful to the light he gives you. “While you have the light, walk in the light,” and it will continually increase. Do not regard the judgment of the world, even of those called, “the religious world.” You are not to conform to the judgment of others, but to follow *your own light* : that which the blessed Spirit gives you from time to time, *which is truth, and is no lie*. That he may guide you and your sister into all truth and all holiness, is the prayer of, my dear Miss Loxdale,

Your's most affectionately,

JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER IV.

*Chester, Dec. 15, 1781.*

I SNATCH a few moments to write to my dear Miss Loxdale, although I have not time to write as I would. The trials you have lately undergone, were all instances of the goodness of God, who permitted them merely for your profit, that you might be the more largely partaker of his holiness. You know our blessed Lord himself, as man, *learned obedience by the things that he suffered*. And the last lesson which he learned upon earth, was that “Father, not as I will but as thou wilt.” Never imagine, my dear friend, that your letters to me, can be too frequent or too long ; I may add, or too free. Nothing endears you to me so much as your artless simplicity. I beg you would always write, just what you feel, without disguise, without reserve, to your's affectionately,

JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER V.

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

*Bristol, March 9, 1782.*

GOLD is tried in the fire, and acceptable men in the furnace of adversity.

You say, “I know not whither I am going.” I will tell you whither. You are going the straight way to be swallowed up in God : — “I know not what I am doing.” You are suffering the will of God, and glorifying him in the fire. “But I am not increasing in the divine life.” That is your mistake. Perhaps you are now in-

creasing therein faster than ever you did since you were justified. It is true, that the usual method of our Lord, is to purify us by joy in the Holy Ghost, and a full consciousness of his love. But I have known several exempt cases, and I am clearly satisfied yours is one, and

' Far, far beyond thy thought,  
His counsel shall appear ;  
When fully he the work hath wrought  
That caused thy needless fear."

If it be possible, meet me at Madeley on Saturday, then you may talk more largely with, my dear Miss Loxdale,  
Your's most affectionately, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VI.

*Liverpool, April 12, 1782.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

I ADVISED formerly my dear Jenny Cooper, and so I advise you, frequently to read and meditate upon the thirteenth chapter of the first epistle to the Corinthians. There is the true picture of Christian perfection ! Let us copy after it with all our might. I believe it might likewise be of use to you to read more than once the "Plain Account of Christian Perfection." Indeed, what is it more or less than humble, gentle, patient love ! It is undoubtedly our privilege to *rejoice evermore*, with a calm, still, heartfelt joy. Nevertheless, this is seldom long at one stay. Many circumstances may cause it to ebb and flow. This, therefore, is not the essence of religion ; which is no other than humble, gentle, patient love. I do not know whether all these are not included in that one word, *resignation*. For the highest lesson our Lord (as man) learned on earth was to say, "Not as I will but as thou wilt."—May he confirm you more and more.—

Your's most affectionately,

JOHN WESLEY.

### LETTER VII.

*Birmingham, July 12, 1782.*

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

IT raised some wonder in me that I had not a line from you in so long a time. I began to be almost afraid that your love was growing cold. And it would not be at all strange if it did : it is more strange if it does not : especially while you have an affair in hand that naturally tends to engross the whole thought. Whoever follows the few plain directions which are given in the Sermon on Enthusiasm, will easily and distinctly see what is the will of God concerning any point in question ; that is, provided his eye be single, provided he has one design and one desire. But it is a just observation, "As a very little dust will disorder the motion of a clock ; and as a very little sand will hinder the sight of the eye, so a very little desire, or

selfish design, will greatly obstruct the eye of the soul. By experience, the strongest of all arguments, you have been once and again convinced; that salvation from inbred sin is received by simple faith, although it is certain there is a gradual work both preceding and following.

Is it not then your wisdom not willingly to converse with any that oppose this great and important truth? If you play with fire, will you not be burnt sooner or later? Nay, have you not been burnt already? I remain, my dear Nancy, your's, most affectionately,  
JOHN WESLEY.

### LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR MISS LOXDALE,

*London, Oct. 8, 1785.*

NOT once, but many times I have been making all the inquiries I could concerning you. The rather, as I was afraid you might suffer loss by the severe trials you had met with. I should not have wondered if you had; I rather wonder how you have escaped. But indeed, as long as you can say from your heart, "Lord, not as I will, but as thou wilt," no weapon formed against you shall prosper. You unquestionably did enjoy a measure of his pure and perfect love. And as you received it at first by naked faith, just so you may receive it again, and who knows how soon? May you not say,

"If thou canst so greatly bow,  
Friend of sinners, why not now?"

I believe Mr. W——'s nervous disorder gave rise to many, if not most of those temptations, to which many persons of equal grace, but firmer nerves are utter strangers. As you never yet experienced any thing of the kind, so I am persuaded you never will. Yet I do not wonder at the horrid temptations of Gregory Lopez, because he was in a desert, that is so far out of God's way. I thank you for writing freely to me. If I had you now by the hand, I would tell you, you can never write or speak too freely to,

My dear Miss Loxdale, your's, most affectionately,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

LETTERS from the Rev. JOHN WESLEY to Mrs. ELIZ. BENNIS. of Limerick; taken from a small volume of Letters, published by her Son from the original manuscripts, in the year 1809.

### LETTER I.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Pembroke, August 23, 1763.*

YOU did well to write; this is one of the means which God generally uses to convey either light or comfort; even while you are writing you will often find relief: frequently while we propose a doubt, it is removed.

There is no doubt but what you at first experienced was a real foretaste of the blessing, although you were not properly possessed of it, till the Whitsunday following; but it is very possible to cast away the gift of God, or to lose it, by little and little;—though I trust this is not the case with you; and yet you may frequently be in heaviness, and may find your love to God not near so warm at sometimes, as it is at others; many wanderings likewise, and many deficiencies, are consistent with pure love; but the thing you want is, the abiding witness of the Spirit touching this very thing. And this you may boldly claim, on the warrant of *that* word, “we have received the Spirit that is of God; that we may *know the things which are freely given to us of God.*” I am, my dear sister, your affectionate brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Manchester, March 29, 1766.*

ONE of our preachers has lately advanced a new position among us,—That there is no direct or immediate witness of sanctification, but only a perception or consciousness, that we are changed, filled with love, and cleansed from sin.—But if I understand you right, you find a *direct* testimony, that you are a child of God.

Now certainly if God has given you this light, he did not intend that you should hide it under a bushel.—It is good to conceal the secrets of a king, but it is good to tell the loving kindness of the Lord.—Every one ought to declare what God has done for his soul, and that with all simplicity; only care is to be taken, to declare to several persons, *that* part of our experience, which they are severally able to bear; and some parts of it, to such alone as are upright and simple of heart.

One reason why those who are saved from sin should freely declare it to believers, is, because nothing is a stronger incitement to them, to seek after the same blessing. And we ought by every possible means, to press every serious believer, to forget the things which are behind, and with all earnestness go on to perfection. Indeed, if they are not thirsting after this, it is scarce possible to keep what they have; they can hardly retain any power of faith, if they are not panting after holiness.

A thousand infirmities are consistent even with the highest degree of holiness; which is no other than pure love, a heart devoted to God; one design and one desire. Then whatever is done either in word or deed, may be done in the name of the Lord Jesus.

Press after all the residue of the promises.

I am, my dear sister, your affectionate brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Leeds, August 14, 1766.*

ALTHOUGH I am at present exceedingly hurried with various business, yet love constrains me to write a few lines. Your letters are always welcome to me, as the picture of an honest and affectionate heart.

What you say concerning the witness of the Spirit, is agreeable to all sound experience. We may in some measure be satisfied without it, in the time of broad sunshine; but it is absolutely necessary in the time of clouds, and heaviness, and temptation; otherwise it would be hardly possible to hold fast your confidence.

Beware of voluntary humility; even this may create a snare;—in the “Thoughts on Christian Perfection,” and in the “Farther Thoughts,” you have the genuine experience of the adult children of God: oppose that authority to the authority of any that contradict, (if reason and Scripture are disregarded,) and look daily for a deeper and fuller communion with God: O what is it to walk in the light, as he is in the light!

Do not cease to pray for your truly affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER IV.

DEAR SISTER BENNIS,

*Dublin, July 25, 1767.*

WHEN you write to me, you have only to *think aloud*, just to open the window in your breast; when we love one another, there is no need of either disguise or reserve: I love *you*, and I verily believe you love *me*; so you have only to write just what you feel.

The essential part of Christian holiness is giving the heart wholly to God, and certainly we need not lose any degree of that light and love which at first attend this: it is our own infirmity if we do; it is not the will of the Lord concerning us. Your present business is, not to reason whether you should *call* your experience thus or thus; but to go straight to *him* that loves you, with all your wants, how great or how many soever they are. Then all things are ready; help, while you ask, is given! you have only to receive it by simple faith; nevertheless you will still be encompassed with numberless infirmities; for you live in a house of clay, and therefore this corruptible body will more or less press down the soul, yet not so as to prevent your rejoicing evermore, and having a witness that your heart is all *his*; you may claim this, it is your's, for Christ is your's. Believe and feel him near.

My dear Sister, adieu; your's affectionately, JOHN WESLEY

## LETTER V.

DEAR SISTER,

*Cork, May 30, 1769.*

SOME years since, I was inclined to think, that none who had once enjoyed and then lost the pure love of God, must ever look to enjoy it again, till they were just stepping into eternity. But experience has taught us better things; we have at present numerous instances of those who had cast away that unspeakable blessing, and now enjoy it in a larger measure than ever; and why should not this be *your* case? because you are unworthy? so were they; because you have been an unfaithful steward? so had they been also; yet God healed them freely, and so he will *you*, only do not *reason* against him. — Look for nothing in *yourself* but sin and unworthiness. Forget *yourself*. Worthy is the Lamb, and *he* has prevailed for *you*! You shall not die, but live! live all the life of heaven on earth; you need nothing in order to this but faith, and who gives this? he that standeth at the door!

I hope to see you at Limerick on Monday next; and I pray, let there never more be any reserve between you, and

Your truly affectionate, &amp;c.

JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER VI.

DEAR SISTER,

*Dublin, July 24, 1769.*

IF the reading over your papers has no other effect, this it certainly has, it makes me love you abundantly better than I did before: I have now a more intimate knowledge of you; I enter more into your spirit, your tempers, and hopes, and fears, and desires, all which tends to endear you to me. It is plain, one of your constant enemies, and the most dangerous of all, is evil reasoning. Accordingly the thing which you chiefly want is Christian simplicity. Brother Bourke and you should carefully watch over each other in that respect, and let each deal faithfully with the other; let there be no reserve between you; encourage one another also, to pray for, and expect the continual and direct witness of the Spirit. My dear Friend, remember

Your's affectionately, &amp;c.

JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER VII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Bristol, Sept. 18, 1769.*

I WROTE a longer letter to you than I usually do, before I set out from Dublin; where or how it stopped, I cannot imagine. I think of you every day; indeed I do not know that I ever loved you so well as since I was at Limerick last; the more we are acquainted with each other, the more we ought to love one another.

I hope brother Bourke and you, faithfully endeavour to help each other on. Is your own soul all alive? all devoted to God? Do you find again what you found once? And are you active for God?

Remember you have work to do in your Lord's vineyard ; and the more you help others, the more your soul will prosper. I am, my dear Sister, Your's, affectionately, &c. JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER VIII.

DEAR SISTER,

*Whitehaven, April 12, 1770.*

IF two or three letters have miscarried, all will not ; so I am determined to write again. How does the work of God go on at Limerick ? Does the select society meet constantly ? And do you speak freely to each other ? What preachers are with you *now* ? Do you converse frankly and openly with them, without any shyness or reserve ? Do you find your own soul prosper ? Do you hold fast what God has given you ? Do you give him *all* your heart ? And do you find the witness of this abiding with you ? One who is now in the house with me, has not lost that witness one moment for these ten years. Why should you lose it any more ? Are not the gifts of God *without repentance* ? Is he not willing to give always, what he gives once ? Lay hold, lay hold on all the promises.

I am your affectionate Brother, JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER IX.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Yarm, June 13, 1770.*

JUST now we have many persons all over England that are exactly in the state you describe ; they were some time since renewed in love, and did then rejoice evermore ; but after a few years, months, or weeks, they were moved from their steadfastness ; yet several of these have within a few months recovered all they had lost, and some with increase, being far more established than ever they were before ; and why may it not be so with you ? The rather, because you do not deny, or doubt of the work which God did work in you ; and that by simple faith. Surely you should be every day expecting the same free gift. And he will not deceive your hope.

If you can guard brother S. against pride, and the applause of *well meaning* people, he will be a happy man, and an useful labourer. I hope brother M. has not grown cold. Stir up the gift of God which is in you ! I am, my dear Sister,

Your affectionate Brother, JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER X.

DEAR SISTER,

*Ashby, July 27, 1770.*

WILL you ever find in yourself any thing but *unfitness* ? Otherwise your salvation would be of works not of grace. But you are frequently sick of a bad disease, *evil reasoning* ; which hinders both your holiness and happiness : you want the true Christian simplicity, which is indeed the highest wisdom. Nothing is more clear, according to the plain Bible account, than sanctification ; pure love

reigning in the heart and life. And nothing is more plain, than the necessity of this, in order to feel happiness here and hereafter. Check all reasoning concerning these first principles, else you will exceedingly darken your soul, and go on denying yourself, and taking up your cross, until you

“Sink into perfection’s height,  
The depth of humble love.”

Still draw near to the fountain by simple faith, and take all you want; but be not slothful in your Lord’s vineyard. My dear sister, your’s, affectionately,  
JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER XI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Limerick, May 15, 1771.*

WHENEVER there is a dependence, though frequently secret and unobserved, on any outward thing, it is the mercy of God which disappoints us of our hope, that we may be more sensibly convinced, “neither is he that planteth, any thing, nor he that watereth, but God that giveth the increase.”

From time to time you must find many difficulties and perplexities, that none but God can clear. But can he clear them? That is enough. Then he surely will. This is the very use of that *anointing* which we have from God. It is *to teach us of all things*, to clear up a thousand doubts and perplexities which no human wisdom could do. This was given you in the case of your child; and when that came, temptation spake not again. This is never more needful than with regard to anger; because there is an anger which is not sinful, a disgust at sin, which is often attended with much commotion of the animal spirits; and I doubt whether we can well distinguish this from sinful anger, but by *that* light from heaven.

I really hope J. C. will do well: within these two years he is improved exceedingly.

If our sisters miss you any more, there is but one way; *you must go or send after them*. Be not idle, neither give way to voluntary humility. You were not sent to Waterford for nothing; but to “strengthen the things that remain.”

It would be a strange thing, if I should pass a day without praying for *you*; by this means at least we may reach each other; and there may be a still increasing union between you and

Your affectionate brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Dublin, July 20, 1771.*

I AM much pleased to hear so good an account of J. C. If I was resolved to *understand* all God’s dispensations, I should embrace his opinion; because it in a manner accounts for some things which otherwise are unaccountable. But this I do not expect: I am content to understand *exceeding* little, while I am in the body.—What

he does, I know not now : it is enough that I shall know hereafter : Our business *now* is to love and obey, knowledge is reserved for eternity. My chief objection to Milton's doctrine of election is, that I cannot reconcile it to the words of St. Peter, which manifestly refer to the eternal state of men, *God is no respecter of persons*. Now how can we allow this, if we believe he places one man, as it were, suspended between heaven and hell, while he fixes another, ere ever he is born, under an absolute impossibility of missing heaven ?

I am well pleased you see some reason to hope well of Mr. T. Speak closely to him. He has a strong cultivated understanding, and would make a shining Christian. If he continues serious, he will not long be pleased with his former company ; they will grow tasteless, nay, irksome.

It is not material whether this or that infirmity or defect, be consistent with this or that gift of God. Without reasoning about this, it is your part simply to spread all your wants before *him* who loves you, and he will richly supply them all !

Your ever affectionate brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

### LETTER XIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Rye, Oct. 28, 1771.

IT is no wonder that finite cannot measure infinite. That man cannot comprehend the ways of God. There always will be something incomprehensible. Something like himself in all his dispensations. We must therefore be content to be ignorant, until eternity opens our understanding ; particularly with regard to the reasons of his acting *thus* or *thus*. These we shall be acquainted with, when in Abraham's bosom.

As thinking is the act of an embodied spirit, playing upon a set of material keys, it is not strange, that the soul can make but ill music, when her instrument is out of tune. This is frequently the case with *you*.

And the trouble and anxiety you then feel, are a natural effect of the disordered machine : which proportionably disorders the mind. But this is not all : as long as you have to wrestle not only with flesh and blood, but with principalities and powers, *wise* as well as *powerful*, will they not serve themselves of every bodily weakness, to increase the distress of the soul ? But let them do as they may : let our frail bodies concur with subtle and malicious spirits ! yet see that you cast not away your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward. *Be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might*. Whereunto you have attained, hold fast ! and when you feel the roughest and strongest assault, when the enemy comes in like a flood, do not reason, do not (in one sense) *fight* with him, but sink down in the presence of your Lord, and simply look up ! telling him, " Lord, I cannot help myself ; I have neither wisdom nor strength for this war : but I am thine, I am *all* thine ! Undertake for me. Let none pluck me out of thine hands ! Keep that safe which is committed to thee, and preserve it unto that day."

I am in great hopes, if we live until another conference, J. C. will be useful as a travelling preacher: so would J. M. if he had courage to break through. However, I am pleased he exercises himself a little: encourage him. I wish you would lend Mrs. Dawson the Appeals; take them from the book-room, and present them to her in my name. Go yourself, for I wish you to be acquainted with her. I believe they will satisfy her about the church: she halts just as I did many years ago. Be not shy towards brother C.: he is an upright man. Sister L. is already doing good in Clonmell: do you correspond with her?

Your affectionate

JOHN WESLEY.

#### LETTER XIV.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Canterbury, Dec. 3, 1771.*

I DID believe brother C. would be of use to you, and you may be of use to him: speak to each other without reserve, and then you will seldom meet in vain. Thrust him out to visit the *whole* Society, (not only those that can give him meat and drink,) from house to house, according to the plan laid down in the Minutes of Conference; *then* he will soon see the fruit of his labour. I hope he is not ashamed to preach *full salvation*, receivable *now* by faith. This is the word which God will always bless, and which the Devil peculiarly hates. Therefore he is constantly stirring up both his own children and the weak children of God against it.

All that God has already given you, hold fast. But expect to see greater things than these. Your affectionate

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER XV

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Liverpool, March 31, 1772.*

YOU did well to break through and converse with Mrs. D. There is no doubt but she has living faith; but, not having opportunity to converse with believers, she cannot express herself with that clearness that our friends do: cultivate the acquaintance. *Now*, lay before her, by way of promise, the whole Christian salvation; she will quickly see the desirableness of it. You may then lend her, The "Plain Account of Christian Perfection." She will not be frightened, but rather encouraged, at hearing it is possible to attain what her heart longs for. While you are thus feeding God's lambs, he will lead *you* into rich pastures.

I do not wonder you should meet with trials; it is by these your faith is made perfect. You will find many things both in your heart and in your life, contrary to the perfection of the Adamic law, but it does not follow that they are contrary to the law of love: let this fill your heart, and it is enough. Still continue active for God: remember a talent is intrusted to you—see that you improve it: he does not like a slothful steward.

Your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XVI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Yarm, June 16, 1772.*

AS often as you can, I request you will converse personally or by letter with Mrs. D. : her heart is much united to you ; and I believe you are *particularly* called to be useful to those whom the riches or the grandeur of this world keep at a distance from the pure word of God. When you are at Waterford, see that you be not idle *there*. You should gather up and meet a band immediately. If you would also meet a class or two, it would be so much the better : you know, the more labour the more blessing.

Nothing is sin, strictly speaking, but a voluntary transgression of a known law of God. Therefore, every voluntary breach of the law of love is sin : and nothing else, if we speak properly. To strain the matter farther, is only to make way for Calvinism. There may be ten thousand wandering thoughts, and forgetful intervals, without any breach of love, though not without transgressing the Adamic law. But Calvinists would fain confound these together. Let love fill your heart, and it is enough !

Your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XVII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Bristol, Aug. 31, 1772.*

MY health is not worse, but rather better. Your account of the Society in Waterford is pleasing. Continue to exercise your talent among them, and you will be a gainer by it. You need not dispute or reason about the *name* which belongs to the state you are in. You know what you have : be thankful for it. You know what you want,—zeal, liveliness, stability, deliverance from wandering imaginations. Well then, ask and they shall be given. The way into the holiest is open through the blood of Jesus. You have free access through him.

“ To him your every want  
In instant prayer display ;  
Pray always, pray and never faint,  
Pray, without ceasing pray !”

See, help while yet you ask, is given ! I am, dear sister, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XVIII.

DEAR SISTER,

*Colchester, Nov. 3, 1772.*

YOUR time was well bestowed at Waterford ; many, I doubt not, will remember it with thankfulness. But why this want of discipline in Limerick ? Whenever this is dropped, all is confusion : see that it be immediately restored. Captain Webb is now in Dublin ; invite him to visit Limerick : he is a man of fire, and the power of God constantly accompanies his word. Speak a little to as many

as you can : go among them, to their houses ; speak in love, and discord will vanish. It is hardly possible for you to comfort or strengthen others, without some comfort returning into your own bosom.

It is probable I shall visit Ireland in the spring, though I am almost a disabled soldier. I am forbid to ride, and am obliged to travel mostly in a carriage.

You have need to stir up the gift of God that is in you. Light will spring up. Why not now ? Is not the Lord at hand ? I am, my dear sister, your affectionate Brother,  
J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XIX.

DEAR SISTER BENNIS,

*Shoreham, Dec. 16, 1772.*

THE plan which you mention, I prefer to any other, and have written to put it in practice immediately.

I think you make most of your trials, by unbelief, and giving too much way to reasoning. Do not stoop to reason with the adversary, but flee to the strong for more strength, which, by asking, you will receive. Be *diligent* in helping others. I hope you visit Mrs. D. frequently. Let not your talent rust, but see to gain a double interest. - You work for a generous Master. Fight on, and conquer all ! Joy you shall have, if joy be best. My dear sister, adieu.  
Your affectionate Brother,  
J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XX.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Feb. 12, 1773.*

WHEN we draw near to God in his appointed ways, he will surely draw near to us : pray remind Mr. G. of using the same means, then he and you will find the same blessing. Write to Waterford to brother S. and encourage him to do there as he did at Limerick.

I can observe, by Mrs. D.'s manner of writing, a very considerable change in her spirit ; more acquaintance with God ; more humility, and more artless, simple love. I am much pleased that you visit so frequently. Continue to lead the simple, and God will give you more wisdom.

As long as you trust, not in yourself, but in him that has all power in heaven and in earth, you will find his grace sufficient for you, and his strength made perfect in your weakness. Look to him continually, and trust in him, that you may increase with all the increase of God. I am, my dear sister, your ever affectionate Brother,  
J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXI.

*April 1, 1773, he writes again,*

I FEAR you are too idle : this will certainly bring condemnation. Up and be doing ! Do not loiter. See that your talent rust not : rather let it gain ten more : and it *will*, if you use it.

You are permitted to be in heaviness, to humble and prove you yet more. Then you shall come forth as gold. If you love me, you will both write and speak freely to, my dear sister, your affectionate

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Bristol, Sept. 10, 1773.*

WHEN two or three agree to seek God by fasting and prayer, it cannot be that their labour should be in vain. Especially if they add their endeavours to their prayers for the increase of the work of God. I hope you will encourage every preacher to visit the whole Society *in order*, from house to-house: dinner or drinking tea does not answer the same intention. This may *and ought* to be done over and above.

I thought you had been in more danger of being hurt by worldly abundance than worldly care. But we cannot stand under either one or the other, unless we be endued with power from on high; and that continually, from hour to hour, or rather from moment to moment. Yet distress is not sin; we may be grieved, and still resigned. And this is acceptable with God. In all these cases, you should remember that observation, never to be let slip;

“ With even mind, thy course of duty run:  
God nothing does, or suffers to be done,  
But thou wouldst do thyself; if thou couldst see  
The end of all events, as well as He!”

My dear sister, adieu. Your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY

## LETTER XXIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Sheerness, Dec. 1, 1773.*

SOME time since, when I heard brother Bennis had got *very* rich, I was in fear for you, lest the world should again find a way into your heart, and damp your noblest affections. I am not sorry that you have not that temptation. It is most desirable, to have neither poverty nor riches: but still you cannot be without temptation, unless you would go out of the world. How far that sudden emotion which you speak of, is a preternatural dart from Satan, and how far it springs from your own heart, it is exceeding hard to judge. It is possible it may be neither one nor the other, but a mere effect of the natural mechanism of the body, which has no more of good or evil, than the blushing or burning pole. But whether it be natural or preternatural, it is grievous to one whose conscience is tender. We may therefore undoubtedly pray against it. And surely *he* can and will deliver us. Come therefore boldly to the throne of grace, and find grace to help in time of need.

You will find full employment in Waterford: I believe that society wants your exertions. See therefore that you be not weary of well doing. I am, my dear sister, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXIV.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Jan. 18, 1774.*

A WILL steadily and uniformly devoted to God, is essential to a state of sanctification ; but not an uniformity of joy, or peace, or happy communion with God. These may rise and fall in various degrees ; nay, and may be affected either by the body, or by diabolical agency, in a manner which all our wisdom can neither understand nor prevent. As to wanderings, you would do right well to consider the Sermon on Wandering Thoughts : you might likewise profit by Elizabeth Harper's Journal, whose experience much resembled yours, only she was more simple : and you may learn from her to go straight to God, as a little child, and tell him all your troubles, and hinderances, and doubts ; and desire him to turn them all to good. You are not sent to Waterford to be useless. Stir up the gift of God which is in you : gather together those that have been scattered abroad, and make up a band, if not a class or two. Your best way would be to visit from house to house. By this means you can judge of their conduct and disposition in domestic life, and may have opportunity to speak to the young of the family. By motion you will contract warmth. By imparting life, you will increase it in yourself.

As to the circumstance mentioned in the postscript of your last, I should think you would do well to exert yourself in that matter as much as possible. It will be a cross ; take up that cross : bear your cross, and it will bear you ; and if you do it with a single eye, it will be no loss to your soul.

I am, my dear sister, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXV.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, March 1, 1774.*

ELIZABETH HARPER was frequently in clouds too ; and in that case, it is the best way to stand still : you can do nothing but simply tell all your wants to him that is both able and willing to supply them.

I enclose James Perfect's letter, on purpose that you may talk with him. He has both an honest heart, and a good understanding ; but you entirely mistake his doctrine. He preaches salvation by faith in the same manner that my brother and I have done : and as Mr. Fletcher (one of the finest writers of the age) has beautifully explained it. None of us talk of being accepted *for our works* : that is the Calvinist slander. But we all maintain, we are not saved *without works* ; that works are a *condition* (though not the meritorious cause) of final salvation. It is by faith in the righteousness and blood of Christ, that we are enabled to do all good works. And it is for the sake of these, that all who fear God and work righteousness, are accepted of him.

It is far better for our people not to hear Mr. Hawksworth. Calvinism will do them no good : as to the rest, I refer to my enclosure to Mr. M. with whom I wish you to have some conversation. Be not discouraged : I really believe God will visit poor Waterford in love. Do you go on. Bear up the hands that hang down : by faith and prayer support the tottering knee : reprove, encourage. Have you appointed any days of fasting and prayer ? Storm the throne of grace, and persevere therein, and mercy will come down. I am your's, &c. J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXVI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Leeds, May 2, 1774.*

UNTIL Mr. Hill and his associates puzzled the cause, it was as plain as plain could be. The Methodists always held, and have declared a thousand times, The death of Christ is the meritorious *cause* of our salvation, (that is, of pardon, holiness, and glory,) loving obedient faith is the *condition* of glory. This Mr. Fletcher has so illustrated and confirmed, as I think scarcely any one has done before since the apostles.

When Mr. W. wrote me a vehement letter concerning the abuse he had received from the young men in Limerick, and his determination to put them all out of the Society, if they did not acknowledge their fault, I much wondered what could be the matter, and only wrote him word, "I never put any out of our Society for any thing they say of *me*."—You are come in good time to make peace. Go on, and prosper. Your ever affectionate

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXVII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Dec. 21, 1776.*

YOU are a great deal less happy than you would be, if you did not *reason* too much. This frequently gives that subtle adversary an advantage against you. You have need to be continually as a little child, simply looking up for whatever you want.

It is devoutly to be wished for, that we may rejoice evermore : and it is certain, the inward kingdom of God, implies not only righteousness and peace, but joy in the Holy Ghost. You have therefore reason to ask for, and expect the whole gospel blessing. Yet it cannot be denied, that many times joy is withheld, even from them that walk uprightly. The great point of all is, a heart and a life entirely devoted to God. Keep only this, and let all the rest go : give him your heart, and it sufficeth. I am, my dear sister, your ever affectionate Brother,  
J. WESLEY.

## LETTERS TO LADY MAXWELL.

## LETTER I.

*Newcastle-upon-Tyne, June 20, 1764.*

WILL it be agreeable to my dear lady Maxwell, that I trouble her with a letter so soon? And that I write with so little ceremony? That I use no compliment, but all plainness of speech? If it be not, you must tell me so, and I shall know better how to speak for the time to come. Indeed it would be displeasing to me to use reserve: the regard I feel for you, strongly inclines me to "think aloud," to tell you every thought which rises in my heart. I think God has taken unusual pains, so to speak, to make you a Christian: a Christian indeed, not in name, worshipping God in spirit and in truth; having in you the mind that was in Christ, and walking as Christ also walked. He has given you affliction upon affliction: he has used every possible means to unhinge your soul from things of earth, that it might fix on him alone. How far the design of his love has succeeded, I could not well judge from a short conversation. Your ladyship will therefore give me leave to inquire, Is the heaviness you frequently feel, merely owing to weakness of body, and the loss of near relations? I will hope it is not. It might indeed, at first spring from these outward pressures. But did not the gracious Spirit of God strike in, and take occasion from these, to convince you of sin, of unbelief, of the want of Christ? And is not the sense of this, one great cause, if not the greatest, of your present distress. If so, the greatest danger is, either that you should stifle that conviction, not suffering yourself to be convinced, that you are *all sin*, the chief of sinners: or, that you should heal the wound slightly, that you should rest before you *know* Christ is yours, before his Spirit witnesses with your spirit, that you are a child of God. My dear lady, be not afraid to know yourself: yea, to know yourself, as you are known. How soon then will you know your Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the Righteous! And why not this day? Why not this hour? If you feel your want, I beseech the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, to look upon you now! O give thy servant power to believe! To see and feel how thou hast loved her! Now let her sink down into the arms of thy love, and say unto her soul, "I am thy salvation."

With regard to particular advices, I know not how far your ladyship would have me to proceed. I would not be backward to do any thing in my power: and yet I would not obtrude. But in any respect you may command,

My dear Lady, Your Ladyship's affectionate Servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR LADY,

*Manchester, July 10, 1764.*

TILL I had the pleasure of receiving yours, I was almost in doubt, whether you would think it worth your while to write or not. So much the more I rejoiced, when that doubt was removed, and removed in so agreeable a manner. I cannot but think of you often: I seem to see you just by me, panting after God, under the heavy pressure of bodily weakness and faintness, bereaved of your dearest relatives, convinced that you are a sinner, a debtor that has nothing to pay, and just ready to cry out,

“Jesu, now I have lost my all,  
Let me upon thy bosom fall.”

Amen, Lord Jesus! Speak, for thy servant heareth! Speak thyself into her heart! Lift up the hands that hang down, and the feeble knees. Let her see thee full of grace and truth, and make her glad with the light of thy countenance!

Do not stop, my dear lady, one moment, “because you have not felt sorrow enough.” Your friend above has felt enough of it for you:

“O Lamb of God, was ever pain,  
Was ever love like thine!”

Look, look unto him, and be thou saved! He is not a God afar off! He is now hovering over you with eyes of tenderness and love! Only believe! Then he turns your heaviness into joy. Do not think you are not humble enough, not contrite enough, not earnest enough. You are nothing: but Christ is all. And he is yours! The Lord God write it upon your heart, and take you for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

O that you may be ever as dead to the world, as you are now. I apprehend the greatest danger from that quarter. If you should be induced to seek happiness out of Christ, how soon would your good desires vanish! Especially, if you should give way to the temptation, to which your person, your youth, and your fortune, will not fail to expose you. If you escape this snare, I trust you will be a real Christian, having the power, as well as the form, of religion. I expect you will then have likewise better health and spirits: perhaps to-morrow. But, O! take Christ to-day! I long to have you happy in him! Surely few have a more earnest desire of your happiness, than, my very dear Lady,

Your Ladyship's most affectionate Servant,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

MY DEAR LADY,

*Sept. 22, 1764.*

YOU need be under no manner of apprehension of writing too often to me. The more frequent your letters are, the more welcome they will be. When I have not heard from you for some time, I

begin to be full of fears : I am afraid, either that your bodily weakness increases, or that your desires after God grow cold. I consider, you are at present but a tender, sickly plant, easily hurt by any rough blast. But I trust, this will not be so long : for you have a strong Helper. And the Lord, whom you serve, though feebly and imperfectly, will suddenly come to his temple. When, Lord ? Are all things ready now ? Here is the sinner : one whose mouth is stopped : who has nothing to pay ; who pleads neither her own harmlessness, nor works, nor good desires, nor sincerity : but can adopt that strange word,

“ I give up every plea beside.

Lord, I am damn'd : but thou hast died.”

He *has* died : therefore you shall live. O do not *reason* against him ! Let him take you now ! Let him take you just as you are, and make you what is acceptable in his sight.

It gives me pleasure indeed, to hear that God has given you resolution to join the society. Undoubtedly you will suffer reproach on the account ; but it is the reproach of Christ. And you will have large amends, when the Spirit of glory and of God shall rest upon you. Yet I foresee a danger : At first you will be inclined to think, that *all* the members of the society are in earnest. And when you find, that *some* are otherwise, (which will always be the case, in so large a body of people,) then prejudice may easily steal in, and exceedingly weaken your soul. O beware of this rock of offence. When you *see* any thing amiss, (upon hearsay you will not readily receive it,) remember our Lord's word, “ What is that to thee ? Follow thou *me*.” And I entreat you, do not regard the half Methodists, (if we must use the name.) Do not mind them, who endeavour to hold Christ in one hand, and the world in the other. I want *you* to be all a Christian, such a Christian as the Marquis de Renty, or Gregory Lopez was ! Such a one as that saint of God, Jane Cooper ! All sweetness, all gentleness, all love ! Methinks you *are* just what she *was*, when I saw her first. I shrink at the thought of seeing you what she was, when I saw her last. But why should I ? What is all the pain of one that is glorifying God in the fires, with, “ Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit.”

May I not take upon me to give you one advice more ? Be very wary how you contract new acquaintance. All, even sincere people, will not profit *you*. I should be pained at your conversing frequently with any but those who are of a deeply-serious spirit, and who speak closely to the point. You need not condemn *them*, and yet you may say, “ This will not do for *me*.”

May He that loves you, richly supply all your wants, and answer your enlarged desires ! So prays, my very dear lady, your affectionate servant,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER IV.

MY DEAR LADY,

*Londonderry, May 25, 1765.*

IT is not easy for me to express the satisfaction I received in the few hours I lately spent with you. Before I saw you, I had many fears concerning you, lest your concern for the one thing should be abated, lest your desires should be cooled, or your mind a little hurt, by any of the things which have lately occurred. So much the greater was my joy, when all those fears were removed: when I found the same openness and sweetness as before, both in your spirit and conversation, and the same earnestness of desire after the only thing, which deserves the whole strength of our affection. I believe tenderness and steadiness are seldom planted by nature in one spirit. But what is too hard for Almighty grace? This can give strength and softness together. This is able to fill your soul with all firmness, as well as with all gentleness. And hereunto are you called; for nothing less than all the mind which was in Christ Jesus.

It was with great pleasure that I observed your fixed resolution not to rest in any thing short of this. I know not why you should; why you should be content with being *half a Christian*, devoted partly to God, and partly to the world, or more properly to the devil. Nay, but let us be *all for God!* He has created the whole, our whole body, soul, and spirit. He that bought us hath redeemed the whole: and let him take the purchase of his blood! Let him sanctify the whole, that all we have and are, may be a sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving!

I am not afraid of your being satisfied with less than this: but I am afraid of your seeking it the wrong way. Here is the danger, that you should seek it, not by faith, but as it were, by the works of the law. See how exactly the apostle speaks: you do not seek it *directly*, but *as it were* by works. I fear lest this should be your case, which might retard your receiving the blessing. Christ has died for *you*: he has bought pardon for *you*. Why should not you receive it *now*? While you have this paper in your hand? Because you have *not done* thus or thus? See *your own works!* Because you *are not* thus and thus! More contrite? More earnest? More sincere? See *your own righteousness!* O let it all go! None but Christ! None but Christ! And if *he alone* is sufficient, if what he has *suffered* and *done*, if his blood and righteousness are enough: they are *nigh thee!* In thy mouth, and in thy heart! See, all things are ready! Do not wait for this or that *preparation!* For something to *bring* to God! Bring Christ! Rather, let him bring *you*. Bring you home to God! Lord Jesus, take her! Take her and all her sins! Take her, *as she is!* Take her, *now!* Arise, why tarriest thou! Wash away her sins! Sprinkle her with thy blood! Let her sink down into the arms of thy love, and cry out, My Lord and my God!

Let me hear from you as soon as you can. You do not know, how great a satisfaction this is to, my dear lady, your ever affectionate servant,

J. WESLEY.

Be pleased to direct to the New Room, in Dublin.

### LETTER V.

MY DEAR LADY,

*Kilkenny, July 5, 1765.*

AS your's was sent from Dublin to Cork, and then back again hither, I did not receive it till yesterday. I am now setting my face again towards England: but I expect to be in Dublin till the beginning of next month, and then to cross over, so as to be at Manchester (if it please God) about the middle of August. Either at Dublin, or at Manchester, I hope to have the pleasure of hearing from you. This is indeed a pleasure, as it is, to write to you: though sometimes I do this with fear: a fear, lest I should give you any pain, as I know the tenderness of your spirit. I wish I could be of some service to you: that I could encourage you, to cast yourself on him that loves you: that is now waiting to pour his peace into your heart, to give you an entrance into the holiest by his blood. See him, see him! Full of grace and truth! Full of grace and truth for thee! I do not doubt but he is gradually working in you: but I want you to experience likewise an instantaneous work. Then shall the gradual go on swiftly. Lord, speak! Thy servant heareth! Say thou, "Let there be light!" and there shall be light. Now let it spring up in your heart!

It may be, He that does all things well, has wise reasons, though not apparent to us, for working more gradually in you, than he has done of late years in most others. It may please him, to give you the consciousness of his favour, the conviction that you are accepted through the Beloved, by almost insensible degrees, like the dawning of the day. And it is all one, how it began, so you do but walk in the light. Be this given in an instant, or by degrees, hold it fast. Christ is your's: He hath loved you: He hath given himself for you! Therefore you shall be holy as he is holy, both in heart, and in all manner of conversation.

Give me leave, my dear friend, to add a word likewise concerning your bodily health. You should in any wise give yourself all the air and exercise that you can. And I should advise you, (even though long custom made it difficult, if that were the case,) to sleep as early as possible, never later than ten, in order to rise as early as health will permit. The having good spirits, so called, or the contrary, very much depends on this. I believe medicines will do you little service: you need only proper diet, exact regularity, and constant exercise, with the blessing of God.

Your speaking or writing was never tedious to me yet: and I am persuaded, never will be. Your letters are more and more agreeable to,

My very dear Lady, your most affectionate servant,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VI.

MY DEAR LADY,

*London, Dec. 1, 1765.*

PERHAPS there is scarce any child of man, that is not at some time a little touched by prejudice, so far at least as to be troubled, though not wounded. But it does not hurt, unless it fixes upon the mind. It is not strength of understanding which can prevent this. The heart, which otherwise suffers most by it, makes the resistance which only is effectual. I cannot easily be prejudiced against any person whom I tenderly love, till that love declines. So long therefore as our affection is preserved by watchfulness and prayer to him that gave it, prejudice must stand at a distance. Another excellent defence against it, is openness. I admire *you* upon this account. You dare (in spite of that strange reserve which so prevails in North Britain) speak the naked sentiments of your heart. I hope my dear friend will never do otherwise. In simplicity and godly sincerity, the very reverse of worldly wisdom, have all your conversation in the world.

Have you received a gleam of light from above, a spark of faith? O let it not go. Hold fast, by his grace, that token of his love, that earnest of your inheritance. Come just as you are, and come boldly to the throne of grace. You need not delay! Even now the bowels of Jesus Christ yearn over you. What have you to do with *to-morrow*? I love you to-day. And how much more does he love you! He

Pities still his wand'ring sheep,  
Longs to bring you to his fold!

To-day hear his voice, the voice of him that speaks as never man spake: the voice that raises the dead, that calls the things which are not as though they were. Hark! What says he now? "Fear not! Only believe! Woman, thy sins are forgiven thee! Go in peace: Thy faith hath made thee whole." Indeed I am, my dear lady,

Your ever affectionate servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER VII.

*Newcastle-upon-Tyne, May 6, 1766.*

MY DEAR LADY,

IT was well that I did not hear any thing of a trial you lately had, till it was past. You have great reason to bless God, that this did not turn you out of the way. You might very easily have inferred from it, that "all these people are alike;" and thence have given way to a thousand reasonings, which would have brought you into utter darkness. But it is plain you are not left to your own weakness. You have a strong helper. The Lord stands on your right hand: therefore you are not moved. And I make no doubt, but He will continue to help, till his arm brings you salvation. But, in the meantime, you have need of patience; and the more so, because

you have a weak body. This, one may expect, will frequently press down the soul; especially till you are strong in faith. But how soon may that be, seeing it is the gift, yea, and the free gift of God? Therefore it is never far off. The word is nigh thee! "Only believe!" Look unto Jesus! Be thou saved! Receive out of his fulness, grace upon grace; mercy and grace to keep mercy.

On the 24th instant, I hope to be at Edinburgh, with my wife and daughter. But perhaps you will see the salvation of God, before you see,

My dear Lady, your ever affectionate servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

### LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR LADY,

*Norwich, Feb. 23, 1767.*

FOR a considerable time I was under apprehensions that you were in a state of temptation. And as I had no other way of helping you, this put me upon commending you the more frequently to Him that is able to save you. Your last therefore, was doubly acceptable to me, as it relieved me from my fears concerning you, and gave me the occasion of rejoicing over one for whom I had the most sincere and tender affection. Sure it is, that the grace of God is sufficient for you, in this and in every trying hour. So you have happily experienced it to be already: and so I trust you will experience to the end. But you must not imagine that you are yet out of the reach of temptation: thoughts will be suggested again and again: So that you have still need to be

"For ever standing on your guard,  
And watching unto prayer."

And let my dear Friend keep at the utmost distance from temptation, and carefully shun all occasions of evil. O it is a good, though painful fight! You find you are not sent a warfare at your own cost. You have Him with you, who can have compassion on your infirmities, who remembers you are but dust: and who at the same time, has all power in heaven and earth, and so is able to save you to the uttermost. Exercise, especially as the Spring comes on, will be of greater service to your health than a hundred medicines: and I know not whether it will not be restored in a larger measure than for many years, when the peace of God fixes in your heart. Is it far off? Do not think so! His ear is not heavy! He *now* hears the cry of your heart! And will he not answer? Why not to-day? Come, Lord Jesus, come quickly! Your openness obliges me to be more than ever,

My dear Lady, your affectionate friend and servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER IX.

MY DEAR LADY,

*Cork, June 4, 1767.*

MY belief is, that a journey to England might be of great service to your health. And it is not improbable, you might receive much benefit from the water of the Hotwells near Bristol. In August I hope to be at Bristol; and again in the latter end of September. My chaise and horses are at Bristol, which, you would oblige me much, if you would please to use as your own, (if you do not bring any with you) during your stay there; for you should, if possible, ride out daily. My wife, who is at Newcastle, will be exceeding glad to wait upon you there. And if you choose to rest a few days, I should be happy if you would make use of the Orphan-house. You would be pleased with the Miss Dales, and they with you: you and they have drank into one spirit. Miss Peggy is one of the holiest young women that I have any knowledge of: indeed I think both the sisters have no desire, but to glorify God with their body and with their spirit. You will be so kind as to let me know when you expect to be at Newcastle; and possibly I may meet you there. As you were providentially called to the place where you now are, I cannot doubt but you will be preserved. But you have need of much prayer and continual watching, or you may insensibly lose what God has given. I am jealous over you: I cannot but be interested in whatever concerns you. I know your tender spirit; your desire to please all for their good; your unwillingness to give pain. And even these amiable dispositions may prove a snare; for how easily may they be carried too far? If you find any thing hurts you, or draws your soul from God, I conjure you, flee for your life! In that case, you must not stand upon ceremony; you must escape without delay. But I hope better things: I hope you are sent to Brisbane, not to receive hurt, but to do good; to grow in grace, to find a deeper communion than ever with Him that gave himself for you; and to fulfil the joy of

My dear Lady,

Your most affectionate Friend, JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER X.

MY DEAR LADY,

*London, March 3, 1769.*

TO be incapable of sympathizing with the distressed, is not a desirable state. Nor would one wish to extirpate either sorrow, or any other of our natural passions. And yet it is both possible and highly desirable to attain the same experience with the Marquis de Renty: who on occasion of his lady's illness, told those who inquired how he could bear it, "I cannot say but my nature is deeply affected with the apprehension of so great a loss. And yet I feel such a full acquiescence in the will of God, that were it proper, I could dance and sing."

I have heard my mother say, "I have frequently been as fully assured that my father's spirit was with me, as if I had seen him with

my eyes." But she did not explain herself any further. I have myself many times found on a sudden so lively an apprehension of a deceased friend, that I have sometimes turned about to look; at the same time I have felt an uncommon affection for them. But I never had any thing of this kind with regard to any but those that died in faith. In dreams I have had exceeding lively conversation with them: and I doubt not but they were then very near.

It gives me pleasure to hear, that you did not neglect our own preaching, in order to attend any other. The hearing Mr. F. at other times, I do not know that any could blame; unless you found it unsettled your mind, or weakened your expectation of an entire deliverance from sin. And this, I apprehend, it did not.

You never "take up too much of my time." To converse with you, even in this imperfect way, is both agreeable and useful to me. I love your spirit, and it does me good. I trust God will still give you that hunger and thirst after righteousness, till you are satisfied therewith. And who knows how soon? I am, My dear Lady,

Your ever affectionate Servant, JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER XI.

MY DEAR LADY,

*Londonderry, April 29, 1769.*

AWHILE ago I was concerned at hearing from Edinburgh, that you were unwell: although I could not doubt, but it was ordered well by an unerring Providence, as a means of keeping you dead to all below, and of quickening your affections to things above. And indeed this is the rule, whereby the inhabitants of a better world judge of good and evil. Whatever raises the mind to God, is good; and in the same proportion as it does this. Whatever draws the heart from its centre, is evil; and more or less so, as it has more or less of this effect. You have accordingly found pain, sickness, bodily weakness, to be real goods; as bringing you nearer and nearer to the fountain of all happiness and holiness. And yet, it is certain, nature shrinks from pain, and that without any blame. Only in the same moment that we say, "If it be possible, let this cup pass from me," the heart should add, like our great Pattern, "Nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt." Lady Baird I did not see before I left London: and Lady K. B. I did not understand. She was exceedingly civil, and I think affectionate; but perfectly shut up: so that I knew no more of her state of mind than if I had never seen her.

I am, My dear Lady,

Your ever affectionate Servant, JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER XII.

MY DEAR LADY,

*London, Feb. 17, 1770.*

TO us it may seem, that uninterrupted health would be a greater help to us than pain or sickness. But herein we certainly are mistaken: we are not such good judges in our own cause. You may truly say, "Health I shall have, if health be best." But in this and

all things, you may trust him that loves you. Indeed, nervous disorders are, of all others, as one observes; enemies to the *joy* of faith. But the essence of it, that confidence in a loving, pardoning God, they can neither destroy nor impair. Nay, as they keep you dead to all below, they may forward you therein. And they may increase your earnestness after that pure love, which turns earth into paradise.

It will be by much pains and patience that you will keep one in high life steadfast in the plain, old way. I should wish you to converse with her as frequently as possible. Then, I trust, God will use you to keep alive the fire which he has kindled. I am in great hopes that Chapel will be of use: but it will not be easy to procure a converted clergyman. A schoolmaster will be more easily found; although many here are frightened at the name of Scotland. A diligent master may manage twenty, or perhaps thirty children. If one, whom I lately saw, is willing to come, I believe he will answer your design.

I have some thoughts of going to America: but the way is not yet plain. I wait till Providence shall speak more clearly, on one side or the other. In April I hope to reach Inverness, and to take Edinburgh in my way back to England. But let us live to-day! What a blessing may you receive now!

Now let your heart with love o'erflow,  
And all your life his glory show!

I am, my dear Lady,

Your ever affectionate Servant,

JOHN WESLEY.

### LETTER XIII.

MY DEAR LADY,

*London, Feb. 8, 1772.*

I COMMEND you for meddling with points of controversy as little as possible. It is abundantly easier to lose our love in that rough field, than to find truth. This consideration has made me exceedingly thankful to God, for giving me a respite from polemical labours. I am glad he has given to others both the power and the will to answer them that trouble me; so that I may not always be forced to hold my weapons in one hand, while I am building with the other. I rejoice, likewise, not only in the abilities, but in the temper of Mr. Fletcher. He writes, as he lives; I cannot say that I know such another clergyman in England or Ireland. He is all fire: but it is the fire of love. His writings, like his constant conversation, breathe nothing else, to those who read him with an impartial eye. And although Mr. Shirley scruples not to charge him with using subtlety and metaphysical distinctions, yet he abundantly clears himself of this charge, in the "Second Check to Antinomianism." Such the last letters are styled, and with great propriety; for such they have really been. They have given a considerable check to those, who were every where making void the law through faith: setting "the righteousness of Christ" in opposition to the law of Christ, and teaching that "Without holiness any man may see the Lord."

Notwithstanding both outward and inward trials, I trust you are still on the borders of perfect love. For the Lord is nigh!

“ See the Lord, thy Keeper, stand,  
Omnipotently near!  
Lo! he holds thee by thy hand,  
And banishes thy fear!

You have no need of fear. Hope unto the end! Are not all things possible to him that believeth? Dare to believe! Seize a blessing now! The Lord increase your faith! In this prayer I know you join with,

My dear Lady,  
Your ever affectionate Servant, JOHN WESLEY.

## LETTER XIV

MY DEAR LADY,

*Newcastle, May 3, 1777.*

THE New Chapel which we are now building in London, requires much of my attendance there, so that I cannot conveniently be absent more than two Sundays together. Accordingly when I set out, I fixed Saturday, the 19th instant, for my return: and ordered notice to be given, of my design to meet the classes the week following. I cannot therefore have the pleasure of seeing you now; which, if it could be, I should greatly desire. I love your spirit: I love your conversation: I love your correspondence: I have often received both profit and pleasure thereby. I frequently find a want of more light: but I want heat more than light. And you have frequently been an instrument of conveying this to my soul, of animating me to run the glorious race. I trust you find no decay in your own soul, but a still increasing vigour. Some time since, you enjoyed a measure of that great salvation, deliverance from inbred sin. Do you hold fast whereunto you had attained, and still press forward, to be filled with all the fulness of God? *There* is the prize before you! Look up! Believe! And take all you want.

Wishing you the whole gospel blessing, I remain,

My dear Lady, your ever affectionate Servant, JOHN WESLEY.

I hear sister Gow is gone hence. Did she go in triumph, or only in peace?

## LETTER XV

MY DEAR LADY,

*Dublin, 4th July, 1787.*

OUR correspondence, I hope, will never be broken off, till one of us be removed into a better world. It is true, I have often wondered, that you were not weary of so useless a correspondent. For I am very sensible, the writing of letters is my brother's talent, rather than mine. Yet I really love to write to you, as I love to think of you. And sometimes it may please him, who sends by whom he will send, to give you some assistance by me. And your letters have frequently been an encouragement and a comfort to me. Let them never, my dear friend, be intermitted, during the few days I have to stay below. After Mrs. Roe first, and then Miss Ritchie, had given me so particular an account of that branch of their experience, I examined one by one, the members of the select society in London on that head. But I found very few, not above nine or ten, who had any conception of it. I think there are three or four in Dublin, who likewise speak

clearly and scripturally, of having had such a manifestation of the several persons in the ever-blessed Trinity. Formerly I thought, this was the experience of all those that were perfected in love. But I am now clearly convinced that it is not. Only a few of these are favoured with it. It was indeed a wonderful instance of divine mercy, that, at a time when you were so enumbered with the affairs of this world, you should have so much larger a taste of the powers of the world to come. It reminds me of brother Lawrence's words, "When I was charged with the affairs of the convent at Burgundy, I did not understand them; and yet I know not how, all was well done!" I doubt not you will find the very same experience, and every thing which God calls you to: His word will be more and more eminently fulfilled, "In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he will direct thy paths." I rejoice to be,  
 My dear Lady,  
 Your ever affectionate Servant, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XVI.

MY DEAR LADY,

London, Aug. 8, 1788.

IT is certain, many persons both in Scotland and England, would be well pleased to have the same preachers always. But we cannot forsake the plan of acting which we have followed from the beginning. For fifty years God has been pleased to bless the itinerant plan; the last year most of all: it must not be altered, till I am removed. And I hope will remain, till our Lord comes to reign upon earth.

I do not know (unless it unfits us for the duties of life) that we can have too great a sensibility of human pain. Methinks I should be afraid of losing any degree of this sensibility. I had a son-in-law (now in Abraham's bosom) who quitted his profession, that of a surgeon, for that very reason, "Because (he said) it made him less sensible of human pain." And I have known exceeding few persons, who have carried this tenderness of spirit to excess. I recollect but one, who was constrained to leave off, in a great measure, visiting the sick, because he could not see any one in pain, without fainting away. Mr. Charles Perronet was the first person I was acquainted with, who was favoured with the same experience as the Marquis de Renty, with regard to the ever-blessed Trinity. Miss Ritchie was the second: Miss Roe (now Mrs. Rogers) the third. I have as yet found but a few instances: so that this is not (as I was at first apt to suppose) the common privilege of all that are "perfect in love."

Pardon me, my dear friend, (for my heart is tenderly concerned for you,) if I mention one fear I have concerning you, lest on conversing with some, you should be in any degree warped from *Christian simplicity*! O do not wish to hide that you are a Methodist! Surely it is best to appear just what you are. I believe; you will receive this as a proof of the sincerity, with which I am,

My dear Lady, your ever affectionate Servant, J. W

## LETTERS TO MISS BRIGGS.

## LETTER I.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*Chester, March 17, 1771.*

YOU have great reason to praise him, who has done great things for you already. What you now want is, To come boldly to the throne of grace, that the hunger and thirst after his full image, which God has given you, may be satisfied. Full salvation is nigh, even at the door. Only believe, and it is your's. It is a great blessing, that at *your* years, you are preserved from seeking happiness in any creature. You need not, seeing Christ is your's! O cleave to him with your whole heart!

I am, my dear Betsy, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*Athlone, April 14, 1771.*

YOU may be assured, that I am always well pleased to hear from you; and that I shall never think your letters too long. Always tell me whatever is in your heart: and the more freely the better. Otherwise it would be hardly possible, to give you the advice you may want from time to time. As soon as you had your armour on, it was fit that it should be proved. So God prepared for you the occasions of fighting, that you might conquer, and might know both your own weakness, and *his* strength. Each day will bring just temptation enough, and power enough to conquer it. And, (as one says,) "Temptations, with distinct deliverances from them, avail much." The unction of the Holy One is given to believers for this very end, To enable them to distinguish (which otherwise would be impossible) between sin and temptation. And this you will do, not by any general rule, but by listening to him on all particular occasions, and by your consulting with those that have experience in the ways of God. Undoubtedly both you, and Phyllothea, and my dear Miss Perronet, are now more particularly called to speak for God. In so doing you must expect to meet with many things which are not pleasing to flesh and blood. But all is well. So much the more will you be conformed to the death of Christ. Go on, in his name, and in the power of his might! Suffer and conquer all things.

I am, my dear Betsy, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*Castlebar, May 31, 1771.*

YOU judge exceeding right: as yet you are but a little child, just a babe in the pure love of Christ. As a little child, hang upon him, and simply expect a supply of all your wants. In this respect,

reasoning profits you nothing : indeed it is just opposite to believing ; whereby you hearken to the inward voice, which says, "Open thy mouth wide, and I will fill it." Undoubtedly it would be a cross to declare what God has done for your soul. Nay, and afterwards Satan would accuse on the account, telling you, "You did it out of pride." Yea, and some of your sisters would blame you, and perhaps put the same construction upon it. Nevertheless if you do it with a single eye, it will be well pleasing to God.

Your letters will be always agreeable to,

My dear Betsy, your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER IV

MY DEAR BETSY,

*Dec. 28, 1774.*

YOU have done what you could in this matter : and "angels can do no more." I am glad you tried ; by and by she may see more clearly. I am always glad to hear from you, whether you have time to write accurately or not. And I love that you should tell me both what you feel, and what you do : for I take part in all. I doubted not but you would find a blessing at this solemn season : see that you strengthen each other's hands in God. I should be glad to see both, or either of you, when it is convenient.

I am, my dear Betsy,

Your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

#### TO MISS PERRONET.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Near Leeds, Aug. 6, 1775.*

I BELIEVE my late illness has already answered many wise ends of Providence: It has been a blessing to me, and to many others, a fresh proof, that God doth all things well.

I doubt not, but brother Wood and his fellow-labourer will be still zealous and active for God. And if so, his work will surely increase, at Seven-Oaks and the Wells, as well as other places. Nay, I do not despair of poor Canterbury : it is not out of God's reach.

I dreamed last night, that the Spaniards were come, and were searching all houses, and putting men to the torture. But on a sudden they were vanished out of the land, I could not tell how. My Betsy should not think that I am ever so busy, as not to have leisure to read and answer her letters. I think Philothea too, since I am alive again, should have written to me, either in verse or prose.

I am, my dear sister, your affectionate brother,

J. WESLEY.

## TO MR. CHARLES PERRONET.

DEAR CHARLES,

London, Dec. 28, 1774.

CERTAINLY there is nothing amiss in the desire, to do something for a good Master: only still adding, (in this, as in all things else,) "Yet not as I will, but as thou wilt."

If we could once bring all our preachers, itinerant and local, uniformly and steadily to insist on those two points, *Christ dying for us*, and *Christ reigning in us*, we should shake the trembling gates of hell. I think most of them are now exceeding clear herein: and the rest come nearer and nearer, especially since they have read Mr. Fletcher's Checks, which have removed many difficulties out of the way.

I expect more good from Mrs. B.'s medicine than from a heap of others. Remember Hezekiah's figs.

I am, dear Charles, ever your's, J. WESLEY.

## LETTERS TO THE REV. MR. DICKINSON.

## LETTER I.

DEAR SIR

Cork, May 6, 1767.

I AM now come to my second *station* in Ireland; for here we expect to stay seven days: only with a digression of two out of the seven, to Bandon and Kinsale. I know not that I shall spend two whole days in any other place before I return to Dublin. I am glad you are fairly discharged from Oxford; although there is a little seed left there still. When we were there, we profited much by watching continually against "The lust of *finishing*:" to mortify which we frequently broke off writing, in the middle of a sentence, if not in the middle of a word: especially the moment we heard the chapel bell ring, or a knock at our door. If nature reclaimed, we remembered the word of the heathen, "Ejicienda est hæc molities animi!"\*

I am glad there is so good an understanding among the preachers: a great deal depends upon it. But I hope you do not forget gentle T. O. May not you venture to give him a hint, that your hints were incorrectly printed? If he says, "They were written so, I could hardly read them," you can tell him, "I hope to write the next better."

Miss Briggs' spending so much of her time at Shoreham, answers an excellent design. It, in a great measure, supplies the want both of Miss Perronet and of her father, whom I remember with sincere affection.

I am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate friend and brother, J. WESLEY.

\* This softness of mind must be cast away.

## LETTER II.

DEAR SIR,

*Londonderry, June 5, 1787*

THE Irish posts are not the quickest in the world; though I have known one travel full two miles in an hour. And they are not the most certain. Letters fail here more frequently than they do in England.

Mr. Heath has need of abundance of faith and patience. He is in a very displeasing situation. But this I am determined on; he shall not want as long as I have either money or credit. He is a truly pious, and a very amiable man: his wife and children are cast in the same mould. I am glad you all showed him, while he was in London, the respect which he well deserves.

As the work of God increases in so many parts both of England and Ireland, it would be strange if there were no increase of it in London: especially while all the preachers are of one mind, and speak the same thing. Only do not forget strongly and explicitly to urge the believers, "To go on to perfection." When this is constantly and earnestly done, the word is always clothed with power.

Truly I claim no thanks for loving and esteeming Betsy Briggs; for I cannot help it. And I shall be in danger of quarrelling with you, if you ever love her less than you do now. Peace be with all your spirits! I am, your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY

## LETTERS TO MR. THOMAS RANKIN.

## LETTER I.

DEAR TOMMY,

*London, March 1, 1775.*

I THINK the March packet will do as well as the April packet: so I answer you without delay.

As soon as possible, you must come to a full and clear explanation, both with brother Asbury (if he is recovered) and with Jemmy Dempster. But I advise brother Asbury to return to England the first opportunity.

There is now a probability, that God will hear the prayer, and turn the counsels of Ahithophel into foolishness. It is not unlikely, that peace will be re-established between England and the Colonies. But certainly the present doubtful situation of affairs, may be improved to the benefit of many. They may be strongly incited, Now "to break off their sins by repentance; if it may be a lengthening of their tranquillity." I am, dear Tommy,

Your affectionate friend and Brother, J. WESLEY.

P. S. To-morrow I intend to set out for Ireland.

I add a line to all the preachers :

MY DEAR BRETHREN,

*London, March 1, 1775.*

YOU were never in your lives in so critical a situation as you are at this time. It is your part, to be peace-makers; to be loving and tender to all; but to addict yourselves to no party. In spite of all solicitations, of rough or smooth words, say not one word *against* one or the other side. Keep yourselves pure: do all you can, to help and soften all, but "Beware how you *adopt* another's jar."

See that you act in full union with each other: this is of the utmost consequence. Not only let there be no bitterness, or anger, but no shyness or coldness between you. Mark all those that would set one of you against the other! Some such will never be wanting. But give them no countenance; rather ferret them out, and drag them into open day.

The conduct of T. Rankin has been suitable to the Methodist plan. I hope all of you tread in his steps. Let your eye be single! Be in peace with each other, and the God of peace will be with you! I am, my dear Brethren, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

We add the following few lines from the Rev. Charles Wesley to Mr. Rankin.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*March 1, 1775.*

TO spare you the expense, I delayed answering your letter; but I bear you always on my heart, and rejoice when the Lord blesses you with success. He giveth grace, more grace, to the humble: therefore wrestle with him for deep humility.

As to the public affairs, I wish you to be like minded with me. I am of neither side, and yet of both: on the side of New-England, and of Old. Private Christians are excused, exempted, privileged, to take no part in civil troubles. *We* love all and pray for all, with a sincere and impartial love. Faults there may be on both sides: but such as neither you nor I can remedy: therefore let us, and all our children, give ourselves unto prayer, and so stand still and see the salvation of God. My love to Capt. Webb, when you see him, and to Mr. Bowden, to whom I owe letters, and much love. Show your's for me, by praying more for me and mine.

Your's, in the old love,

C. W.

## LETTER II.

DEAR TOMMY,

*Portarlington, April 21, 1775.*

I AM glad there is so good an understanding between Jemmy Dempster and you. - He is an upright man, and unless I am much mistaken, a friend both to the Methodist doctrine and discipline.

I am sorry for poor T. R. It is certain, God did lift up his head: and I hoped that his besetting sin would no more gain dominion over

him. However, you must in nowise give him up. And he has much more need of comfort than of reproof. His great danger is despair.

Brother Asbury has sent me a few lines, and I thank him for them. But I do not advise him to go to Antigua. Let him come home without delay. If one or two stout, healthy young men, would willingly offer themselves to that service, I should have no objection: but none should go, unless he was fully persuaded in his own mind.

You are a bold man, Tommy, to commence author in these critical times. I wish the success may answer your expectation: there is a call for every help. I am afraid you will soon find a day of trial: the clouds are black both over England and America. It is well if this summer pass over without some showers of blood. And if the storm once begins in America, it will soon spread to Great Britain.

I have a friendly letter from ——, who writes warmly *against* the ——: Pray remember my love to him and his wife. I am glad to find he is still walking in the good old way. He sends me word, that one or two *men of fortune* are gone out to preach the gospel. If they are, I expect little from them. God hath chosen the weak to confound the strong.

Go on, doing and suffering the will of our Lord!

I am, dear Tommy,

Your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER III.

DEAR TOMMY,

*Ballinrobe, May 19, 1775.*

THAT letters travel very slow from us to America, is a great inconvenience. But it is a still greater, that they travel so uncertainly: sometimes reaching you too late, sometimes not at all.

I doubt not but brother Asbury and you will part friends: I shall hope to see him at the Conference. He is quite an upright man. I apprehend he will go through his work more cheerfully, when he is within a little distance from *me*.

We must speak the plain truth, wherever we are, whether men will hear, or whether they will forbear. And among our societies we must enforce our rules, with all mildness and steadiness. At first, this must appear strange to those, who are as bullocks unaccustomed to the yoke. But after a time, all that desire to be real Christians, see the advantage of it.

I am afraid Mr. B. is a weak brother, a little enlightened in his understanding, and having a kind of faith. But I would rather (of the two) be in the case of poor T. R. than of him. I think there is more probability, of *his* being a real Christian, than of the other's.

Never was there a time, when it was more necessary for all that fear God, both in England and in America, to stir up the gift of God that is in them, and wrestle with God in mighty prayer. In all the other judgments of God, the inhabitants of the earth learn righteousness. When a land is visited with famine, or plague, or earthquake,

the people commonly see and acknowledge the hand of God. But wherever war breaks out, God is forgotten, if he be not set at open defiance. What a glorious work of God was at Cambuslang and Kilsythe, from 1740, to 1744! But the war that followed tore it all up by the roots, and left scarce any trace of it behind: Insomuch that when I diligently inquired a few years after, I could not find one that retained the *life* of God! I am, my dear Tommy,

Your affectionate Friend and Brother, JOHN WESLEY.

#### TO MR. DEMPSTER.

DEAR JEMMY,

*Ballinrobe, May 19, 1775.*

THAT one point I earnestly recommend, both to brother Rankin, and you, and all our preachers, by prayer, by exhortation, and by every possible means, to oppose a party spirit. This has always, so far as it prevailed, been the bane of all true religion. More especially when a country was in such a situation, as America is now. None but the God of Almighty Love can extricate the poor people out of the snare. O what need have you to besiege his throne with all the power of prayer!

I am, dear Jemmy, your's, affectionately, JOHN WESLEY.

#### LETTER IV.

DEAR TOMMY, . . . *Clarmain, near Armagh, June 13, 1775.*

I AM afraid, our correspondence for the time to come, will be more uncertain than ever: since the sword is drawn, and it is well if they have not on both sides thrown away the scabbard. What will the end of these things be, either in Europe or America? It seems, huge confusion and distress, such as neither we nor our fathers had known! But it is enough, if all issues in glory to God, and peace and good will among men.

I am sorry for poor T. R. I well hoped God had thoroughly healed his backsliding, and so lifted up his head, that he would have fallen no more. But the case is not desperate yet: you must, in no wise, give him up. I have scarcely ever known an habitual drunkard finally reclaimed, before he had relapsed more than once or twice. Your point is, first, save him from the occasions of sin: then incite him not to cast away hope. Nothing but this, despair of conquering, can totally destroy him. As long as he keeps up the faintest hope, he will strive against sin.

My brother wrote me word, that he had received a copy of the tract that you have written. Something of the kind may be very reasonable. Never had America such a call to repentance. For unless general reformation prevent general destruction, what a scene will soon be opened? Ruin and desolation must soon overspread the land, and fair houses be turned into ruinous heaps. But what are

those strange phenomena which you speak of? Send me an account of just so much as you can depend upon.

Should not you appoint in America, (as we do in England and Ireland,) one or more general days of fasting and prayer?

I am, dear Tommy, Your affectionate Friend and Brother,  
J. WESLEY.

### LETTER V.

DEAR TOMMY,

*Near Leeds, July 28, 1775.*

I REJOICE to hear, that the work of our Lord still prospers in your hands. If the temple is built even in troublous times, it is not by the power of man. I rejoice too over honest Francis Asbury, and hope he will no more enter into temptation. Do not despair of poor T. R. He is not out of God's reach yet. I know no reason, why we should not print the names of the American preachers. You may print an edition of the Christian Pattern, and apply the profits of it to the payment of the debt. The societies should pay the passage of the preachers. But you must not imagine, that any more of them will come to America, till these troubles are at an end.

Certainly this is the point which we should insist upon, in season and out of season. The universal corruption of all orders and degrees of men, loudly calls for the vengeance of God. And inasmuch as all other nations are equally corrupt, it seems God will punish us by one another. What can prevent this, but an universal, or at least, a general repentance? Otherwise we have great reason to fear, God will soon say, "Sword, Go through that land and destroy it."

Those clergymen should be lovingly advised, "Not to hurt our preachers." I will pay your arrears. We have only, to live to-day? God will take care of to-morrow.

I am, dear Tommy,  
Your affectionate Friend and Brother, JOHN WESLEY.

(We subjoin the two following short letters, written on the same half sheet.)

### TO MR. DEMPSTER.

DEAR JEMMY,

*July 28.*

LAST month I was at the gates of death. But it pleased God, just then to rebuke the fever, so that my pulse began to beat again, after it had totally ceased. Since that time I have been gradually recovering strength, and am now nearly as well as ever. Let us use the short residue of life, to the glory of him that gave it!

I am, your's, affectionately, JOHN WESLEY.

## TO JOHN KING.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*Near Leeds, July 28, 1775.*

ALWAYS take advice or reproof as a favour. It is the surest mark of love.

I advised you once, and you took it as an affront: nevertheless I will do it once more.

Scream no more at the peril of your soul. God now warns you, by me whom he hath set over you: Speak as earnestly as you can; but do not scream. Speak with all your heart; but with a moderate voice. It was said of our Lord, "He shall *not cry*;" the word properly means, He shall not *scream*. Herein be a follower of me, as I am of Christ. I often speak loud: often vehemently; but I never scream. I never strain myself: I dare not. I know it would be a sin against God and my own soul. Perhaps one reason why that good man, Thomas Walsh, yea, and John Manners too, were in such grievous darkness before they died, was because they shortened their own lives.

O John, pray for an advisable and teachable temper. By nature you are very far from it. You are stubborn and headstrong. Your last letter was written in a very wrong spirit. If you cannot take advice from others, surely you might take it from

Your affectionate brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VI.

DEAR TOMMY,

*London, Aug. 13, 1775.*

I DO not give up T. R. yet: he is not out of God's reach. I am not sorry that brother Asbury stays with you another year. In that time it will be seen, what God will do with North America: and you will easily judge, whether our preachers are called to remain any longer therein. If they are, God will make their way plain, and give them favour even with the men that delight in war. In the civil wars of Rome, Atticus stood fair in the esteem of both the contending parties. And so did the Archbishop of Cambray, during the war in the Netherlands. Not only the officers, but the common soldiers, when they went by, treating him with love and regard. The clouds do indeed gather more and more; and it seems a heavy storm will follow: certainly it will, unless the prayers of the faithful obtain a longer reprieve.

A few weeks ago, I was at the gates of death, in the North of Ireland. But

"The fever felt *his touch* and fled."

And I am now just as I was before it came.

You did well, to remove the books into a place of safety; if any such can be found in America. It is no wonder, that the spirits of the men who know not God are sharpened into madness. That human creatures commence lions and bears. This is the genuine-fruit of war!

Certainly if they persecute you in one city you should flee to another. Peace be with your spirit! I am, dear Tommy,  
Your affectionate friend and brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VII.

DEAR TOMMY,

*London, Oct. 20, 1775.*

THE account given in our newspapers of my death was not wholly without foundation. For I was only not dead; my pulse being quite gone, and "the wheel at the cistern without motion." But then our Lord stepped in, and

"The fever own'd his touch and fled."

My strength returned by swift degrees; and I am now at least as well as before my illness.

In the country places I believe you will have the largest harvest, where they know little and talk little about politics. Their hearts are engaged with something better, and they let the dead bury their dead. I am glad you are going into North Carolina: and why not into South Carolina too? I apprehend, those provinces would bear much fruit, as most parts of them are fresh, unbroken ground. And as the people are farther removed from the din of war, they may be more susceptible of the gospel of peace.

A paper was sent to me lately, occasioned by the troubles in America: but it would not do good. It is abundantly too tart; and nothing of that kind will be of service now. All parties are already too much sharpened against each other: we must pour water, not oil, into the flame. I had written a little tract upon the subject, before I knew the American ports were shut up. I think, there is not one sharp word therein: I did not design there should. However, many are excessively angry; and would willingly burn me and it together. Indeed it is provoking: I suppose, above forty thousand of them have been printed in three weeks, and still the demand for them is as great as ever.

I was glad to receive your's by Capt. Crawford. I am entirely of your mind. I am persuaded love and tender measures will do far more than violence. And if I should have an interview with a great man (which seems to be not unlikely,) I will, by the grace of God, tell him so, without any circumlocution. Our time is in God's hands: let us stand ready for all things!

I am, dear Tommy,  
Your affectionate friend and brother, J. WESLEY

## LETTERS TO MISS B.

## LETTER I.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*June 17, 1744.*

IT is something strange, that I should never hear of your sickness, till I hear of your recovery. Both the one and the other were

designed for blessings, and I doubt not but they have proved so to you. Since I saw you first, I have not observed much occasion for reproving. But we have all need of advice and exhortation, else we should soon be weary and faint in our minds. It is to be expected, that above one half of those who not only profess great things, but actually enjoy the great salvation, will, nevertheless, be sooner or later moved from their steadfastness. Some of them will indeed recover what they had lost; others will die in their sins. The observing this; should incite us to double our diligence, lest we should fall after their example.

The difference between *heaviness* and *darkness* of soul, (the wilderness state,) should never be forgotten. *Darkness* (unless in the case of bodily disorder) seldom comes upon us but by our own fault. It is not so with respect to *heaviness*; which may be occasioned by a thousand circumstances, such as frequently neither our wisdom can foresee, nor our power prevent. It seems your trial was of the latter kind: perhaps, too, it was partly owing to the body. But of whatsoever kind it was, you may profit thereby; it need not leave you as it found you. Remember the wise saying of Mr. Dodd, "It is a great loss to lose an affliction." If you are no better for it, you lose it. But you may gain thereby both humility, seriousness, and resignation.

We so become all things to all, as not to hurt our own souls, when we first secure a single eye, a steady design, to please all for their good to edification; and then take care that our discourse be always good to the use of edifying, and such as may minister grace to the hearers. But in order to this, we have need of power from on high, and of the wisdom that sitteth by the throne. This alone can give us to order our conversation aright, so as to profit both others and ourselves. Before *you* can do this effectually, you must conquer your natural reserve, and exercise it only to those of whom you know nothing at all, or of whom you know nothing good. Perhaps there is one occasion more on which it will be highly expedient, if not necessary. Namely, when good persons, (at least in some measure so,) sink beneath their character, trifle away time, or indulge themselves in a conversation, which has no tendency to improve either the speaker or the hearer.

I think it will not be best for you to go out less than you ever did. Suppose you have more faith and more love, (as I would fain think you have,) you certainly ought to go out more. Otherwise your faith will insensibly die away. It is by *works* only, that it can be made perfect. And the more the love of solitude is indulged, the more it will increase. This is a temptation common to men. In every age and country, Satan has whispered to those who began to taste the powers of the world to come, "To the desert." "To the wilderness." Most of our little flock at Oxford were tried with this; my brother and I in particular. Nay, but I say, "To the Bible; to the Bible." And there you will learn, "As you have time, to do good unto all men." To warn every man, to exhort

every man as you have opportunity. Although the greatest part of your care and labour should be laid out on those that are of the household of faith, certainly you may do good to others, without any ways endangering your own salvation. What at present you much want is simplicity, in the Archbishop of Cambray's sense of the word. That grace "whereby the soul casts off all unnecessary reflections upon itself." I wish I could say of you, as I did of a young person many years ago, when I sent her his little book :

"In art, in nature can we find  
Colours to picture thee?  
Speak, Cambray's pen, for Sally's mind,  
She is simplicity."

To be enabled to relieve those who are in want, is one excellent part of self-denial. But you must not imagine, that this will be the only one : no. You have a message from God to some of those, to whom no one almost dare speak the plain truth ; and he will confirm the word of his messenger, especially to those who are in weakness or pain, or under any kind of affliction. At such a time, greatness stands aloof, and they are as accessible as common persons.

In religion, as well as in all things else, it is *use* that brings perfectness. I have long laboured under the same infirmity with you, and I find but one way to conquer. Take up your cross. When the occasion offers, break through. Speak, though it is pain and grief unto you, and it will be easier and easier, till you resemble an eminent surgeon, who once said to my brother, "Mr. Wesley, you know I would not hurt a fly ; I would not give pain to any living thing. ; But if it were necessary, I would scrape all the flesh off a man's bones, and never turn my head aside."

A clear conviction of the superior advantages of a single life, certainly implies a call from God to continue therein ; supposing a person has received that gift from God. But we know, all cannot receive this saying ; and I think, none ought to make any vows concerning it : because, although we know what we are, and what we can do *now*, yet we do not know what we shall be. The principal advantages of that state, are set down in the little Tract on that subject ; together with the means which are proper to be used by those who desire to retain those advantages. If, at any time, Providence should seem to call a person to relinquish those advantages, I would earnestly advise her, not to lean to her own understanding, (less in this case than any other,) but to consult one or more spiritual friends, and resolutely stand to their award.

Although I am thoroughly persuaded, that those reasonings are, in a great measure, from a preternatural cause, and therefore chiefly to be resisted by continuing instant in prayer, yet I think Christian prudence not only permits, but requires you to add other means to this. That which I would especially recommend, is *reading* ; particularly Pascal's Thoughts, (in the Christian Library,) and the two first Tracts in the "Preservative against Unsettled Notions in Religion." These temptations are permitted to give you a deep and

lasting conviction of the littleness and weakness of your own understanding, and to show you the absolute need wherein you stand of continual light, as well as of power, from on high.

That the regulation of social life is the one end of religion, is a strange position indeed. I never imagined any but a deist would affirm this. If that good man, Dr. D. did, I suppose it must be a slip of the pen; for he could not but know, that the love, without which, St. Paul affirms, all we do profits us nothing, is that humble, meek, patient love of our neighbour, which supposes and flows from the love of God.

A degree of reasoning you certainly may and ought to use, only joined with humility and prayer. But what you more immediately want is *faith*. Believe, and thou shalt be saved into perfect peace.

I am, Your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER II.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Bristol, March 15, 1777.*

THE sea breezes may be of service to you, if you have constant exercise. This has brought many from the gates of death. It is beyond all medicine whatever.

I am in great hopes this sickness will not be unto death, but that the glory of the Lord may be revealed. Kempis' rule admits of many exceptions. Whatever was the case then, we have now abundant proof, that very "many are made better *by sickness*:" unless one would rather say *in sickness*. This is one of the grand means which God employs for that purpose. In sickness, many are convinced of sin; many converted to God; and still more confirmed in the ways of God, and brought onward to perfection.

His gracious design in your's, seems to be chiefly this, To wean you yet more from created things; to make and keep you dead to all below. To this end, you are in a manner cut off from every thing, that you may find your all in Him. If He should see good to restore you, you will be an instrument fit for the Master's use.

It seems the best way to profit by that retirement, which results from your present weakness, is to divide your time between reading, meditation, and prayer, intermixed with serious conversation. And when your strength will permit, you must endeavour to do a little good; only take care at first, not to go too far. Some years since we had a little Society at Southampton; perhaps you may find some fragments of it remaining. May the God of all grace, after you have suffered awhile, make you perfect, establish, strengthen, and settle you!

I am, your ever affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER III.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Oct. 18, 1778.*

I AM not unwilling to write to *you*, even upon a tender subject, because you will weigh the matter fairly. And if you have a little

prepossession, (which who has not ?) yet you are willing to give it up to reason.

The original Methodists were all of the Church of England, and the more awakened they were, the more zealously they adhered to it, in every point, both of doctrine and discipline. Hence we inserted in the very first Rules of our Society, "They that leave the Church, leave *us*." And this we did, not as a point of prudence, but a point of conscience. We believed it unlawful to separate from the Church, unless sinful terms of communion were imposed. Just as did Mr. Philip Henry, and most of those holy men that were contemporary with him.

"But the ministers of it do not preach the gospel."—Neither do some of the Independent or Anabaptist ministers. Calvinism is not the gospel: nay, it is farther from it, than most of the sermons I hear at the Church. These are very frequently unevangelical, but they are not anti-evangelical. They are (to say no more) equally wrong; and they are far more dangerously wrong. Few of the Methodists are now in danger of imbibing error from the Church ministers: but they are in great danger of imbibing the grand error, Calvinism, from some of the dissenting ministers. Perhaps thousands have done it already: most of whom have drawn back to perdition. I see more instances of this, than any one else can do: and on this ground also, exhort all who would keep to the Methodists, and *from* Calvinism, to "go to the Church, and not to the Meeting."

But to speak freely; I myself find more life in the Church Prayers; than in any formal extemporary prayers of Dissenters. Nay, I find more profit in sermons on either good tempers, or good works, than in what are vulgarly called *Gospel Sermons*. That term is now become a mere *cant* word: I wish none of our Society would use it. It has no determinate meaning. Let but a pert, self-sufficient animal, that has neither sense nor grace, bawl out something about Christ, or his blood, or justification by faith, and his hearers cry out, "What a fine Gospel Sermon!" Surely the Methodists have not so learned Christ! We know no gospel without salvation from sin. There is a Romish error which many Protestants swallow unawares. It is an avowed doctrine of the Romish Church, that the "*pure intention* of the minister is essential to the validity of the sacraments." If so, we ought not to attend the ministrations of an unholy man. But in flat opposition to this, our Church teaches, in the 28th Article, that "the unworthiness of the minister does not hinder the validity of the sacraments." Although, therefore, there are many disagreeable circumstances, yet I advise all our friends to keep to the Church. God has surely raised us up for the Church chiefly, that a little leaven may leave the whole lump. I wish you would seriously consider that little Tract, "*Reasons against a Separation from the Church of England.*" Those Reasons were never yet answered; and, I believe, they never will.

I am glad you have undertaken that labour of love, and trust, it will increase both your spiritual and bodily strength.

I am, My dear Sister,

Your's, very affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER IV.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Warrington, May 17, 1781.*

I HAVE written to Mr. Pawson, and am in hopes that Keynsham will be no more neglected. I did not expect you would meet with any trial of this kind; but it is well to be prepared for all.

When Molly Maddern taught a few children at Kingswood, I saw a truly Christian school. To make the children Christians was her first care: afterwards they were taught what women need to learn. I saw another Christian school at Layton-Stone, under the care of Miss Bosanquet. I do not remember I discovered any defect, either in the former or the latter; I observed nothing done, which I wished to be omitted; nothing omitted, which I wished to have done. May I speak without reserve? I verily think I may. I hoped to see a third Christian School at ———, and I did so for a season. But I cannot say, that for some years it has quite answered my expectations. "What then was the matter?" I can hardly tell. I do not know how to express it. I did not see the simplicity which I saw at first. More of the world seemed to be crept in. Good breeding I love: but how difficult is it to keep it quite clear of affectation. And of a something which does not well agree with that mind which was in Christ.

I want your children to be trained up *quite* in the manner that Miss Bosanquet's were. Although they were very genteel, yet there was something in their whole manner, which told you they belonged to another world. Mrs. Castleman was one of Molly Maddern's scholars. She is genteel: yet she is a Christian.

Make Christians, my dear Sister, make Christians! Let this be your leading view. Make such Christians as Miranda, as Miss ———. Such as Miss M. *was!* Let every thing else which you teach, be subordinate to this: mind one thing in all! Let it be said of the young women you educate,

"Grace was in all her steps, heaven in her eye,  
In all her gestures sanctity and love."

But what power do you want to execute this? Ask, and it shall be given you! May you not have the earnest of it this moment?

I am, my dear Sister,

Your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER V

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Near Leeds, July 17, 1781.*

WHEN the school began at ———, it was in all respects a school after my own heart, conducted exactly on the same principles as

that of Miss Bosanquet, at Layton-Stone. But it declined from its original simplicity, I know not how, by slow degrees; indeed so insensibly, that I hardly know what to blame, and so know not how to cure it.

If I have to meet the Society at Bristol again, I shall kill or cure those unwise and unkind parents, who make their children finer than themselves. I believe I shall make their ears tingle. As to you, I advise you first, to be a Bible Christian yourself, inwardly and outwardly. Be not a hair's breadth more comfortable to the fashions of the world, than you were when I last saw you. Then train up your children in the self-same way. Say to them, with all mildness and firmness, "Be ye followers of me, even as I am of Christ." Whoever is pleased or displeased, keep to this; to Christian, primitive simplicity. Perhaps at first you will lose some scholars thereby: but regard not that, God will provide you more. And be assured, nothing shall be wanting that is in the power of,

My dear Sister,

Your affectionate Friend and Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Haverford-West, Aug. 18, 1784.*

FROM the time I heard you were rejected by ———, I have had a tender regard for you, and a strong hope that without regard to the wisdom, or spirit, or customs of the world, you would (as those at ——— did once)

"Square your useful life below,  
By reason and by grace."

Hitherto you have not at all deceived my hope. And I am persuaded you never will. In some of the young ones you will undoubtedly find your labour has not been in vain. What they will be, one cannot judge yet: therefore Solomon's advice is good: "In the morning sow thy seed, and in the evening withhold not thy hand, for thou knowest not which shall prosper."

It seems God himself has already decided the question concerning dancing. He hath shown his approbation of your conduct, by sending those children to you again. If dancing be not evil in itself, yet it leads young women to numberless evils. And the hazard of these on the one side, seems far to over-balance the little inconveniences on the other. Therefore thus much may certainly be said, You have chosen the more excellent way.

I would recommend very few novels to young persons, for fear they should be too desirous of more. Mr. Brook wrote one more, (besides the Earl of Moreland,) "The History of the Human Heart," I think it is well worth reading; though it is not equal to his former production. The want of novels may be supplied by well chosen histories: such as, The Concise History of England, The Concise History of the Church, Rollin's Ancient History, Hook's Roman History, (the only impartial one extant,) and a few more. For the

elder and more sensible children, Malabranche's Search after Truth is an excellent French book. Perhaps you might add, Locke's Essay on the Human Understanding, with the Remarks in the Arminian Magazine. I had forgotten that beautiful book, "The Travels of Cyrus," whether in French or English.

I always am,  
Your affectionate Friend and Brother, JOHN WESLEY.

---

LETTERS TO MISS BOLTON.

LETTER I.

MY DEAR SISTER, *Bandon, May 2, 1771.*

I WANTED much to know how your soul prospered. I could not doubt but the god of this world, the enemy of all righteousness, would use every means to move you from your steadfastness. Blessed be God, you are not moved! That all his labour has been in vain. Hitherto hath God helped you: and fear not, he will help you to the end. He gives you health, as a token for good: he can trust you with it, while you give him your heart. And, O! stand fast in the glorious liberty, wherewith he has made you free. You are not called, to desire suffering. *Innocent nature* is averse from pain. Only as soon as *his* will appears, your's is to sink down before it. Hark! what does he say to you now? "Lovest thou me more than these?" More than these,

"Wealth, honour, pleasure, or what else,  
This short enduring world can give?"

Then feed my lambs: carry the little ones in thy bosom: gently lead those that are great with young.

Be not weary of well doing! In due time thou shalt reap, if thou faint not, &c. &c.

Your's most affectionately, J. WESLEY.

LETTER II.

MY DEAR SISTER, *London, June 15, 1771.*

A LETTER from you is always welcome; but never more so than now: as this is the time wherein it seems good to our Lord, to try you as by fire. Fear nothing, only believe: he is with you in the fire, so that the flames shall not kindle upon you. O how will you praise him by and by, for his wise and gracious visitation! He is purging away all your dross, that you may be a vessel meet for the Master's use. Happy are they, that *do* his will: and happier still, they that *suffer* it. But whatever you suffer, cast not away that confidence, which hath great recompense of reward. In order to keep it, do not reason, but simply look up to him that loves you. Tell him, as a little child, all your wants. Look up, and your suit is

made! He hears the cry of your heart. And tell all that troubles you to,  
 Your's affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Lynn, Nov. 7, 1771.*

AT length I have snatched an hour to repeat to you in writing the advices which I gave you before. 1. Keep that safe which God has given you: never let slip any blessing which you have received. Regard none who tell you, "You must lose it." No: you never need lose one degree of love. 2. You never will, provided you are a careful steward of the manifold gifts of God. To *him that hath*, that is, uses what he hath, it shall be given still, and that more abundantly. Therefore, 3. Use your every grace. Stir up the gift of God that is in you. Be zealous! Be active! Spare no one. Speak for God wherever you are. But, meantime, 4. Be humble: Let *all* that mind be in you, which was in Christ Jesus. And be clothed with humility. Pray that you may always feel, that you are nothing, less than nothing, and vanity. In this spirit, speak and do every thing, giving all the glory to him that lives and rules in your heart by faith.

Last night I was reading some advices of a French author, part of which may be of use to you. Only observe: He is writing to one that had living faith, but was not perfected in love.

"How can I distinguish pride, from temptation to pride?" "It is extremely difficult to distinguish these, and still more so, to lay down rules for doing it. Our eyes cannot penetrate the ground of our hearts. Pride and vanity are natural to us: and for that reason, nothing is more constantly at hand, nothing less observed than their effects. The grand rule is, to sound sincerely the ground of our hearts, when we are not in the hurry of temptation. For if, on inquiry, we find, that it loves obscurity and silence; that it dreads applause and distinction; that it esteems the virtue of others, and excuses their faults with mildness; that it easily pardons injuries; that it fears contempt less and less; that it sees a falsehood and baseness in pride, and a true nobleness and greatness in humility; that it knows and reveres the inestimable riches of the cross and the humiliations of Jesus Christ; that it fears the lustre of those virtues which are admired by men, and loves those that are more secret; that it draws more comfort, even from its own defects, through the abasement which they occasion, and that it prefers any degree of compunction, before all the light in the world: then you may trust, that all the motions you feel, tending to pride or vanity, whether they are sudden, or are thrust against you for some time, are not sin, but temptation. And then it may be the best to turn from, and despise them, instead of giving them weight, by fixing your attention upon them."

I want a particular account both of your inward and outward health: tell me how you are, and what you are doing: withhold nothing from,  
 Your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER IV.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Dec. 5, 1772.*

I KNOW not that ever *you* asked me a question which I did not readily answer. I never heard any one mention any thing concerning you on that account: but I myself was jealous over you. Perhaps *I* shall find faults in you that others do not: for *I* survey you on every side. I mark your every motion and temper, because I long for you to be without spot or blemish.

What I have seen in London occasioned the first caution I gave you. George Bell, William Green, and many others, then full of love, were favoured with *extraordinary* revelations and manifestations from God. But by this very thing, Satan beguiled them from the simplicity that is in Christ. By insensible degrees, they were led to value these extraordinary gifts, more than the ordinary grace of God: and I could not convince them, that a grain of humble love, was better than all these gifts put together. This, my dear friend, was what made me fear for *you*. This makes me remind you again and again. Faith and hope are glorious gifts, and so is every ray of eternity let into the soul. But still these are but *means*. The end of all, and the greatest of all is, *love*. May the Lord just now pour it into your heart, as he never has done before.

By all means spend an hour every other day in the labour of love, even though you cannot help them as you would. Commending you to him who is able to make you perfect in every good word and work, I am, your's, affectionately,  
J. WESLEY.

## LETTER V.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, July 18, 1773.*

YOUR late conversation was exceeding pleasant to me. I had sometimes been almost inclined to think, that your affection was lessened; but I now believe it is not: I trust your love is not grown cold. This gave me much satisfaction, *though I could not but be concerned at seeing you so encumbered with worldly business*. Surely it will not be so always! But God's time is best! Two or three of those little things I have sent you:

With peaceful mind thy race of duty run:  
God nothing does, or suffers to be done,  
But what thou wouldst thyself, if thou couldst see  
Through all events of things as well as he.

Let thy repentance be without delay:  
If thou defer it to another day,  
Thou must repent for a day more of sin,  
While a day less *remains* to do it in.

Nor steel, nor flint, alone produces fire,  
Nor spark arises till they both conspire;  
Nor faith alone, nor works without, is right;  
Salvation rises when they both unite.

If gold be offer'd thee, thou dost not say  
 "To-morrow I will take it, not to-day :"  
 Salvation offer'd, why art thou so cool,  
 To let thyself become, to-morrow's fool ?

Prayer and thanksgiving is the vital breath,  
 That keeps the spirit of a man from death ;  
 For prayer attracts into the living soul,  
 The life that fills the universal whole :  
 And giving thanks is breathing forth again  
 The praise of him who is the life of men.

Two different painters, artists in their way,  
 Have drawn religion in her full display.  
 To both she sat : one gaz'd at her all o'er ;  
 The other fix'd upon her features more :  
*Hervey* has figured her with every grace,  
 That dress could *give*—but *Law* has hit her face.

The specious sermons of a learned man  
 Are little else than *flashes in the pan* :  
 The more haranguing upon what they call  
 Morality, is *powder* without a *ball* :  
 But he who preaches with a Christian grace,  
 Fires at your vices, and the *shot* takes place.

Faith, Hope, and Love, were question'd what they thought  
 Of future glory, which religion taught.  
 Now Faith *believed* it firmly to be true,  
 And Hope expected so to find it too :  
 Love answered, smiling with a conscious glow,  
 Believe ? expect ? I *know* it to be so.

Go on, in this humble, gentle love ; that you may abound therein  
 more and more ; aim at nothing higher than this. And may the  
 God of love still possess you whole, and guide your every thought,  
 and word, and work. Continue to pray for

Your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Aug. 8, 1773.*

IT gives me much pleasure to observe, that you do not lose  
 your simplicity. You seem not only to retain simplicity of spirit,  
 (the great thing,) but likewise of sentiment and language. God has  
 indeed dealt very graciously with you from the beginning hitherto.  
 He has led you tenderly by the hand, from grace to grace, and from  
 faith to faith. And you may well say,

"The mercy I feel, To others I show :  
 I set to my seal, That Jesus is true."

Go on in his name, and earnestly exhort all that know him, to press  
 forward to the mark. Encourage them to aspire after full salvation,  
 salvation into the whole image of God ! Beware you do not decline  
 in your zeal for this : let no *prudence* hinder you. Let *prudence*  
 "guide, not cool, its fires."

"Still let it for his glory burn,  
 With unextinguishable blaze :  
 And trembling to its source return,  
 In flames of love, and joy, and praise."

But I had forgotten that I am in haste. I hope Mr. S. will be a blessing to many. He is alive to God. This day I set out for Bristol, and thence to Cornwall: but I hope to be at Bristol again on the 28th instant. Life is short! We have need to improve every moment!  
 Adieu!  
 J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Bristol, Sept. 27, 1777.*

UNDOUBTEDLY Satan, who well understands the manner how the mind is influenced by the body, can, by means of those parts in the animal machine, which are more immediately subservient to thinking, raise a thousand perceptions and emotions in the mind, so far as God is pleased to permit. I doubt not but he was the chief agent in your late painful exercises. And you gave him advantage by reasoning with him, that is, fighting him with his own weapons: instead of simply looking up, and saying, "Thou shalt answer for me, O Lord, my God." You undoubtedly want more thankfulness: and you want more simplicity; that grace, Cambray says, "which cuts the soul off from all unnecessary reflections upon itself." You are encompassed with ten thousand mercies, and the greatest of all is,

"Christ in a pure and spotless heart!"

Beware of ever admitting any doubt or reasoning concerning this! Whereunto you have attained, hold fast! And use all the grace you have received. Warn every one, and exhort every one, and especially those who groan after full salvation.

I cannot, on any account, pass a whole day without commending you to God in prayer.

I thank you for writing to me so soon. Continue to love and pray for,  
 Your's, most affectionately,  
 J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Jan. 2, 1781.*

IT is a great step toward Christian resignation, to be thoroughly convinced of that great truth, That there is no such thing as chance in the world, That fortune is only another name for Providence: only it is *covered* Providence. An event, the cause of which does not *appear*, we commonly say, "comes by chance." O no: it is guided by an unerring hand: it is the result of infinite wisdom and goodness. Such are all the afflictive circumstances that have followed you in a constant succession, almost from your childhood. He that made the *Captain of your salvation perfect through sufferings*, has called you to walk in the same path, and for the same end; namely, that you may "learn obedience (more full, inward obedience, a more perfect conformity to his death,) by the things that you suffer." A little while, and "He will wipe all tears from your eyes: and there shall be no more sorrow or crying: neither shall

there be any more pain!" But you shall hear the great voice out of heaven, saying "The tabernacle of God is with men! And God himself shall be with them, and be their God!" Still love and pray for,  
 Your ever affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER IX.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Bristol, Aug. 31, 1784.*

MANY years ago, Mr. Hall (then strong in faith) believed God called him to marry my youngest sister. He told her so. She fully believed him, and none could convince one or the other to the contrary. I talked with her about it: but she had "so often made it matter of prayer, that she could not be deceived." In a week he dropped her, courted her elder sister, and as soon as was convenient, married her. The disappointed one then found exactly the same temptations that you do now. But neither did she keep the Devil's counsel. She told me all that was in her heart. And the consequence was, that by the grace of God, she gained a complete victory. So will *you*. And you will be the better enabled, by your own experience, to guard all, especially young persons, from laying stress upon any thing but the written word of God. Guard them against reasoning in that dangerous manner, "If I was deceived in this, then I was deceived in thinking myself justified." Not at all: although nature or Satan, in the latter case, admirably well mimicked the works of God. By mighty prayer repel all those suggestions, and afterwards your faith will be so much the more strengthened: and you will be more than conqueror through him that loveth you. Whenever you find yourself pressed above measure, you must make another little excursion. While you help others, God will help *you*. This may be one end of this uncommon dispensation. You must not bury your talent in the earth. Wishing you more and more of that

"Lovely, lasting peace of mind,"

I am, your's, most affectionately,

J. WESLEY

## LETTER X.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Wednesbury, March 28, 1785.*

YOU are in danger of falling into both extremes: of "making light of, as well as fainting under his chastening. This you do whenever you look at any circumstance, without seeing the hand of God in it: without seeing at the same instant, *this* unkindness, *this* reproach, *this* returning evil for good; as well as *this* faintness, *this* weariness, *this* pain, is the cup which my Father hath given me." And shall I not drink it? Why does he give it me? Only for my profit, that I "may be a partaker of his holiness."

I have often found an aptness both in myself and others, to connect events that have no real relation to each other. So one says, "I am sure this is the will of God, as that I am justified." Another

says, "God as surely spake *this* to my heart as ever he spoke to me at all." This is an exceedingly dangerous way of thinking or speaking. We know not what it may lead us to. It may sap the very foundation of our religion. It may insensibly draw us into Deism or Atheism. My dear Nancy, my sister, my friend, beware of this! The grace of God is sufficient for you! And whatever clouds may interpose between, his banner over you is love. Look to yourself that you lose not the things that you have gained; but that you may receive a full reward. Adieu!

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Jan. 9, 1789.*

"SIR, you are troubled," said Mr. Law to me; "because you do not understand how God is dealing with you. Perhaps if you did, it would not so well answer his design. He is teaching you to *trust* him farther than you can *see* him." He is now teaching *you* the same lesson. Hitherto you cannot understand his ways. But they are all mercy and truth. And though you do not know now what he does, you shall know hereafter.

I am acquainted with several persons whom I believed to be saved from sin. But there is great variety in the manner wherein God is pleased to lead them. Some of them are called to act much for God; some to rejoice much: some to suffer much. All of these shall receive their crown. But when the Son of Man shall come in his glory, the brightest crown will be given to the sufferers. Look up, thou blessed one! The time is at hand!

I am, ever yours,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Leeds, August 1, 1789.*

I THANK you for sending me so particular an account of your sister's death. "Right precious in the sight of the Lord, is the death of his saints!" It is well you have learned to say, "The Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away, blessed be the name of the Lord!" And you can say it even.

"When loss of friends ordain'd to know,  
Next pain and guilt, the sorest ill below."

But why does our Lord inflict this upon us? Not merely for his pleasure, but that we may be partakers of his holiness. It is true, one grand means of grace is the *doing* the will of our Lord. But the *suffering* it is usually a quicker means, and sinks us deeper into the abyss of love. It hath pleased God to lead *you* in the way of suffering, from your youth up until now. For the present this is not joyous, but grievous; nevertheless, it has yielded peaceable fruit. Your soul is still as a watered garden, as a field which the Lord hath blessed. Cleave to him still with full purpose of heart. To his tender care I commend you. And am,

Yours, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*High Wycombe, Nov. 4, 1790.*

THE more I consider your case, the more I am convinced that you are in the school of God, and that the Lord loveth whom he chasteneth. From the time you omitted meeting your class or band, you grieved the Holy Spirit of God, and he gave a commission to Satan to buffet you: nor will that commission ever be revoked, till you begin to meet again. Why were you not a mother in Israel—a repairer of the waste places—a guide to the blind—a healer of the sick—a lifter up of the hands which hung down? Wherever you came, God was with you, and shone upon your path. Many daughters had done virtuously: but thou excellest them all. Woman, remember the faith! In the name of God, set out again, and do the first works! I exhort you, for my sake, (who tenderly love you,) for God's sake, for the sake of your own soul, begin again without delay. The day after you receive this, go and meet a class or a band. Sick or well, go! If you cannot speak a word, go; and God will go with you. You sink under the sin of omission! My friend, my sister, go! Go, whether you can or not. Break through! Take up your cross. I say again, do the first works, and God will restore your first love! And you will be a comfort, not a grief to,

Yours, most affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

[This letter produced the desired effect. Miss B. had sunk under a deep nervous affliction, but the day after receiving this letter, her brother collected a few of the people together; she met them, and from that time continued to recover, till she was restored to her former health and usefulness.]

## LETTER XIV.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Dec. 15, 1792.*

THERE can be no possible reason to doubt concerning the happiness of that child. He did fear God, and, according to his circumstances, work righteousness. This is the essence of religion, according to St. Peter. His soul, therefore, was "darkly safe with God," although he was only under the Jewish Dispensation.

When the Son of Man shall come in his glory, and assign every man his own reward, that reward will undoubtedly be proportioned, First, to our inward holiness, our likeness to God: Secondly, to our works: and thirdly, to our sufferings. Therefore, whatever you suffer in time, you will be an unspeakable gainer in eternity. Many of your sufferings, perhaps the greatest part, are now past. But your joy is to come! Look up, my dear friend, look up! and see your crown before you! A little longer, and you shall drink of the rivers of pleasure that flow at God's right hand for evermore.

Adieu.

J. WESLEY.

## LETTERS TO MISS RITCHIE.

## LETTER I.

MY DEAR BETSY,

May 8, 1774.

IT is not common for me to write to any one first : I only answer those that write to me. But I willingly make an exception with regard to *you* : for it is not an uncommon concern that I feel for you. You are just rising into life : and I would fain have you not almost, but altogether a Christian. I would have you just such a one as Miranda : and you cannot be content with less. You cannot be satisfied with *right notions* ; neither with *harmlessness* : no, nor yet with barely *external religion*, how exact soever it be. Nay, you will not be content with a taste of inward religion. This it has pleased God to give you already. You know in whom you have believed : you have tasted of the powers of the world to come. But

“ A taste of love cannot suffice :  
Your soul for all his fulness cries.”

Cry on, and never cease ! Mind not those who rebuke you, “ that you should hold your peace.” Cry so much the more, “ Jesus of Nazareth, take away *all* my sins ! Leave none remaining ! Speak the word only, and I shall be healed !” Write freely to,

Yours, affectionately,

J. WESLEY

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR BETSY,

June 3, 1774.

I SHALL much want to hear that you stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made you free. It is absolutely certain, that you never *need* lose any thing of what God has wrought. He is able, and he is willing, to give you always, what he has once given. He will do it, provided you watch unto prayer, and stir up the gift of God which is in you. There is one invariable rule, which God observes in all his dealings with the children of men. “ Unto him that hath”—uses what he hath—“ shall be given, and he shall have more abundantly.” When we are justified, he gives us one talent : to those that use this, he gives more. When we are sanctified, he gives, as it were, five talents. And if you use the whole power which is then given, he will not only continue that power, but increase it day by day. Meantime be not ignorant of Satan’s devices. He will assault you on every side. He will cast temptations upon you,

“ Thick as autumnal leaves that strew the ground.”

But with every temptation, there shall be a way to escape. And you shall be more than conqueror through him that loves you. You can do, you can suffer his whole will. Go on, in his name, and in the power of his might, and fulfil the joy of

Your’s, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*June 23, 1774.*

IT gives me pleasure to find, that you still stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made you free : and that in spite of various temptations. And these indeed you are still to expect. For Satan neither slumbers nor sleeps : and he will strive to torment, if he cannot destroy. Nay, God himself, as one observes, "prepareth for thee occasions of fighting, that thou mayest conquer." So that you are still called to fight the good fight of faith, and thus to lay hold on eternal life. One admirable help toward conquering all is, for believers to keep close together ; to walk hand in hand, and provoke one another to love and to good works. And one means of retaining the pure love of God, is the exhorting others to press earnestly after it. When you meet on a Sunday morning, I doubt not but this will be the chief matter both of your prayers and conversation. You may then expect to be more and more abundantly endued with power from on high : witnessing that he is faithful and just, both to forgive us our sins, and also to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

I remain, Your's affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER IV.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*July 31, 1774.*

IT gives me much pleasure to find, that you stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made you free. Trials you will have ; but they will only be means of uniting you to him more closely. While your eye is singly fixed on him, your whole body will be full of light. You will be enabled

"To trace his example,  
The world to disdain,  
And constantly trample  
On pleasure and pain."

While you are doing this, you will not find many doubts, of the way wherein you should go. The unction of the Holy one will shine in your heart, and shine upon your path : especially if you frequently consider the "Directions for preserving Fervency of Spirit," and the "Farther Thoughts upon Christian Perfection." If you should at any time be in doubt, concerning any point, either of doctrine or practice, use me as a friend : and speak freely to,

Your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER V

MY DEAR BETSY,

*September 1, 1774.*

IT is an admirable providence which keeps you thus weak in body, till your soul has received more strength. It is good that you should feel how very helpless you are, that you may hang upon him continually. Are you always sensible of his presence ? In what sense do you pray without ceasing ? Can you in every thing give thanks ? And have you a witness in yourself, that all you say and do is well-pleasing to him ?

Could you but use constant exercise in the open air, I think you would need no other medicine. But it is certain, be your body well or ill, all is best, as long as your soul is stayed on him. And why should not this be, without any intermission, till your spirit returns to God. Nay, with a continual increase ! For this is your calling, to sink deeper and deeper into him : out of his fulness to receive more and more, till you know all that love of God that passeth knowledge.

I hope you do not pass any day without spending some time in private exercises. What do you read at those seasons ? Do you read, as it were, by chance ; or have you a method in reading ? I want you to make the best use that is possible, of every means of improvement. Now is the time ! Now you have the fervour of youth on your side. Now animal nature is in its perfection. Now your faculties are in their vigour. And happy are you, who have been enabled to begin your race betimes : I hope you are just now minding this one thing ; looking unto Jesus, and pressing on to the mark to the prize of our high calling ! O run, and never tire ! So shall your love and zeal always be a comfort to,

Yours, affectionately,

JOHN WESLEY.

#### LETTER VI.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*November 29, 1774.*

IT gives me pleasure to hear that you have recovered your health. If you find any fresh illness, you should let me know ; we must not neglect the body, although the main thing is a healthful mind. There are many excellent things in Madam Guion's works, and there are many that are exceedingly dangerous. The more so, because the good things make way for the mischievous ones. And it is not easy, unless for those of much experience, to distinguish the one from the other. Perhaps, therefore, it might be safest for *you*, chiefly to confine yourself to what we have published. You will then neither be perplexed with various sentiments, nor with various language : and you will find enough on every head of religion, speculative or practical.

I know not whether any method of reading would be more profitable, than to read a chapter of the Old Testament, with the notes, every morning. And every evening a chapter, or at least a section, in the New Testament. At other times of the day, I advise you to read our works regularly from the beginning : marking any tract, or part of a tract, which you find most useful, that you may make it matter of meditation. Some of the most useful to believers are, Mr. Law's Tracts, the Lives of Mr. Brainerd, De Renty, and Thomas Walsh, the Tracts translated from the French, and those upon Christian Perfection.

I am glad you have been with our dear sister C. Converse as much as you can with those of her spirit, they are the excellent ones of the earth. You must not give place, no, not for a day, to inactivity. Nothing is more apt to grow upon the soul : the less you speak or act for God, the less you may. If elder persons do not

Speak, you are called, like Elihu, to supply this lack of service. Whether you are young or old, is not material; speak, and spare not! Redeem the time: be fervent in spirit: buy up every opportunity. And be always a comfort to,

Your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VII.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*January 17, 1775.*

I BEG, if you love me, you will send me a minute account how you are, both in body and mind. Some of the mystic writers do not choose to speak plainly, some of them know not how. But, blessed be God, we do: and we know, there is nothing deeper, there is nothing better, in heaven or earth, than *love*! There cannot be, unless there were something higher than the God of love! So that we see distinctly what we have to aim at. We see the prize, and the way to it! Here is the height, here is the depth of Christian experience! "God is love: and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him."

Mr. Fletcher has given us a wonderful view of the different dispensations which we are under. I believe that difficult subject was never placed in so clear a light before. It seems God has raised him up for this very thing,

"To vindicate eternal Providence,  
And justify the ways of God to man."

By confining yourself to those who write clearly, your understanding will be opened and strengthened, far more than by reading a multiplicity of authors: at the same time your heart will be enlarged, and, I trust, more and more united to, -

Your's affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*March 23, 1775.*

I AM glad you have had an opportunity of spending a little time at L. and with Miss B. This, I doubt not, has been a blessed means of increasing your spiritual strength. And I trust you will find more and more opportunity of using whatever strength you have, even at O. Wherever the work of God revives, we are more particularly called to work together with him. Now be instant in season, and out of season! Redeem the time! Buy up every opportunity. In the morning sow thy seed, and in the evening slack not thy hand; and God will give the increase!

In a day or two I expect to embark. Possibly in autumn we may meet again; and, in the mean time, I am persuaded you will not forget,

Your's affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER IX.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*November, 29, 1775.*

"TEMPTATIONS," says one, "and distinct deliverances from temptations, avail much." I do not doubt but you have found it so,

with regard to your late trials ; although there are none which it is harder to withstand, at your time of life. I am glad you were enabled to withstand that plausible temptation, which few young women have power to resist : particularly when you had to encounter the persuasions of those you esteemed and loved.

Mr. C. I think, will do some good : and I am persuaded he will do no hurt. I am glad Mr. T. has given you a little more employment, and a glorious employment it is ! To be a " fellow-worker with God ! " O may you be found faithful ! Be zealous for God ! Be diligent ! Be patient ! And never forget,

Your's affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER X.

MY DEAR BETSY,

July 15, 1776.

I SUPPOSE you wait for my writing first. Nay, I *hope* this is the case ; otherwise I should be afraid, that you were fallen ill again. How is your health ? and how is your mind ? Do you find as near and as constant a communion with God as ever ? Are you always happy ? Does no circumstance interrupt or deaden your spirit of prayer ? Do you feel nothing contrary to resignation ? Can you say with your whole heart,

" Determin'd all thy will to obey,  
Thy blessings I restore :  
Give, Lord, or take thy gifts away,  
I praise thee evermore ! "

The word of the Lord to *you* is, " Feed my lambs. " Methinks I see you giving yourself up as far as possibly you can, to that blessed work, carrying the weak, as it were, in your bosom, and gently leading the rest to the waters of comfort. Meantime your own soul will enjoy a well of water, springing up into everlasting life. If you find any perplexing temptation in your way, you should not scruple to let me know. Youth is the season for many of the most dangerous temptations incident to human nature. But indeed you are preserved from many of these, by your settled determination to slight all dreams of creature-happiness, and give your heart to him who alone is worthy. And believe me to remain,

Your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XI.

MY DEAR BETSY,

Aug. 12, 1776.

TO talk of " thinking without ideas, " is stark nonsense. Whatever is presented to your mind is an idea : so that to be without ideas, is not to think at all. Seeing, feeling, joy, grief, pleasure, pain, are ideas. Therefore, to be *without* ideas, is to be *without either sense or reason*. Mr. ——— certainly does not understand the word : he mistakes it for *images*.

O desire nothing different *in nature* from love. There is nothing higher in earth or heaven. Whatever he speaks of, which *seems* to be higher, is either natural or preternatural enthusiasm. Desire none of those extraordinaries. Such a desire might be an inlet to a thousand delusions : I wish your desires may all centre in that,

“I want the witness, Lord,  
That all I do is right !  
According to thy will and word,  
Well pleasing in thy sight !  
I ask no higher state,  
Indulge me but in this !  
And soon, or later, then translate  
To my eternal bliss.”

You say, “Satan had laid a snare for you.” What snare was that ?  
I am concerned in whatever concerns *you*. O continue to remember, in all your prayers,  
Your’s, most affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XII.

MY DEAR BETSY,

Sept. 20, 1776.

SOME time since, you certainly were in danger of exchanging the plain religion of the Bible, for the refined one of Mysticism; a danger which few can judge of but those that feel it. This my brother and I did for several years. This scheme, (especially as Madam Guion has polished and improved it) gives a delicate satisfaction to whatever of curiosity and self esteem lies hid in the heart. It was particularly liable to make an impression upon *you*, as it came recommended by one you had a friendship for, whom you knew to be upright and sincere, and who had both sense and a pleasing address. At the same time that subtle enemy, “who beguiled Eve by his subtlety,” would not fail to enforce the temptation. The more reason you have to bless God, that you are delivered out of the snare of the fowler.

“He that followeth me,” says our Lord, “walketh not in darkness.” Nothing can be more certain. Closely follow him, and you will never come into any darkness of soul. On the contrary, your light shall shine more and more unto the perfect day. Nothing but sin can bring you into confusion : and this, I trust, God has bruised under your feet. Surely, then, you have no need of ever losing the least part of what God has given you. But you may “stand fast in glorious liberty,” till your spirit returns to God.

I remain, your’s affectionately, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XIII.

MY DEAR BETSY,

June 16, 1777.

I WRITE a few lines, on condition that you will not write, if it does you hurt ; it certainly will, if you lean upon your breast, or if you write much at a time. But perhaps (of which you yourself must be the judge) you might write a few lines now and then. Do you still find your will wholly given up ? Have you no choice as to life or death ? And have you no choice as to the manner of your death ? Are you not afraid of the pain of dissolution ? Can you freely part with all your friends here ?

“And to an unknown somewhere wing away !”

Do you never lose your consciousness of the presence of the Three-One God ? And is your testimony of his Spirit, that you are saved

from inward sin, never obscured? Are you always happy? Do you always enjoy a hope full of immortality? I ask many questions, that you may have an opportunity of being a witness for God, whether you live or die. I think in life or death, you will not forget,

Your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XIV.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*August 2, 1777.*

IT is with great pleasure I learn, that God has been pleased to lift you up from the gates of death, and that your strength is considerably increased, although you are far from being out of danger. When, and in what manner, was this change wrought? Can you impute it to any outward circumstance? How did you feel your mind affected, when you found a return of strength? Did you rejoice or grieve? Or calmly desire, "Let the will of the Lord be done?" In what respects are you better than when I saw you? In what respects are you the same, or worse? Give me as particular an account as you can. Do you find your soul as much alive to God as ever? Does not the corruptible body press down the soul? Do you feel faith's abiding impression, realizing things to come? Do you live in eternity, and walk in eternity? And do you still (as Mr. De Renty says) "Carry about with you an experimental verity, and a fulness of the presence of the ever-blessed Trinity?"

I remain, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XV.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*August 24, 1777.*

EVER since I was informed, that it had pleased God in some measure to restore your strength, I have lived in hope that he will yet be entreated, and will give you back to our prayers. Do you still find the same consciousness of the presence of the ever-blessed Trinity? Do you find it day and night? In the midst of trials, does it remain the same? But one would be ready to ask, excepting a weak body, what trials can *you* have?

"Secluded from the world, and all its care,  
Hast thou to joy or grieve, to hope or fear?"

Unless it be for this; you long to please all for their good: but you cannot succeed. You would fain give them satisfaction; but they will not be satisfied. This may be a close trial.

Send as particular an account as you can, of the state both of your body and mind, to

Your's affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XVI.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*October 6, 1778.*

SINCE I saw her, I have had the pleasure of receiving two letters from —, and I am more and more convinced, that she has sustained no real loss from her late trials. Indeed the greatness of them proved the greatness of her grace; otherwise, she must have

utterly fainted. But I am afraid the poor tenement of clay has received such a shock as will not easily be repaired. The wonderful behaviour of Mrs. — was more than it was well able to bear. But the comfort is, He with whom we have to do, is the Physician.

I doubt, whether any embodied spirit can feel such entire self-abasement, as is felt by those spirits that see the face of our Father which is in heaven. And, undoubtedly, the nearer they approach the throne, the more abased they will be.

The plerophery (or full assurance) of faith, is such a divine testimony, that we are reconciled to God, as excludes all doubt and fear concerning it. This refers only to what is present. The plerophery (or full assurance) of hope, is a divine testimony, that we shall endure to the end; or more directly, that we shall enjoy God in glory. This is by no means essential to, or inseparable from, perfect love. It is sometimes given to those that are not perfected in love, as it was to Mr. Grimshaw. And it is not given, (at least not for some time,) to many that are perfected in love. I do not say, you *ought* to pray for it, but I think you *may*; only with absolute resignation. In this as in all things,

“His manner and his time are best.”

I rejoice to hear of the continuance of your health. But you will still need constant exercise; to which should be added, as often as may be, change of air. That you may enjoy more and more health, both of soul and body, is the prayer of,

Your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY

## LETTER XVII.

MY DEAR BETSY,

February 12, 1779.

THE remark of Luther, “That a revival of religion seldom continues above thirty years,” has been verified many times in several countries. But it will not always hold. The present revival of religion in England, has already continued fifty years. And, blessed be God, it is at least as likely to continue, as it was twenty or thirty years ago. Indeed it is far more likely; as it not only spreads wider, but sinks deeper, than ever. More and more persons being able to testify, that the blood of Christ cleanses from all sin. We have therefore reason to hope, that this revival of religion will continue, and continually increase, till the time when all Israel shall be saved, and the fulness of the Gentiles shall come.

I have heard that Mr. — is in London, but have not heard where he is, or what he does. As far as I can learn, he lives in the utmost privacy, and does not preach at all. He seems to think that his present calling is to be a hermit in London.

Surely it is your wisdom to stand fast even in the outward liberty wherewith Christ has made you free. You are now happily disengaged from caring for the things of this world, and need only care for the things of the Lord: how you may be holy in body and spirit, and how you may promote his kingdom upon earth.

I have abundant proof that Baron Swedenburg's fever, which he

had thirty years before he died, much affected his understanding. Yet his tract is “majestic, though in ruins.” He has strong and beautiful thoughts, and may be read with profit by a serious and cautious reader.

Some weeks since I began another Journal, and am going on with it, when I have any scraps of time; probably it will be finished next month. I expect to visit Yorkshire this spring, when I hope to see you.

I am, your’s, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVIII.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*London, Jan. 19, 1782.*

IT seemed a little strange to me, my dear Betsy, that I did not hear from you for so long a time. But I imputed your silence to your bodily weakness, of which several of our friends sent me word.

From our brethren in various parts of England and Ireland, I have very pleasing accounts of the uncommon blessings, which many received at the time of renewing their covenant with God. I am glad to hear, that you at Otley had your share. That point, entire salvation from inbred sin, can hardly ever be insisted upon, either in preaching or prayer, without a particular blessing. Honest Isaac Brown firmly believes this doctrine, that we are to be saved from all sin in this life. But I wish, when opportunity serves, you would encourage him, 1. To preach Christian Perfection, constantly, strongly, and explicitly. 2. Explicitly to assert and prove, that it may be received now. And, 3. (which indeed is implied therein,) that it is to be received by simple faith.

In every state of mind, in that of conviction, or justification, or sanctification, I believe every person may either go sensibly backward, or seem to stand still, or go forward. I incline to think, all the persons you mention were fully sanctified. But some of them, watching unto prayer, went on from faith to faith; while the others, being less watchful, seemed to stand still, but were indeed imperceptibly backsliding. Wishing you all may increase with all the increase of God,

I am, ever your’s,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XIX.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*Bristol, July 20, 1783.*

IT seemed a long time since I heard from you, but I believe your not writing, was owing to your not knowing how to direct to me while I was abroad. The prayers of many were productive of many blessings, and in particular of the amazing friendship and good will which were shown us in every place. We always looked upon the Dutch as a heavy, dull, stoical people. But truly most, nay, I may say all, with whom we conversed familiarly, were as tender hearted, and as earnestly affectionate as the Irish themselves. Two of our sisters, when we left the Hague, came twelve miles

with us on our way. And one of our brethren of Amsterdam, came to take leave of us to Utrecht, above thirty miles. There are indeed many precious souls in Utrecht full of faith and love, as also at Haerlem, the Hague, and Amsterdam. And one and all (without any human teaching) dress as plainly as you do. I believe, if my life be prolonged, I shall pay them a visit at least every other year. Had I had a little more time, I would have visited our brethren in Friesland and Westphalia likewise; for a glorious work of God is lately broken out in both these provinces.

Miss L—— is an Israelite indeed: she is a pattern to all that are round about her. One would scarcely have expected to see the daughter of the head burgomaster, dressed on a Sunday in a plain linen gown. She appears to have but one desire, That Christ may reign alone in her heart.

I do not remember any storm which travelled so far as that on the tenth. It has been in almost all parts of England, but especially at Witney, near Oxford. The next night they had a far greater, which seemed to cover the whole town for four hours, with almost one uninterrupted blaze, and it has made such an impression on high and low, rich and poor, as had not been known in the memory of man.

I expect a good deal of difficulty at this Conference, and shall stand in need of the prayers of you and your friends. Peace be with your spirits. I am, your's, most affectionately,

J. WESLEY

## LETTER XX.

MY DEAR BETSY, *Traceen, Pembroke-shire, Aug. 19, 1784.*

I WAS a little surprised at a letter from sister D——, in which she seems to approve of all that Mrs. C. has done, and speaks as if it were just and right, and done in obedience to the order of Providence! I could not help saying, “There is but one advice which I can give her upon the present occasion: ‘Remember from whence thou art fallen. Repent, and do thy first works.’”

Some years ago, I committed a little company of lovely children to the care of one of our sisters at Haverford. I was concerned yesterday to find she was weary of well doing, and had totally given up her charge. I hope, my dear Betsy, this will never be your case! You will never leave off your labour of love; though you should not always (not immediately at least) see the fruit of your labours. You may not immediately see Mrs. H—— so established in grace, as you desire and hope. But in this, as well as many other instances, in due time, “you shall reap if you faint not.”

I have been often musing upon this, Why the generality of Christians, even those that really are such, are less zealous and less active for God, when they are middle aged, than they were when they were young? May we not draw an answer to this question, from that declaration of our Lord, (no less than eight times repeated by the evangelists,) *To him that hath, uses what he hath, shall be given;*

*but from him that hath not, shall be taken away that he hath.* A measure of zeal and activity is given to every one, when he finds peace with God. If he earnestly and diligently uses this talent, it will surely be increased. But if he ceases (yea, or intermits) to do good, he insensibly loses both the will and the power. So there is no possible way to retain those talents, but to use them to the uttermost. Let this never be the case of my dear friend! Never abate any thing of your diligence in doing good. Sometimes indeed the feeble body sinks under you: but when you do all you can, you do enough. Remember, in all your prayers,

Your's, most affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XXI.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*Dublin, June 26, 1785.*

OUR Lord has indeed poured out abundance of blessings, almost in every part of this kingdom. I have now gone through every province, and visited all the chief societies, and I have found far the greater part of them increasing both in number and strength. Many are convinced of sin: many justified; and not a few perfected in love. One means of which is, that several of our young preachers, of whom we made little account, appear to be (contrary to all expectation) men full of faith, and of the Holy Ghost: and they are pushing out, to the right hand and the left: and wherever they go, God prospers their labour. I know not whether Thomas Walsh will not revive, in two, if not three of them.

Many years ago I was saying, "I cannot imagine, how Mr. Whitefield can keep his soul alive, as he is not now going through honour and dishonour, evil report and good report: having nothing but honour and good report attending him wherever he goes." It is now my own case: I am just in the condition now that he was then in. I am become, I know not how, an honourable man. The scandal of the cross is ceased: and all the kingdom, rich and poor, Papists and Protestants, behave with courtesy, nay, and seeming good will! It seems as if I had well nigh finished my course, and our Lord was giving me an honourable discharge.

My dear B. have you not something to do in Dublin? If so, the sooner you visit our friends the better. Peace be with your spirit!

Adieu!

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XXII.

MY DEAR BETSY,

*London, Feb. 24, 1786.*

IT is doubtless the will of our Lord, we should be guided by our reason, so far as it can go. But in many cases, it gives us very little light, and in others, none at all. In all cases, it cannot guide us right, but in subordination to the unction of the Holy One. So that in all our ways, we are to acknowledge him, and he will direct our paths.

I do not remember to have heard or read any thing like my own

experience. Almost ever since I can remember, I have been led in a peculiar way. I go on in an even line, being very little raised at one time, or depressed at another. Count Zinzendorf observes there are three different ways wherein it pleases God to lead his people. Some are guided almost in every instance by apposite texts of *Scripture*. Others see a clear and plain *reason*, for every thing they are to do. And yet others are led not so much by *Scripture* or reason, as by particular *impressions*. I am very rarely led by impressions, but generally by reason and by *Scripture*. I see abundantly more than I feel. I want to feel more love and zeal for God.

My very dear friend, adieu!

J. WESLEY.

## LETTERS TO MISS H. A. ROE.

### LETTER I.

*Whitehaven, May 3, 1776.*

WITH pleasure I sit down to write to my dear Miss Roe, who has been much upon my mind since I left Macclesfield. Once I saw my dear friend, Miss Beresford; when I came again, she was in Abraham's bosom. Once I have seen her living picture, drawn by the same hand, and breathing the same spirit, and I am afraid I shall hardly see you again, till we meet in the garden of God. But if you should gradually decay, if you be sensible of the hour approaching, when your spirit is to return to God; I should be glad to have notice of it, wherever I am, that if possible I might see you once more before you

“Clap your glad wing and soar away,  
And mingle with the blaze of day.”

Perhaps in such a circumstance, I might be of some little comfort to your dear mamma, who would stand in much need of comfort: and it may be, our blessed Master would enable me to teach you at once, and learn of you, to die! In the meantime, see that you neglect no probable means of restoring your health, and send me, from time to time, a particular account of the state wherein you are. Do you feel your own will quite given up to God, so that you have no repugnance to his will in any thing? Do you find no strivings of pride? no remains of vanity? no desire of praise, or fear of dispraise? Do you enjoy an uninterrupted sense of the loving presence of God? How far does the corruptible and decaying body press down the soul? Your disorder naturally sinks the spirits, and occasions heaviness and dejection. Can you, notwithstanding this, *rejoice evermore, and in every thing give thanks?* Certainly before the root of sin is taken away, believers may live above the power of it. Yet what a difference between the *first* love, and the *pure* love. You can explain this to Mr. Roe by your own experience. Let him follow on, and how soon may he attain it!

I am glad you wrote to Miss Yates, and hope you will write to Miss —. As to health, they are both nearly as you are ; only Miss — is a little strengthened by a late journey. I never conversed with her so much before. I can give you her character in one line. She is, “All praise, all meekness, and all love.” If it will not hurt you, I desire you will write often to, My dear Hetty,  
Your’s affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR HETTY, *Newcastle-upon-Tyne, June 2, 1776.*

IT is not uncommon for a person to be thoroughly convinced of his duty to call sinners to repentance, several years before he has an opportunity of doing it. This has been the case with several of our preachers. Probably it may be the case with Mr. Roe ; God may show him now what he is to do hereafter. It seems, his present duty is to wait the openings of Divine Providence.

If I durst, I should earnestly desire that you might continue with us a little longer. I could almost say it is hard that I should just see you once and no more. But it is a comfort, that to die is not to be lost. Our union will be more full and perfect hereafter.

Surely our disembodied souls shall join,  
Surely my friendly shade shall mix with thine ;  
To earth-born pain superior, light shall rise  
Through the wide waves of unopposing skies ;  
Together swift ascend heav’n’s high abode,  
Converse with angels, and rejoice with God.

Tell me, my dear Hetty, do you experience something similar to what Mr. De Renty expresses in those strong words : “I bear about with me an experimental verity and a plenitude of the presence of the ever blessed Trinity ?” Do you commune with God in the night season ? Does he bid you even in sleep, Go on ? and does he “make your very dreams devout ?”

That he may fill you with all his fulness, is the constant wish of,  
My dear Hetty, your’s, affectionately, J. WESLEY

## LETTER III.

MY DEAR HETTY, *Bristol, Sept. 16, 1776.*

AS I did not receive your’s, of Aug. 28, before my return from Cornwall, I was beginning to grow a little apprehensive lest your love was declining : but you have sweetly dispelled all my apprehensions of that sort, and I take knowledge that you are still the same. The happy change wrought in Miss P. R. and Miss B. may encourage you to snatch every opportunity of speaking a word for a good Master. Sometimes you see present fruit, but if not, your labour is not lost, the seed may spring up after many days. I hope, though your cousins are tried, they will not be discouraged ; then all these things will *work together for good*. Probably if they stand firm, religion will in a while leaven the whole family. But they will

have need of much patience, as well as much resolution. I am not sorry that you have met with a little blame in the affair, and I hope it was not undeserved. Happy are they that suffer for well-doing! I was almost afraid that all men would speak well of you. Do you feel no intermission of your happiness in God? Do you never find any lowness of spirits? Does time never hang heavy upon your hands? How is your health? You see how inquisitive I am, because every thing relating to you nearly concerns me. I once thought I could not be well acquainted with any one till many years had elapsed; and yet I am as well acquainted with you as if I had known you from your infancy. You now are my comfort and joy! And I hope to be far longer than this little span of life,

My dear Hetty, your's, in tender affection, J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER IV

MY DEAR HETTY,

*Bristol, Oct. 6, 1776.*

TO-MORROW I set out for London, in and near which, if it please God to continue my life, I shall remain till spring. The trials which a gracious Providence sends, may be precious means of growing in grace, and particularly of increasing in faith, patience, and resignation: and are they not all chosen for us by infinite wisdom and goodness? So that we may well subscribe to those beautiful lines,

With patient mind thy course of duty run:  
God nothing does, nor suffers to be done,  
But thou wouldst do thyself, if thou couldst see  
The end of all events as well as he."

Every thing that we can do for a parent, we ought to do; that is, every thing we can do without killing ourselves. But this we have no right to do. Our lives are not at our own disposal. Remember that, my dear Hetty, and do not carry a good principle too far. Do you still find,

"Labour is rest, and pain is sweet,  
When thou, my God, art here?"

I know pain or grief does not interrupt your happiness: but does it not lessen it! You often feel sorrow for your friends, does that sorrow rather quicken, than depress your soul; does it sink you deeper into God? I cannot express the satisfaction which I receive from your open and artless manner of writing, especially when you speak of the union of spirit which you feel with, My dear Hetty,

Your ever affectionate J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER V

MY DEAR HETTY,

*London, Feb. 11, 1777.*

THE papers of one, who lately went to God, are fallen into my hands. I will transcribe a few particulars. His experience is uncommon. And you may simply tell me how far your experience

does or does not agree with it. But beware of hurting yourself upon the occasion, beware of unprofitable reasonings. God may have wrought the same work in you, though not in the same manner. "Just after my uniting with the Methodists, the Father was revealed to me, the first time : soon after, the whole Trinity. I beheld the distinct persons of the Godhead, and worshipped one undivided JEHOVAH, and each person separately. After this I had equal intercourse with the Son, and afterwards with the Spirit, the same as with the Father and the Son. After some years, my communion was with the Son only, though at times with the Father, and not wholly without the Spirit. Of late I have found the same access to the Triune God. When I approach Jesus, the Father and the Spirit commune with me.

"Whatever I receive now, centres in taking leave of earth, and hastening to another place. I am as one that is no more. I stand and look on what God has done ; his calls, helps, mercies, forbearances, deliverances from sorrows, rescues out of evils ; and I adore and devote myself to him with new ardour. If it be asked, how, or in what manner, I beheld the Triune God, it is above all description. He that has seen this light of God, can no more describe it, than he that has not. In two of those divine interviews, the Father spoke, while I was in an agony of prayer for perfect conformity to himself : twice more when I was in the depth of sorrow, and each time in Scripture words. It may be asked, Was the appearance glorious ? It was all divine, it was glory. I had no conception of it. It was God. The first time, the glory of him I saw, reached even to me. I was overwhelmed with it. Body and soul penetrated through with the rays of Deity."

Tell me, my dear maid, if you have ever experienced any thing like these things ? But do not puzzle yourself about them : only speak in simplicity. You cannot speak of these things to many ; but you may say any thing without reserve, to,

Your's, in tender affection,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VI.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*London, February 11, 1779.*

IT is a great mercy, that on the one hand, you have previous warning of the trials that are at hand, and, on the other, are not careful about them, but only prepared to encounter them. We know, indeed, that these (as well as all things) are ordered by unerring wisdom ; and are given us exactly at the right time, and in due number, weight, and measure. And they continue no longer than is best : for chance has no share in the government of the world. The Lord reigns ! and disposes all things, strongly and sweetly, for the good of them that love him. I rejoice to hear, that you have now less hinderance in the way, and can oftener converse with his people. Be sure to improve every one of those precious opportunities of doing and receiving good.

I am often grieved to observe, that, although on his part *the gifts and callings of God are without repentance*; although he never repents of any thing he has given us, but is willing to give it always, yet so very few retain the same ardour of affection, which they received either when they were justified, or when they were (more fully) sanctified. Certainly none need to lose any part of their light or their love. It may increase more and more. Of this you are a witness for God; and so is our dear Miss ——. You have not lost any thing of what you have received; your love has never grown cold, since the moment God visited you with his great salvation. And I hope, also, you will ever retain the same affection for,

Your's, most tenderly, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VII.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*Liverpool, April 10, 1781.*

MANY of our brethren and sisters in London, during that great outpouring of the Spirit, spoke of several new blessings which they had attained. But after all, they could find nothing higher than pure love; on which the full assurance of hope generally attends. This, the inspired writings always represent as the highest point: only there are innumerable degrees of it. The plerophery (or full assurance of faith) is such a clear conviction of being now in the favour of God, as excludes all doubt and fear concerning it. The full assurance of hope, is such a clear confidence in the person who possesses it, that he shall enjoy the glory of God, as excludes all doubt and fear concerning this. And this confidence is totally different from an opinion, that “no saint shall fall from grace.” It has, indeed, no relation to it. Bold, presumptuous men often substitute this base counterfeit, in the room of that precious confidence. But, it is observable, the opinion remains just as strong while men are sinning and serving the Devil, as while they are serving God. Holiness or unholiness does not affect it in the least degree. Whereas, the giving way to any thing unholy, either in heart or life, immediately clouds the full assurance of hope; which cannot subsist any longer than the heart cleaves steadfastly to God.

I am persuaded the storm which met us in the teeth, and drove us back to England, was not a casual, but a providential thing. Therefore I lay aside the thought of seeing Ireland at present.

I am, my dear Hetty, always your's, in tender affection,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*London, Dec. 9, 1781.*

WE may easily account for those notices which we frequently receive, either sleeping or waking, upon the scriptural supposition, that “He giveth his angels charge over us, to keep us in all our ways.” How easy is it for them, who have at all times so ready an access to our souls, to impart to us whatever may be a means of in-

creasing our holiness, or our happiness! So that we may well say, with Bishop Ken,

“O may angels, while we sleep,  
Around our beds their vigils keep!  
Their love angelical instil!  
Stop every avenue of ill!”

Without needing to use any other arguments, you have a clear proof in your own experience, that our blessed Lord is both able and willing to give us always, what he gives once; that there is no necessity of ever losing what we receive in the moment of justification, or sanctification. But it is his will, that all the light and love which we then receive, should increase more and more unto the perfect day.

If you are employed to assist children that are brought to the birth, that groan either for the first or the pure love, happy are you! But this is not all your work. No, my Hetty, you are likewise to watch over the new-born babes. Although they have love, they have not yet either much light or much strength, so that they never had more need of your assistance, that they may neither be turned out of the way, nor hindered in running the race that is set before them.

I should not have been willing that Miss Bosanquet should have been joined to any other person than Mr. Fletcher, but I trust she may be as useful with him as she was before.

I fear our dear — will not stay long with us. I have no answer to my last letter, and Mrs. Downes writes that she is far from well. Yet God is able to raise her up. As to Peggy Roe, I have little hopes of her life: but she seemed, when I saw her, to be quite simple of heart, desiring nothing more but God. My dear Hetty, adieu!

Remember, in all your prayers,

Your's, most affectionately,

J. WESLEY

## LETTER IX.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*London, Jan. 7, 1782.*

IN the success of Mr. Leech's preaching, we have one proof of a thousand, that the blessing of God always attends the publishing of full salvation as attainable now, by simple faith. You should always have in readiness that little Tract, “The Plain Account of Christian Perfection;” there is nothing that would so effectually stop the mouths of those, who call this “a new doctrine.” All who thus object, are really (though they suspect nothing less) seeking sanctification by works. If it be by works, then certainly these will need time, in order to the doing of these works. But if it is by faith, it is plain, a moment is as a thousand years. Then God says, (in the spiritual, as in the outward world,) Let there be light, and there is light.

I am in great hopes, as J. S. got his own soul much quickened in Macclesfield, he will now be a blessing to many at Chester. A few witnesses of pure love remain there still; but several are gone to Abraham's bosom. Encourage those in M. who enjoy it, to speak

VOL. 10.—K k

explicitly what they do experience : and to go on, till they know *all* that "love of God that passeth knowledge."

Give all the help you can, my dear Hetty, to them, and to,  
Your's, most affectionately, JOHN WESLEY.

### LETTER X.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*Darlington, June 25, 1782.*

IT is certain, there has been, for these forty years, such an outpouring of the Spirit, and such an increase of vital religion, as has not been in England for many centuries ; and it does not appear that the work of God at all decays. In many places there is a considerable increase of it ; so that we have reason to hope, that the time is at hand, when the kingdom of God shall come with power, and all the people of this poor heathen land shall know him, from the least to the greatest.

I am glad you had so good an opportunity of talking with Mr. S——. Surely, if prayer was made for him, so useful an instrument as he was, would not be suffered to lose all his usefulness. I wish you could make such little excursions oftener, as you always find your labour is not in vain.

This afternoon I was agreeably surprised, by a letter from our dear Miss —— . It seems as if God, in answer to many prayers, has lent her to us yet a little longer. "He bringeth down to the grave, and bringeth up again. Wise are all his ways !"

Take particular care, my dear Hetty, of the children ; they are glorious monuments of divine grace, and I think you have a particular affection for them, and a gift to profit them.

I always am, my dear Friend,  
Your's most affectionately, JOHN WESLEY:

### LETTER XI.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*Bristol, Oct. 1, 1782.*

I RECEIVED your's two days after date, and read it yesterday to Miss Stockdale, and poor Peggy Roe, who is still strangely detained in life. But she is permitted to stay in the body a little longer, that she may be more ready for the Bridegroom.

You did exceedingly well to send me so circumstantial an account of Robert Roe's last illness and happy death. It may incite many to run the race that is set before them, with more courage and patience.

The removal of so useful an instrument as your late cousin, in the midst, or rather in the dawn of his usefulness, (especially while the harvest is so great, and the faithful labourers so few,) is an instance of the divine economy, which leaves our reason behind : our little narrow minds cannot comprehend it. We can only wonder and adore. How is your health ? I sometimes fear, lest you also (as

those I tenderly love generally have been) should be snatched away.  
But let us live to-day.

I always am affectionately your's,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XII.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*Bristol, March 15, 1783.*

I SHALL not be able to visit Macclesfield quite as soon as usual this year; for the preaching-houses at Hinckley and Nottingham are to be opened, which I take in my way. I expect to be at Nottingham on the 1st of April, but how long I shall stay there, cannot yet determine. Thence I shall probably come, by Derby to Macclesfield.

I intended to have written a good deal more, but I am hardly able. For a few days, I have had just such a fever as I had, a few years ago, in Ireland. But all is well. I am in no pain, but the wheel of life seems scarcely able to move; yet I made shift to preach this morning to a crowded audience, and hope to say something to them this afternoon. I love that word, "And Ishmael died in the presence of all his brethren." Still pray for,

My dear Hetty, your's most affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XIII.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*London, Oct. 12, 1787.*

I DO not doubt but your calling at Dubiin, would be in an acceptable time, especially as R. H. was there.

After we left you at Mauchester, we pushed on, and, in all haste, set out for the Isle of Jersey. But a storm drove us into Yarmouth, in the Isle of Wight. There Dr. Coke and I preached in the market place by turns, two evenings and two mornings. A second storm drove us to the Isle of Purbeck, just where the Indiaman was lost. There I had an opportunity of preaching to a little Society, which I had not seen for thirteen years. We hoped to reach Guernsey the next evening, but could get no farther than the Isle of Alderney. I preached on the beach in the morning, and the next afternoon came safe to Guernsey. Here is an open door; high and low, rich and poor, receive the word gladly: so that I could not regret being detained by contrary winds, several days longer than we intended. The same thing befell us in the Isle of Jersey, where also there was an open door: even the Governor, and the chief of the people, being quite civil and friendly.

Jane Bisson I saw every day. She is nineteen years old, about the size of Miss —, and has a peculiar mixture of seriousness, sprightliness, and sweetness, both in her looks and behaviour. Wherever we were, she was the servant of all. I think she exceeds Madam Guion, in deep communion with God.

I hope you will see a revival in Cork also. See that you take particular care of the tender lambs, not forgetting poor P. L. Peace

be with all your spirits ! I am, with kind love to James Rogers, my  
 dear Hetty, Your's, most affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XIV.

MY DEAR HETTY,

*May 28, 1788.*

MY not hearing from you for so long a time, would have given me concern, but I knew it was not from want of affection. I am glad to hear you prosper in your soul : rest in nothing you have attained, but press on till you are filled with all the fulness of God. In this day of God's power, I hope many of the backsliders in Cork will be brought back ; there are great numbers of them in and about the city, and many are of the genteeler sort. It seems you have a particular mission to these : perhaps they will hear none but you. I hope you have already found out Mrs. Forbes, (Captain Forbes's wife,) and that now she is more than almost persuaded to be a Christian. The pearl on my eye is but just discernible, and dulls the sight a little, but not much ; as it grows no worse, I do not much regard it.

Mr. Smythe's society, I verily believe, will do us no harm, and every one may speak of me as he will. I am just flying away as a shadow. It more than makes me amends, that James and you still love, and pray for,

My dear Hetty,  
 Your most affectionate, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XV

MY DEAR HETTY,

*February 9, 1789.*

I AM glad to hear that you do not grow weary or faint in your mind ; that you are rather increasing in the way of holiness. Go on in the name of the Lord, and in the power of his might, doing the will of God from the heart.

It was a providence indeed, the flood did not begin in the night, rather than in the day. So it is that judgment is usually mixed with mercy, that sinners may be awakened, and not destroyed. I liked well to lodge at brother Laffan's when I was in Cork last, but certainly I shall like much better to lodge with brother Rogers and you. I shall be more at home with you, than I could be any where else in Cork. I still find (blessed be God) a gradual increase of strength, and my sight is rather better than worse. If my life and health be continued, I shall endeavour to reach Dublin about the end of March ; and Cork, before the end of June. Peace be with your spirits !

I am, my dear Hetty, your's most affectionately,  
 J. WESLEY

## TO MISS PATTY CHAPMAN.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*December 17, 1773.*

CERTAINLY the more good you do, the more will many be tempted against you. But go on. So much the more will the Spirit

of glory and of Christ rest upon you. By fighting against that reserve, you will conquer it: the more it is resisted, the more it is weakened. You need not be overcome by peevishness any more. The grace of God is sufficient for you. It seems that you are at present in your place: how knowest thou, but thou shalt gain thy brother! The most profitable way of reading, is to read in an exact method: suppose a chapter or two (as time may serve) in the Old Testament, with the Notes, in the morning; and a chapter, more or less, of the New Testament, and Notes, in the afternoon or evening. Next to this, it might be useful to read the works in order, only not too fast, not too much at a time. For all reading should be joined with meditation and prayer. Read a little: pray and meditate much. In order to converse usefully, we had a rule at Oxford, to plan every conversation before we went into company; to consider, What subject would be most useful; and, How to prosecute it. And though of yourself you are not sufficient for these things, yet one is nigh to supply all your wants. Love him, and trust him for all things, and continue to love, for his sake,

My dear Patty, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

---

TO MR. ALEXANDER.

DEAR SIR,

*Near London, Nov. 21, 1783.*

IT is very certain your day of grace is not past: if it were, you would be quite easy and unconcerned. It is plain, the Lover of souls is still striving with you, and drawing you to himself. But you have no time to lose; for "now is the accepted time; now is the day of salvation!" It is, therefore, your wisdom, (without considering what others do, whether clergyman or layman,) to attend to one thing; that is, "to work out your own salvation with fear and trembling." And nothing can be more sure, than that if you do this, if it be indeed your one care to "seek the kingdom of God and his righteousness, all other things shall be added unto you." To his protection I commit you and your's, and am, dear Sir,

Your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

*I write a line to your Son.*

DEAR JAMES,

*Near London, Nov. 21, 1783.*

ONLY let your actions correspond with your words, and then they will have weight with all that hear them. It seems highly probable to me, that Providence does not intend you should be a tradesman.

I have known a young man, that feared God, acquire as much learning in one year, as children usually do in seven. Possibly you may do the same. If you have a desire to try, and we should live

till July, I will give you a year's schooling and board at Kingswood School, and you will then be the better able to judge, what it is that God calls you to.

I am, your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

---

## LETTERS TO MR. BENSON.

### LETTER I.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Wycombe, Nov. 7, 1768.*

YOU have now twenty more volumes of the Philosophical Transactions. Dr. Burton's Latin and Greek Poems you have in the study. Malebranche, and some other books, are coming. Logic you cannot crack without a tutor: I must read it to Peter and you, if we live to meet. It would not be amiss if I had a catalogue of the books at Kingswood: then I should know the better what to buy. As fast as I can meet with them at sales, I shall procure what are yet wanting. But beware you be not swallowed up in books. An ounce of love is worth a pound of knowledge. I am, dear Joseph,

Your affectionate brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER II.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Dec. 4, 1768.*

I CANNOT yet convince you of one thing, (and it is a thing of importance,) that you may make greater progress in valuable knowledge, by reading *those books*, (particularly if read in *that order*,) than you can by reading any other books, which are now extant in England. It follows, that your friend B. in this respect, is not your friend. For he puts you out of your way: he retards you in the attainment of the *most useful* knowledge. He gratifies your curiosity (a bad principle too) at the expense of your improvement. It is better for you to read *these books* than *his*: which (if they are not hurtful or dangerous at least) do not lead *directly* to the end you propose. Choose *the best way*. I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER III.

MY DEAR JOSEPH,

*Shoreham, Dec. 22, 1768.*

YOU do not quite take my meaning yet. When I recommend to any one a method or scheme of study, I do not barely consider this or that book separately, but in conjunction with the rest. And what I recommend, *I know*: I know both the style and sentiments of each author; and how he will confirm or illustrate what goes before, and prepare for what comes after. Now supposing Mr. Stonehouse, Rouquet, or any other, to have ever so great learning

and judgment, yet he does not *enter into my plan*. He does not comprehend my views, nor keep his eye fixed on the same point. Therefore I must insist upon it, the interposing other books between these, till you have read them through, is not good husbandry. It is not making your time and pains go so far as they might go. If you want more books, let *me* recommend more, who best understand my own scheme. And do not *ramble*, however learned the persons may be, that advise you so to do. This does indulge curiosity, but does not minister to real improvement, as a stricter method would do. No: you would gain more clearness and strength of judgment by reading those Latin and Greek books, (compared with which most of the English are whipt syllabus,) than by fourscore modern books. I have seen the proof, as none of your Bristol friends have done, or can do. Therefore I advise you again, keep to your plan, (though this implies continual self-denial,) if you would improve your understanding to the highest degree of which it is capable.

I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother.

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER IV.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Cork, May 27, 1769.*

YOU have now (what you never had before) a clear, providential call to Oxford. If you keep a single eye, and have courage and steadiness, you may be an instrument of much good. But you will tread on slippery ground: and the *serious* persons you mention, may do you more hurt than any others. When I was at Oxford, I never was afraid of any, but the *almost Christians*. If you give way to them, and their *prudence*, a hair's-breadth, you will be removed from the hope of the gospel. If you are not moved, if you tread in the same steps which my brother and I did, you may be a means, under God, of raising another set of real Bible Christians. How long the world will suffer them, (whether longer than they did us or not) is in God's hand.

With regard to Kingswood School, I have one string more; if that breaks, I shall let it drop. I have borne the burden one and twenty years: I have done what I could. Now let some one else do more. I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER V

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, Dec. 26, 1769.*

EVERY man of sense, who reads the rules of the school, may easily conclude, that a school so conducted by men of piety and understanding, will exceed any other school or academy, in Great Britain or Ireland. In this sentiment you can never be altered. And if it was not so conducted since *you* were there, why was it not? You had power enough. You have all the power which *I* have. You may do just what you please.

*Dirue et ædifica: muta quadrata rotundis;\**

And I will second you to the uttermost.

\* Pull down, build up, make what changes you please.

Trevecka is much more to —, than Kingswood is to me. I mixes with every thing. It is *my* college, *my* masters, *my* students. I do not speak so of this school. It is not *mine*, but the Lord's. I look for no more honour than money from it.

I am glad you defer your journey, and am,

Dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VI.

DEAR JOSEPH,

Bristol, Oct. 5, 1770.

YOU need no apology for your writing: the more frequently and freely you write, the better. I cannot doubt but your neighbour means well; but he is a thorough enthusiast, and has hardly one clear conception of any thing natural or spiritual. Mr Keard, from Aberdeen, and Mr. Wootton, (our new writing-master, a man of an excellent spirit,) are at Kingswood. But does Mr. J. know the price? Sixteen pounds a year? Does he know the rules of the school? Again: Of what age are the children? I will take none that is above nine years old. Now especially; because I will not have our children corrupted; nine of whom, together with our three maid-servants, have just now experienced a gracious visitation, and are rejoicing in a pardoning God.

I am glad you had the courage to speak your mind on so critical an occasion. At all hazards, do so still: only with all possible tenderness and respect. She is much devoted to God, and has a thousand valuable and amiable qualities. There is no great fear that I should be prejudiced against one, whom I have intimately known for these thirty years. And I know what is in man; therefore I make large allowance for human weaknesses. But what you say is exactly the state of the case. They are "jealous of their *authority*." Truly there is no cause: Longc mea discrepat illi et mens et ratio; I fear and shun, not desire, authority of any kind. Only when God lays that burden upon me, I *bear* it, for his and the people's sake.

"Child," said my father to me, when I was young, "you think to carry every thing by dint of argument. But you will find by and by, how very little is ever done in the world by *clear reason*." Very little indeed! It is true of almost all men, except so far as we are taught of God,

"Against experience we believe,  
We argue against demonstration;  
Pleas'd while our reason we deceive,  
And set our judgment by our passion."

Passion and prejudice govern the world; only under the name of reason. It is our part, by religion and reason joined, to counteract them all we can. It is *yours*, in particular, to do all that in you lies, to soften the prejudices of those that are round about you, and to calm the passions from which they spring. Blessed are the peace-makers!

You judge rightly. *Perfect love* and *Christian liberty* are the very same thing. And those two *expressions* are equally proper, being

equally scriptural. "Nay, how can they and you mean the same thing? They say, You insist on *holiness in the creature*, on *good tempers*, and *sin destroyed*." Most surely. And what is Christian liberty, but another word for holiness? And where is this liberty or holiness, if it is not *in the creature*? Holiness is the love of God and man, or the mind which was in Christ. Now I trust, the love of God is shed abroad *in your heart*, by the Holy Ghost which is given unto you. And if you are holy, is not that mind *in you*, which was also in Christ Jesus?

And are not the love of God and our neighbour, *good tempers*? And so far as these reign in the soul, are not the opposite tempers, worldly-mindedness, malice, cruelty, revengefulness, *destroyed*? Indeed the unclean spirit, though *driven out*, may return and enter again: nevertheless, he was driven out. I use the word *destroyed*, because St. Paul does: *suspended* I cannot find in my Bible. "But they say, You do not consider *this*, as the *consequence of the power of Christ dwelling* in us." Then what will they not say? My very words are, "None feel their need of Christ like these; none so entirely depend upon him. For Christ does not give life to the soul, separate from, but *in and with himself*. Hence his words are equally true of all men, in whatever state of grace they are, 'As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me; without' (or separate from) 'me, ye can do nothing.' For our perfection is not like that of a *tree*, which flourishes by the sap derived from its own root, but like that of a *branch*, which, united to the vine, bears fruit; but severed from it, is *dried up and withered*." —

At length, *veris vincor*, I am constrained to believe, (what I *would not* for a long time) these are not the objections of judgment, but of passion; they do not spring from the head, but the heart. Whatever I say, it will be all one. They will find fault, because I say it. There is *implicit* envy at my *power*, (so called,) and a *jealousy* rising therefrom. Hence *prejudice* in a thousand forms: hence objections springing up like mushrooms. And while those causes remain, they will spring up, whatever I can do or say. However, keep thyself pure! And then there need be no strangeness between you, and,

Dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

London, Nov. 30, 1770.

FOR several years I had been deeply convinced, that I had not done my duty with regard to that valuable woman: that I had not told her what I was thoroughly assured, no one else would dare to do, and what I knew she would bear from no other person, but *possibly* might bear from *me*. But being unwilling to give her pain, I put it off from time to time. At length I did not dare to delay any longer, lest death should call one of us hence. So I at once delivered my own soul, by telling her all that was in my heart. It was "my

*business,*" my proper business so to do ; as none else either could or would do it. Neither did I take at all *too much* upon me : I know the office of a Christian minister. If she is not *profited*, it is her own fault, not mine ; I have done my duty. I do not know, there is one charge in that letter, which was either unjust, unimportant, or aggravated ; any more than that against the doggerel hymns, which are equally an insult upon poetry and common sense.

We had a good time, both at the Tabernacle and Tottenham-Court Chapel. The congregations were immense. Perhaps not a third part could come within hearing. And they were more quiet than could well have been expected. The sermon will be published on Monday, and sent down to Bristol. Mr. Keen and Hardy, his executors, have, I apprehend, the whole and sole disposal of the Tabernacle, Tottenham-Court Chapel, and all the other houses which were occupied by Mr. Whitefield. The Chapel and Tabernacle are supplied by Mr. Joss and Brooksbank ; and Mr. Neale administers the Sacrament there.

I find no such sin as *legality* in the Bible ; the very use of the term speaks an *Antinomian*. I defy all *liberty*, but liberty to love and serve God ; and fear no *bondage*, but bondage to sin. Sift that text to the bottom, and it will do the business of poor H. and all his disciples ; " God sent his own Son in the flesh, that *the righteousness of the law* might be fulfilled in us " *Iustitia legis, iustitia legalis!* Here is legality indeed !

I am glad you come a little nearer the good old Emperor's advice, *Την των βιβλιων διψων ριπιε*.\* That thirst is the symptom of an evil disease : and *crescit indulgens sibi dirus hydrops*.† What is the real value of a thing, but the price it will bear in eternity ? Let no study swallow up, or intrench upon the hours of private prayer. Nil tanti.‡ Simplify both religion, and every part of learning, as much as possible. Be all alive to God, and you will be useful to men !

I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VIII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

London, Dec. 28, 1770.

WHAT a blessing it is, that we can speak freely to each other! Without either disguise or reserve ! So long as we are able to do this we may grow wiser and better every day.

One point I advise you to hold fast, and let neither men nor devils tear it from you. *You* are a child of God : *you* are justified freely through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus. Your sins are forgiven ! Cast not away that confidence, which hath great recompense of reward.

Now, can any be justified, but by *faith*? None can. Therefore you are a *believer*. You have faith in Christ. *You know the Lord*. You can say, " My Lord and my God." And whoever denies this, may as well deny that the sun shines at noon-day.

\* Throw away that thirst for books.

† The dreadful dropsy increases by indulgence. ‡ Nothing is of so much importance.

“Yet still ten thousand lusts remain,  
And vex your soul, absolv'd from sin;  
Still rebel nature strives to reign,  
And you are all unclean, unclean!”

This is equally clear and undeniable. And this is not only *your* experience, but the experience of a thousand believers beside, who yet are sure of God's favour, as of their own existence. To cut off all doubt on this head, I beg you to give another serious reading to those two sermons, “Sin in Believers,” and “Repentance of Believers.”

“But is there no help? Is there no deliverance, no salvation from this inbred enemy?” Surely there is: else many great and precious promises must fall to the ground. “I will sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye *shall be clean*: from *all your filthiness*, and from *all your idols* will I cleanse you.” “I will circumcise thy heart,” (from all sin,) “to love the Lord thy God with *all thy heart*, and with *all thy soul*.” This I term *sanctification*, (which is both an instantaneous and a gradual work,) or *perfection*, the being *perfected in love*, filled with love, which still admits of a thousand degrees. But I have no time to throw away in contending for *words*: especially where *the thing* is allowed. And you allow the whole thing which I contend for; an *entire* deliverance from sin, a recovery of the *whole* image of God, the loving God with *all our heart*, soul, and strength. And you believe God is *able* to give you this: yea, to give it you in an instant. You trust, *he will*. O hold fast this also! This blessed *hope*, which he has wrought in your heart! And with all zeal and diligence, confirm the brethren, 1. In holding fast that whereto they have attained; namely, the remission of all their sins, by faith in a bleeding Lord. 2. In expecting a second change, whereby they shall be saved from all sin and *perfected in love*.

If they like to call this “receiving the Holy Ghost,” they may; only the phrase, in that sense, is not scriptural, and not quite proper; for they all “received the Holy Ghost, when they were justified. God then “sent forth the Spirit of his Son into their hearts, crying Abba, Father.”

O Joseph, keep close to the Bible, both as to sentiment and expression! Then there will never be any material difference between you and,  
Your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

This morning I have calmly and coolly read over my letter to L. H. I still believe every line of it is true. And I am assured I spoke the truth in love. It is great pity, any who wish her well, should skin over the wounds which are there searched. As long as she resents that office of true esteem, her grace can be but small!

## LETTER IX.

DEAR JOSEPH,

London, Jan. 21, 1771.

IT was of their own mere motion, that the students, when I was in Wales, desired me to come and spend a little time with them. I

had no thought or desire so to do, having work enough upon my hands. When Mr. Ireland asked me, "Why I did not go thither in August," I answered, "Because my lady had written to me to the contrary." But I do not remember, that I showed him her letter: I believe I did not.

I know not why you should not keep the rest of your terms at Oxford, and take a Bachelor's degree. Only if you should be pressed in spirit, to give yourself up to the work of God sooner, I think you must follow your own conscience. Write quite freely to,

Dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER X.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, Dec. 11, 1772.*

MR. HILL, however, leaves me a little time to take breath, and I have some hope, will not renew the combat. But I doubt he is too warm to be convinced. He "sets his judgment by his passion."

It is a shame for any Methodist preacher to confine himself to one place. We are debtors to all the world. We are called to warn every one, to exhort every one, if by any means we may save some.

I love prayer-meetings, and wish they were set up in every corner of the town. But I doubt whether it would be well to drop any of the times of preaching. Three-and-thirty years, they have had at least as much preaching at Bristol, as at Newcastle. And the congregations are far larger than they were ten or twenty years ago. But I should not object to the transferring Wednesday night's preaching to eight on Sunday morning.

I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XI.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, March 2, 1773.*

CERTAINLY you cannot stir unless you are clearly satisfied of your call from God.\* An impression on the mind of another man, is no rule of action to *you*. The reasons you give on the other side are weighty, and will not easily be answered. At present you do seem to be in your place; and your labour will not be in vain. If you could transfer a night in a week, from Newcastle to some new place, I think it might do well.

I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

We subjoin a Letter from Mr. Charles Wesley to Mr. Benson.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*The Foundry, March 6, 1773.*

I HAVE barely time to say, your own reasons for *not yet going* to America, and Christopher Hopper's, are unanswerable. Mr. F. is only the captain's echo. The captain's impressions are no more

\* Mr. Wesley here refers to a pressing invitation which Mr. B. had received to visit America.

(or very little more) to be depended on, than George Bell's. He is an inexperienced, honest, zealous, loving enthusiast. God only knows whether you may not be called to America by and by. At present your call is not clear. Therefore stand still; and send our friends a loving, explicit refusal.

I do not want a heart to visit my very dear friends at Newcastle, but a *body*. If to my willing mind, I had health and strength, still more is wanted; namely, a faithful man to attend me, and money to defray our expenses. When all these things meet, you may meet me once more in the North.

I have left my family, all but Charles, at Bristol. My old love to brother Hopper, Cownley, sister Proctor, and all my Newcastle friends. Stir them up to pray for me. I shall not need your prayers much longer.

Ἐγγαστο ἐν χριστῷ.\*

## LETTER XII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Lewisham, July 31, 1773.*

I AM glad you have preached so much abroad; this will every where do most execution. Some time since I promised you to Billy Thompson, for his fellow-labourer the ensuing year: and you will have no cause to repent of it, for his heart (as well as your's) is in the work. Mr. Hopper desires to spend another year in the Newcastle circuit. I refer it to him, whether it would not suffice, to have preaching at Newcastle five nights in the week?

"God has made practical divinity necessary, and the Devil, controversial." Sometimes we *must* write and preach controversially: but the less, the better. I think we have few, if any of our travelling preachers, that *love* controversy. But there will always be men, *ὡς δὲ ἐπισημασθέντες*.† Antinomians and Calvinists in particular. By our long silence, we have done much hurt, both to them and the cause of God. I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XIII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Bristol, Sept. 10, 1773.*

IF Mr. Thompson consents, all is well. The more you preach abroad, both in England and Scotland, the better. Only take care, not to do more than you can do: not to go beyond your strength. And keep to the plain, old Methodist doctrine, laid down in the Minutes of the conference. At Trevecka you were a little warped from this; but it was a right hand error. You will be buried in Scotland, if you sell your mare and sit still. Keep her, and ride continually. *Contrive* (you and Mr. Thompson) how this may be. Sit not still, at the peril of your soul and body! Mr. F. *ought* to have received their thanks. Dear Joseph, adieu! J. WESLEY.

Do all you can for poor Scotland. And write how things are there.

\* Farewell in Christ.

† Whose mouths it is necessary to stop.

## LETTER XIV.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, Oct. 23, 1773.*

I WISH every one of our preachers, who goes to Scotland, were of the same mind with you. We are not called to sit still in one place: it is neither for the health of our souls nor bodies. Billy Thompson never satisfied me on this head, not in the least degree. I say still, we will have travelling preachers in Scotland, or none. *The thing* is fixed: *the manner* of effecting it is to be considered. Now, set your wit to this: find out the *το παρ*. How shall this matter be accomplished? You did not do well in selling your horse, and thereby laying another bar in the way. Though I am (by the exquisite negligence of my late book-keeper) a thousand pounds worse than nothing, I would have spared a few pounds to have eased that burden. However, you must do as you can. Our preachers shall either travel there, as in England, or else stay in England.

I am, dear Joseph, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY

## LETTER XV.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, Jan. 8, 1774.*

MANY persons are in danger of reading too little: you are in danger of reading too much. Wherever you are, take up your cross, and visit *all the society* from house to house. Do this according to Mr. Baxter's plan, laid down in the Minutes of the conference. The fruit which will ensue, (perhaps in a short time,) will abundantly reward your labour. Fruit also we shall have, even in those who have no outward connexion with us.

I am glad you "press all believers" to aspire after the full liberty of the children of God: They must not give up their faith, in order to do this: herein you formerly seemed to be in some mistake. Let them go on from faith to faith, from weak faith, to that strong faith, which not only *conquers*, but *casts out* sin. Meantime it is certain, many call themselves believers, who do not even conquer sin. Who are strangers to the whole inward kingdom of God, and void of the whole *fruit* of the Spirit.

We must not go on at Dunbar *in this manner*. Rather we must quit the place. For who will pay that debt?

On Tuesday I was under the surgeon's hands, but am now (blessed be God) quite recovered.

I am, dear Joseph, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XVI.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, March 4, 1774.*

I AM glad you have been at Greenock, and think it highly expedient that you should follow the blow. Meantime let brother Broadbent supply Glasgow, and Billy Thompson, Edinburgh. I think with you, that it is no great matter if Dunbar be left for a season. When you have been three or four weeks at Greenock and

Port-Glasgow, brother Broadbent should change with you. But I agree with you, the harvest cannot be large, till we can preach abroad.

Before I settled my plan, that thought occurred, "It would be better to go a little later into Scotland." Accordingly, I have contrived not to be at Glasgow till Friday, the 6th of May, coming by way of Edinburgh. Probably it may then be practicable to take the field. I incline to think it will be of use for you, to spend another year in that circuit.

I am, dear Joseph,

Your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Sheffield, July 26, 1774.*

CERTAINLY an account of the societies in the Edinburgh circuit, will be expected from you at the conference. I will then propose the case of Greenock. I am glad you have sent brother Ferguson the Appeals. I believe Billy Eels might come to you directly, if you wrote to him, and to Joseph Cowly. At length I hope good may be done in Scotland, and I incline to prefer your scheme to Dr. H.'s. Three preachers may do better than two, provided they change regularly, according to the plan you lay down. I know not but you must make a private subscription, and wire over the cupola. "Be zealous and humble; but never be still!"

Dear Joseph, adieu! J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVIII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Bristol, August 8, 1774.*

I JUST snatch time to write two or three lines. Consider the thing thoroughly, and then send me word of the exact circuit where in three preachers may follow one another. If this be steadily done, I am not without hope, that before the next conference, there will be such a flame kindled, as has not been seen for some years in poor Scotland.

I was sorry to find, that Mr. P was almost discouraged from proceeding in his little labour of love. I commend you, for dealing tenderly with him. Certainly he is an honest man: and undoubtedly he is useful in his little way. Pray what becomes of Mrs. L.? Is she gaining or losing ground? O Joseph, fight through, and conquer all! I am, your affectionate Friend and Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XIX.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Bristol, Sept. 18, 1774.*

YOUR last proposal is incomparably the best: I approve of it entirely. Without consulting any at Dunbar, (which would only puzzle the cause) immediately begin to put it in execution. Let the preacher go to Ormiston on Wednesday, Dunbar on Thursday, and return to Edinburgh, by Lenton, on Friday, every week. At pre-

sent we sate them with preaching." It will be best to *keep* a horse : then both your health and your soul will prosper.

If William Eels crawls in at last, send him directly to Aberdeen. And you should be preparing to change with John Bredin.

I wish Dr. Hamilton would send me the receipt for extracting the opiate from sow-thistles, and give me some account of its effects.

I am, dear Joseph,

Your ever affectionate Friend and Brother, J. WESLEY.

P. S. I left ninety members in the society : I hope there are not fewer now.

### LETTER XX.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, Oct. 16, 1774.*

I HAVE written to Dr. Hamilton, that brother Eels must go to Aberdeen, and Edinburgh and Dunbar must be supplied by one preacher. They should have thought of preaching in the church-yard before. While I live, itinerant preachers shall be itinerants : I mean, if they choose to remain in connexion with *us*.

The society in Greenock are entirely at their own disposal : they may either have a preacher between them and Glasgow, or none at all. But more than one between them, they cannot have. I have too much regard both for the bodies and souls of our preachers, to let them be confined to one place any more. I hope J. B. will punctually observe your direction, spending either three days, or a week, at each place alternately. I have weighed the matter, and will serve the Scots as we do the English, or leave them. I wish you would write a letter to John Campbell, and another to R. Mackie, and argue the case with them. If J. B. does not go to Greenock, let him (or his successor) spend half his time at Dunbar : then a preacher may be constantly at Edinburgh. But give me only six days in a fortnight there, and I will visit *all the society* from house to house.

I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XXI.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Near London, Feb. 22, 1776.*

WE must threaten no longer, but perform. In November last, I told the London society, "Our rule is, to meet a class *once a week* ; not once in two or three. I now give you warning : I will give tickets to none in February, but those that *have done this*." I have stood to my word. Go *you* and do likewise, wherever you visit the classes. Begin, if need be, at Newcastle, and go on at Sunderland. *Promises to meet*, are now out of date. Those that *have not met* seven times in the quarter, exclude. Read their names in the society : and inform them all, "you will the next quarter exclude all that *have not met* twelve times : " that is, unless they were hindered by distance, sickness, or by some unavoidable business.

And I pray, without fear or favour, remove the leaders, whether

of classes or bands, who do not watch over the souls committed to their care, "as those that must give account." I am, dear Joseph,  
Your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Chatham, Nov. 26, 1776.*

IF any leader oppose, you see your remedy; put another in his place. Nay, if he does not join heart and hand; for "he that gathereth not with you, scattereth." The "Word to a Smuggler" is plain and home, and has done much good in these parts.

Taking opium is full as bad as taking drams. It equally hurts the understanding, and is, if possible, more pernicious to the health, than even rum or brandy. None should touch it, if they have the least regard either for their souls or bodies.

I really think you are in the right. It is better to help R. W where he is, than to burden the Dales with an additional weight. But then what shall we do? We have no supernumerary preachers. See if you can do any thing with Edward Jackson.

I am, dear Joseph, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXIII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Shoreham, July 31, 1776.*

I THINK of Joseph Fothergill and just as you do, and shall willingly propose him at the conference. I believe he has considerable gifts, and is truly alive to God. You are in the right. We must beware of distressing the poor. Our substantial brethren are well able to bear the burden. I shall write a letter for each assistant before the conference is over. If *they* are in earnest, all will go well.

If the asserters of the decrees are quiet and peaceable, troubling no one with their opinions, reason is that we should bear with them. But if they will not be quiet, if they trouble others, we cannot keep them. Do all you can for God! I am, dear Joseph,

Your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

Pray tell Joseph Thompson, I have set him down for Leeds.

## LETTER XXIV.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*October 22, 1776.*

I APPREHEND Joseph Fothergill was not designedly omitted. I take him to be a good man, and a good preacher.

You did right in excluding from our society so notorious an offender. And you have now a providential call, to stand in the gap between the living and the dead. Fear nothing. Begin in the name of God, and go through with the work. If only six will promise you to sin no more, leave only six in the society. But my belief is, a hundred and fifty are now clear of blame; and if you are steady, a hundred more will amend. You must, at all events, tear up this evil by the roots. The "Word to a Smuggler" should be read and dis-

persed. And secure your fellow-labourers, that you may all speak one thing. Go on, for God is with you ! I am, dear Joseph,  
Your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXV

DEAR JOSEPH, *London, Nov. 7, 1776.*

NOT only the assistant, but every preacher is concerned to see all our rules observed. I desire brother Rhodes will give no tickets, either to those who have not constantly met their classes, or to any that do not solemnly promise, to deal in stolen goods no more. He and you together may put a stop to this crying sin.

I wish Edward Jackson would go into the Dales. But here is a great difficulty. Robert Wilkinson, you know, is married : therefore he cannot live (though he may starve) in the Dundee circuit. I designed that he and brother Lumley should change places. But what can be done now ? Consider the matter, and advise,

Dear Joseph, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXVI.

DEAR JOSEPH, *Near London, Dec. 24, 1776.*

THE total suppression of that vile practice, will doubtless be a difficult task. But it is worth all the labour ; yea, though you should be obliged to cut off some of our oldest members. For you must absolutely go through with your work : leave neither root nor branch. Else the reformation will be but for a season, and then the evil will sprout up again.

The case of John Reed is one of the most remarkable, which has fallen under my notice. From the beginning it was my judgment, that the disorder was more than natural. I wish he would take opportunities of writing down as many particulars as he can recollect : and send me as circumstantial an account as he can. You may much assist him herein. I am, dear Joseph,

Your's, affectionately, JOHN WESLEY

## LETTER XXVII.

DEAR JOSEPH, *London, Jan. 11, 1777.*

THE matter is short. I require *you* to meet the societies of Sunderland and Shields next quarter, and to give no tickets to any person who will not promise, neither to buy nor sell uncustomed goods any more. I am sorry ——— did not save you the trouble : I thought he had been another man.

Pray worry John Reed, till he writes a circumstantial account. It must be done while things are fresh in his memory ; otherwise we shall lose many particulars, which ought not to be forgotten.

They have made good haste, to finish the preaching-house at Sheep-hill already ; I thought it had hardly been begun.

I have just received two letters from New-York ; one of them from

George Robinson, late of Newcastle. They inform me, that all the Methodists there, were firm for the government, and on that account, persecuted by the rebels, only not to the death. That the preachers are still threatened, but not stopped; and the work of God increases much in Maryland and Virginia.

I am, dear Joseph, your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXVIII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Worcester, July 8, 1777.*

WHAT you say is unquestionably right. Why then should it not immediately be put in execution? Let Berwick directly be taken into the Newcastle circuit, and Dunbar be supplied, once a fortnight, from Edinburgh. Pray write this instantly to brother M'Nab, and admit of no excuse. If by this means there is a preacher to spare, let him step over as soon as possible from Portpatrick, and supply the place of that good young man, John Harrison, in the Lisburn circuit. Mr. Smythe calls aloud for help: he is zealous and active, but is quite overborne. I have set down you with brother Hopper, in the Manchester circuit, and am,

Dear Joseph,  
Your's, affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXIX.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Whitney, Oct. 22, 1777.*

I DO not wonder you do not conceive what Grotius meant by that odd sentence, for I doubt whether he conceived it himself. I can translate it, but I cannot understand it: it is well if any one can. "Every thing exists necessarily, or of itself; not as it is considered in a general view, but as it actually exists. But individual things" (only) "exist actually." There is a good English translation of this book, published some years since by Dr. John Clark, Dean of Sarum. He was (I think younger) brother to Dr. Samuel Clark.

I have no objection to your printing a thousand or two of the account of Mrs. Hutton's death. It may be of use for you to visit Manchester again, when opportunity serves. Only do every thing in full concurrence with the assistant.

I am, dear Joseph, your's affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXX.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, Dec. 8, 1777.*

UNDOUBTEDLY Bishop Newton's book on the Prophecies is well written. And he is certainly a man of sense, and of considerable learning. This he has shown in what he writes on the Revelation. But with regard to the passage you mention, I cannot agree with him at all. I believe the Romish Antichrist is already so fallen, that he will not again lift up his head in any considerable de-

gree. The Bishop of Rome has little more power now, than any other of the Italian princes. I therefore concur with you in believing, his tyranny is past, never to return.

But there is no comparison, either as to sense, learning, or piety, between Bishop Newton and Bengelius. The former is a mere child to the latter. I advise you to give another serious and careful reading, to that Extract from his Comment on the Revelation, which concludes the Notes. There you have one uniform consistent, far beyond any I ever saw. And I verily believe, the more deeply you consider it, the more you will admire it.

Does any one deny, that a kyte is bigger than a lark? Or that Ogilvie has written a *larger* book than Virgil? And certainly there are *larger* magazines than ours. But it does not follow, that they are better. Ours is reduced to half the price, and will contain forty-eight pages, which is the usual number for sixpence.

We are called to propagate Bible religion through the land; that is, *faith working by love*: holy tempers and holy lives. Let us do it with our might!

I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY

### LETTER XXXI.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, Dec. 26, 1780.*

YOU have great reason to be thankful to God; for he has dealt mercifully with you. And as long as you improve these outward blessings to the end for which they were given, so long they will be continued. But you have great need to be jealous over yourself, and to keep your heart with all diligence. You need all the power of God to preserve you, from loving the creature more than the Creator.

Dr. Edwards is a dry, displeasing writer. And probably his main design was, to justify God in damning all the heathens, as not having a spark of virtue among them. Peace be with you and your's!

I am, your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XXXII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Manchester, April 2, 1781.*

ALTHOUGH our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that we walk in simplicity and godly sincerity, this no way contradicts, "God forbid that we should glory, save in the cross of Christ." In all, and after all,

"His passion alone The foundation we own,  
And pardon we claim,  
And eternal redemption in Jesus's name."

How admirably pardon and holiness are comprised in that one word, *grace*! Mercy and strength! So are our justification and sanctification woven together.

I hope your sermons will do good. But why do not you publish your poems? I think you can make verses as fast as John Murlin: yea, indeed, if need were, stans pede in uno. I commend sister Benson for her care of her mother. One can never do too much for a parent. I am, dear Joseph, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

LETTER XXXIII.

DEAR JOSEPH,

Warrington, May 21, 1781.

AS I have not leisure myself, I am exceeding glad that you have entered into the lists with Mr. A. And I am in hopes you will "reply at large," to all his cavils and objections. If he cites any thing from me, you should answer simply, "I never undertook to defend every sentiment of Mr. W's. He does not expect or desire it. He wishes me and every man, to think *for himself*."

If you remember, I do not insist on the term *impression*. I say again, I will thank any one that will find a better; be it *discovery*, *manifestation*, *deep sense*, or whatever it may. That *some consciousness* of our being in favour with God, is joined with Christian faith, I cannot doubt: but it is not the *essence* of it. A consciousness of pardon cannot be the *condition* of pardon.

But I am still more glad, that you have some thoughts of answering that pernicious book of poor Mr. Madan. Analyze it first with the postscript: then overturn it thoroughly from the beginning to the end. You may steer between the extremes of too much roughness and too much smoothness. And see that you are plain enough for women and pretty gentlemen. I allow you a hundred pages.

I am, dear Joseph,

Your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

TO MRS. BENSON.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Warrington, May 21, 1781.

AS you are now one of my family, and indeed by a nearer tie than when you were only a member of the Society, I rejoice in doing you any service, or giving you any satisfaction that I can. I therefore take the first opportunity of acquainting you, that I will appoint Mr. Benson for Leeds the ensuing year. I trust he will be more useful there than ever, and I doubt not but you will strengthen his hands in God. If you desire any thing of me that is in my power, you may be assured it will not be refused by,

My dear Sister, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

P. S. I am now going to Whitehaven.

## LETTER XXXIV.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*London, Feb. 22, 1782.*

WHO Mr. Tyndall is, I know not; but he is just as sound a divine as Mr. Madan. I regard no authorities but those of the Antinicensian Fathers: nor any of them in opposition to Scripture. And I totally deny that (supposed) matter of fact, That polygamy was allowed among the primitive Christians: Or, that the converts "who had many wives, were not required to put any of them away." I have not yet time to read over the MSS.; when I do, I must read it all in a breath.

Having talked with my friends, I judge it will be expedient to visit the North this year. I expect to be at Manchester on Wednesday, the 10th of April; and in Yorkshire in the beginning of May.

I have no objection to your printing a few copies of those two sermons, to oblige your friends in the neighbourhood. I doubt, we are not explicit enough, in speaking on full sanctification, either in public or private. I am, with kind love to sister Benson,

Dear Joseph, Your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXXV.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Near London, Aug. 3, 1782.*

DO not you know, that *all* the Preachers cannot leave a circuit at once? Therefore, if *you* left it, brother Hopper could not. Perhaps, likewise, I can depend upon *your* judgment, more than that of another man.

Two or three years ago, when the kingdom was in imminent danger, I made an offer to the Government of raising some men. The Secretary of War, (by the King's order) wrote me word, "That it was not necessary: but if ever it should be necessary, His Majesty would let me know." I never renewed the offer, and never intended it. But Captain Webb, without my knowing any thing of the matter, went to Col. B. the new Secretary of War, and renewed that offer. The Colonel (I verily believe to avoid his importunity) asked him, "How many men we could raise?" But the Colonel is out of place. So the thing is at end.

I read over both the sermons, but I did not see any thing materially wrong in either. I am, with love to sister Benson,

Your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

We will consider what you propose.

## LETTER XXXVI.

DEAR JOSEPH,

*Bristol, Sept. 17, 1788.*

I AM glad you have determined to correct Mr. Fletcher's Letters. You will observe, that it is "dangerous on such subjects to depart from Scripture, either as to language or sentiment;" and I

believe, that "most of the controversies which have disturbed the church, have arisen from people's wanting to be wise above what is written, not contented with what God has plainly revealed there." What have you or I to do with that "*difficulty*?" I dare not, will not *reason* about it for a moment. I believe just what is revealed, and no more: but I do not pretend to *account* for it, or to solve the difficulties that may attend it. Let angels do this, if they can: but I think they cannot. I think even these

"Would find no end, in wand'ring mazes lost."

Some years since, I read about fifty pages of Dr. Watts's ingenious treatise upon the Glorified Humanity of Christ. But it so confounded my intellects, and plunged me into such unprofitable *reasonings*, yea, dangerous ones, that I would not have read it through for five hundred pounds. It led him into Arianism. Take care that similar tracts, (all of which I abhor,) have not the same effect upon you.

I like your thoughts upon Materialism, as I doubt not I should those on the separate existence of the soul. It will be best to print at Hull or York, if you can print almost as cheap, and have as good paper. Should there not be a thousand copies? Then you will reserve a hundred of them for yourself. I am, with love to sister Benson,

Your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY,

---

## LETTERS TO MISS COOKE,

*Now Mrs. Clarke.*

### LETTER I.

*London, Oct. 30, 1785.*

MY dear Miss Cooke leans to the right-hand error. It is safer to think too little, than too much of yourself. I blame none for not believing he is in the favour of God, till he is in a manner constrained to believe it. But laying all circumstances together, I can make no doubt of your having a measure of faith. Many years ago, when one was describing the glorious privilege of a believer, I cried out, "If this be so, I have no faith." He replied, "*Habes fidem sed exiguam*; you have faith, but it is weak." The very same thing I say to you, my dear friend. You have faith, but it is only as a grain of mustard-seed. Hold fast what you have, and ask for what you want. There is an irreconcilable variability in the operations of the Holy Spirit on the souls of men; more especially as to the manner of justification. Many find *Him* rushing upon them like a torrent, while they experience

"The overwhelming power of saving grace."

This has been the experience of many; perhaps of more, in this late

visitation, than in any other age since the times of the Apostles. But in others he works in a very different way.

“ He deigns his influence to infuse,  
Sweet, refreshing, as the violet dews.”

It has pleased him to work the latter way in you, from the beginning : and, it is not improbable, he will continue (as *he* has begun) to work in a gentle and almost imperceptible manner. Let him take his own way. He is wiser than *you*. He will do all things well. Do not reason against him, but let the prayer of your heart be,

“ Mould as thou wilt thy passive clay.”

I commit you and your dear sisters to his tender care, and am,  
My dear friend, most affectionately your's,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Bristol, Sept. 24, 1785.*

IT is highly probable, my letter to you was intercepted, by some person of the same name ; who, having opened it, (likely by a mistake,) was afterwards ashamed to send it you. However, as you have now favoured me with better information, I hope there will be no such mistake for the time to come. But I beg, when you write to me hereafter, do not write as to a stranger, but a friend. Be not afraid of me, because I have lived so much longer than you. I assume nothing upon that account, but wish to stand upon even ground with you : and to converse without either disguise or reserve. I love you all three, and not a little ; especially since your sisters spoke so freely to me ; yet I do not say in the same degree. There is a mildness and sweetness in *your* spirit, such as I wish to find in one, that is more to me than a common friend. Not that I impute this to nature ; whatever is truly amiable, is not of nature, but from a higher principle. Cultivate this, my dear friend, to the uttermost. Still learn of him, who was meek and lowly in heart. O what a blessing it is to be little, and mean, and vile in our own eyes. You are an amiable woman, it is true, but still you are a sinner, born to die ! You are an immortal spirit come forth from God, and speedily returning to him. You know well that one thing, and one thing only, is needful for you upon earth : To ensure a better portion—to recover the favour and image of God. The former, by his grace, you have recovered : you have tasted of the love of God. See that you do not cast it away. See that you hold fast the beginning of your confidence steadfast unto the end ! And how soon may you be made a partaker of sanctification ! And not only by a slow and insensible growth in grace, but by the power of the Highest overshadowing you in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, so as utterly to abolish sin, and to renew you in his whole image ! If you are simple of heart, if you are willing to receive the heavenly gift, as a little child, without reasoning, why may you not receive it *now* ? He is nigh that sanctifieth, he is with you, he is knocking at the door of your heart !

“Come in, my Lord, come in,  
And seize her for thine own!”

This is the wish of,                      My dear Friend,  
Your’s, in tender affection,

J. WESLEY

### LETTER III.

*London, Dec. 14, 1785.*

I LOVE to see the handwriting of my dear Miss Cooke, even before I open the letter. The thinking of you gives me very sensible pleasure, ever since you spoke so freely to me. There is a remedy for the evil of which you complain; unprofitable reasonings; and I do not know whether there is any other. It is the peace of God. This will not only keep your *heart*, your affections, and passions, as a garrison keeps a city; but your *mind* likewise; all the workings and all the wanderings of your imagination. And this is promised; “Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find.”

“Though it seem to tarry long,  
True and faithful is his word.”

A small measure of it you have frequently found; which may encourage you to look for the fulness. But if you were to give scope to your reasonings, there would be no end: the farther you went, the more you would be entangled; so true it is, that to our weak apprehension

“The ways of heaven are dark and intricate,  
Puzzled with mazes, and perplex’d with error.”

But that peace will silence all our hard thoughts of God, and give us in patience to possess our souls. I believe at the time that any first receive the peace of God, a degree of holy boldness is connected with it: and that all persons, when they are newly justified, are called to bear witness to the truth. Those who use the grace, which is then freely given to them of God, will not only have the continuance of it, but a large increase; for “unto him that hath,” (that is, useth what he hath,) “shall be given, and he shall have more abundantly.” We shall grow in boldness the more, the more we use it; and it is by the same method, added to prayer, that we are to recover any thing we have lost. Do what in you lies, and he will do the rest. My best service attends Mr. L. who I hope will be holier and happier by means of his late union. He certainly will, if Mrs. L. and he provoke one another to love and to good works. I do not despair of having the pleasure to wait on them at the Devizes. My best wishes wait likewise on Miss S. I hope you two are one, Indeed I am,

My dear Miss Cooke, your’s, in tender affection,    J. WESLEY.

VOL. 10.—M m

## LETTER IV.

*Bath, Sept. 9, 1786.*

IT gives me much satisfaction, my dear friend, to observe you are happier than when you wrote last. I do not doubt, but you have, at some times, a rich foretaste of the state which your soul pants after. And even

“These wand’ring gleams of light,  
And gentle ardours from above,  
Have made you sit, like seraph bright,  
Some moments on a throne of love.”

But you know you are not to rest here; this is but a drop out of the ocean. Only this has been known again and again, that one of those happy moments has been the prelude of pure love. It has opened into the full liberty of the children of God. Who knows but this may be your happy experience! But the next time your soul is so caught up, he that loves you may touch your nature clean, and so take you into the holiest, that

“You may never leave the skies,  
Never stoop to earth again.”

I am now intent upon my own work, finishing the life of Mr. Fletcher; this requires all the time I have to spare: so that as far as it is possible, I must, for two or three months, shut myself up. Two weeks I give to Bristol: after that time, I return to London. I cannot therefore have the happiness of seeing Trowbridge this autumn. But might I not see *you*, or your sisters at Bristol? If I am invisible to others, I would not be so to *you*. You may always command every thing that is in the power of,

My very dear Friend, your’s, in life and in death,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER V

*London, Dec. 12, 1786.*

MY DEAR SISTER and FRIEND,

ONCE or twice I have been a little out of order this autumn; but it was only for a day or two at a time. In general, my health has been better for these last ten years, than it ever was for ten years together since I was born. Ever since that good fever which I had in the north of Ireland, I have had, as it were, a new constitution. All my pains and aches have forsaken me, and I am a stranger even to weariness of any kind. This is the Lord’s doing, and it may well be marvellous in all our eyes. You oblige me much, (and so do your very dear sisters,) by being so solicitous about my health; I take it as a mark of your sincere affection. Meantime I wonder at you! I am almost ashamed that you should love me so well. It is plain how little you know me.

I am glad to find that the hunger and thirst after righteousness, which God has given you, does not abate. His providence cannot fail. You shall be filled, yea, satisfied therewith. But when you express it, not many will understand you, except Mrs. B. and our dear Betsy Johnson. However, do not fail to encourage all the

believers about you, to press on to this mark. Some will gladly receive the word of exhortation, and surely a few witnesses will be raised up. I cannot tell you how much I am your's,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VI.

*Macclesfield, March 31, 1787.*

NOW you give me a proof, my dear Miss Cooke, that you have not forgotten me. But considering that I am usually obliged to write in haste, I often doubt whether my correspondence is worth having.

When the witness and the fruit of the Spirit meet together, there can be no stronger proof that we are of God. But still you may relapse into doubts, if you do not steadily watch against evil reasonings; and were you to substitute the deductions of reason, for the witness of the Spirit, you never would be established. That all trials are for good, you cannot always see, (at least for the present;) but you may always believe. You have doubtless reason to be thankful to God, that you feel love in your heart. Nay, indeed, thankfulness, gratitude, and love, for benefits received, are almost, if not quite the same. Accordingly, in this world, (whatever be the case in the next,) we love *him*, because he hath first loved *us*. This love is undoubtedly the spring of all inward and outward obedience. But we delight to do what he has commanded, and for that very reason, because he has commanded it. So,

"Obedience is our pure delight,  
To do the pleasure of our Lord."

I was a good deal refreshed with the company of you and your dear sisters, when we last met. The more so, because I trust you are all going forward in the good way. Peace be multiplied unto you.

My dear Friend adieu!

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Dec. 21, 1787.*

YOU have unspeakable reason to praise God for his late manifestations to you. And you will generally observe, that large consolations are preceded by deep exercises of soul. And we all have reason to praise him, for the many tokens we see of his approaching kingdom. It is plain Satan, the murderer and the deceiver of mankind, is in a great measure bound already: he is not now permitted to deceive the nations, as in the past ages. And even in the Romish countries scarce any are now called to resist unto blood. If two or three of you continue instant in prayer, the work will revive at Trowbridge also. When you are met together, boldly lay hold on the promise: His word will speak, and will not lie! Peace be with all your spirits. I am, my dear Sister, your's, most affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Dumfries, June 1, 1790.*

THE great question is, What can be done for Adam Clarke? Now will you save his life? Look round; consider if there be any circuit where he can have much rest, and little work? Or shall he and you spend September in my rooms at Kingswood, on condition that he shall preach but twice a week, and ride to the Hot Wells every day? I think he must do this, or die. And I do not want him (neither do you) to run away from us in haste. You need not be told, that this will be attended with some expense: if it be, we can make it easy. I am apt to think this will be the best way. In the mean time, let him do as much as he can, and no more. It is probable I shall stay with you a little longer, as my strength does not much decline. I travelled yesterday nearly eighty miles, and preached in the evening, without any pain. The Lord does what pleases him. Peace be with all your spirits.

I am, my dear Sister, yours, most affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTERS TO MR. A. CLARKE.

## LETTER I.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Feb. 3, 1786.*

YOU do well in insisting upon full and present salvation, whether men will hear or forbear. As also in preaching abroad, (when the weather permits,) and recommending fasting, both by precept and example. But you need not wonder that all these are opposed, not only by formalists, but by half-Methodists. You should not forget French, or any thing you have learned. I do not know whether I have read the book you speak of: you may send your translation at your leisure. Be all in earnest, and you shall see greater things than these.

I am, my dear Adam, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Feb. 21, 1786.*

I LIKE the extract from Mr. Brittain's well. Probably it may have a place in the Magazine. It is well you have broken into Stonehouse. Now enlarge your borders, while I am with you: probably you will have rougher weather when I am gone. You may come to the Conference: you and your fellow-labourers should spend some time in consulting together, how you may enlarge your borders. This mild weather is almost as good as summer: I preached abroad last Monday. O let us snatch every means of redeeming the time! Eternity is at hand!

I am, dear Adam, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.  
In a few days I shall set out for Bristol.

## LETTER III.

DEAR ADAM,

*Near London, Jan. 3, 1787.*

YOU see none that trust in him, are confounded. When God is for us, who can be against us? Discipline is the great want in Guernsey; without which, the work of God cannot prosper. You did well to set upon it without delay, and to be as exact as possible. It is a true saying, "the soul and the body make the man, and the spirit and discipline make a Christian." We heard of a remarkable awakening in some part of the island. I hope those who were then awakened, are not all fallen asleep again. Preaching in the morning, is one excellent means of keeping their souls awake. If you desire to have any health, you must never pass one day without walking, at least, an hour: and take care not to speak too loud, or too long. Never exceed an hour at a time. Grace be with all your spirits.

I am, dear Adam, your's affectionately, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER IV.

DEAR ADAM,

*Plymouth-Dock, March 3, 1787.*

AFTER staying a few days in Bristol, I am engaged to visit the intermediate Societies between Stroud and Chester. I must then hasten to Dublin, or I shall not have time to go through the four provinces of Ireland. I shall not, therefore, have a day to spare before the Conference. Possibly, after the Conference, I may be able to stay two or three weeks. And if so, I shall pass away to Southampton, in order to spend two or three days at Guernsey, and as many in Jersey. This will we do, if God permit. I am glad you are minded to make a trial at Alderney. If God send you, he will make a way for you. The hearts of all men are in his hands. To his care I commend you, and I am,

My dear Adam, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER V.

DEAR ADAM,

*Birmingham, March 26, 1787.*

YOU have reason to praise God for giving you such favour in the eyes of the poor people of Alderney. And I am in hopes, our brother de Queteville will meet with a blessing in watering the seed which is already sown. But I observe, in the map, the name of another island, not very far from Alderney. Are there none that understand English in the Isle of Sark? If there are, I cannot tell whether you are not a debtor to those poor souls also.

If confinement hurts you, do not submit to it. Spread yourself abroad through all the four islands. But I doubt, *speaking loud* hurts you more, if not *speaking long* too! Beware of this for conscience' sake. Do not offer murder for sacrifice! But before it be too late, take the advice of,

Dear Adam, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VI.

DEAR ADAM,

*Near London, Nov. 9, 1787.*

I AM glad to hear that there is a prospect of a good work in the Isle of Alderney, as well as in the Isles of Jersey and Guernsey. I do not despair of seeing our Jersey, and Guernsey friends once more, if it should please God to prolong my life. I love them dearly; particularly the family at Mount Plaisir, in Guernsey; and I. B. in Jersey. I would take some pains, and undergo some fatigue, were it only to spend two or three days with them. One would wonder, that the prince of this world was so slow, and that he did not sooner fight, lest his kingdom should be delivered up. He will at length do what he can. But if you continue instant in prayer, God will put the bridle in his mouth. It is well we should be convinced that we have need of him. Our safety will we ascribe to him alone.

As the case of sister H. is too singular to be credited without the fullest evidence, I think you would do well, to write the account fair, and have it formally attested by Mrs. J. Mr. A. and three or four more who were eye-witnesses of the whole. You must not believe all you hear, concerning the circumstances of Mr. L.'s marriage. Indeed, you should believe *nothing* about them, till you have told it to themselves. Envy will *invent* a thousand things, and with the most plausible circumstances. (Love them, if it be possible, which can never be done, by harshness; but love will "break the bone.")

The bailiff was talking of building you a house at St. Peter's: I think it may be done by and by. Be exact in every point of discipline. Keep our rules, and they will keep *you*. I am, dear Adam,

Your affectionate Friend and Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VII.

DEAR ADAM,

*Bristol, March 9, 1789.*

IF I should live to see you another Conference, I should be glad to have sister Clarke and you here, rather than at most other places; because I spend more time here myself, than at any other place, except London. I am glad to hear that God has raised up so able a preacher from the islands: but certainly you should spare no pains in teaching him to read and write English. And I do not doubt but if he learned with a single eye, he would be largely strengthened by the blessed God.

It would be a reason for being very wary in choosing names for our children, if that old remark were true,

"That our first tempers from example flow,  
And borrow that example from our names."

Peace be with you and your's. I am, dear Adam,  
Your affectionate Friend and Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER IX.

DEAR ADAM,

*Near Dublin, June 25, 1789.*

YOU send me good news with regard to the islands. Who can hurt us, if God is on our side? Trials may come, but they are all good. I have not been so tried, for many years. Every week, and almost every day, I am bespattered in the public papers. Many are in tears on the occasion, many terribly frightened, and crying out, "O what will the end be?" What will it be? why—Glory to God in the highest, and peace and good will among men. But, meantime, what is to be done? What will be the most effectual means to stem this furious torrent? I have just visited the classes; and find still in the society upwards of a thousand members; and among them, many as deep Christians as any I have met with in Europe. But who is able to watch over these, that they may not be moved from their steadfastness? I know none more proper than Adam Clarke and his wife. Indeed it may seem hard for them to go into a strange land again. Well, you may come to me at Leeds, the latter end of next month: and if you can show me any that are more proper, I will send them instead, that God may be glorified in all that is designed by,

Dear Adam, your affectionate Friend and Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER X.

DEAR ADAM,

*Bristol, Sept. 9, 1790.*

DID not the terrible weather that you had at sea, make you forget your fatigue by land? Come, set one against the other, and you have no great reason to complain of your journey. You will have need of all the courage and prudence which God has given you. Indeed you will want constant supplies of both. Very gently, and very steadily, you should proceed between the rocks on either hand. In the great revival at London, my first difficulty was, to bring in temper those who opposed the work; and my next, to check and regulate the extravagancies of those that promoted it. And this was far the hardest part of the work: for many of them would bear no check at all. But I followed one rule, though with all calmness. You must either bend or break. Meantime, while you act exactly right, expect to be blamed by both sides. I will give you a few directions. 1. See that no prayer-meeting continue later than nine at night, particularly on Sunday. Let the house be emptied before the clock strikes nine. 2. Let there be no exhortation at any prayer-meeting. 3. Beware of jealousy or judging one another. 4. Never think a man is an enemy to the work, because he reproves irregularities. Peace be with you and your's.

I am, dear Adam, your affectionate Friend and Brother,  
J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XI.

DEAR ADAM,

*London, Nov. 26, 1790.*

THE account you send me of the continuance of the great work of God in Jersey, gives me great satisfaction. To *retain* the grace of God, is much more than to gain it: hardly one in three does this. And this should be strongly and explicitly urged on all who have tasted of perfect love. If we can prove that any of our local preachers or leaders either directly or indirectly speak against it, let him be a local preacher or leader no longer. I doubt whether he should continue in the society. Because he that could speak thus in our congregations, cannot be an honest man. I wish Sister Clarke to do what she can, but no more than she can. Betsy Ritchie, Miss Johnson, and M. Clarke are women after my own heart. Last week I had an excellent letter from Mrs. Pawson, (a glorious witness of full salvation,) showing how impossible it is to retain pure love without growing therein.

Wishing every blessing to you and all the family,

I am, dear Adam, your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XII.

DEAR ADAM,

*London, Feb. 9, 1791.*

YOU have great reason to bless God for giving you strength according to your day. He has, indeed, supported you in a wonderful manner under these complicated afflictions. You may well say, I will put my trust in thee as long as I live. I will desire Dr. Whitehead to consider your case, and give you his thoughts upon it. I am not afraid of your doing too little, but too much. I am in imminent danger of this. Do a little at a time, that you may do the more. My love to Sisters Cookman and Boyle: but it is a doubt with me, whether I shall cross the seas any more. What preacher was it who first omitted meeting the Select Society? I wonder it did not destroy the work! You have done right in setting up the Strangers' [friend] Society. It is an excellent institution; I am quite at a loss concerning Mr. Maddan. I know not what to think of him. Send me your best thoughts concerning him. At any rate, write, and send me your thoughts on *Animal Magnetism*. I set my face against this device of Satan. I know its principles full well. With much love to your wife,

I am, my dear Adam,

Your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

[This was the last letter I had from Mr. Wesley; and was written, as the date shows, about three weeks before his death. I was then, apparently, in a dying state at Dublin. A. C.]

## LETTERS TO MR. DOWNES.

## LETTER I.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Nov. 7, 1751.*

YOUR first hinderance is easily removed. Most of the preachers have now all they want. So might you have had, if you had spoken to the stewards, or (in case of their neglect) to me.

As to your second, bodily weakness is a good reason for a *temporary* retirement.

Your third observation, that the people, in general, do not practise what they hear, is a melancholy truth. But what then? Is this a sufficient cause why either you or I should leave them? Why we should give them up to their own heart's lusts, and let them follow their own imaginations? In nowise. Especially, while there are *some* among them whose conversation is worthy of the gospel of Christ.

I grant also, some of the preachers themselves do not adorn the gospel. Therefore we have been constrained to lay some of them aside, and some others are departed of themselves. Let us that remain be doubly in earnest.

You should make an excursion (as to Alnwick) now and then. Is not John Fenwick a proper person to relieve James Tucker at Whitehaven? If you think he is, pray send him thither forthwith. My love to your father and mother.

I entreat you, tell me without reserve, what you think of C. Skelton? Is his heart with us or is it not? Peace be with you. Adieu!

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Nov. 28, 1751.*

I THINK you write to me, as if you did not care to write. I am glad you went to Alnwick. The method you took of talking with each person in the society apart, I hear has been greatly blest to them. I do not see how you could have dealt more favourably with T—G— than you did. If he will leave the society, he must leave it. But if he does, you are clear.

I know not what to do more for poor Jenny Keith. Alas, from what a height is she fallen! What a burning and shining light was she six or seven years ago! But thus it ever was. Many of the first shall be last, and many of the last first.

How are you employed? From five in the morning till nine at night? (For I suppose you want eight hours' sleep?) What becomes of Logic and Latin? Is your soul alive and more athirst for God? I am, your affectionate Friend and Brother.

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Dec. 10, 1751.*

I THANK C Errington for his letter. He should not fail to write, whenever he sees occasion. If you are straitened for preachers, could not you make use of George Atchinson (from Stockton) for a time? I suppose Jas. Tucker also is now with you. He is (I verily believe) honest of heart: but a little too wise in his own eyes. Speak plainly to him, if you should ever hear, that any thing is amiss in his preaching or conversation.

Brother Reeves will be here in a day or two. But he cannot return into the North yet. I wish you would regulate a little at a time, as you find your health would permit. But you must carefully guard against any irregularity, either as to food, sleep, or labour. Your water should be neither *quite warm* (for fear of relaxing the tone of your stomach) nor quite cold. Of all flesh, mutton is the best for you; of all vegetables, turnips, potatoes, and apples (roasted, boiled, or baked,) if you can bear them.

Take care you do not lose any thing you have learned already, whether you learn more or not. You must needs be here (if alive) the first of March, at our Conference. None will be present but those we invite.

How apt is the corruptible body to press down the soul! But all shall work together for good.

Now you can sympathize a little with me. We must expect no thanks from man. Evil for good will be our constant portion here. But it is well. The Lord is at hand. I am,

Your affectionate friend and brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER IV.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Dec. 28, 1751.*

YOUR letter is the picture of your heart. It is honest and upright. I believe a journey to London will do you good. If you could borrow a horse to Leeds, you may take my mare from thence, which is in C. Shent's keeping. As you ride slow, and not many miles a day, I suppose she would bring you hither very well; and when you are here, we can easily find means to supply your other wants.

I think it is ill husbandry, for you to work with your hands, in order to get money: because you may be better employed. But, if you *will* work, come and superintend my printing. I will give you forty pounds for the first year, and it will cost me nothing so to do. Afterwards, if need be, I will increase your salary; and still you may preach, as often as you *can* preach. However, come, whether you print, or preach, or not. Peace be with your spirit.

I am, Your affectionate friend and brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTERS TO MISS FURLY.

*(afterwards Mrs. Downes.)*

## LETTER I.

*Dec. 22, 1756.*

IT is a happy thing, if we can learn obedience by the things which we suffer. Weakness of body, and heaviness of mind will, I trust, have this good effect upon you. The particular lesson which you have now to learn is, To be faithful in (comparatively) little things: particularly in conversation. God hath given you a tongue: why? That you may praise him therewith: that all your conversation may be, for the time to come, *meet to minister grace to the hearers*. Such conversation, and private prayer, exceedingly assist each other. By resolutely persisting (according to your little strength) in all works of piety, and mercy, you are waiting on God in the old scriptural way. And therein he will come and save you. Do not think he is afar off. He is nigh that justifieth, that sanctifieth. Beware you do not thrust him away from you. Rather say,

My heart would now receive thee, Lord!

Come in, my Lord, come in!

Write as often, and as freely, and fully as you please to

Your affectionate brother and servant, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

*Bristol, May 18, 1757.*

THE great point is, to pick out in Bristol (as in all places) such acquaintance as have a deep fear of God, a continual consciousness of his presence, and a strong thirst after his whole image. Such I take most of the leaders of bands to be; and such are many of the poor, in the society. But extremely few of the rich or honourable Methodists are of that number. My dear Sister, I have been in pain for you, on their account. When I talked with you last, you could relish the simplicity of the gospel. You were athirst for all the mind that was in Christ, and wanted to walk just as he walked. O let none persuade you (either by example or advice) to make any, the least, deviation from that good way. Make no abatement: Do not soften the plain, rough gospel. Do not

“Measure back your steps to earth again.”

Be not, either inwardly or outwardly, conformed to this world, but be a Christian altogether.

Health you shall have, if health be best. And he that gives it, will give a blessing with it: An increase of spiritual, as well as of bodily strength: but it is strength to labour, not to sit still. And this strength will either increase or decrease, in the same proportion with your sense of his love. You may lose this sense either, 1. By committing sin; or 2. By omitting duty; or 3. By giving way to pride,

anger, or any other inward sin ; or 4. By not watching unto prayer, by yielding to indolence or spiritual sloth. But it is no more *necessary* that we should ever lose it, than it is necessary we should omit duty or commit sin. Mr. Law, therefore speaking on this head, betrays deep ignorance, both of the Scripture and the inward work of God. You are more liable to receive hurt from his late writings, than from any others which I know. I shall write to Sammy this morning : it would not have been amiss, if you had spoken freely to me concerning him. Why should not you (now you have, in some measure, broke that natural shyness) speak all that is in your heart to,

Dear Miss Furdy,

Your truly affectionate friend and brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER III. -

*Newcastle-upon-Tyne, June 14, 1757.*

YOU have reason to praise God for what he has done, and to expect all that he has promised. Indeed, if it were required, that you should work this in yourself, your impotence might be a bar to your expectations : and so might your unworthiness, if God required any merit of yours in order to his working in you. But what impotence in you can be a bar to the almighty power of God ? And what unworthiness can hinder the free love of God ? His love in and through Christ Jesus ? So that all the promises lie fair before you. The land flowing with milk and honey, the Canaan of his perfect love is open. Believe and enter in !

It is an observation of one of the ancients, That it is far easier not to desire praise than not to be pleased with it. A bare conviction, that it is (generally speaking) deadly poison, may prevent our desiring it. But nothing less than humble love filling the heart, will prevent our being pleased with it. For the sense of honour is as natural to man as the sense of tasting or feeling. But when that which is spiritual is fully come, this which is corruptly natural shall be done away.

Whatever enemies you have, it is enough that you have a friend who is mightier than them all. O let him reign in your heart alone ! Do not spare to speak with all freedom to,

Your affectionate brother and servant, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER IV.

*June 18, 1757.*

I AM the more jealous over you, because I know you are liable to be much influenced by fair words : especially when they are spoken by persons of sense, and in an agreeable manner. And flesh and blood are powerful advocates for conformity to the world, particularly in little things. But, blessed be God, we have an unction from the Holy One, ready to teach us all of things. O, let us attend to this inward teaching, which indeed is always consonant with the

word. Then the word, applied by the Spirit, shall be a light in all our ways, and a lamp in all our paths.

Fight on, and conquer! Change of place, as you observe, is but a little thing. But God has, in some measure, changed your heart, wherein you have great reason to rejoice. And, having received the first fruits of the Spirit, righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost, patiently and earnestly wait for the great change, whereby every root of bitterness may be torn up.

You may profitably converse with even those honourable Christians, if you watch and pray that they do not infect you, 1. With *mystical* notions, which stand in full opposition to plain old Bible divinity: or, 2. With their odd, senseless jargon of a *Catholic Spirit*, whereby they have themselves suffered great loss. The spirit of the world, I think, you are aware of already: and indeed there is danger in every approach to it.

I have heard from both Mrs. Gaussen and Miss Bosanquet. There is a poor, queer, old woman in Bristol (if she is not gone to Paradise) with whom it might do you good to talk. John Jones knows her. Her name is Elizabeth Edgecomb. Peace be with your spirit.

I am, dear Miss Furly,  
Your affectionate Brother and Servant,  
JOHN WESLEY.

#### LETTER V

DEAR MISS FURLY,

*York, July 1, 1757.*

I CANNOT write to you now so fully as I would: but I must send a few lines. Mere temptation certainly does not weaken without yielding to temptation. Yet a heaviness and soreness may remain upon the spirit till there is a fresh discovery of the love of God.

A jealous fear of offending God is good. But what have you to do with any other fear? Let love cast it all out; and, at the same time, make you ten-fold more afraid of doing any thing, small or great, which you cannot offer up as a holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, through Jesus Christ.

All who are without this fear, (and much more all who call it legal, who revile the precious gift of God, and think it an hinderance to "the growing up in Christ") are Antinomians in the inmost soul. Come not into their secret, my dear Miss Furly; but pray for more and more of that "legal spirit," and you will more and more rejoice.

Your affectionate Servant,  
JOHN WESLEY.

#### LETTER VI.

*Tremeneare, Sept. 6, 1757.*

WHY you should be afraid, on account of any thing you said to me, I do not know. Certainly if you had said whatever was in

your heart, it might have been a means of lessening your burthen, and not of increasing it. I believe you have often a desire, and almost a resolution, of saying a great deal to me. But when you come to write or speak, your heart fails. Why should it? Why should you repress yourself? I should not despise, but love you for your openness. It is the fruit and the proof of an honest heart. I know you are weak, I know a little of your particular weaknesses. But so much the more am I concerned for you, as a tender, sickly flower. Away then with this reserve: it answers no end, but to trouble and embarrass you. Tell me, freely and plainly, any difficulty you meet with; any enemy against whom you want help; use me as a friend; as I hope you will use Sister Crosby; and you will find it a blessing to your soul. It will again bring the promise of holiness near: which indeed always seems to be far off, when we give way to any known sin, when we, any way, grieve the Spirit of God. There may be some rare cases, wherein God has determined not to bestow his perfect love, till a little before death: but this, I believe, is uncommon: he does not usually put off the fulfilling of his promises. Seek, and you shall find: seek earnestly, and you shall find speedily. Lift up the hands that hang down: deny yourself: take up your cross; whether that of meeting your class, or any other. Fight on, and victory is at hand!

I am, dear Miss Furly, your affectionate Servant,  
J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VII.

*St. Austle's, Cornwall, Sept. 25, 1757.*

MY DEAR SISTER,

IT is a rule with me, to take nothing ill, that is well meant: therefore you have no need ever to be afraid of my putting an ill construction on any thing you say: for I know you mean only to save your soul. In most genteel, religious people, there is so strange a mixture, that I have seldom much confidence in them. I love the poor: in many of them I find pure, genuine grace, unmixed with paint, folly, and affectation. But I think Mrs. Gausson is upright of heart; and perhaps you may find one or two gentlewomen like her.

It is plain, God sees it best for you, frequently to walk in a thorny path. By this means he aims at destroying your pride of heart, and breaking your stubborn will. You have had large experience, that there is no substantial or lasting happiness but in Him. O be true to yourself, and to your own experience. Do not seek it where it cannot be found. Hew out to yourself no more broken cisterns: but let all the springs of your happiness be in him.

You cannot be too careful to keep out of the way of any thing that has been the occasion of sin. And it is very possible to show civility and moderate respect to any person, without coming in the way of danger. All private conversation may be avoided; and

ought to be, at all hazards. Do not run yourself into temptation ; and God will deliver you from evil.

Nature and the Devil will always oppose private prayer : but it is worth while to break through. That it is a cross, will not hinder its being a blessing : nay, often the more reluctance, the greater blessing.

I think, it was not you who advised poor Sam, to be a *mere regular* clergyman, unconnected with the Methodists. Certainly this is the best way to preferment. But it is not the best way to heaven, or to do good upon earth. When it is too late, the awakened clergy will probably see this.

I am, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Bristol, Oct. 21, 1757.*

GOD will do his own work in his own manner, and exceeding variously in different persons. It matters not, whether it be wrought in a more pleasing or painful manner, so it is wrought : so nature is subdued, pride and self-will dethroned, and the will of God done in us and by us. Therefore trouble not yourself about the experience of others : God knows *you*, and let him do with you as he sees best.

I judge your late distress to be partly the effect of disease, but chiefly preternatural. In the third Journal, there is a case nearly parallel : only the symptoms were more severe. For, in a moment, Lucretia Smith felt such a cloud spread over her, that she could not believe there was a God, or an after-state. You did right to pray, as you could pray : and this is the best method which can be taken, in heaviness or darkness of any kind. Then, if sin be the cause, it will be discovered. But take care, that you do not refuse any help : even rough speakers may be of service. Only spread what they say before the Lord, and he will turn it to good.

I am, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER IX.

*Lewisham, Feb. 9, 1758.*

UNDOUBTEDLY you may arise now, and receive power from on high. You are hindered chiefly by not understanding the *freeness* of the gift of God. You are perpetually seeking for something in yourself, to move him to love and bless you. But it is not to be found there : it is in himself, and in the Son of his love. He did *then* give you a proof of this, in that fresh evidence of pardon ; and he is ready to give it you again to-day : for he is not weary of well-doing. But even after this, you may or you may not use the power which attends that peace. And if you ask for more power, it shall be given you ; for you have an advocate with the Father. O cast yourself upon him : learn more of that lesson,

“Thy salvation to obtain,  
Out of myself I go:  
Freely thou must heal my pain,  
Thy unbought mercy show.”

How much of it may you find in this hour! Look up, and see redemption near!

I am,

Your affectionate Brother and Servant,

J. WESLEY

### LETTER X.

*Dublin, April 13, 1758.*

BUT if you find such a surprising alteration at Bonner's Hall, what need have you of removing to Bristol? Perhaps a lodging there might answer the purpose of health full as well as one at Clifton; and the purpose of religion considerably better. There are few in that neighbourhood from whom I should hope you would receive much profit, except Sarah Ryan. If she abides in her integrity, she is a jewel indeed: one whose equal I have not yet found in England.

You ought not to drink much tea: and none without pretty much cream (not milk) and sugar. But I believe, were you to drink nettle-tea for a few mornings, it would do you more good than any other. It seems best for you to have frequent returns of weakness: it may be needful to fix seriousness upon your spirit, by a lasting impression, that there is but a step between you and eternity. But sickness alone will not do this: no, nor even the near approach of death; unless the Spirit of God sanctify both, a man may laugh and trifle with his last breath.

You will overcome trifling conversation, and the fear of man, not by yielding, but by fighting. This is a cross which you cannot be excused from taking up: bear *it*, and it will bear *you*. By prayer you will receive power so to do, to be a good soldier of Jesus Christ. But it is more difficult to resist hurtful desire: I am most afraid you should give way to this. Herein you have need of all the power of God. O stand fast! Look up, and receive strength! I shall be glad to hear that you are more than conqueror, and that you daily grow in the vital knowledge of Christ. Peace be with your spirit.

I am, your affectionate servant,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER-XI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Dec. 28, 1758.*

I THOUGHT it long since I heard from you: but I imputed it to your illness. And I did not desire you should do any thing which would put you to pain, or increase your bodily weakness.

When you seemed confident of receiving the promise in a few days, I did not judge it needful to say any thing to the contrary; both because I was persuaded, that expectation would be a quickening to your soul, and because I knew you had one near you who was able to advise you in any emergency. See that your desires do

not cool, and you shall not be ashamed of this confident expectation. So long as it is tempered with resignation, it can do you no disservice. And what else is there worthy of a desire? Health you shall have, if health be best, even bodily health. But what is that in comparison of a healthful mind? And this you are sure to have.

I scruple S. R.'s drinking tar-water, because it is so extremely nauseous. Neither will it profit, if it occasion costiveness, unless stewed prunes be taken every second or third night instead of it. I rather wish she would resume the medicine I formerly prescribed: only taking care not to catch cold with it. Perhaps in a few days you may see,  
Your affectionate Brother,  
J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Norwich, March 6, 1759.*

I SHALL always be glad to hear from you, when you can write without hurting yourself. But I am almost afraid to write, for fear of tempting you to answer, whether you can or not.

Since you left Kingswood, I hope you use the water at the Hot Wells as often as possible. If any thing medicinal profit you, probably it will be this. But perhaps God will not suffer you to be healed by outward medicines: It may be, he is determined to have all the glory of his own work. Meantime he designs, by this weakness of body, to keep your soul low, as a weaned child. There is a wonderful mystery in the manner and circumstances of that mighty working, whereby he subdues all things to himself, and leaves nothing in the heart but his pure love alone.

I have no doubt but God will give you the answer to that prayer,

" Let me thy witness live,  
When sin is all destroyed!  
And then my spotless soul receive,  
And take me home to God!"

I am, my dear sister, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Aug. 19, 1759.*

THE observing that rule might prevent abundance of mischief: I wish others would observe it as well as you. T. Walsh was a good and a wise man; yet there were some circumstances not commonly known, which easily account for the darkness he went through, before he went to Paradise.

I hope you have *talked* with Cornelius Bastable, as well as heard him preach. He is an uncommon monument of the power of grace, strengthening the understanding, as well as renewing the heart. For so weak a head, and so bad a temper as he once had, I do not know among all our preachers.

Probably the difference between you and others, lies in words chiefly. All who expect to be sanctified at all, expect to be sancti-

fied by faith. But meantime they know, that faith will not be given but to them that obey. *Remotely*, therefore, the blessing depends on our works; although, *immediately*, on simple faith.

Enjoy, while you may, the advantage which I had once; and shall have again, when God sees best.

I am, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

Certainly *you* may say to *me* whatever you have a mind, either by writing or speaking.

#### LETTER XIV

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Athlone, June 1, 1760.*

I AM persuaded, it is not a little thing which will make me angry at *you*. I hope your thinking evil of me, would not; for you may have many reasons so to do.

Try: perhaps by prayer and a little resolution, you may avoid hearing those disputes about holiness. It implies no more than this: If John Jones, or any other, begins a discourse concerning the errors or sins of absent persons, tell him, "I beg you would say no more on this head: I dare not, and I will not hear, unless those persons were present." If one begins any caution of that kind, stop him, only with mildness and good humour: say, "I believe you speak out of kindness, but I must not hear: it both distresses and hurts my soul. Therefore, if you really wish my welfare, be silent: or let us call another cause." Where you see good, you may add, "I consulted Mr. Wesley on this head; and this was the advice he gave me."

No one ever "walked in the light as God is in the light," (I mean, in the full sense of the expression,) till "the blood of Jesus Christ had cleansed him from all sin." "If we are perfectly saved, it is through his blood." This is the plain meaning of the text. And it may be fulfilled in *you*, before you sleep. God is sovereign, in sanctifying as well as justifying. He will act, *when*, as well as *how*, he pleases. And none can say unto him, What dost thou?

When the lungs are ulcerated, cold bathing not only does no hurt, but is the most probable cure. Sammy is a letter in my debt. I do not know, but he is providentially called to this kingdom. I have now finished more than half my progress, having gone through two of the four Provinces. Who knows whether I shall live to go through the other two! It matters not how long we live, but how well.

I am, my dear Sister, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER XV.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Norwich, Jan. 18, 1761.*

I HAVE sometimes wondered, that not one of all the clergymen we have known, should ever cleave to me, for God's sake: nor

one man of learning, which would ease me exceedingly. Tommy Walsh designed it,

“But death had quicker wings than love.”

Perhaps it was not best: because I am so immeasurably apt to pour out all my soul into any that loves me.

It is well for sister Clarke, that she is landed safe. And it is well for us, who are still amidst the waves, that he is with us, whom the winds and the seas obey. He is steering you to the haven, where you would be. You may well trust your soul with him, and let him do with you as seemeth him good.

Certainly nothing can be of greater importance, than the behaviour of both of those who are renewed, and of those who are known to be pressing after it. You have need to weigh every step you take. When and where do you meet now? And who are they that meet? Pray send the enclosed to your neighbour. And let all of you love and pray for,  
Your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*St. Ives, Sept. 15, 1762.*

WHEREUNTO you have attained, hold fast. But expect that greater things are *at hand*: although our friend talks, as if you were not to expect them, till the article of death.

Certainly sanctification (in the proper sense) is “an instantaneous deliverance from all sin,” and includes “an instantaneous power then given, always to cleave to God.” Yet this sanctification (at least in the lower degrees) does not include a power, never to think an *useless* thought, nor ever speak an *useless* word. I myself believe, that *such* a perfection, is inconsistent with living in a corruptible body. For this makes it impossible “always to think right.” While we breathe, we shall more or less *mistake*. If, therefore, Christian perfection implies this, we must not expect it till after death.

I want you to be *all love*. This is the perfection I believe and teach. And this perfection is consistent with a thousand nervous disorders, which that high-strained perfection is not. Indeed my judgment is, that (in this case particularly) to overdo, is to undo: and that to set Perfection too high, (so high as no man that we ever heard or read of, attained,) is the most effectual (because unsuspected) way, of driving it out of the world.

Take care you are not hurt by any thing in the “Short Hymns,” contrary to the doctrines you have long received. Peace be with your spirit! I am, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, July 16, 1763.*

1. SO far as I know what will make me most holy, and most useful, I know what is the will of God.

2. Certainly it is possible, for persons to be as devoted to God in a married, as in a single state.

3. I believe I. D. is thoroughly desirous of being wholly devoted to God : and that if you alter your condition at all, you cannot choose a more proper person.

I am, my dear Sister, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Lewisham, Dec. 15, 1763.*

IT has seemed to me, for some time, that God will not suffer Cornelius Bastable to *live* at Cork. He may starve there, but he cannot live. The people are not worthy of him.

Salvation from sin is a deeper and a higher work, than either you or S. Ryan can conceive. But do not imagine, (as we are continually prone to do,) that it lies in an indivisible point. You experienced a taste of it when you were justified. You since experienced the thing itself, only in a low degree : and God gave you his Spirit, that you might know the things which he had freely given you. Hold fast the beginning of your confidence steadfast unto the end. You are continually apt to throw away what you have, for what you want. However, you are right in looking for a farther instantaneous change, as well as a constant, gradual one. But it is not good for you to be quite alone : you should converse frequently, as well as freely, with Miss Johnson, and any other that is *much alive*. You have great need of this. I am, my dear Sister,

Your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XIX.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Edinburgh, May 28, 1764.*

CERTAINLY it would be right, to spend some time in setting down both the outward providences of God, and the inward leadings and workings of his Spirit, as far as you can remember them. But observe withal, you are called to be a good steward of the mammon of unrighteousness. You must therefore think of this too in its place : only without anxiety. Otherwise, that neglect of your calling, will hinder the work of God in your heart. You are not serving Mammon by this, but serving Christ : it is part of the task which *he* has assigned you. Yet it is true, your heart is to be free all the time. And see that you stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made you free.

I thought your name had been altered before now. In a new station you will have need of new watchfulness. Still redeem the time. Be steadily serious. And follow *your own* conscience in all things.

I am, my dear Sister, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

In my return from the Highlands, I expect to spend a day at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, the 18th or 19th of June.

## LETTER XX.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Aug. 2, 1776.*

I KNOW not that you differ from me at all. You are certainly in your place at present: and it seems one providential reason of your ill health, was, to drive you thither. Now use all the ability which God giveth, and he will give more. Unto him that hath, shall be given, and he shall have more abundantly: it is the hand of the diligent that maketh rich. If you can persuade honest Alice Brammah to be cleanly, as well as gentle, she will be tenfold more useful: and so will Billy Brammah, if he will be teachable and advisable; otherwise there is a fly in the pot of ointment. You are sent to Leeds chiefly for the sake of those, that enjoy, or thirst after, perfect love. Redeem the time! Go on in his name! And let the world and the Devil fall under your feet!

I am, my dear Sister, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*October, 1776.*

YOU have abundant reason to praise God, who has dealt so mercifully with you, and to encourage all about you, never to rest till they attain full salvation.

As to the question you propose, if the leader himself desires it, and the class be not unwilling, in that case there can be no objection to your meeting a class even of men. This is not properly assuming or exercising any authority over them. You do not act as a superior, but an equal: and it is an act of friendship and brotherly love.

I am glad you had a little conversation with Miss Ritchie. She is a precious soul. Do her all the good you can, and incite her to exert all the talents which God has given her.

I am, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Dec. 1, 1781.*

NEVER be afraid that I should think your letters troublesome: I am never so busy, as to forget my friends.

Mr. and Mrs. Fletcher made an excellent beginning, and, I trust, they will increase with all the increase of God! Now let all of you that remain in the neighbourhood, arise up, and supply her lack of service. Be instant in season, out of season; that all may know, you have caught her mantle!

But pray do not suffer my poor Miss Ritchie to work herself to death. Let her do all she can, and not more than she can.

I am, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XXIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Near London, Nov. 21, 1783.*

THROUGH the blessing of God, I find no difference at all between the health and strength which are now given me, and that which I had forty years ago. Only I had then many pains, which I have not now.

You are enabled to give a very clear and standing proof that weakness of nerves cannot prevent joy in the Lord. Your nerves have been remarkably weak, and that for many years. But still your soul can magnify the Lord, and your spirit rejoice in God your Saviour!

Your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY

## LETTERS TO MRS. CROSBY.

## LETTER I.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*June 14, 1757.*

I WAS concerned at not hearing from you for so long a time, whereas I would not willingly pass a fortnight without it. Whenever you have leisure, write; whether any one else does or not. I shall be here near three weeks, and then at York. It comforts me to hear that your love does not decrease: I want it to increase daily. Is there not height and depth in him with whom you have to do, for your love to rise infinitely higher, and to sink infinitely deeper into him than ever it has done yet? Are you fully employed for him? And yet so as to have some time, daily, for reading and other private exercises? If you should grow cold, it would afflict me much. Rather let me always rejoice over you. As for me, I seem to be only just beginning, to aim feebly at God: though I have found more liberty in the respects you mention lately, than of a long season. Dear Sally, never forget to pray for

Your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*London, Feb. 14, 1761.*

MISS — gave me your's on Wednesday night. Hitherto, I think you have not gone too far. You could not well do less. I apprehend, all you can do more is, when you meet again, to tell them simply, "You lay me under a great difficulty. The Methodists do not allow of women-preachers. Neither do I take upon me any such character. But I will just nakedly tell you what is in my heart." This will, in a great measure, obviate the grand objection, and prepare for J. Hampson's coming. I do not see that you have broken any law. Go on calmly and steadily. If you have time, you may read to them the notes on any chapter, before you speak a few words: or one of the most awakening sermons, as other women have done long ago.

The work of God goes on mightily here, both in conviction and conversion. This morning I have spoken with four or five who seem to have been set at liberty within this month. I believe, within five weeks, six, in one class, have received remission of sins, and five, in one band, received a second blessing. Peace be with you all!

I am your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER III.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Kingswood, Oct. 5, 1765.*

YOU oblige me much by speaking so freely. What an admirable teacher is experience! You have great reason to praise God for what he has taught you hereby, and to expect that he will teach you all things. But whatever you find now, beware you do not deny what you had once received. I do not say "a divine assurance that you should *never sin*, or sustain any *spiritual loss*." I know not that ever you received this. But you certainly were *saved from sin*: and that as clearly, and in as high a degree as ever Sally Ryan was. And if you have sustained any loss in this, believe, and be made whole.

I never doubted, but —— would recover her strength, though she has long walked in a thorny way.

A general temptation now, is the denying what God had wrought. Guard all whom you converse with from this: and from fancying *great grace* can be preserved without *great watchfulness and self-denial*.

I am, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

### LETTER IV.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Sligo, May 2, 1766.*

IT is a long time since I heard either of you or from you. I hope you think of me oftener than you write to me. Let us but continue in prayer;

"And mountains rise and oceans roll,  
To sever us, in vain."

I frequently find profit in thinking of you, and should be glad if we had more opportunities of conversing together. If a contrary thought arises, take knowledge from whom it comes. You may judge, by the fruit of it. For it weakens your hands, and slackens you from being instant in prayer. I am inclined to think I found the effect of your prayer at my very entrance into this kingdom. And here, especially, we have need of every help: for snares are on every side. Who would not, if it could be done with a clear conscience, run out of the world? Wherein the very gifts of God, the work of God, yea, his grace itself, in some sense, are all the occasion of temptation?

I hope your little family remains in peace and love, and that your own soul prospers. I doubt only whether you are so useful as you

might be. But herein look to the anointing which you have of God, being willing to follow wherever he leads, and it shall teach you of all things.

There is an amazing increase of the work of God within these few months in the north of Ireland. And no wonder; for the five preachers, who have laboured there, are all men devoted to God: men of a single eye, whose whole heart is in the work, and who "constantly trample on pleasure and pain."

Do they gain ground in London? I am afraid [Christian] Perfection should be forgotten. Encourage Richard Blackwell and Mr. Colley to speak plainly, and to press believers to the constant pursuit and earnest expectation of it. A general faintness, in this respect, is fallen upon this whole kingdom. Sometimes I seem almost weary of striving against the stream both of preachers and people. See that you all strengthen the hands of,

My dear Sisters, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY

#### LETTER V.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Chester, March 18, 1769.*

THE westerly winds detain me here, I care not how long: good is the will of the Lord. When I am in Ireland, you have only to direct to Dublin, and the letter will find me.

I advise you, as I did Grace Walton formerly, 1. *Pray* in private or public, as much as you can. 2. Even in public, you may properly enough intermix *short exhortations* with prayer. But keep as far from what is called *preaching*, as you can. Therefore never take a text. Never speak in a continued discourse, without some break, above four or five minutes. Tell the people, "We shall have another *prayer-meeting*, at such a time and place." If Hannah Harrison had followed these few directions, she might have been as useful now as ever.

As soon as you have time, write more particularly and circumstantially; and let S. Bosanquet do the same. There is now no hindrance in the way; nothing to hinder your speaking as freely as you please to,

Dear Sally, your affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER VI.

MY DEAR SISTER,

*Londonderry, June 13, 1771.*

I THINK, the strength of the cause rests there; on your having an *extraordinary* call. So, I am persuaded, has every one of our lay-preachers: otherwise I could not countenance his preaching at all. It is plain to me, that the whole work of God, termed Methodism, is an extraordinary dispensation of his Providence. Therefore, I do not wonder, if several things occur therein, which do not fall under ordinary rules of discipline. St. Paul's ordinary rule was, "I permit not

a woman to speak in the congregation." Yet, in extraordinary cases, he made a few exceptions; at Corinth in particular.

I am, my dear Sister, Your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

Newcastle, May 11.

NEITHER must the *witness* supersede the *fruit*, nor the fruit the witness of the Spirit. Let other men talk this way, or that, the word of the Lord shall stand.

I believe your spending a little time at P may be of use. Probably it will remove their prejudice against (Christian) perfection. But if Mr. T has a mind to marry our friend, I think neither you nor I shall forward it. She is far happier, since she is free, so to abide.

Do you never find any tendency to *pride*? Do you find nothing like *anger*? Is your mind never ruffled, put out of tune? Do you never feel any useless *desire*? Any desire of pleasure—of ease—of approbation—or increase of fortune? Do you find no stubbornness, sloth, or self-will? No unbelief?

Certainly the more freely you speak to me, the better. I found what you said in your last, helpful. It is of great use, to have our minds stirred up by way of remembrance, even of the things which we know already. I speak of myself very little to any one, were it only for fear of hurting *them*. I have found exceeding few that could bear it. So I am constrained to repress my natural openness. I find scarcely any temptation, from any *thing* in the world: my danger is from *persons*.

"O for a heart to praise my God,  
A heart from sin set free!"

Dear Sally, Adieu!

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VIII.

MY DEAR SISTER,

London, Nov. 7, 1784.

TO those who know the world, hardly any thing that is wrong or foolish in it, appears strange. Otherwise we should have thought it strange, that so good a woman should take such a step. One would not have expected her to marry at all: at least, none but an eminent Christian. I am more and more inclined to think, that there are none living so established in grace, but that they may possibly fall.

The case of Hetty Rogers was widely different. I know more of it, (beginning, middle, and ending,) than most people in England. And I am clear, that first to last, she acted in all good conscience toward God and man. As things stood, it was not a sin for her to marry, but a duty: and to marry when she did. And never was any one woman so owned of God in Dublin, as she has been already.

T. Brisco, I am persuaded, will do some good. But his wife will do much more, if you encourage her, and strengthen her hands.

Peace be with all your spirits!

I am your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTERS TO A YOUNG DISCIPLE.

## LETTER I.

*London, February 25, 1769.*

YOU have no need to take thought for the morrow : as your day, so your strength shall be. With regard to little compliances, I should be of ——'s mind : only if we begin, we know not where we shall stop. If you plead your conscience for not complying with any thing, you must use the most mild and respectful expressions you possibly can, and God will order all things well. You will want no help which is in the power of,

Your's affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER II.

*January 25, 1771.*

AS you desire a few directions with regard to the improvement of your mind, I will set down just what occur to me at present. Only as my business is great, and my time is short, I cannot stay to explain them at large.

All the knowledge you want, is comprised in one book—the Bible. When you understand this, you will know enough. I advise you, therefore, to begin every day (before or after private prayer) with reading a portion, more or less, of the Old or New Testament, or of both, if you have time, together with the Notes, which may lead you by the hand into suitable meditation. After breakfast, you may read, in order, the Volumes of Sermons, and the other practical books which we have published ; more or less at a time, (as other business permits,) with meditation and prayer. Young, Milton, and the Moral and Sacred Poems, you may read chiefly in the afternoons. Whatever you write, you should write in the forenoons. Take care never to read or write too long at a time. That is not conducive either to bodily or spiritual health. If I can be of use to you in any thing else, tell me : you know you may speak freely to,

Your's affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

*Dublin, March 30, 1771.*

SO poor, tempted, disconsolate —— was sent to London for your sake also ! She was sent to you among others, to quicken your expectation of the great salvation. And what is it our Lord calls you to now ? Whereunto thou hast attained, hold fast ! You *may* undoubtedly lose what God has given ; but you never *need*. Is not his grace sufficient for you ? Is not his strength made perfect in weakness ? Indeed you shall pass through the fire : but lean upon him, and the flames shall not kindle upon you. You shall go through the waters : but keep hold on him, and the floods shall not run over you. Suffer all, and conquer all.

“In every temptation, He keeps you to prove,  
His utmost salvation, His fulness of love !”

Be exceeding wary in your conversation, that it may be worthy of the gospel of Christ. Let not the liveliness of your spirit lead you into levity ; cheerful seriousness is the point you are to aim at. And be willing to suffer with him, that you may reign with him. Deny yourself, take up your cross daily, and follow him !

I am, yours, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER IV

*Bandon, May 2, 1771.*

THERE is no fear I should forget you, especially at this time, when all the powers of hell are engaged against you : but let them come about you like bees, they shall be extinct as the fire among the thorns. Tempted you are and will be : otherwise you could not know your own weakness, and the strength of your Master. But all temptations will “work together for good :” all are *for your profit*, that you may be *partaker of his holiness*. You may always have an evidence, both of God’s love to you, and of yours to him. And, at some times, the former may be more dear, at other times, the latter. It is enough if, in one case, or the other, you simply stay your soul upon him. S. Harper’s is the *ordinary* experience of those who are renewed in love. S. Jackson’s experience is quite *extraordinary*, and what very few of them have yet attained.

There is a danger of every believer’s mistaking the voice of the enemy, or of their own imagination, for the voice of God. And you can distinguish one from the other, not by any written rule, but only by *the unction of the Holy One*. This only teaches *Christian prudence*, consistent with simplicity and godly sincerity. The four volumes of Sermons, the Appeals, the Notes, and the Extracts from Mr. Law’s works, and from Dr. Young, might best suit you now : meddle with nothing that does not suit your present temper. Meet with them that meet on a Friday, and speak in God’s name, without fear or shame. The general rule, “not to correspond but with those who have both grace and understanding,” admits of several exceptions, in favour of a few, who want one of them, or the other, or both. Be not afraid of writing too long letters to me. The longer, the more agreeable to,

My dear ——,

Yours, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER V

*Galway, May 20, 1771.*

YOUR concern is with the present moment ; your business is, to live to-day. In every sense, let the morrow take thought for the things of itself. It is true, the full assurance of hope excludes all doubt of our final salvation : but it does not, and cannot continue any longer, than we walk closely with God. And it does not

include any assurance of our future behaviour : neither do I know any word in all the Bible, which gives us any authority to look for a testimony of this kind. But just so far you may certainly go, with regard to the present moment :

“ I want the witness, Lord,  
That all I do is right,  
According to thy will and word,  
Well pleasing in thy sight.”

Seriously and steadily, my dear maid, aim at this : and you will not be disappointed of your hope. With regard to the impression you speak of, I am in doubt whether it be not a temptation from the enemy. It may occasion many wrong tempers : it may feed both pride and uncharitableness. And the Bible gives us no authority to think ill of any one, but from plain, undeniable, overt acts.

Rollin was a pious man, and a fine historian. If you read one volume, you *would feel* whether it enlivened or deadened your soul. The same trial you may make, as to serious poetry. Very probably this would enliven your soul, and certainly the volumes of Philosophy *may* : as Galen entitles his Description of the Human Body, “ A Hymn to the Creator.” Temporal business need not interrupt your communion with God, though it varies the manner of it. It is certain every promise has a condition : yet that does not make the promise of none effect ; but by the promise you are encouraged and enabled to fulfil the condition. You might like it better, were there no condition : but that would not answer the design of him that makes it. It is certain, there are times of nearer access to God, and that it nearly imports us, to improve those precious seasons. But we may find plausible objections against this ; and, indeed, against any thing. The more free you are with me, the more you oblige,

My dear —, yours, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER VI.

*Dublin, July 13, 1771.*

TRUTH and falsehood, and so right and wrong tempers, are often divided by an almost imperceptible line. It is the more difficult to distinguish right and wrong tempers, or passions, because, in several instances, the same motion of the blood and animal spirits, will attend both one and the other. Therefore, in many cases, we cannot distinguish them, but by the unction of the Holy One. In the case you mention, all self-complacency or self-approbation is not pride. Certainly there may be self-approbation, which is not sin, though it must occasion a degree of pleasure. “ This is our rejoicing, even the testimony of our conscience toward God.” And this joy is neither better nor worse, for being accompanied with a natural motion of the blood and spirits. Equally natural, and equally innocent, is the joy which we receive from being approved by those we love.

But, in all these instances, there is need of the utmost care, lest we slide from innocent joy, or self-approbation, into that which is

not innocent, into pride, (thinking of ourselves more highly than we ought to think :) or vanity, a desire of praise. "For thin partitions do their bounds divide."

Be all in earnest ; and always speak without reserve to

Yours, &c.

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VII.

*The Hay, August 24, 1771.*

IF you find any comfort or help thereby, write on ; without any reasoning about the matter. The various thoughts and suggestions you mention are just such as any person of a lively imagination may expect. Satan too, very well knows wheréof we are made, and always attacks us on the weak side. But these, and a thousand clouds passing over your mind, prove nothing as to the state of your heart : see that this be devoted to him, and it is enough : you have given it him : stand to your gift. However, then, your imagination may be affected, you will have the testimony of a good conscience toward God. Not but that you may plead that promise, "The peace of God shall keep your hearts and *minds* through Christ Jesus." As the former word takes in all your passions, so does the latter all the workings of your reason and imagination. Pray, therefore, and look for the answer of your prayer. It shall come, and not tarry !

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER VIII.

*Kingswood, Sept. 13, 1771.*

YOUR present weakness will, I hope, be an unspeakable blessing. You are in danger of having more sail than ballast, more liveliness of imagination than solid wisdom. But it seems, God is correcting this defect, and giving you more steadiness of mind. You now see and feel what is the real value of this poor perishable world, and how little real happiness is to be found in all things under the sun.

It is right to pour out our whole soul before him that careth for us. But it is good, likewise, to unbosom ourselves to a friend, in whom we can confide. This also, is an appointed means which it generally pleases God to bless. Whenever, therefore, you have opportunity, speak all that is in your heart to

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER IX.

*Witney, Oct. 16, 1771.*

IT is no fault to be grieved at the unkindness of those we love : only it may go to an excess : so that we have need to watch in this, as in all things, seeing the life of man is a temptation upon earth. And it is no fault not to grieve for the censure we must often meet with, for following our own conscience. Of those little ones you cannot be too tender, or too careful : and as you are frequently

alone, you may teach them many important lessons, as they are able to bear them. But it requires immense patience; for you must tell them the same thing ten times over, or you do nothing.

A higher degree of that peace, which may well be said to pass all understanding, will keep, not only your heart, but all the *workings of your mind*, (as the word properly signifies) both of your reason and imagination from all irregular sallies. This peace will increase as your faith increases: one always keeps pace with the other. So that on this account also, your continual prayer should be "Lord, increase my faith." A continual desire is a continual prayer, that is, in a low sense of the word. For there is a far higher sense. Such an open intercourse with God, such a close, uninterrupted communion with him, as G. Lopez experienced, and not a few of our brethren, now alive. This you also should aspire after; as you know, he with whom we have to do is no respecter of persons.

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER X.

*Jan. 5, 1772.*

IT is not always a defect, to mind one thing at a time. And an aptness so to do, to employ the whole vigour of the mind on the thing in hand, may answer excellent purposes. Only you have need to be exceeding wary, lest the thing you pursue be wrong. First, be well assured, not only that it is good, but that it is the best thing for you at that time: and then, whatsoever your hand findeth to do, do it with your might. But you have all things in one, the whole of religion contracted to a point, in that word, "*Walk in love*, as Christ also loved us and gave himself for us." All is contained in humble, gentle, patient love. Is not this, so to speak, a divine contrivance to assist the narrowness of our minds, the scantiness of our understandings? Every right temper, and then all right words and actions, naturally branch out of love. In effect, therefore, you want nothing but this, to be filled with the *faith that worketh by love*.

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XI.

*Leith, May 13, 1772.*

TO set the state of perfection too high, is the surest way to drive it out of the world. The substance of that *Test*, I believe, I have seen; and I judge it not consistent with humanity: I mean with the state of a human soul, as long as it is united to a corruptible body. Do not puzzle yourself any more with these nice inquiries: but, in order to re-settle your judgment, give another deliberate reading to the "*Farther Thoughts*," or the "*Plain Account of Christian Perfection*." He that long ago gave you to taste of his pardoning love, gave you afterwards a taste of his pure love. Whereunto you have attained, hold fast; never cast it away, through a voluntary humility. But see that you do not rest there. Compara-

tively, forget the things that are behind. Reach forward ! This one thing do : Press on to the prize of your high calling.

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XII.

*Whitby, June 20, 1772.*

IT is of admirable use to bear the weaknesses, nay and even the faults, of the real children of God. And the temptations to anger which rise herefrom, are often more profitable than any other. Yet surely, for the present, they are not joyous but grievous : afterwards comes the peaceable fruit. You shall have exactly as much pain and as much disappointment, as will be most for your profit, and just sufficient to

“ Keep you dead to all below,  
Only Christ resolved to know.”

Never make it matter of reasoning that you have not either a larger or a smaller share of suffering. You shall have exactly what is best both as to kind, degree, and time. O, what a blessing is it to be in *his* hand, who “ doth all things well !”

Of all gossiping, religious gossiping is the worst : It adds hypocrisy to uncharitableness, and effectually does the work of the Devil in the name of the Lord. The leaders, in every society, may do much towards driving it out from among the Methodists. Let them in the band or class, observe, 1. “ Now we are to talk of *no absent person*, but simply of God and our own souls.” 2. “ The rule of our conversation here, is to be the rule of all our conversation. Let us observe it (unless in some necessarily exempt cases) at all times and in all places.” If this be frequently inculcated, it will have an excellent effect.

Instead of giving a caution once, as to a grown person, you must give it to a child ten times. By this means you may keep a sensible child from an *improper* familiarity with servants. Cautions should also be given frequently and earnestly to the servants themselves ; and they will not always be thrown away, if they have either grace or sense.

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER XIII.

*Bristol, August 31, 1772.*

NONE are or can be saved, but those who are by faith made inwardly and outwardly holy. But this holy faith is the gift of God : and he is never straitened for time. He can as easily give this faith in a moment, as in a thousand years. He frequently does give it on a death-bed, in answer to the prayer of believers, but rarely, if ever, to those who had continued unholy upon the presumption, that he would save them *at last*. But if he did, what unspeakable losers must they be ! Could grief be in heaven, they would grieve to eternity, seeing every one there shall receive *his own* reward, according to *his own labour*.

And *he* will perplex you more than enough, if you listen to his sallies of imagination. "Every one has some pursuit: *Therefore* a man cannot be always in communion with God." I deny the consequence. While Mr. De Renty was serving the poor, he was in constant communion with God. So was Gregory Lopez, while he was writing books. "At first indeed, as Lopez observed, large manifestations from God were apt to suspend the exercise of his senses, as well as of his understanding. But, after some time, they made no difference at all, but left him the full exercise of his understanding and senses." I remember a much later instance of the same kind. An old clergyman told me some years since, "I asked Mr. Boehm, (Chaplain to Prince *George*, of *Denmark*) 'Sir, when you are in such a hurry of business, surrounded with a crowd of people, hearing one, and dictating to another, at the same time, does it not interrupt your mental prayer?' He answered immediately, "All that hurry no more hinders my communion with God, than if I was all the time sitting alone in my study, or kneeling at the altar." No business, therefore, of any kind, no conversation, need hinder one that is strong in faith, from rejoicing evermore, praying without ceasing, and in every thing giving thanks. Follow after this, and you will surely attain it.

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER XIV

*March 23, 1773.*

IF useless words or thoughts spring from evil tempers, they are properly evil, otherwise not, but still they are contrary to the *Adamic Law*: yet not to the law of love: therefore there is no condemnation for them, but they are matter of humiliation before God. So are those (seemingly) unbelieving thoughts, although they are not *your own*, and you may boldly say, "Go, go, thou unclean spirit, thou shalt answer for these, and not I."

Your affections were apt to be too impetuous, and sometimes uneven too, but nature yields to healing grace, which I trust has made you both more calm and more steady: and what will it not make you if you persevere? All that is amiable, holy, and happy! Already he that loves you, gives you a taste of what he has prepared for you. Let patience have its perfect work, and you shall be perfect and entire, lacking nothing. See that you make the best of life! The time is short!

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER XV

*July 23, 1773.*

AT many times our advances in the race that is set before us, are clear and perceptible, at other times they are no more perceptible (at least to ourselves) than the growth of a tree. At any time you may pray,

"Strength and comfort from thy word,  
Imperceptibly supply."

And when you perceive nothing, it does not follow that the work of

God stands still in your soul; especially while your desire is unto him, and while you choose him for your portion. He does not leave you to yourself, though it may seem so to your apprehension. The difference between temptation and sin, is generally plain enough to all that are simple of heart, but in some exempt cases, it is not plain: there we want the unction of the Holy One. *Voluntary humility*, calling every defect a sin, is not well pleasing to God. Sin properly speaking, is neither more nor less than "a voluntary transgression of a known law of God."

There are a thousand instances, wherein it is not possible literally to make restitution. All that we can advise in the case you mention is, 1. Let him that stole, steal no more, let him be from this hour rigorously just. 2. Let him be a faithful steward of the mammon of unrighteousness, restoring all he can to God, in the poor.

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVI.

*August 20, 1773.*

I OFTEN heard my own mother make the same complaint with *you*. She did not *feel* near so much as my father did. But she *did*, ten times more than he did. You must labour to *do* so much the more, and pray that God would supply whatever is wanting. One degree of forgiveness is due to every one, though impenitent; still I love him as I love *all men*. But the other degree whereby I should again receive him as a *friend*, is only due to one who says, "I repent," that is, convinces me that he does really repent, and is entirely changed.

It is certain God has given you a talent, and I still think it ought to be used. I grant indeed to be hid, and to be still, is more agreeable to flesh and blood; but is it more agreeable to him *who hath left us an example that we might tread in his steps*.

One cannot be saved from evil tempers, without being devoted to God, neither can a soul be all devoted to God, without being saved from sin; but it is often exceeding hard to judge of others, whether they are saved from all evil tempers, and whether they are all devoted to God or not: yea it is hard to judge of ourselves, nay we cannot do it, without the anointing of the Holy One given for that very purpose. Out of darkness, God will command light to shine. Be plain and open to all; then, whether they are sincere or insincere, you will have a conscience void of offence. You find all things work together for good. They must, while the hairs of your head are all numbered.

Your's, affectionately,

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVII.

*Bristol, September 8, 1773.*

WE have the clearest proof, when we have to do with children, that the help which is done upon earth, God doth it himself. All our wisdom will not even make them *understand*, much less *feel* the

things of God. The "Instructions for Children" contain the best matter that we can possibly teach them. But nothing less than the finger of God, can write it on their hearts. On Saturday night, he sent another shower of grace upon our children at Kingswood. Sixteen of them were deeply affected; and, I think, thirteen found peace with God; four or five of them were some of the smallest we had, not above seven or eight years old.

Although there may be some use in teaching very young children to "say their prayers daily," yet I judge it to be utterly impossible to teach any to "practise prayer," till they are awakened. For, what is prayer, but the desire of the soul expressed in words to God, either inwardly or outwardly? How then will you teach them to *express* a desire who *feel* no desire at all? When therefore Madame Guion talks in that manner, it often makes me afraid, that both she and her teacher, Archbishop Fenelon, talked by rote of the things they knew not. Both of them had an amazing genius, but I doubt, full little experience. It is exceeding certain, neither his nor her writings are likely to do us any solid service. We have all the gold that is in them, without the dross, which is often not only useless, but dangerous. Let you and I keep the good old way:

"In doing and bearing The will of our Lord,  
We still are preparing To meet our reward."

Go on steadily in this path, there is none better. By patient continuance in well-doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortality. You shall reap, if you faint not.

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XVIII.

*Bristol, September 29, 1773.*

YOUR own experience may give an answer to your question. You did yourself enjoy a foretaste of that constant communion with God, though it did not continue long. And you know it was given you in a moment. It was the same case with all those whom I have known, that are now enabled to pray without ceasing. To every one of them that blessing was given in an instant. So it will be given to *you* again: although probably you will find a strong hope first, which will incite you to cry out,

"Big with earnest expectation,  
See me sit At thy feet,  
Longing for salvation."

Grace in one sense will make all things new. And I have sometimes known this done to such a degree, that there has been no trace of the natural temper remaining. But generally the innocent natural temper does remain: only refined, softened, and cast into the mould of love.

J. WESLEY.

### LETTER XIX.

*Levisham, Dec. 3, 1773.*

YOU are yourself a living witness of this religion. But it is only

in a low degree. I grant you are only just beginning to be a disciple of Jesus Christ. It is an unspeakable blessing, that he shows you this, in so clear and strong a light. And undoubtedly he is able to make you completely serious; and yet this is consistent with much cheerfulness. You shall have more or less of reproach, as he chooses. Your post is to leave all in his hands, who orders all things well. Go straight forward, and you shall be all a Christian! I expect that you will be more and more a comfort to, my dear, your's affectionately,  
 J. WESLEY.

---

### TO THE STEWARDS OF THE FOUNDRY.

MY DEAR BRETHREN,

*Pembroke, Aug. 6, 1768.*

THE thing you mention is of no small concern, and ought not to be determined hastily. Indeed it would be easy to answer, if we considered only how to save money: but we are to consider also, How to save souls? Now I doubt whether we should act wisely in this respect, were we to give up the chapel in Spitalfields. We have no other preaching place in or near that populous quarter of the town: and a quarter which, upon one account, I prefer, before almost any other; namely, that the people, in general, are more simple, and less confused by any other preachers. I think, therefore, it would not be well to give up this, if we could gain a thousand pounds thereby. I should look upon it as selling the souls of men for money, which God will give us, in due time, without this. That many who live near the Foundry would be glad of it, I allow, because it would save them trouble. But neither can I put the saving of trouble in competition with the saving of souls.

I am, my dear Brethren, your affectionate brother,

JOHN WESLEY.

---

### TO CERTAIN PERSONS IN DUBLIN.

*Whitefriar-street, Dublin, March 31, 1789.*

MY DEAR BRETHREN,

I MUCH approve of the manner and spirit wherein you write concerning these tender points. I explained myself upon them in some measure on Sunday: I will do it more fully now.

At present, I have nothing to do with Dr. Coke: but I answer for myself. I do not separate from the Church, nor have any intention so to do. Neither do they that meet on Sunday-noon separate from the Church, any more than they did before: nay, less, for they attend the church and sacrament oftener now than they did two years ago.

“But this occasions much strife.” True, but *they* make the strife

who do not attend the service. Let them quietly either come or stay away, and there will be no strife at all.

“But those that attend say, those that do not are fallen from grace.” No, they do not give them a bad word. But they surely *will fall from* grace, if they do not let them alone who follow their own consciences.

But “you fear this will make way for a total separation from the church.” You have no ground for this fear. There can be no such separation while I live. Leave to God what may come after.

But, to speak plainly, do not *you* separate from the church? Yea, much more than those you blame? Pray, how often have you been at church since Christmas? Twelve times in twelve weeks? And how long have you been so *fond of the church*? Are you fond of it at all? Do not you go oftener to a Dissenting meeting, than either to St. Patrick’s, or your parish church. My dear brethren, you and I have but a short time to stay together. “My race of glory is run, and race of shame; and I shall shortly be with those that rest.” Therefore, as one that loves you well, and has loved you long, I advise you, in the presence and in the fear of God, 1. Either quietly attend the Sunday service, or quietly refrain from it; then there will be no strife at all. Now *you* make the strife of which you complain. 2. Make not this a pretence for being weary of well doing. Do not, for so poor a reason, withdraw your subscription from the school or the preachers. What a miserable revenge would this be! Never let it be said, that my friend A— K—, that brother D— or B— were capable of this! From this hour, let this idle strife be buried in eternal oblivion. Talk not of it any more! If it be possible, think not of it any more! Rather think, *the Judge standeth at the door*, let us prepare to meet our God! JOHN WESLEY.

---

## TO THE PRINTER OF THE DUBLIN CHRONICLE.

SIR,

*Londonderry, June 2, 1789.*

1. AS soon as I was gone from Dublin, the *Observer* came forth only with his face covered. Afterwards he came out, under another name, and made a silly defence for me, that he might have the honour of answering it. His words are smoother than oil, and flow (who can doubt it?) from mere love both to me and the people.

2. But what does this smooth, candid writer endeavour to prove, with all the softness and good humour imaginable! Only this point, (to express it in plain English,) that I am a double-tongued knave, an old crafty hypocrite, who have used religion merely for a cloak, and have worn a mask for these fifty years, saying one thing and meaning another.

A bold charge this, only it happens that matter of fact contradicts it from the beginning to the end.

3. In my youth I was not only a member of the Church of Eng-

land, but a bigot to it, believing none but the members of it to be in a state of salvation. I began to abate of this violence in 1729. But still I was as zealous as ever, observing every point of church discipline, and teaching all my pupils so to do. When I was abroad I observed every rule of the church even at the peril of my life. I knew not what might be the consequence of repelling the first magistrate's niece from the sacrament, considering, on the one hand, the power lodged in his hands; on the other, the violence of his temper, shown by his declaration, "I have drawn the sword, and I will never sheathe it till I have satisfaction."

4. I was exactly of the same sentiment when I returned from America. I attended St. Paul's Church, and advised all our society either to attend there every Sunday, or at their several parish churches. In the year 1743, I published "the Rules of the Society;" one of which was, that all the members thereof should constantly attend the church and sacrament. We had then a large society at Newcastle-upon-Tyne; but one of the members totally left it after a few months, "Because," said he, "they are mere Church of England men."

5. About the year 1744, a clergyman offered me a chapel in West-street, Seven Dials, (formerly a French church) and I began to officiate there on Sunday mornings and evenings: we did the same (my brother and I alternately) soon after at the French church in Spital-fields, as soon as it came into our hands. This we continued from that time: and no one in England ever thought or called it *leaving the church*. It was never esteemed so by Archbishop Potter, with whom I had the happiness of conversing freely; nor by Archbishop Secker, who was thoroughly acquainted with every step we took: as was likewise Dr. Gibson, then Bishop of London; and that great man Bishop Lowth. Nor did any of these four venerable men ever blame me for it, in all the conversations I had with them. Only Archbishop Potter once said, "Those gentlemen are irregular, but they have done good, and I pray God to bless them."

6. It may be observed, that all this time, if my brother or I were ill, I desired one of our other preachers, though not ordained, to preach in either of the chapels, after reading part of the church prayers. This both my brother and I judged would endear the church prayers to them: whereas if they were used wholly to extemporary prayer, they would naturally contract a kind of contempt, if not aversion, to forms of prayer; so careful were we, from the beginning, to prevent their leaving the church.

7. It is true Bishop Gibson once said, (but it was before I had ever seen him) "Why do not these gentlemen leave the church?" The answer was very ready. "Because they dare not: they do not leave the church, because they believe it is their duty to continue therein."

8. When the Rev. Mr. Edward Smyth came to live in Dublin, he earnestly advised me, "to leave the church;" meaning thereby, (as all sensible men do) to renounce all connexion with it, to attend the

service of it no more, and to advise all our societies to take the same steps. I judged this to be a matter of great importance, and would therefore do nothing hastily; but referred it to the body of preachers then met in conference. We had several meetings, in which he proposed all his reasons for it at large. They were severally considered and answered, and we all determined "not to leave the church."

9. A year ago Dr. Coke began officiating at our chapel in Dublin. This was no more than had been done in London for between forty and fifty years. Some persons immediately began to cry out, "This is leaving the church, which Mr. Wesley has continually declared he would never do." And I declare so still. But I appeal to all the world, I appeal to common sense, I appeal to the Observer himself, could I mean hereby, "I will not have service in church hours," when I was doing it all the time? Could I, even then, deny that I had service in church hours? No. But I denied, and do deny still, that this is leaving the church, either in the sense of Bishop Gibson, or of Mr. Snyth at the Dublin Conference! Yet by this outcry many well meaning people were frightened well nigh out of their senses.

10. But see the consequences of having Sunday service here. See the confusion this occasioned! Some time since, while a popular preacher was preaching at Leeds, one cried out, "Fire! fire!" The people took fright—some leaped over the gallery; and several legs and arms were broken. But upon whom were these consequences to be charged? Not on the preacher, but on him that made the outcry. Apply this to the present case. I have kindled no more fire in Dublin than I did in London. It is the Observer, and a few other mischief-makers, who fright the people out of their senses: and they must answer to God for the consequence.

11. This is my answer to them that trouble me, and will not let my gray hairs go down to the grave in peace. I am not a man of duplicity: I am not an old hypocrite, a double tongued knave. More than forty years I have frequented Ireland. I have wished to do some good there. I now tell a plain tale, that "the good which is in me, may not be evil spoken of." I have no temporal end to serve. I seek not the honour that cometh of men. It is not for pleasure, that at this time of life, I travel three or four thousand miles a year. It is not for gain.

No foot of land do I possess,  
No cottage in this wilderness,  
A poor way-faring man:  
I lodge awhile in tents below,  
Or gladly wonder to and fro,  
Till I my Canaan gain.

J. WESLEY.

P. S. At the desire of a friend, I add a few words in answer to one or two other objections.

First. When I said, "I believe I am a scriptural Bishop," I spoke on lord King's supposition, that bishops and presbyters are essentially one order.

Secondly. I did desire Mr. Myles to assist me in delivering the cup. Now be this right or wrong, how does it prove the point now in question, "That I leave the church?" I ask, 2. What law of the church forbids this? and, 3. What law of the primitive church? Did not the priest, in the primitive church, send both the bread and wine to the sick by whom he pleased, though not ordained at all?

Thirdly. The Observer affirms, "To say you will not leave the church, meaning thereby *all the true believers in England*, is trifling." Certainly: but I do not mean so when I say, "I will not leave the church." I mean, unless I see more reason for it than I ever yet saw, I will not leave the Church of England as by law established while the breath of God is in my nostrils.

The above letter was published in the Dublin Chronicle, Thursday, June 11, 1789.

---

## LETTERS TO MR. SAMUEL WESLEY

THE following letters written in the early part of Mr. Wesley's life, appeared in a small collection of letters by Mr. Wesley and his friends; published in the year 1791, by Dr. Priestley.

---

### LETTER I.

DEAR BROTHER,\*

I RETURN you thanks for your favourable judgment on my sermon, and for the alterations you direct me to make in it: yet, in order to be still better informed, I take the liberty to make some objections to some of them, in one or two of which I believe you misunderstood me.

The reason why I conceive the Samaritans to have been idolaters, are, 1st. Because our Saviour says of them, "Ye worship ye know not what," which seems to refer plainly to the object of their worship; and, 2dly. Because the old inhabitants of Samaria, who succeeded the Israelites, were undoubtedly so, and I never heard that they were much amended in after times: "These nations feared the Lord, and served their graven images, both their children and their children's children." 2 Kings xvii. 41.

II. Were the Jews obliged to love wicked men? And is not our commandment extended to some cases to which theirs did not reach? To the excluding some instances of revenge, which were indulged to them?

We are doubtless to love good men more than others: but to have inserted it, where I was only to prove that we were to love them, and not how much, would not, I think, have been to my purpose.

\* This letter is without a date, but it appears to have been written from Oxford.

Where our Saviour exerts his authority against his opposers, I cannot think it safe for me to follow him. I would much sooner, in those cases, act by his precepts than example; the one was certainly designed for me, the other possibly was not. The author had power to dispense with his own laws, and wisdom to know when it was necessary; I have neither.

No one would blame a man for using such sharpness of speech as St. Stephen does, especially in a prayer made in the article of death, with the same intention as his.

What you understand as spoken of *rulers*, I expressly say of private men: "As well every ruler as every private man must act in a legal way; and the latter might, with equal reason, apply the civil sword himself, as use violent means," by which I hear mean reviling, studiously and unnecessarily defaming, or handing about ill stories of wicked men, "to preserve the church."

I believe it to be, more especially, the duty of governors, to try to amend scandalous offenders. 2. That flagrant immorality is a sufficient reason to shun any one. 3. That to the weak and private Christian, it is an unanswerable reason for so doing. 4. That in many cases a private Christian, in some, a clergyman is not obliged to admonish more than once. But this being allowed, still, the main argument stands, that the Scripture no where authorizes a private person to do more than to shun a heretic, or (which I expressly mention) an obstinate offender. I had not the least thought of any retrospect in them, neither when I wrote or spoke those words: "If Providence has pointed you out, &c."

My mother's reason for my cutting off my hair, is because she fancies it prejudices my health. As to my looks, it would doubtless mend my complexion to have it off, by letting me get a little more colour, and perhaps it might contribute to my making a more genteel appearance. But these, till ill health is added to them, I cannot persuade myself to be sufficient grounds for losing two or three pounds a year. I am ill enough able to spare them.

Mr. Sherman says there are garrets somewhere in Peck-water, to be let for fifty shillings a year; and there are too some honest fellows in college, who would be willing to chum in one of them; and that could my brother but find one of these garrets, and get acquainted with one of these honest fellows he might very possibly prevail upon him to join in taking it; and then, if he could but prevail upon some one else to give him seven pounds a year for his own room, he would gain almost six pounds a year clear, if the rent were well paid. He appealed to me, whether the proposal was not exceeding reasonable? But as I could not give him such an answer as he desired, I did not choose to give him any at all.

Leisure and I have taken leave of one another; I propose to be busy as long as I live, if my health is so long indulged to me. In health and sickness I hope I shall ever continue with the same sincerity,

Your loving brother,

J. WESLEY

My love and service to my sister.

## LETTER II.

*Gravesend, on board the Simmonds, Oct. 15, 1735.*

DEAR BROTHER,

I PRESENTED Job\* to the queen on Sunday, and had many good words and smiles ; out of what is due to me on that account, I beg you would first pay yourself what I owe you ; and, if I live till spring, I can then direct what I would have done with the remainder.

The uncertainty of my having another opportunity to tell you my thoughts in this life, obliges me to tell you what I have often thought of, and that in as few and plain words as I can. Elegance of style is not to be weighed against purity of heart, purity both from the lusts of the flesh, the lusts of the eye, and the pride of life. Therefore whatever has any tendency to impair that purity, is not to be tolerated, much less recommended, for the sake of that elegance. But of this sort (I speak not from the reason of the thing only, nor from my single experience) are the most of the classics usually read in great schools : many of them tending to inflame the lusts of the flesh, (besides Ovid, Virgil's *Æneid*, and Terence's *Eunuch*,) and more, to feed the lust of the eye, and the pride of life. I beseech you, therefore, by the mercies of God, who would have us holy, as he is holy, that you banish all such poison from your school ; that you introduce, in their place, such Christian authors, as will work together with you in building up your flock in the knowledge and love of God. For assure yourself, dear brother, you are even now called to the converting of heathens as well as I.

So many souls are committed to your charge by God, to be prepared for a happy eternity. You are to instruct them, not only in the beggarly elements of Greek and Latin, but much more, in the gospel. You are to labour with all your might to convince them, that Christianity is not a negation, or an external thing, but a new heart, a mind conformed to that of Christ, "faith working by love."

We recommend you and your's to God. Pray for us.

I am, your affectionate brother and servant in Christ,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER III.

*Savannah, Nov. 23, 1736.*

O PRAY write, and (if it may be) speak, that they may remember him again, who did run well, but are now hindered.

I think, the rock on which I had the nearest made shipwreck of the faith, was the writings of the mystics : under which term I comprehend all, and only those, who slight any of the means of grace.

I have drawn up a short scheme of their doctrines, partly from conversations I have had, and letters, and partly from their most approved writers, such as Tauler, Molinos, and the author of *Theologia Germanica*. I beg your thoughts upon it, as soon as you can

\* A Folio by his father, in Latin.

conveniently; and that you would give me them as particularly, fully, and strongly, as your time will permit. They may be of consequence, not only to all in this province, but to nations of Christians yet unborn.

“All means are not necessary for all men: therefore each person must use such means, and such only, as he finds necessary for him. But since we can never attain our end by being wedded to the same means, therefore we must not obstinately cleave unto any thing, lest it become a hinderance, not a help.

“Observe, further, when the end is attained, the means cease. Now all the other things enjoined, are means to love: and love is attained by them who are in the inferior way, who are utterly divested of free-will, of self-love, and self-activity, and are entered into the passive state. These deified men, in whom the superior will has extinguished the inferior, enjoy such a contemplation, as is not only above faith, but above sight; such as is entirely free from images, thoughts, and discourse, and never interrupted by sins of infirmity, or voluntary distractions. They have absolutely renounced their reason and understanding: else they could not be guided by a divine light. They seek no clear or particular knowledge of any thing; but only an obscure general knowledge, which is far better. They know it is mercenary, to look for a reward from God, and inconsistent with perfect love.

“Having thus attained the end, the means must cease: Hope is swallowed up in love. Sight, or something more than sight, takes place of faith. All particular virtues they possess in the essence, (being wholly given up to the divine will,) and therefore need not the distinct exercise of them. They work likewise all good works essentially, not accidentally, and use all outward means, only as they are moved thereto; and then to obey superiors, or to avoid giving offence; but not as necessary or helpful to them.

“Public prayer, on any forms, they need not; for they pray without ceasing. Sensible devotion in any prayer they despise; it being a great hinderance to perfection. The Scripture they need not read; for it is only his letter, with whom they converse face to face. And if they do read it now and then, as for expounders, living or dead, reason, philosophy, (which only puffs up, and vainly tries to bind God by logical definitions and divisions,) as for knowledge of tongues, or ancient customs, they need none of them, any more than the apostles did, for they have the same spirit. Neither do they need the Lord's Supper, (for they never cease to remember Christ in the most acceptable manner,) any more than fasting, since by constant temperance they keep a continual fast.

“You that are to advise them that have not yet attained perfection, press them to nothing; not to self-denial, constant private prayer, reading the Scriptures, fasting, communicating. If they love heathen poets, let them take their full swing in them: speak but little to them (in the mean time) of eternity. If they are affected, at any time, with what you say, say no more: let them apply it,

not you. You may advise them to some religious books, but stop there; let them use them as they please, and form their own reflections upon them, without your intermeddling. If one who was religious, falls off, let him alone. Either a man is converted to God, or not: if he is not, his own will must guide him, in spite of all you can do; if he is, he is so guided by the Spirit of God, as not to need your direction.

“You that are yourselves imperfect, know love is your end. All things else are but means. Choose such means as lead you most to love: those alone are necessary for you. The means that others need, are nothing to you. Different men are led in different ways. And be sure be not wedded to any means. When any thing helps you no longer, lay it aside. For you can never attain your end, by cleaving obstinately to the same means. You must be changing them continually. Conversation, meditation, forms of prayer, prudential rules, fixed return of public or private prayer, are helps to some; but you must judge for yourself. Perhaps fasting may help you for a time, and perhaps the holy communion. But you will be taught by the Holy Spirit, and by experience, how soon, how often, and how long, it is good for you to take it. Perhaps, too, you may need the Holy Scripture. But if you can renounce yourself without reading, it is better than all the reading in the world. And whenever you do read it, trouble yourselves about no helps: the Holy Ghost will lead you into all truth.

“As to doing good, take care of yourself first. When you are converted, then strengthen your brethren. Beware of (what is incident to all beginners) an eager desire to set others a good example. Beware of an earnestness to make others feel, what you feel yourself. Let your light shine as nothing to you. Beware of a zeal to do great things for God. Be charitable first, then do works of charity; do them when you are not dissipated thereby, or in danger of losing your soul by pride and vanity. Indeed, till then, you can do no good to men’s souls; and, without that, all done to their bodies is nothing. The command of doing good, concerns not you yet. Above all, take care never to dispute about any of these points. Disputing can do no\* man wicked? Cast not pearls before swine. Is he imperfect? He that disputes any advice, is not yet ripe for it. Is he good? All good men agree in judgment, they differ only in words, which all are in their own nature ambiguous.”

May God deliver you and yours from all error, and all unholiness. My prayers will never, I trust, be wanting for you.

I am, dear Brother,

My Sister’s and your most affectionate Brother, J. WESLEY.

Pray remember me to Philly.

\* The folding of this letter makes this illegible.

## LETTER IV.

*Marienbourn, near Frankfort, July 7, O. S. 1738.*

DEAR BROTHER,

GOD has given me at length the desire of my heart. I am with a church whose conversation is in heaven, in whom is the mind that was in Christ, and who so walks as he walked. As they have all one Lord and one faith, so they are all partakers of one spirit, the spirit of meekness and love, which uniformly and continually animates all their conversation. O how high and holy a thing Christianity is ! And how widely distant from that—I know not what—which is so called, though it neither purifies the heart, or renews the life, after the image of our blessed Redeemer.

I grieve to think how that holy name, by which we are called, must be blasphemed among the heathen, while they see discontented Christians, passionate Christians, resentful Christians, earthly minded Christians. Yea, (to come to what we are apt to count small things,) while they see Christians judging one another, ridiculing one another, speaking evil one of another, increasing, instead of bearing one another's burdens. How bitterly would Julian have applied to these. "See how these Christians love one another !" I know, I myself, I doubt *you* sometimes, and my sister often, have been under this condemnation. O may God grant, we may never more think to do him service, by breaking those commands which are the very life of his religion ! But may we utterly put away all anger, and wrath, and malice, and bitterness, and evil speaking !

I was much concerned, when my brother Charles once incidentally mentioned a passage that occurred at Tiverton ; "Upon my offering to read," said he "a chapter in the Serious Call, my sister said, 'Who do you read that to ? Not to these young ladies, I presume ; and your brother and I do not want it.' 'Yes, my sister, I must tell you, in the spirit of love, and before God, who searcheth the heart, you do want it ; you want it exceedingly. I know no one soul that wants to read, and consider deeply, so much, the chapter of *universal love*, and that of *intercession*. The character of Susirrus there, is your own. I should be false to God and you, did I not tell you so. O may it be so no longer ; but may you love your neighbour as yourself, both in word and tongue, and in deed and truth.' "

I believe, in a week, Mr. Ingham and I shall set out for Hernuth, about 350 miles from hence. O pray for us, that God would sanctify to us all those precious opportunities, that we may be continually built up more and more in the spirit of power, and love, and of a sound mind.

I am, dear Brother,

Your most affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

## LETTER V.

DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Oct. 30, 1738.*

THAT you will always receive kindly, what is so intended, I doubt not. Therefore I again recommend the character of Susurrus, both to you and my sister, as (whether real or feigned) striking at the root of a fault, of which both she and you were (I think) more guilty, than any other two persons I have known in my life. O may God deliver both you and me from all bitterness and evil-speaking, as well as from all false doctrine, heresy, and schism.

With regard to my own character, and my doctrine likewise, I shall answer you very plainly. By a Christian, I mean, one who so believes in Christ, as that sin hath no more dominion over him; and, in this obvious sense of the word, I was not a Christian till May the 24th, last past. For till then sin had the dominion over me, although I fought with it continually; but surely then, from that time to this, it hath not. Such is the free grace of God in Christ! What sins they were which till then reigned over me, and from which, by the grace of God, I am now free, I am ready to declare on the house-top, if it may be for the glory of God.

If you ask, By what means I am made free, (though not perfectly, neither infallibly sure of my perseverance,) I answer by faith in Christ; by such a sort or degree of faith, as I had not till that day. My desire of this faith I knew long before, though not so clearly, till Sunday, January the 8th last, when being in the midst of the great deep, I wrote a few lines in the bitterness of my soul. See Vol. I. page 169.

Some measure of this faith which bringeth salvation, or victory over sin, and which implies peace and trust in God through Christ, I now enjoy by his free mercy, though in very deed it is in me but as a grain of mustard-seed; for the “*πληροφορία πιστεως*, the seal of the Spirit, the love of God shed abroad in my heart,” and producing joy in the Holy Ghost: “joy which no man taketh away; joy unspeakable, and full of glory;” this witness of the Spirit I have not, but I patiently wait for it. I know many who have already received it; more than one or two in the very hour we were praying for it. And having seen and spoken with a cloud of witnesses abroad, as well as in my own country, I cannot doubt but that believers who wait and pray for it, will find these scriptures fulfilled in themselves. My hope is, that they will be fulfilled in me; I build on Christ, the Rock of Ages; On his sure mercies, described in his word; and on his promises, all which I know are yea and amen. Those who have not yet received joy in the Holy Ghost, the love of God, and the *plerophory* of faith, (any, or all of which, I take to be the witness of the Spirit with our spirit, that we are the sons of God,) I believe to be Christians in that imperfect sense, wherein I call myself such; and I exhort them to pray, that God would give them also “to rejoice in hope of the glory of God,” and to feel “his love shed abroad in their hearts, by the Holy Ghost which is given unto them.”

On men I build not, neither on Matilda Chipman's word, whom I have not talked with five minutes in my life ; nor on any thing peculiar in the weak, well-meant relation of William Hervey, who yet is a serious, humble-acting Christian. But have you been believing on these ? Yes ; I find them, more or less, in almost every letter you have written on the subject. Yet were all that has been said on "visions, dreams, and balls of fire," to be fairly proposed in syllogisms, I believe it would not prove a jot more on one, than on the other side of the question.

O brother, would to God you would leave disputing concerning the things which you know not, (if indeed you know them not,) and beg of God to fill up what is yet wanting in you. Why should not you also seek, till you receive "that peace of God which passeth all understanding ? Who shall hinder you, notwithstanding the manifold temptations, from rejoicing with joy unspeakable, by reason of glory ?" Amen, Lord Jesus ! May you, and all who are near of kin to you, (if you have it not already,) feel his love shed abroad in your hearts, by his Spirit which dwelleth in you, and be sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of your inheritance.

I am, yours, and my Sister's most affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY.

#### LETTER VI.

DEAR BROTHER,

*Bristol, May 10, 1739.*

THE having abundance of work upon my hands, is only a cause of my not writing sooner. *The* cause was rather my unwillingness to continue an unprofitable dispute.

The gospel promises to you and me, and our children, and all that are afar off, even as many of those, whom the Lord our God shall call, as are not disobedient unto the heavenly vision, "the witness of God's Spirit with their spirits, that they are the children of God : " that they are *now*, at this hour, all accepted in the Beloved : but it witnesses "not, they shall be." It is an assurance of *present* salvation only. Therefore, not necessarily perpetual, neither irreversible.

I am one of many witnesses of this matter of fact, that God does now make good this his promise daily, very frequently during a representation (how made I know not, but not to the outward eye) of Christ, either hanging on the cross, or standing on the right hand of God. And this I know to be of God, because from that hour, the person so affected is a new creature, both as to his inward tempers, and outward life. Old things are past away, and all things become new.

A very late instance of this I will give you. While we were praying at a society here, on Tuesday, the 1st instant, the power of God (so I call it) came so mightily among us, that one, and another, and another, fell down as thunder-struck. In that hour, many that were in deep anguish of spirit, were all filled with peace and joy. Ten persons, till then in sin, doubt, and fear, found such a change, that sin had no more dominion over them : and instead of the spirit of

fear, they are now filled with that of love, and joy, and a sound mind. A Quaker, who stood by, was very angry at them, and was biting his lips, and knitting his brows, when the Spirit of God came upon him also, so that he fell down as one dead. We prayed over him, and he soon lifted up his head with joy, and joined with us in thanksgiving.

A bye-stander, one John Haydon, was quite enraged at this, and being unable to deny something supernatural in it, laboured beyond measure to convince all his acquaintance, that it was a delusion of the Devil. I was met in the street the next day by one, who informed me, that John Haydon was fallen raving mad. It seems, he had sat down to dinner, but wanted first to make an end of a sermon he was reading. At the last page he suddenly changed colour, fell off his chair, and began screaming terribly, and beating himself against the ground. I found him on the floor, the room being full of people, whom his wife would have kept away; but he cried out, "No, let them all come; let all the world see the just judgment of God." Two or three were holding him as well as they could. He immediately fixed his eyes on me, and said, "Aye, this is he I said deceived the people; but God hath overtaken me. I said, it was a delusion of the Devil; but this is no delusion." Then he roared aloud, "O thou Devil! thou cursed Devil! Yea, thou legion of devils! Thou canst not stay in me. Christ will cast thee out. I know his work is begun. Tear me to pieces if thou wilt. But thou canst not hurt me." He then beat himself again, and groaning again, with violent sweats, and heaving of the breast. We prayed with him, and God put a new song in his mouth. The words were, which he pronounced with a clear, strong voice, "This is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes. This is the day which the Lord hath made: we will rejoice and be glad in it. Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, from this time forth for evermore." I called again an hour after. We found his body quite worn out, and his voice lost. But his soul was full of joy and love, rejoicing in hope of the glory of God.

I am now in as good health, (thanks be to God,) as I ever was since I remember, and I believe shall be so as long as I live; for I do not expect to have a lingering death. The reasons that induce me to think I shall not live long old, are such as you would not apprehend to be of any weight. I am under no concern on this head. Let my Master see to it.

O may the God of love be with you and my sister more and more!

I am, dear Brother, your affectionate Brother,

J. WESLEY

## TO LADY ———.

MY DEAR LADY,

*London, Sept. 30, 1786.*

FOR many years a great person professed, and I believe had, a great regard for me. I therefore believed it my duty to speak with all freedom, which I did in a long letter. But she was so displeas'd, that she said to a friend, "I hate Mr. Wesley above all the creatures upon earth."

I now believe it my duty to write freely to *you*: will it have the same effect? Certainly I would not run the hazard, did I not regard your happiness more than your favour. Therefore I will speak. May God enable you not only to pardon it, but to profit thereby. Indeed unless you profit by it, I do not expect you to forgive.

Be pleas'd to observe, I do not affirm any thing: I only beg you calmly to consider, Would it be right in *me* to propagate a doctrine which I believed to be false? particularly if it were not only false, but dangerous to the souls of men? Frequently hindering their growth in grace; stopping their pursuit of holiness.

And is it right in *you* to do this? You believe the doctrine of absolute predestination is false. Is it then right for you to propagate this doctrine, in any kind or degree? particularly as it is not only false, but a very dangerous doctrine, as we have seen a thousand times? Does it not hinder the work of God in the soul? Feed all evil, and weaken all good tempers? Turn many quite out of the way of life, and drive them back to perdition?

Is not Calvinism the very antidote of Methodism? The most deadly and successful enemy which it ever had? "But my friend desired that I would propagate it, and lodg'd money with me for this very purpose." What then? May I destroy souls, because my friend desired it? Ought you not rather to throw that money into the sea? O let not any money, or any friend, move you to propagate a lie! To strike at the root of Methodism! To grieve the holiest of your friends, and to endanger your own soul!

Living or dying, I shall always be,

My dear Lady, your most affectionate Servant,

J. WESLEY.

## TO MR. JOHN BOOTH.

MY DEAR BROTHER,

*London, Jan. 29, 1791.*

YOU give me a very agreeable account of the progress of the work of God in your circuit. As to the poor, self-conceited enthusiasts in Keighley, it seems best that you should never name them in public; but when occasion offers, strike at the root of their errors, by clearly proving the truth which they deny. And whenever you

meet with any of them in private, then speak and spare not. Whenever you have opportunity of speaking to believers, urge them to go on to perfection. Spare no pains : and God, our own God, still give you his blessing.

I am, your affectionate Friend and Brother,

J. WESLEY.

[The above, we believe, is the last letter but one, that Mr. Wesley wrote.]

---

MODERN CHRISTIANITY,\*

EXEMPLIFIED AT WEDNESBURY,

AND

OTHER ADJACENT PLACES IN STAFFORDSHIRE.

---

*Tua res agitur paries quum proximus ardet.*

---

ADVERTISEMENT.

IT was our desire and design, that the following accounts, drawn up long since, should have slept for ever : but the gross misrepresentations of these facts, which are still spread abroad from day to day, constrain us at length to speak the naked truth, in as plain a manner as we are able ; and now let any man of common humanity judge, whether these things ought to be so.

---

1. I JOHN EATON, of Wednesbury in Staffordshire, heard the Rev. Mr. Charles Wesley, in the latter end of the year 1742, preach salvation by faith, in the Coalpit-field. I and many others rejoiced to hear it, particularly many of the poor people at Darlestone, some of whom soon after began to meet together in the evenings, to sing, and pray, and read the Bible.

Some at Wednesbury used to go and meet with them ; but one evening the mob at Darlestone rose, pelted them with clods and stones, and broke all the windows of the house where they had been.

On the 30th of May 1743, John Adams, (whose house it was) fetched a warrant, to carry some of the rioters before Justice P. of Walsal. He desired some of us of Wednesbury to go with him ; so four or five of us went : but the mob at Walsal immediately rose

\* This tract, being referred to, Vol. II. p. 12, it is judged proper to insert it in this collection of Mr. Wesley's Works, although a pretty large account of the persecution at Wednesbury is given in his Journal, as published in that volume.

upon us ; so that we were obliged to take shelter in a public house. Here we were kept close prisoners till it was dark, several of us having been much hurt and abused. When it was night, we escaped one or two at a time. Francis Ward and I went last.

On the 21st of June 1743, a large mob came to my house at Wednesbury, I was then constable ; so I went to the door with my Constable's staff, and began reading the Act of Parliament against riots ; but the stones flew so thick about my head, that I was forced to leave off reading and retire : so they broke about half my windows and went away ; but some hours after, they came again, and broke all the rest, and the door of my house, and the clock, to pieces. This is a short account of the first damage that was done to me.

JOHN EATON.

2. On the 30th of May, I James Jones went with John Eaton and some others to Walsal. As we were going to and from the Justice's house, the mob pelted us with dirt and stones. They raged more and more, till Francis Ward desired the Justice, who was present, to quiet them : but instead of that he swung his hat round his head twice, and cried, "Huzza !" On which encouragement, they grew so outrageous, that we were forced to take shelter in a public house, and to stay there till it was dark.

On the 21st of June, a great multitude gathered together in Wednesbury Church-yard ; among them was Harvey Walklet of Wednesbury, and Richard Dorset of Darleston. Harvey said to Richard Dorset, "Methinks they are not so well armed as I would have them." Richard answered, "There are many pretty fellows from Darleston ; I know them to be good blood." Harvey replied, "There is John Baker with the oak bough in his hat, he will break the first pane of Mr. Eaton's windows." Accordingly, they went to Mr. Eaton's first, and from thence to other houses. Here are above fourscore houses in and about Wednesbury, in many of which, there are not three panes of glass left.

JAMES JONES.

*Wednesday, June 29.*

3. I Jonathan Jones, in the county of Stafford, farmer, am willing to pay the king and country their due, might I be at peace ; and go about my lawful occasions, as I ought to do.

On the 20th of June, at my neighbour Adams's house, two or three were singing a hymn, and a parcel of apprentices and others, in a very rude manner, came and threw many stones through the windows ; in particular Mr. Richard Taylor's apprentice. So my neighbour John Adams goes to Squire P and brings a warrant for him ; but Mr. Taylor goes to Walsal, to the Justice, before the offenders were brought, and he was with Squire P when we came, who would not act at his own hall, but sent us down into the town : where a great mob was waiting for our coming.

So the Constable gave him the warrant, and he said, "What ! I understand you are Methodists ! I will not act for you." Then he went to the door, and told a great mob, "They might do what they would," and took off his hat and swung it about, and went away.

They gave a great shout, and some of them swore bitterly they would murder us all. We sent for the Constable to help us out of town, but he was not to be found. So we stayed in the house about two hours, till we thought the mob was gone; but as soon as we came out, some began to hallow, and the street was quickly full. They beat and bruised us very much: but through God's mercy we escaped with our lives.

About a week after there arose a great mob at Darleston, and broke me nine large windows, and many of my goods. The same day my man was coming home with my team, and they met him, and beat him, and much abused my horses. At night they came to break the rest of my goods; but I gave them money, and they went away.

So I was at Richard Dorset's, our church-warden, and many of the mob came in and said, "Come now, d—n you, Dorset, we have done our work, pay us our wages." And I saw the drink come in, in large jugs, and every one drank what he would.

What I have here said, I am ready to make oath of.

JONATHAN JONES.

4. I Francis Ward, of Wednesbury, went to Walsal, May 30, with John Eaton, to see if we could have justice done to the rioters, who had abused our neighbours at Darleston. We went to Benjamin Westley's, at the sign of the George, when one Mr. Taylor, curate of Walsal, came with the mob to the house, and, in our hearing, encouraged them to insult us. Accordingly they pelted us with dirt and stones, all the way we went to the Justice's gate. The Justice came out, and said, "We must go down into the town, and then he would hear our complaint." But as we went, the mob continued to pelt us, though the Justice was with us. I desired he would be pleased to read the act of parliament against riots; but he would not. When we came to Benjamin Westley's, the Justice would have had a hearing in the streets, among the mob; but at last he was prevailed with to go into the house. Then he called for John Adams, or his wife, and without hearing them speak, said, "What, you are Methodists," or words to that purpose, and immediately went out to the mob. We stayed in the house a considerable time, hoping they would disperse; but as soon as ever we came out, they gathered round us again, and beat and pelted us with whatever they could find. One of them came to me, and struck me on the eye, and cut it so, that I expected to lose my sight. I got into a shop, and had my eye dressed, and then returned to my friends. The mob pursued me again, fetched me out of the house, and beat me very much; but, with much difficulty, I got from among them again, and escaped a second time into the house. They fetched me out again, and dragged me along the street, and through the kennel to and fro, till I had quite lost my strength, and was so weak, I was not able to get up. There came a poor woman and said to the mob, "Will ye kill the man?" and lifted me up. With much ado I got home; but the abuse I there received threw me into a fever.

5. About Whitsuntide, I Joshua Constable, of Darleston, had all my windows broke by the mob, and many of my goods damaged or

spoiled, and so had many of my neighbours; in particular, John Cotterel, smith, Thomas Butler, Thomas Wilkinson, Aaron Longmore, William Powell, Anne Evans, Walter Carter, Samuel Foster, and Thomas Wilks, had their windows all broken.

Edward Martin, Anne Low, Joan Fletcher, Edward Hoxton, Mumford Wilks, Jos. Yardly, and Robert Deacon, had all their windows broken twice.

James Foster, nailer, Sarah Hires, widow, and Jonathan Jones, had their windows broken, and money extorted, to save their houses.

John Foster, nailer, and Joice Wood, had their windows broken, and their goods broken and spoiled.

Jos. Spittle, collier, had his windows broken, his house broken open, some goods taken, and some lost.

William Woods, brick-maker, had his windows broken twice, and was compelled to go along with the rioters.

Elizabeth Lingham, a widow with five children, had her goods spoiled, her spinning-wheel (the support of her family) broken, and her parish allowance reduced from 2s. 6d. to 1s. 6d. a week.

Valentine Ambersly, collier, had his windows broken twice, his wife, big with child, abused and beat with clubs.

George Wynn had his windows and goods broken, and to save his house was forced to give them drink.

Thomas Day had his windows and goods broken, and was forced to remove from the town.

Jos. Stubs had his windows broken twice, and his wife so frightened that she miscarried.

6. On June 20, John Baker, Thomas Griffiths, and Daniel Oniens, at the head of a large mob, came to my house, Jonas Turner by name, at West Bromwich, near Wednesbury, and asked, "Whether I would keep from these men and go to the church?" I answered, "I go to the church very often, but I never see any of you there." Presently Daniel Oniens, with a great club, broke great part of my windows at one blow. Others laid hold of me and said, "You shall go along with us." I told them "I would not." They dragged me by force about sixty yards, and then I got loose from them. Afterwards they broke all my windows, and threw into my house three baskets full of stones, to break my goods.

7. Some time in June, about four in the afternoon, a mob came to my house at West Bromwich; I was within, and my two daughters without. They threw in stones and bricks so fast that I thought I should have been knocked on the head. Whereupon I opened the door and ran out among them. One of my daughters cried out, "My mother will be killed." On which they fell to throwing stones at her. She ran into a neighbour's house; but before she could shut the door, they broke the bottom off with a brick-end. They followed my other daughter with stones, and one with a great stake. She ran into another house, much frightened, expecting to be murdered. I asked them, "How they could come and abuse us thus?" Upon which one came with a large club, and swore, "If I spoke another word, he would knock me on the head and bury me in the ditch." Then

he went to the window, and broke two or three panes of glass, which were all that were left. A woman then came with a club, and broke to pieces part of the tiling of the house.

Of this I am ready to make oath.

MARY TURNER.

8. On the 19th of June, James Yeoman, of Walsal, saw me in my father's house at Wednesbury, and swore, "By G— you are there now; but we will break the windows, and kill you to-morrow." Accordingly he came with a mob the next day: and after they had broke all the windows, he took up a stone, and said, "Now, by G—, I will kill you." He threw it and struck me on the side of the head. The blood gushed out, and I dropped down immediately.

MARY BIRD.

9. June 20, the mob came to the house of me, John Bird, and demanded 5s. of my wife, or they would break all the windows. She offered them some money, which they snatched out of her hand, and then broke ten windows in front, the sash-frames, shutters, cases, chest of drawers, and hanging-press, and damaged the ceiling, doors, dresser, and many other things.

JOHN BIRD.

10. On the 20th of June, the mob came to my house. John Baker by name came first. They threw in stones and bricks as fast as they could throw them; so that we within were afraid of our lives. They broke all the windows I had in my house, and likewise the casements and the ceiling: and when there was no more damage for them to do, one of them cried out, "I suppose now you will go to your dear Jesus's wounds, and see them opened for you."

JOHN TURNER.

11. June 20, 1743, one Daliston, my neighbour at Wednesbury, after some words, took me by the throat, swore he would be the death of me, gave me a great swing, and threw me on the ground. As soon as I arose, Equal Baker, a collier, gave me a blow on the eye, and knocked me down again. When I got up, he came after me to my house, and said, "You dog, I will kill you." I went in, got a proper application to my eye, and lay down on the bed. In about half an hour, there came a large mob to my house, and broke all the windows except about twenty panes. The kitchen windows they cleared, lead, bars, and all, and broke the window posts and threw them into the house. My shop was shut up; but they soon broke it open, broke all my pots and bottles, and destroyed almost all my medicines. They broke also the shelves and drawers in the shop to pieces, and many of my household goods.

That day and the next they broke the windows and goods, in more than fourscore houses.

HUMPHREY HANDS.

12. In the latter end of June, 1743, I, John Griffiths, of Wednesbury, with Francis Ward, went to Mr. D. justice of the peace. We told him what condition we and our neighbours were in, our houses broken, and our goods spoiled. He replied, "I suppose you follow these parsons that come about." So he talked to us very roughly, refused us a warrant, and said, "I will neither meddle nor make." And after he and some gentlewomen that were with him, had made

as much game at us as they thought fit, we came away without any justice at all.

13. I, Mumford Wilks, heard the Rev. Mr. E. say to the mob at Darleston, (after they had committed these outrages) "Well, my lads, he that has done it *out of pure zeal for the church*, I don't blame him. My lads, I hope you will let us settle our affairs in our own parish ourselves: but if these men should come, and they should follow them, then your help will be needful."

14. Line and Mare's green have been long noted for wickedness, of every kind; for cursing, and swearing, sabbath-breaking, idleness, and all manner of debauchery. Few thereabouts used to go to church, or trouble themselves about religion, till some of them heard Mr. John and Charles Wesley, who then had a desire to flee from the wrath to come. In order to this, they set apart one evening in a week, to meet and encourage one another, by reading a chapter, singing a psalm or hymn, and praying and conversing together.

The revellers, finding their old companions had forsaken them, were enraged at them more and more; insomuch that they came one evening when they were met in November 1743, and unroofed the shop that was aside the house, and thrust down the walls.

The next time we met, they came in more fury than before, threw great stones, broke the windows and looking-glass, and made the roof of the house to crack and sink, and seem every moment as if it would break in upon us; insomuch that we were obliged to press out in the dark, in the midst of a shower of stones.

We thought it would be best afterwards to meet in the day, and accordingly we did. Immediately they blew a horn to gather their company together. When they had gathered fifty or sixty, they went from one house to another, threatening to kill those who would not go along with them. They went together to a house, where were things of value, with a great shout, swearing they would plunder. The woman of the house went out and asked, what they wanted? They did not make much reply; but part of them, immediately went into the garden, and dashed in pieces things which cost several pounds.

We made complaint hereof to a justice, Mr. W. G. He took a warrant to fill up, and asked us what number there was in all? we told him, "About sixty." He then said, "What, you are Methodists! Get about your business; you shall have no warrant: I am informed you are the vilest men that live."

GEORGE HADLEY,

SAMUEL HADLEY,

JOS. MOORE.

15. Upon January 13, 1744, I Jonathan Jones, of Darleston, about eight or nine at night, met in the street a great company of rioters, who told me they were going to destroy the rest of my goods, and pull my house down, as they had done Joshua Constable's. So I asked for Thomas Tunks, who was called the captain of the mob, and gave him many good words, and he took of me 2s. 6d. and some others I treated with ale; so they persuaded the rest to let me alone for that time.

The next day came John Stokes with a great club, and wanted some money, or he said he would break my windows; but I put him away for the present with some drink. The same night about six o'clock, came John Bagot and John Linyard, with each a great club, and said, "You have given money to others, and we will have some too; or else we will call the rest of our company, and serve you as we have done your neighbours." So I gave them some money, and they went off about nine or ten o'clock. About six or eight with clubs and staffs came after, and John Wilks, with a short gun; but my neighbours and I, with giving them some drink, persuaded them to go away.

It was some time before, just after the great mob had broken all our windows, that the Rev. Mr. —, with others, met at Thomas Forshew's, at the sign of the Crown, and made a writing, and the mob was sent to bring as many as they had a mind to sign it. They declared, whoever did not come and sign this, they would immediately pull his house down. It was to this effect: "That they would never read, or sing, or pray together again, nor hear Mr. Wesley preach."

16. In the month of January, I, Sarah Longmore, late of Darlestone, was coming to Wednesbury, with my brother and sister-in-law, and about thirty men stopped us in the fields, and asked, "where we were going?" We said, "About our business." Without any more to do, they began to throw dirt and stones at us, and then went before us and stopped us at the stile. Seeing a gap in the hedge, we offered to go through there; but they would not let us. I was knocked down only once, but was bruised in many places.

Some time before this happened, the mob rose at Darlestone, to near a thousand people. They took me by force out of my mother's house, gave me a club in my hand, and said, "If I did not go with them, and pull down Joseph Spittle's house, they would murder me." William Caulfield was the man who put the club in my hand, and hauled me along the street. I threw down the club, and when I came to the place, saw them break open the house, and bring out some of the goods, the people belonging to it being fled for their lives.

The same day the Rev. Mr. E. came to Darlestone; and Nicholas Winspur, the common crier of the town, gave notice, ringing his bell, that all the people belonging to the society, must come to Mr. Forshew's house, and there set their hands to a paper, signifying, "that they would not hear these men any more: but if they did not come and set their hands, they must expect to have their houses pulled down."

When I came, Mr. Forshew asked me, "if I could write?" I said, No. Then he bid me make my mark; so, through fear, I did. I then laid down a penny, which they made every one of us do, to make the mob drink.

17. About Candlemas, my wife was going to Wednesbury, and a mob met her in the road; and threw her down several times, and abused her sadly.

(The manner is too horrible to write. The nearest parallel case, is that of the woman abused by the men of Gibeah; although in this case are many circumstances exceeding that.)

I got a warrant for some of them from justice G. As soon as this was known, the mob rose and broke all my windows again. All who were served with the warrant, escaped, but one the constable took, and brought before the Justice; who came back and told his companions, "that the Justice bid them go home about their business." So they went home and told the mob; and then they came to my house, broke some goods, and went away for a little time: but when they came again, they broke and destroyed all the necessary goods we had in the house. They likewise broke and spoiled all my shop-tools; threw the tiles off of the roof of the house, pulled down one room, the joists of which they carried away with them. Many things they took away, particularly all my gun-locks, both them that were filed, and them that were in the rough. They tore to pieces all my wife's linen, cut the bed and bedstead, so that it was good for nothing; broke her box into little bits, and tore her Bible and Common Prayer Book all to pieces. We retired to a friend's house; but one telling them we were there, they swore they would tear it down, if he let us stay any longer. So we went out in the frost and snow, not knowing where to lay our heads.

18. John Allen, of Wednesbury, in the county of Stafford, John Darby, of Brerely, in the said county, and Jas. Constable, of Wednesbury aforesaid, jointly and severally make oath and say: and first, John Allen, for himself saith, that on Monday, the 6th day of this instant, February, being informed that the mob would come the next day to plunder several of his friends and acquaintance, he went to the house of one Francis Ward, of Wednesbury, and assisted in removing goods and furniture; and that on Tuesday morning, (being Shrove-Tuesday,) this deponent, hearing the mob was to come to the town, assisted in removing divers other goods; and that afterwards, on the same day, he met about three hundred persons, assembled together in a riotous manner; and that presently after, one George Winspur, of Darleston, and divers others, broke and entered the house of Francis Ward, broke down the fire-grate fixed therein, and then pulled down, took, and carried away, all such goods as were left there, and which they were able to carry. After which, one John Baker, of Wednesbury, and a great number of other riotous persons, came to the house of Francis Ward, and broke the windows; and then the said Baker, with divers others, entered the same, and broke to pieces and destroyed the bedsteads, and other goods and furniture.

The said riotous company then went to another village, called West Bromwich, and returned back again to Wednesbury, where this deponent saw one Thomas Horton, of Darleston, with divers others, go in a riotous manner to the house of John Griffiths, of Wednesbury, and saw Thos. Horton, with a sledge-hammer, break open the door of that house, which he, with others, entered and destroyed, and broke to pieces divers of the household goods, and carried away the remainder, or the greatest part thereof.

19. And the said John Darby, for himself saith, that on the said 6th day of February, he heard a great many people making a noise; that he went thereupon into his own house, and locked the door;

that in about a quarter of an hour, about seven score persons came up to this deponent's house; nine or ten of whom bade him give them money, else they would break the door: that John Hammersly, of Darleston, and several others, with a great rail of wood, broke down the door, and entered the house, and caught up a large axe, and broke to pieces and destroyed this deponent's goods and windows. After which they destroyed five stalls of bees, and killed and took away his hens, and threw the hay out of his barn; and carrying away what they thought proper. Went to the house of Samuel Smith, a quarter of a mile further, and broke his windows. Thence they went in a riotous manner to Bilston, and in the morning to Wednesday.

20. James Constable saith, that on Monday, the 6th instant, Henry Old; Thomas Adams, and Francis Longmore, all of Darleston, came to Wednesday, and, with oaths and curses, in this deponent's hearing, protested, "that they would come the next day, and pull down the house of one Benjamin Constable, and have his heart and his liver out." That accordingly, the next day, about ten in the morning, he heard a great huzza in the town street, and went to see what was the matter, when he, this deponent, was immediately, by one Samuel Cotterel, of Darleston, and three others, seized by the collar, and forced to go into a great concourse of people, (about 300 persons) who had just broke into the house of one John Burd, and were throwing the goods of the said John Burd out of the windows of his house: that those who held this deponent, then letting him go, and running to get their share of the plunder. He went to the house of Benjamin Constable; and about two or three o'clock the same day, the said riotous persons came up to the house, which was locked and bolted: and as this deponent stood on the outside, he saw Thomas Horton with a large hammer strike at the door, in order to break it open; which he not being able to do, Joseph Page, of Darleston, broke the window, and forced out the iron bars of the said window with a pike, and afterwards broke and entered the same, and unbolting the door, let the other rioters in: that Thomas Tonks, of Darleston, and divers others, with an axe, wrenched and forced open the door of Benjamin Constable's warehouse, riotously entered the same, and broke to pieces and destroyed the goods therein, spilt the liquors therein placed, plundered and destroyed such goods as they could not carry away, both household goods and grocery goods, and also chandler's ware: that afterwards they went to this deponent's house, broke to pieces all the windows of his house, plundered the same from top to bottom, broke to pieces many of his goods, and carried a great part of them away: that thence they went to the house of Daniel Constable, broke open and plundered it in the like manner, and from thence to the house of Thomas Atherley, which they also damaged and plundered.

All three sworn at Serjeant's Inn, London, on Feb. 24, 1743, before Wm. Chapple. { John Allen,  
John Darby,  
James Constable.

21. Monday, Feb. 6, we kept as a fast. Sixty or more of us met at one, and joined in prayer. About eight we heard the mob was at John Griffith's; the elder, breaking the house and spoiling his goods. This put some of us on removing our most portable goods. When I came home, my wife had awakened my youngest girls, and carried them to a neighbour's house. We then laid down and committed our own souls to God.

Next morning, Feb. 7, (Shrove Tuesday) all things were pretty still till ten. We were all very cheerful. The greatest fear we had was lest we should deny our master. For they had got a paper, which if any one would subscribe, his house was not to be plundered: but the far greater part, by the grace of God, chose rather the loss of all things.

About half an hour after ten, great numbers of men were gathered together on the Church-hill. We could see them march down, some armed with swords, some with clubs, and some with axes. They first fell upon Benjamin Watson's house, and broke many of the tiles, and all the windows. Next they came to Mr. Addingbrook's, broke a fine clock, with many of his goods, and stole all the things they could carry away; among which were writings of importance, and papers relating to the land tax. The next house was Jane Smith's, whose windows they broke, with what little goods she had. The next was Mr. Bird's, where they destroyed every thing they found, except what they carried away, cutting the beds in pieces, as they did all the beds they could any where find. Thence they went to Mr. Edge's house: he was ill of a fever; so for a sum of money they past it over. The next house was mine; they were going by it; but one who used to be my familiar friend, called them back. They broke my counter, boxes, and drawers, to chips, and all that axe or hammer could break, except my bedsteads. They spilt all my drugs and chemical medicines, and stole every thing they could carry, even all my wife's wearing apparel and mine, besides what we had on.

Mr. Eaton's house was next. They broke all his windows, and all his inside doors in pieces, cut the lead off his house, destroyed or stole whatever they could lay their hands on. The gentleman offered to stop them, if he would set his hand to the recantation paper. But he told them "he had felt already what a wounded conscience was; and by the grace of God, he would wound his conscience no more."

The next day they came with another mob, and said, "If he did not sign it, they would level his house to the ground." He told them, "they might do as they pleased; but he would not sign it if they tore him bit from bit."

The mob on Tuesday, after they had done at Mr. Eaton's, plundered several other houses in Wednesbury, and several in West Bromwich. It is impossible to describe the outrages they have committed. We keep meeting together morning and evening, are

in great peace and love with each other, and are nothing terrified by our adversaries. God grant we may endure to the end.

Feb. 26.

HUMPHREY HANDS.

22. On Tuesday, Jan. 31, 1743. Henry Old came to John Griffith, senior's house, saying, "if they did not leave following *this way*, he had 100 men at his command, who should come and pull the house down." Soon after, he brought seven or eight men with him, swearing what he would do unless they gave him a guinea. They said, "a guinea was not so soon shaken out of poor folks' sleeves." Then he said he would go and fetch the mob; but the neighbours gave him money, and sent him away for that time.

Monday, Feb. 6; between seven and eight at night, came part of the company. Hearing them afar off, John and his wife fastened the door, and left the house. Some of the neighbours going in soon after, found them destroying all they could. Two chairs and several bundles of linen were laid upon the fire. They did not dare to touch them, but persuaded the men all they could to go home. After they had destroyed what they could, they loaded themselves with clothes and meat, and went their way.

JOHN GRIFFITHS, SEN.

23. My father sending me word, that the mob had been at his house, and broke many of his goods, and stole many, I removed as many as I could of mine, before they plundered my house. And hearing they would force me to go with them, I sent my wife and children before, and then followed them to her father's; but he did not care to receive us. My wife wept: I was full of love, and not at all moved. At last their hearts relented, and they took us in. This indeed was the case with many of us. We were driven out of our own houses, and our friends did not dare to receive us into theirs. The reason for which my old companions have the greatest spite to me, is because I will not drink and game, and break the Sabbath with them, as I used to do. JOHN GRIFFITHS, JUN.

24. I, Edward Smith, of Wednesbury, standing by my own door, on Shrove-Tuesday, there came a great mob, and broke into and plundered Benjamin Constable's house; then they came to my house, and the foremost of them, Thomas Horton, with a great hammer, broke open the door. I begged them to let me unlock the door; but he swore, if I did not get away, he would knock me down. At the same time, Richard Adams, with a large iron bar, broke the house window, and got through. A great number of them followed both ways, and plundered the house, breaking some goods, and stealing others; several neighbours endeavouring to save them, but to no purpose.

25. I, Edward Slater, of Wednesbury, was informed the night before, that the mob designed to plunder my house the next day. And between ten and eleven on Tuesday, standing in the fields, I saw them come down the town, with clubs and other weapons, to Mr. Eaton's house. Then the colliers, by themselves, swinging their clubs round their hands, gave a great shout and jump together.

Then they began breaking his windows; and those who first broke into the house and went up stairs, threw the goods out of the chamber windows, which Henry Old cut to pieces with an axe. I saw some come out, with their pockets, and waistcoats, and breeches, loaded with goods. I went down the field towards my own house, got into a valley, read part of a chapter, and prayed for them. Then I got up and saw the light through my own house, both doors and windows being knocked to pieces. After they had plundered some other houses, I saw them go up the street, laden with brass, pewter, and linen.

26. According to your request, I send you some account of what the mob did on Shrove-Tuesday. When I heard they were in town, and broke and stole all before them, I got out our beds, and wearing apparel, and hid them in the hedges, and went and stood beside a hedge, about sixty yards off my own house.

When the mob came, they began with breaking the windows. They then broke and stole all they could lay hands on. They searched and found the beds and linen which I had hid, and took all they thought worth carrying away. I waded through the brook to try if I could save some of my goods, which a man was pulling out of the ditch where I had hid them; his name was David Garrington. He told me *it would be the same here as it was in Ireland; for there would be a massacre very quickly, and he wished it was now.*

When they were gone, my wife, and I, and two children came home. Our house was all laid open: for both the doors were gone, and all the windows, and the middle posts were broken out. Being wet and very cold, we gathered up some of the chips, (for our goods were mostly broken into chips, and strewed about the rooms) and made a fire; but the wind blew the smoke so about, that we could not bear to sit by it. We knew not what to do, till one of our neighbours sent us word we might come to his house. But one went to Walsal, the next day, and told the landlord, who came and told them that received us, "They must turn out." And we expected there would not be a house to receive a Methodist in the whole country.

On Ash-Wednesday, I was helping Mr. Eaton to remove some corn, which they had not found the day before; when Mr. William Horton came with a paper in his hand, and about a hundred persons with him. He pressed Mr. Eaton to sign it, who refused. Then they laid hold of me, and swore I should. I told them I would not. They caught hold of my collar, shook me, tore my shirt and waistcoat, pushed me from one to another, and asked again, "Will you sign the paper yet?" I told them, No. They then got a cord, put it about my neck, and swore they would hang me out of hand. Others cried out, "Draw him through the brook." But one of them snatched away the cord, and said, "If I would not set my hand, I might go about my business." They followed me, however, with many stones; but, by the providence of God, I was not hurt.

March 5, 1743.

JOHN TURNER.

27. Having notice that the mob was coming, I, William Sitch, of West Bromwich, and my wife, (who had been delivered but a fortnight) thought it best to go out of the house, and leave it to them. My wife, with her young child, was forced to stay in the fields, none daring to take her into their house. At length one man did; but he was in a little time persuaded to turn her out again.

The rioters plundered my house three several times, and did all the mischief they could; but, blessed be God, I could rejoice therein. He has said, *As thy day is, so thy strength shall be.* And never did I find his promise fulfilled more than at that time.

WILLIAM SITCH.

28. On Shrove-Tuesday, after two large mobs were passed by, came four or five men to my next neighbour, Jonas Turner's house. I and another woman followed them, to see what they would do. They first broke the windows, then broke down the door, and went into the house. Soon after they were in, they flung out a box at the chamber window, and swore, if any touched it they would murder them. Soon after they flung out a bible, and one of them came out, and in great rage cut it into pieces with his axe.

MARY TURNER, of West Bromwich.

29. The first that came to my house, (Thomas Parks, of West Bromwich) on Tuesday, Feb. 7, were five with great clubs, whom I met at the door. They demanded "Whether I would deny hearing these parsons?" I told them-no, for I believed they spoke the truth as it is in Jesus; and if I were to deny them, I should deny him that sent them." They told me, "If I would not, they would plunder my house." I replied, "They must answer it at God's bar, and I would meet them there." I asked, "Whether I had done them any harm?" They said, "No; but they would have me keep to the church." I told them, "Some of you may know that I worship among the Dissenters; but I love a good man, let him go where he will, for there is but one church of Christ; and if you do not belong to that church, you had better never have been born."

I told them, "God has allowed me liberty of conscience, and so have the king and parliament, and hope my neighbours will too; but if not, a day is coming, when the persecuted and the persecutor shall stand together; and if you wrong me now, God will right me then."

While I was speaking, I caught hold of their clubs, and the words seemed to have some influence on them; but by this time there was a great body of them gathered together; so they broke my windows, and then the door, and flocked into my house, and began to break my goods. But here the Lord suffered them not to go so far as they had done in other places: for they soon fell to plundering and loading themselves with the things I had for myself, a wife and seven children.

However, in a while, I had prevailed with some of them to stop. But they then said, "I must set my hand to their paper." I told them they were cloaked over with the name of Protestants; but none

but a Popish spirit would tie men's consciences." So I committed my cause to God, and withdrew from my house and them.

As I went along, one, who thinks herself a Christian, said, "Now I might see God was against me." I told her, "I did now feel that God was for me, and that he loved me never the less for this: for God loved Job on the dunghill with only a potsherd, as well as he did in all his plenty." I thought she, in effect, bid me curse God and die. May the Lord make her a Christian indeed!

When I returned to my house and saw it in ruins, I found nothing in my heart towards my persecutors but love. Neither could I doubt of God's love to my soul. All that is within me bless his holy name!

One day six or eight of the mob got me among them, and said, "They were going to make a law, and we should all set our hands to it." I told them, "I would submit to the laws of God and my prince; but I could not to the laws of the Devil." One of them swore, "He would break my windows again." I asked him, "if ever he heard of Jesus Christ doing so? And how he durst, when he must answer it at his bar?" At which he stood silent.

30. On Shrove-Tuesday, about eleven o'clock, Sarah, the wife of John Sheldon, of West Bromwich, being told the mob was coming to her house, went and met them at the gate. Mr. S—, Mr. J—, and Mr. S—L—, Cornet, were at the head of them. She asked John Baker, who was captain of the mob, What they were come here for? He answered, "If she would have nothing more to do with these people, not a penny-worth of her goods should be hurt." She made no reply. Then they broke the door open, and began breaking and plundering the goods. One coming out with a fire shovel, she begged him not to take it away." He swore, "if she spoke another word he would beat her brains out."

After they had rifled the house, they went to search the barn. Some goods were hid there, which she thought would now go with the rest; so she went and sat contentedly down in the ruined house: but a man of their own, as bitter as the rest till then, desired they would not pull up the cow's stakes; so they looked no further; but seeing a calf, they beat and lamed it in such a manner, that they were obliged to kill it.

John Sheldon was at this time helping Thomas Parkes to hide his goods, though he knew, by the noise, they were breaking his own in pieces. Between two and three he came to his house with William Sitch. William asked Sarah how she did? saying, "For his part, he took joyfully the spoiling of his goods." She answered, that seeing so much wickedness, she could not rejoice; but she blessed God she could bear it patiently, and found not the least anger in her." John Sheldon, seeing the spoil they had made, smiled and said, "Here is strange work." His wife told him, "If she had complied with their terms not one penny-worth would have been hurt." He replied, "That if she complied to deny the truth, and he had found his goods whole on that account, he should never have been easy as

long as he lived ; but he blessed God that she had rather chose to suffer wrong.”

31. The mob continued to rise for six days together. The damage they did in and about Wednesbury, at the very lowest computation, is as follows :

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>		<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
Benjamin Constable - - -	103	0	0	<i>Amount brought forward</i>	1.403	13	5
Humphrey Hands - - -	44	6	7	Joseph Spittle - - -	1	5	0
John Eaton - - -	43	11	0	Edward Holdbury - - -	4	10	0
John Bird - - -	43	0	0	Humphrey Hadley - - -	13	11	9
Richard Bolton - - -	40	0	0	John Griffiths - - -	6	6	0
Francis Ward - - -	22	14	6	Benjamin Watson - - -	2	11	0
Godfrey Ward - - -	22	6	4	Thomas Smith - - -	7	15	6
John Turner - - -	20	0	0	Edward Smith - - -	2	5	0
William Mason - - -	19	0	4	William Sitch - - -	5	6	0
Thomas Parkes - - -	14	0	0	Daniel Constable - - -	2	13	5
John Sheldon - - -	9	6	6	Henry Addinbrook - - -	15	14	4
John Griffiths - - -	3	15	8	Joshua Constable - - -	14	11	0
Lydia Partridge - - -	2	0	0	Joseph Stubs and Robert Dakin	2	0	0
Joseph Perry - - -	1	10	0	Jonathan Jones - - -	3	0	0
John Derby - - -	8	13	6	William Small - - -	4	12	7
Jonas Turner - - -	3	12	0	Thomas Edwardly - - -	5	0	0
Richard Spittle - - -	2	17	0	Edward Slater - - -	9	12	10
	<hr/>				<hr/>		
	1.403.13.5				1.504.7.10		

32. I, Benjamin Constable, was induced to go to a justice of peace, on account of a warrant fetched by the wife of Joshua Constable, for abuse done to her, as she went over the field betwixt Wednesbury and Darlestone. She swore against five men, before Mr. G. The warrant was executed upon one of them ; but the justice would not act any thing against him unless the other four were brought before him. The man returning home, raised a mob the same evening, went to the house of Joshua Constable, pulled part of it down, and destroyed his goods. This I thought proper to acquaint the justice of.

A second thing which induced me was, That on the last day of January, there came to my house Henry Old, Francis Longmore, and Thomas Baylis, and demanded money, “ else, they said, they would break my goods.” But it being day-time, and their strength small, (though they had large clubs in their hands) I refused.

I sent to the constable at Darlestone, to know if he would execute his warrant on the other four. He sent me word, “ He durst not do it, for fear of having his house pulled down.”

I went on February 2, to Mr. G. and gave him the foregoing account ; and withal told him, that on the Tuesday following, February 7, they threatened to rise and pull down our houses. He answered me in a rough manner, and asked, “ What I would have him to do? He could do no more than give out his warrant ; and if the constable would not, or could not execute it, he could not help it.” I desired that he would write a line to the officers of Wednesbury and Darlestone, to exert themselves for the discouraging of any rising on Tuesday. But he refused, and told me, “ If we could not agree among one another, we must go to the Devil which way we would.”

33. John Bird, of Wednesbury, in the county of Stafford, carpenter, is ready to make oath, That he, together with William Mumford, and Mary Bird, on the 10th day of this instant April, went to the house of W— G—, Esq. justice of peace, in order to have a warrant for some of the principal rioters, who had lately done great damage to this deponent, and divers other persons; but the said justice refused to grant any warrant against them: that William Mumford then demanded a warrant against some of the said rioters, who had done damage to him: to which the said justice said, They were Methodists; and, after several other words, refused to grant it: that on the 13th instant this deponent, together with Mary Mumford, and Mary Bird, went to the house of J— D—, Esq. a justice of the peace, in the said county, and requested the said justice to grant him a warrant to take up some of the rioters, which the said justice refused to do: so that on the 17th instant, this deponent together with Mary Bird, went to the house of W— P—, Esq. justice of the peace for the said county, and requested a warrant to take up some of the rioters; to which the said justice answered him roughly, That he and the rest of the justices in the neighbourhood, had concluded and agreed to grant us no warrant. And this deponent further saith, That he himself hath sustained damage by the rioters to the value of fifty pounds and upwards: and that neither he, nor any other person, who hath sustained damage by them, are able to bring the said rioters to justice; because not any of the above-mentioned justices of the peace, will grant any warrant to apprehend them.

Such is the liberty of conscience which Protestants grant one another! Does not He that is higher than the highest regard it?

34. Wednesday, October 19, 1743. I, John Wesley, came to Birmingham, in my way to Newcastle. Thursday, October 20, several persons from Wednesbury earnestly desired me to call there. I yielded to their importunity, and went. I was sitting writing at Francis Ward's, in the afternoon; when the cry arose, That the Darlestone mob had beset the house. I called together those that were in the house, and prayed, that God would *scatter the people that delight in war*. And it was so: one went one way, and one another: so that in half an hour the house was clear on every side. But, before five, they returned with greater numbers. The cry of all was, "Bring out the minister."

I desired one to bring the captain of the mob into the house. After a few words interchanged, the lion was as a lamb. I then desired him to bring in one or two more of the most angry of his companions. He did so; and in two minutes, their minds were changed too. I then bade them who were in the room make way, that I might go out among the people. As soon as I was in the midst of them, I said, "Here I am: what do you want with me?" Many cried out, "We want you to go with us to the Justice." I told them, "That I will with all my heart." So I walked before, and two or three hundred of them followed, to Bentley-Hall, two miles from Wednesbury: but a servant came out, and told them, "Jus

tice Lane was not to be spoken with." Here they were at a stand, till one advised, to go to Justice Persehouse, at Walsal. About seven we came to his house: but he also sent word, "That he was in bed, and could not be spoken with."

All the company were now pretty well agreed, to make the best of their way home: but we had not gone a hundred yards, when the mob of Walsal came pouring in like a flood. The Darleston mob stood against them for a while, but in a short time, some being knocked down, and others much hurt, the rest ran away, and left me in their hands.

To attempt to speak was vain, the noise being like that of taking a city by storm: so they dragged me along till we came to the town, at a few hundred yards distance; where, seeing the door of a large house open, I endeavoured to go in; but a man, catching me by the hair, (my hat having been caught away at the beginning,) pulled me back into the middle of the mob, who were as so many ramping and roaring lions. They hurried me from thence, through the main street, from one end of the town to the other. I continued speaking all the time to those within hearing, feeling no pain or weariness. At the west end of the town, seeing a door half open, I made towards it, and would have gone in; but a gentleman in the shop would not suffer me, saying, "They would pull the house down, if I did." However; here I stood, and asked, "Are you willing to hear me speak?" Many cried out, "No, no; knock his brains out." Others said, "Nay, but we *will* hear him speak first." I began asking, "What hurt have I done to you? Whom among you have I wronged in word or deed?" And continued speaking, till my voice failed. Then the floods lifted up their voice again, many crying out, "Bring him away, bring him away."

Feeling my strength renewed, I spoke again, and broke out aloud into prayer. And now one of the men, who had headed the mob before, turned and said, "Sir, follow me: not a man shall touch a hair of your head." Two or three more confirmed his words. At the same time the Mayor (for it was he that stood in the shop) cried out, "For shame, for shame; let him go." An honest butcher spoke to the same effect; and seconded his words by laying hold of four or five, one after another, who were running on the most fiercely. The people then dividing to the right and left, those three or four men who had spoken before, took me between them, and carried me through the midst: bitterly protesting, "they would knock down any that touched him:" but, on the bridge, the mob rallied again: we therefore went on one side, over a mill-dam, and thence through the meadows, till a little after ten, God brought me safe to Wednesbury, having lost only a part of my waistcoat, and a little skin from one of my hands.

I never saw such a chain of providences before, so many convincing proofs, that the hand of God is on every person and thing, overruling him as it seemeth him good.

Among these I cannot but reckon the circumstances that follow:

1. That they endeavoured, abundance of times, to trip me up, as we went down hill, over the wet, slippery grass, to the town ; as well judging, that if I was once on the ground, I should hardly rise again : but I made no slip, nor the least stumble at all, till I was entirely out of their hands. 2. That although many strove to lay hold on my collar, or clothes, they could not fasten at all ; their fingers, I cannot tell how, slipping along, without fixing once : only one man seized the flap of my waistcoat, and took it away with him ; the other flap, in the pocket of which was a twenty pound bank note, was torn but half off. 3. That a lusty man, just behind, struck at me many times with a large oaken stick ; with which if he had struck me, on the back of the head, I should probably have preached no more : but every time the blow was turned aside, I know not how, for I could not move to the right hand or left. 4. That another man came rushing through the press, raised his arm to strike, let it sink again, and stroking my head, said, " What soft hair he has ! I cannot find in my heart to hurt him." 5. That I went as straight to the Mayor's door, when I was a little loosed for a few moments, as if I had known it, (which they probably thought I did,) and found him standing in the shop, which gave the first check to the fury of the people. 6. That no creature (at least within my hearing) laid any thing to my charge, either true or false ; having, in the hurry, it seems, forgot to provide themselves with an accusation of any kind. And, lastly, That they were equally at a loss to know what to do with me, none proposing any determinate thing. The cry of most was, " Away with him, away with him : " of others, " Kill him at once." But none so much as once mentioned how ; only one or two (I almost tremble to relate it) screamed out. (with what meaning I cannot tell,) " Crucify the dog, crucify him."

By how gentle degrees does God prepare us, either for doing or suffering his will ! Two years since, one threw at me a piece of brick, which grazed on my shoulder, but hurt me not. It was a year after, that another threw a stone, which struck me between the eyes ; but the hurt was soon healed, and still no man had power to lay a hand upon me. At St. Ives, last month, I received one blow, the first I ever had, on the side of the head ; and this night two, one before we came into the town, and one after I was gone out into the meadows. But though one man struck me on the breast with all his might, and the other on the mouth, so that the blood gushed out, I felt no more pain from either of the blows, than if they had touched me with a straw. October 22, 1743.

" *Lo I come*, if this soul and body may be useful to any thing, *to do thy will, O God*. And if it please thee to use the power thou hast over dust and ashes, over weak flesh and blood, over a brittle vessel of clay, over the work of thine own hands ; lo, here they are, to suffer also thy good pleasure. If thou please to visit me either with pain or dishonour, I will *humble myself* under it, and through thy grace, be *obedient unto death, even the death upon the cross*. Whatsoever may befall me, either from neighbours or strangers.

since it is thou employest them, though they know it not, (unless thou help me to some lawful means of redressing the wrong,) I will not *open my mouth before the Lord*, who smiteth me, except only to *bless the Lord*. Hereafter no man can take away any thing from me, no life, no honour, no estate; since I am ready to lay them down, as soon as I perceive thou requirest them at my hands. Nevertheless, *O Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me; but if not, thy will be done*. Whatever sufferings hereafter may trouble my flesh, or whatever agonies may trouble my spirit, *O Father, into thy hands will I commend my life, and all that concerneth it*. And if thou be pleased, either that I live yet a while, or not, I will, with my Saviour, *bow down my head*; I will humble myself under thy hand; I will give up all thou art pleased to ask, until at last I *give up the ghost*."

---

AN

## ANSWER TO MR. R. H.'S TRACT,

ENTITLED

### "IMPOSTURE DETECTED."

IN the Tract just published by Mr. R. H. there are several *assertions* which are *not true*. And the whole Pamphlet is written in an *unchristian* and *ungentlemanlike manner*. I shall first set down the *assertions* in order, and then proceed to the *manner*.

1. "Throughout the whole of Paul's Epistles, he can scarcely write a *single line* without mentioning Christ," p. 3. I just opened on the 15th chapter of the First Epistle to the Corinthians. In the last thirty verses of this chapter, how often does he *mention Christ*? In every *single line*?

2. "In that *wretched harangue*, which he calls a sermon, he makes *himself* the *only* subject of *his own panegyrics*," page 4.

Being aware of this charge, I have said, "I am, in one respect, an improper person to give this information; as it will oblige me frequently to speak of myself, which may have the appearance of ostentation. But with regard to this, I can only cast myself upon the candour of my hearers, being persuaded they will put the most favourable construction, upon what is not a matter of choice, but of necessity. For there is no other person, if I decline the task, who can supply my place, who has a perfect knowledge of the work in question, from the beginning of it to this day." See Vol. VI. p. 107.

I give an account of the rise of this work at Oxford, from 1725 to 1735, *ibid*. At London and elsewhere, p. 108, 109. In all this there is not a line of *panegyric upon myself*, but a naked recital of facts. Nor is there any panegyric on any one in the following pages, but a plain account of the Methodist Doctrines.

It may be observed, (if it is worth observing,) that I preached *in the open air*, in October, 1735. Mr. Whitefield was not then ordained.

3. "Not a single line tending to vindicate or illustrate any one fundamental doctrine of the gospel, appears throughout the whole," p. 4. Yes, "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God," is one fundamental doctrine of the gospel. "Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself," is another. And both these are vindicated and illustrated for several pages together.

4. "His sacrilegious hand violates the ashes of the dead, traduces the character of Mr. Whitefield, insinuates that he was the first who preached *in the open air*; with the *greatest bitterness of speech*, traduces the dead, as a dissenter from the church," p. 16.

My words are, (p. 114) "A good man, who met with us at Oxford, while he was absent from us, conversed much with dissenters, and contracted a strong prejudice against the church. And, not long after, he totally separated from us;" from my brother and me. This is every word I say about Mr. Whitefield. And is this "violating the ashes of the dead?" Is this "trading his character?" Certainly not trading him as "a dissenter from the church;" much less "with the *greatest bitterness of speech*." Where is the bitterness? And this is the whole ground, for pouring out such a flood of abuse, obloquy, and calumny! But Mr. Hill goes on: "With ungodly *craft* he *claws* up the ashes of the dead. He says, Mr. Whitefield, by conversing with the dissenters," (I mean chiefly the Presbyterians in New England,) "contracted a strong prejudice against the church," p. 18. I say so still. And how will Mr. Hill disprove it? Why, "he manifested his strong attachment to the church, by erecting Tottenham Court Chapel for the celebration of the church service: yea, and reading the liturgy himself." Nay, if this proved *his* strong attachment to the church, it will equally prove mine. For I have read the liturgy as often as he. And I am now erecting a *Chapel*, (*Hinc illæ lachrymæ!*) for the celebration of the church service.

5. "He cast lots for his creed," p. 8. Never in my life. "That paltry story is untrue." They who tell it, cast no honour upon him, who published a private letter, written in confidence of friendship.

6. "He gives up *the righteousness of Christ*," p. 9. No more than I give up his godhead. But I renounce both the *phrase* and thing, as it is explained by *Antinomian* writers.

7. "He gives up the *atonement* of Christ. The atonement, and the righteousness of Christ, he considers as mere words," p. 10. Nothing can be more false. It is not concerning these I advise,

*Projicere ampullas, et sesquipedalia verba.*

"But a man cannot *fear God*, and *work righteousness*, evangelically, without living faith." Most certainly. And who denies this? I have proved it a hundred times.

8. "He RENOUNCED the grand protestant doctrine of justification by faith alone, in those *horrid Minutes*." I never renounced it yet,

and, I trust, never shall. The *horrid Minutes* Mr. Fletcher has so effectually vindicated, that I wonder Mr. Hill should mention them any more.

9. "After all possible *candour* and *forbearance* had been shown to him," (by whom? By Mr. Toplady—Mr. Richard Hill—or Mr. Rowland Hill, who has excelled them all?) "this *interloper*" (a pretty word, but what does it mean?) "has *totally renounced the Gospel of Christ*," p. 11. Totally false; unless, by the gospel, be meant, Antinomian Calvinism.

10. "In his last year's Minutes, he speaks of the *doctrines of Grace*" (Calvinism) "with as *much venom* as ever." Just as much. Let the reader judge. The words occur, p. 11.

"Q. 26. Calvinism has been the greatest hinderance to the work of God. What makes men swallow it so greedily?"

"A. Because it is so pleasing to flesh and blood, the doctrine of Final Perseverance in particular.

"Q. 27. What can be done to stop its progress?"

"A. 1. Let all our preachers carefully read our Tracts, and Mr. Fletcher's and Mr. Sellon's.

"2. Let them preach universal redemption frequently and explicitly; but in love and gentleness: taking care never to return railing for railing. Let the Calvinists have all this on their side."

*Ecce signum!* 11. "He is most marvellously curious in forbidding his preachers to say, *My lady*."

Were ever words so distorted and misrepresented? The words in the Minutes are, (p. 12,) "Do not imitate them," (the Calvinists of Trevecka in particular,) "in screaming, allegorizing, calling themselves ordained, boasting themselves of their *learning*, the *college*, or *my lady*."

Is this "forbidding them to say, *my lady*?" No more than forbidding them to make a bow.

12. "A vast number of *sluts* had taken possession of the preaching-houses;" (no, the preaching-houses were not in question;) "and *female-servants*, by courtesy, called maids," (civil and kind! but neither were *servants* in question,) "are *filthy slovens* in their persons, dress and *manœuvres*." (See, Mr. H. understands *French*!) "So Mr. John gives the public to understand." No, not Mr. John, but Mr. H. He goes on. "And how is this mighty grievance to be redressed? Why, says this Solomon in a cassock," (is not that witty?) "sluts are to be kept out, by not letting them in," p. 12. And is all this wit bestowed upon three poor lines! The words are just these:

"Complaint is made that sluts spoil our houses.

"How then can we prevent this?"

"Let no known slut live in any of them."

What a colour does Mr. Hill put upon this? But, meantime, where is conscience? Where is honour?

13. "He denies the doctrines of the Church of England," p. 13. That is, absolute predestination. Mr. Sellon has abundantly proved,

that this is no doctrine of the Church of England. When Mr. H. has answered his arguments, I will give him some more. The objections against lay-preachers, (which come ill from Mr. H.) I have largely answered in the *Third Appeal to Men of Reason and Religion*. But I know not that any lay-preachers in connexion with me, either baptize children, or administer the Lord's Supper. I never *entreated* any thing of Bishop Erasmus, (who had abundant unexceptionable credentials as to his episcopal character,) nor did he "ever reject any overture" made by me, p. 14. Herein Mr. H. has been misinformed. I deny the fact; let him produce his evidence. The *perfection* I hold, is so far from being contrary to the doctrine of our church, that it is exactly the same which every clergyman prays for every Sunday; "Cleanse the thoughts of our hearts by the inspiration of thy Holy Spirit, that we may *perfectly love* thee, and *worthily magnify* thy Holy Name." I mean neither more nor less than this. In doctrine, therefore, I do not dissent from the Church of England.

14. However, "he renounces the *discipline* of the church," p. 15. This objection too I have answered at large in my letters to Dr. Church; another kind of opponent than Mr. R. H. A gentleman, a scholar, and a Christian; and as such he both spoke and wrote.

15. "He falsely says, Almost all who were educated at Treveoka, except those that were ordained, and some of them too, disclaimed the church; nay, and spoke of it upon all occasions with exquisite bitterness and contempt." This is a terrible truth. If Lady H. requires it, I can procure affidavits, both concerning the time and place.

16. "He professes, he stands in no need of Christ's righteousness," p. 23. I never professed any such thing. The very sermon referred to, (the fifth in volume V) proves the contrary. But I flatly deny *that sense of imputed righteousness*, which Mr. H. contends for.

17. "He *expressly* maintains the *merit* of *good works*, in order to justification," p. 24. Neither *expressly*, or implicitly. I *hope* Mr. H. has not read Mr. Fletcher's *Cheeks*, nor my Sermons on the subject. If he has not, he has a *poor* excuse for this assertion: if he has, he can have no excuse at all.

18. "He contradicts himself concerning Enoch and Elijah. See his notes, the former edition," p. 28. Wisely directed! For Mr. H. *knew* the mistake was corrected in the next edition.

19. "He is ever raising malicious accusations against the *lives* and *doctrines* of *all* Calvinists, whether churchmen or dissenters, throughout all the kingdom," p. 29.

Thousands of Calvinists know the contrary, both churchmen and dissenters.

20. "He exerts all his art, to irritate the civil powers against *all the people of God*," p. 30. "He says, the dissenters *revile*, and *lightly esteem*, the sacred person of the king." I answer, 1. Are the dissenters, are the Calvinists, *all the people of God*? 2. If you think they are, do *all* these defend the American rebels? Who affirms it?

I hope, not a quarter, not a tenth part of them. 3. Do I say, *All* the dissenters *revile* the king? I neither say so, nor think so. Those that do, are guilty of what you impute to me. They "irritate the civil powers" against themselves.

21. "He says, he will no more continue in fellowship with Calvinists, than with thieves, drunkards, or common swearers." No: I say, "I will have no fellowship with those *who rail at their governors*, (be they Calvinists or Arminians,) who *speak all manner of evil of them in private*, if not in *public* too." "Such is the character he gives of the Calvinistic Methodists," p. 31. I do not; no more than of the Arminians. But I know there have been such among them: if they are wiser now, I am glad. In the mean time, let him wear the cap whom it fits, be it Mr. Wilkes, or Mr. H. himself.

22. "This *apostate miscreant*" (civil!) "invites the king and his ministers, to fall upon," whom? Those who "*rail at their governors*, who *speak all manner of evil of them in private*, if not in *public* too." I am glad they cry out, though before they are hurt, and I hope they will cease to *speak evil of dignities*, before those who *bear not the sword in vain fall upon them*, not for their opinion, but their evil practices.

23. "He says, Calvinists and *all* dissenters are *rebels*," p. 32. I never said or thought so. "But a few years ago, he himself thought the Americans were in the right." I did; for then I thought that they sought nothing but legal *liberty*: but as soon as I was convinced they sought *independency*, I knew they were in the wrong. Mr. Evans's low and scurrilous tracts have been confuted over and over.

24. "He trumpets himself forth, as *the greatest man that has ever lived since Constantine the Great*," p. 37. *This too* is in *Italics*; it might have been in *Capitals*; but it is an utter falsehood. Mr. Hill might as well have said, "He trumpets himself forth as the King of Great Britain." The passage to which I suppose he alludes, and the only one he can allude to, is this, "When has true religion, since the time of Constantine the Great, made so large a progress within so small a space," Vol. VI. p. 111. Is this "*trumpeting myself forth as the greatest man that has ever lived since then*?"

25. "All his disciples are commanded, *Not to read* what is written against him," p. 38. No: it is the *Tabernacle* disciples are commanded *Not to read* Mr. Fletcher. And reason good; for there is no resisting the force of his arguments. Thousands, if they read them with any candour, would see, That *GOD willeth all men to be saved*.

26. Mr. H. concludes, "I should have been glad to have addressed him in the softest and most tender style; but those are weapons he turns to ridicule," p. 39. When? Show me a single instance. Indeed, I never was tried. What Calvinist ever addressed me in a soft and tender style? And which of them did I *turn to ridicule*? I am utterly guiltless in this matter.

II. 1. I have now done with the merits of the cause, having refuted the charge *in every article*. And as to the *Manner*, let any man of can-

dour judge, whether I have not *spoken the truth in love*. I proceed now to take some notice of the *Manner* wherein Mr. H. speaks: to illustrate which, I need only present a few of his flowers to the impartial reader.

2 "All the divinity we find in this *wretched harangue, which he calls a sermon*, are a few *bungling scraps* of the religion of nature, namely, Love to God, and Love to man, which a heathen might have preached as well as Mr. John," (polite!) "and probably in a much better manner. Erase half a dozen lines, and I defy any one to discover, whether *the lying apostle of the Foundry*, be a Jew, a Papist, a Pagan, or a Turk," p. 4.

"Else I should have treated *his trumpery* with the silence and *contempt* it deserves. But to see Mr. Whitefield scratched out of his grave, by the claws of this *designing wolf*," (there is a metaphor for you!) "is enough to make the very stones cry out, or (which would be a greater miracle still,) redden even a Wesley's forehead with a blush," p. 5. I think it would be a greater miracle still, to make a *wolf blush*.

"The dictatorial Mr. JOHN *lyingly* maintains argument enough, for the *gaping dupes* whom he *leads by the nose*," p. 6.

"He and his *lay-lubbers* go forth to poison the minds of men," p. 11. Are not, then, the *lay-lubbers* and the *gaping dupes* just fit for each other?

But who are these *lay-lubbers*? They are "Wesley's ragged legion of preaching tinkers, scavengers, draymen, and chimney-sweepers," p. 21.

3. "No man would do this, unless he were as *unprincipled* as a rook, and as silly as a JACKDAW."

"His own people say, *He is a very poor preacher*, and that most of his laymen, raw and ignorant as they are, preach much more to the purpose. Indeed, the old gentleman has *lost his teeth*; but should he not, then, cease *mumbling* with his gums?" p. 25.

"Why do they not keep the *shatter-brained old gentleman* locked up in a garret?" p. 36.

4. "I doubt not but, for *profit-sake*, he would profess himself a staunch Calvinist," p. 16.

"The Rev. Mr. John, Mr. Whitefield's *quondam understrapper*," *ib.* How sadly, then, did he mistake, when he so often subscribed himself, "Your dutiful, your obliged and affectionate *Son*!"

"Mark the venom that now distils from his *graceless pen*," p. 17. "The venomous quill of this *gray-headed enemy to all righteousness*," p. 19.

5. "The *wretch* thought himself safe, but the *crafty slanderer* is taken in his own net," p. 20.

"This truly Socinian, truly *infernal* passage, is found in that *heretic's* sermon," p. 23.

"The most rancorous pretences that ever actuated the *prostituted pen* of a *venal profligate*," p. 30.

“With him *Devils* and *Dissenters* are terms synonymous. If so, what a *Devil* must he be !” *ib.*

“The sole merit of the disappointed Orlando Furioso,” (how pretty and quaint that is !) “is seeking to enkindle a flame of ecclesiastical and civil discord.” No : to put it out ; which, I bless God, is done already to a great degree. “And his sole perfection consists in perfect hatred of all goodness, and all good men,” p. 31.

6. Now let all the world judge between Mr. H. and me. I do not say, all the religious world ; but all that have the smallest portion of common sense and common humanity. Setting every thing else aside, suppose him to be my superior in rank, fortune, learning, and understanding : is this treatment for a *young* man to give to an *old* one, who, at least, is no fool, and who, before Mr. H. was born, was in a more honourable employ than he is ever likely to be ? What can inspire this young hero with such a spirit, and fill his mouth with such language ? Is it any credit to his person, or to his cause ? What can men think, either of one or the other ? If he does not reverence me, or common decency, should he not reverence himself ? Why should he place himself on a level with “the ragged legion of tinkers, scavengers, draymen, chimney-sweepers ?” Nay, there are many of these, who would be ashamed to let such language come out of their mouth. If he writes any more, let him resume the scholar, the gentleman, and the Christian. Let him remember Him, who *left us an example, that we might tread in his steps : in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves, peradventure God may bring them to the knowledge of the truth.*

LONDON, June 28, 1777.

## THOUGHTS ON SLAVERY.

1. BY *Slavery*; I mean Domestic Slavery, or that of a servant to a master. A late ingenious writer well observes, “The variety of forms in which slavery appears, makes it almost impossible to convey a just notion of it, by way of definition. There are, however, certain properties, which have accompanied slavery in most places, whereby it is easily distinguished from that mild domestic *service*, which obtains in our country.”\*

2. *Slavery* imports an obligation of perpetual service, an obligation which only the consent of the master can dissolve. Neither, in some countries, can the master himself dissolve it, without the consent of judges appointed by the law. It generally gives the master an arbitrary power, of any correction not affecting life or limb. Sometimes, even these are exposed to his will ; or protected only by a fine, or some slight punishment, too inconsiderable to restrain a master of a harsh temper. It creates an incapacity of acquiring any

\*See Mr. Hargrave’s Plea for Somerset the Negro.

thing, except for the master's benefit. It allows the master to alienate the slave, in the same manner as his cows and horses. Lastly, it descends, in its full extent, from parent to child, even to the last generation.

3. The beginning of this may be dated from the remotest period, of which we have an account in history. It commenced in the barbarous state of society, and, in process of time, spread into all nations. It prevailed particularly among the Jews, the Greeks, the Romans, and the ancient Germans: and was transmitted by them to the various kingdoms and states, which arose out of the Roman empire. But, after Christianity prevailed, it gradually declined in almost all parts of Europe. This great change began in Spain, about the end of the eighth century; and was become general, in most other kingdoms of Europe, before the middle of the fourteenth.

4. From this time, slavery was nearly extinct, till the commencement of the sixteenth century; when the discovery of America, and of the western and eastern coasts of Africa, gave occasion to the revival of it. It took its rise from the Portuguese, who, to supply the Spaniards with men, to cultivate their new possessions in America, procured Negroes from Africa, whom they sold for slaves to the American Spaniards. This began in the year 1508, when they imported the first Negroes into Hispaniola. In 1540, Charles the Fifth, then king of Spain, determined to put an end to *Negro-slavery*; giving positive orders, That all the Negro-slaves in the Spanish dominions should be set free. And this was accordingly done, by Lagascar, whom he sent and empowered to free them all, on condition of continuing to labour for their masters. But soon after Lagascar returned to Spain, slavery returned and flourished as before. Afterwards other nations, as they acquired possessions in America, followed the examples of the Spaniards; and slavery has taken deep root in most of our American colonies.

II. Such is the nature of slavery; such the beginning of *Negro-slavery* in America. But some may desire to know, what country it is from which the Negroes are brought? What sort of men, of what temper and behaviour, are they in their own country? And, in what manner they are generally procured, carried to, and treated in America?

1. And, first, What kind of country is that from whence they are brought? Is it so remarkably horrid, dreary, and barren, that it is a kindness to deliver them out of it? I believe many have apprehended so: but it is an entire mistake, if we may give credit to those who have lived many years therein, and could have no motive to misrepresent it.

2. That part of Africa whence the Negroes are brought, commonly known by the name of Guinea, extends along the coast, in the whole, between three and four thousand miles. From the river Senegal, (seventeen degrees north of the Line,) to Cape Sierra Leone, it contains seven hundred miles. Thence it runs eastward about fifteen hundred miles, including the Grain-coast, the Ivory-

coast, the Gold-coast, and the Slave-coast; with the large kingdom of Benin. From thence it runs southward about twelve hundred miles, and contains the kingdoms of Congo and Angola.

3. Concerning the first, the Senegal coast, Mons. Bene, who lived there sixteen years, after describing its fruitfulness near the sea, says, "The farther you go from the sea, the more fruitful and well-improved is the country, abounding in pulse, Indian corn, and various fruits. Here are vast meadows, which feed large herds of great and small cattle. And the villages, which lie thick, show the country is well peopled." And again: "I was surprised to see the land so well cultivated; scarce a spot lay unimproved: the low lands, divided by small canals, were all sowed with rice; the higher grounds were planted with Indian corn, and peas of different sorts. Their beef is excellent; poultry plenty, and very cheap, as are all the necessaries of life."

4. As to the Grain and Ivory-coasts, we learn from eye-witnesses, that the soil is in general fertile, producing abundance of rice and roots. Indigo and cotton thrive without cultivation. Fish is in great plenty; the flocks and herds are numerous, and the trees laden with fruit.

5. The Gold-coast and Slave-coast, all who have seen it, agree, is exceeding fruitful and pleasant, producing vast quantities of rice and other grain, plenty of fruit and roots, palm-wine and oil, and fish in great abundance, with much tame and wild cattle. The very same account is given us of the soil and produce of the kingdoms of Benin, Congo, and Angola. From which it appears, that Guinea, in general, is far from a horrid, dreary, barren country; is one of the most fruitful, as well as the most pleasant countries, in the known world. It is said, indeed, to be unhealthy: and so it is to strangers; but perfectly healthy to the native inhabitants.

6. Such is the country from which the Negroes are brought. We come next to inquire, What sort of men they are, of what temper and behaviour, not in our plantations, but in their native country. And here, likewise, the surest way is, to take our account from eye and ear-witnesses. Now those who have lived in the Senegal country, observe, it is inhabited by three nations, the Jalofs, Fulis, and Mandingos. The king of the Jalofs has under him several ministers, who assist in the exercise of justice; the chief justice goes in circuit through all his dominions, to hear complaints, and determine controversies. And the viceroy goes with him, to inspect the behaviour of the alkadi, or governor of each village. The Fulis are governed by their chief men, who rule with much moderation. Few of them will drink any thing stronger than water, being strict Mahometans. The government is easy, because the people are of a quiet and good disposition; and so well instructed in what is right, that a man who wrongs another is the abomination of all. They desire no more land than they use, which they cultivate with great care and industry: if any of them are known to be made slaves by the white men, they all join to redeem them. They not only sup-

port all that are old, or blind, or lame, among themselves ; but have frequently supplied the necessities of the Mandingos, when they were distressed by famine.

7. The Mandingos, says Mons. Brue, are right Mahometans, drinking neither wine nor brandy. They are industrious and laborious, keeping their ground well cultivated, and breeding a good stock of cattle. Every town has a governor, and he appoints the labour of the people. The men work the ground designed for corn ; the women and girls, the rice-grounds. He afterwards divides the corn and rice among them ; and decides all quarrels, if any arise. All the Mahometan Negroes constantly go to public prayers thrice a day ; there being a priest in every village, who regularly calls them together : and it is surprising to see the modesty, attention, and reverence, which they observe during their worship. These three nations practise several trades ; they have smiths, sadlers, potters, and weavers. And they are very ingenious at their several occupations. Their smiths not only make all the instruments of iron which they have occasion to use, but likewise work many things neatly in gold and silver. It is chiefly the women and children who weave fine cotton cloth, which they dye blue and black.

8. It was of these parts of Guinea, that Mons. Adanson, Correspondent of the Royal Academy of Sciences at Paris, from 1749 to 1753, gives the following account, both as to the country and people : “ Which way soever I turned my eyes, I beheld a perfect image of pure nature : an agreeable solitude, bounded on every side by a charming landscape ; the rural situation of cottages, in the midst of trees ; the ease and quietness of the Negroes, reclined under the shade of the spreading foliage, with the simplicity of their dress and manners : the whole revived in my mind the idea of our first parents, and I seemed to contemplate the world in its primitive state. They are, generally speaking, very good-natured, sociable, and obliging. I was not a little pleased with my first reception ; and it fully convinced me, that there ought to be a considerable abatement made, in the accounts we have of the savage character of the Africans.” He adds, “ It is amazing that an illiterate people should reason so pertinently concerning the heavenly bodies. There is no doubt but that, with proper instruments, they would become excellent astronomers.”

9. The inhabitants of the Grain and Ivory-coasts, are represented, by those that deal with them, as sensible, courteous, and the fairest traders on the coasts of Guinea. They rarely drink to excess : if any do, they are severely punished by the king's order. They are seldom troubled with war : if a difference happen between two nations, they commonly end the dispute amicably.

10. The inhabitants of the Gold and Slave-coasts likewise, when they are not artfully incensed against each other, live in great union and friendship, being generally well tempered, civil, tractable, and ready to help any that need it. In particular, the natives of the kingdom of Whidah, are civil, kind, and obliging to strangers. And

they are the most gentleman-like of all the Negroes, abounding in good manners toward each other. The inferiors pay the utmost respect to their superiors: so wives to their husbands, children to their parents. And they are remarkably industrious; all are constantly employed; the men in agriculture, the women in spinning and weaving cotton.

11. The Gold and Slave-coasts are divided into several districts, some governed by kings, others by the principal men, who take care each of their own town or village, and prevent or appease tumults. They punish murder and adultery severely; very frequently with death. Theft and robbery are punished by a fine proportionable to the goods that were taken. All the natives of this coast, though heathens, believe there is one God, the Author of them and all things. They appear, likewise, to have a confused apprehension of a future state. And, accordingly, every town and village has a place of public worship: it is remarkable, that they have no beggars among them; such is the care of the chief men, in every city and village, to provide some easy labour, even for the old and weak. Some are employed in blowing the smith's bellows; others in pressing palm-oil; others in grinding of colours. If they are too weak even for this, they sell provisions in the market.

12. The natives of the kingdom of Benin, are a reasonable and good-natured people. They are sincere and inoffensive, and do no injustice either to one another or to strangers. They are eminently civil and courteous: if you make them a present, they endeavour to repay it double. And if they are trusted till the ship returns the next year, they are sure honestly to pay the whole debt. Theft is punished among them, although not with the same severity as murder. If a man and woman, of any quality, are taken in adultery, they are certain to be put to death, and their bodies thrown on a dunghill, and left a prey to wild beasts. They are punctually just and honest in their dealings; and are also very charitable: the king and the great lords taking care to employ all that are capable of any work. And those that are utterly helpless they keep for God's sake; so that here also are no beggars. The inhabitants of Congo and Angola are generally a quiet people. They discover a good understanding, and behave in a friendly manner to strangers, being of a mild temper, and an affable carriage. Upon the whole, therefore, the Negroes who inhabit the coast of Africa, from the river Senegal to the southern bounds of Angola, are so far from being the stupid, senseless, brutish, lazy barbarians, the fierce, cruel, perfidious savages they have been described, that, on the contrary, they are represented, by those who have no motive to flatter them, as remarkably sensible, considering the few advantages they have for improving their understanding: as industrious to the highest degree, perhaps more so than any other natives of so warm a climate; as fair, just, and honest, in all their dealings, unless where white men have taught them to be otherwise: and as far more mild, friendly, and kind to strangers, than any of our forefathers were. Our forefathers!

Where shall we find, at this day, among the fair-faced natives of Europe, a nation generally practising the justice, mercy, and truth, which are found among these poor Africans? Suppose the preceding accounts are true, (which I see no reason or pretence to doubt of,) we may leave England and France, to seek genuine honesty in Benin, Congo, or Angola.

III. We have now seen what kind of country it is from which the Negroes are brought: and what sort of men, (even white men being the judges,) they were in their own country. Inquire we, thirdly, In what manner are they generally procured, carried to, and treated in America?

1. *First.* In what manner are they procured? Part of them by fraud. Captains of ships, from time to time, have invited Negroes to come on board, and then carried them away. But far more have been procured by force. The Christians, landing upon their coasts, have seized as many as they found, men, women, and children, and transported them to America. It was about 1551, that the English began trading to Guinea; at first, for gold and elephants' teeth, but soon after for men. In 1556, Sir John Hawkins sailed with two ships to Cape Verd, where he sent eighty men on shore to catch Negroes. But the natives flying, they fell farther down, and there set the men on shore, "to burn their towns, and take the inhabitants." But they met with such resistance, that they had seven men killed, and took but ten Negroes. So they went still farther down, till, having taken enough, they proceeded to the West-Indies and sold them.

2. It was some time before the Europeans found a more compendious way of procuring African slaves, by prevailing upon them to make war upon each other, and to sell their prisoners. Till then, they seldom had any wars; but were, in general, quiet and peaceable. But the white men first taught them drunkenness and avarice, and then hired them to sell one another. Nay, by this means, even their kings are induced to sell their own subjects. So Mr. Moore, (factor of the African Company in 1730,) informs us, "When the king of Barsalli wants goods or brandy, he sends to the English governor at James' Fort, who immediately sends a sloop. Against the time it arrives, he plunders some of his neighbours' towns, selling the people for the goods he wants. At other times he falls upon one of his own towns, and makes bold to sell his own subjects." So Mons. Brue says, "I wrote to the king, (not the same,) if he had a sufficient number of slaves, I would treat with him. He seized three hundred of his own people, and sent word, he was ready to deliver them for goods." He adds, "Some of the natives are always ready," (when well paid;) "to surprise and carry off their own countrymen. They come at night, without noise, and if they find any lone cottage, surround it, and carry off all the people." Barbot, another French factor, says, "Many of the slaves sold by the Negroes are prisoners of war, taken in incursions they make into their enemies' territories. Others are stolen. Abundance of little blacks, of both sexes, are stolen away by their neighbours.

when found abroad on the road, or in the woods, or else in the corn-fields, at the time of year when their parents keep them there all day to scare away the devouring birds." That their own parents sell them, is utterly false. Whites, not blacks, are without natural affection!

3. To set the manner wherein the Negroes are procured, in a yet stronger light, it will suffice to give an extract of two voyages to Guinea on this account. The first is taken verbatim from the original manuscript of the surgeon's journal.

"Sestro, Dec. 29, 1724. No trade to-day, though many traders came on board. They informed us that the people are gone to war within land, and will bring prisoners enough in two or three days; in hopes of which we stay.

"The 30th. No trade yet: but our traders came on board to-day, and informed us the people had burnt four towns; so that tomorrow we expect slaves off.

The 31st. Fair weather; but no trading yet. We see each night towns burning. But we hear many of the Sestro men are killed by the inland Negroes; so that we fear this war will be unsuccessful.

"The 2d of January. Last night we saw a prodigious fire break out about eleven o'clock, and this morning see the town of Sestro burnt down to the ground." (It contained some hundreds of houses.) "So that we find their enemies are too hard for them at present; and, consequently, our trade is spoiled here. Therefore, about seven o'clock, we weighed anchor to proceed lower down."

4. The second extract, taken from the journal of a surgeon, who went from New-York on the same trade, is as follows: "The commander of the vessel sent to acquaint the king, that he wanted a cargo of slaves. The king promised to furnish him, and in order to it, set out, designing to surprise some town, and make all the people prisoners. Some time after, the king sent him word, he had not yet met with the desired success; having attempted to break up two towns, but having been twice repulsed: but that he still hoped to procure the number of slaves. In this design he persisted, till he met his enemies in the field. A battle was fought, which lasted three days. And the engagement was so bloody, that four thousand five hundred men were slain upon the spot!" Such is the manner wherein the Negroes are procured! Thus the Christians preach the gospel to the heathens!

5. Thus they are *procured*. But in what numbers, and in what manner are they carried to America? Mr. Anderson, in his History of Trade and Commerce, observes, "England supplies her American Colonies with Negro-slaves, amounting, in number, to about a hundred thousand every year." That is, so many are taken on board our ships: but at least ten thousand of them die in the voyage; about a fourth part more die at the different islands, in what is called the seasoning. So that, at an average, in the passage and seasoning together, thirty thousand die: that is, properly, are murdered. O earth! O sea! cover not thou their blood!

6. When they are brought down to the shore in order to be sold, our surgeons thoroughly examine them, and that quite naked, women and men, without any distinction: those that are approved are set on one side. In the mean time, a burning iron, with the arms or name of the company, lies in the fire, with which they are marked on the breast. Before they are put into the ships, their masters strip them of all they have on their backs, so that they come on board stark naked, women as well as men. It is common for several hundreds of them to be put on board one vessel: where they are stowed together in as little room as it is possible for them to be crowded in. It is easy to suppose what a condition they must soon be in, between heat, thirst, and stench of various kinds. So that it is no wonder so many should die in the passage; but rather, that any survive it.

7. When the vessels arrive at their destined port, the Negroes are again exposed naked, to the eyes of all that flock together, and to the examination of their purchasers; then they are separated to the plantations of their several masters, to see each other no more. Here you may see mothers hanging over their daughters, bedewing their naked breasts with tears, and daughters clinging to their parents, till the whipper soon obliges them to part. And what can be more wretched than the condition they then enter upon? Banished from their country, from their friends and relations for ever, from every comfort of life, they are reduced to a state, scarce any way preferable to that of beasts of burden. In general, a few roots, not of the nicest kind, usually yams or potatoes, are their food; and two rags, that neither screen them from the heat of the day, nor the cold of the night, their covering. Their sleep is very short, their labour continual, and frequently above their strength; so that death sets many of them at liberty before they have lived out half their days. The time they work in the West Indies is from day-break till noon, and from two o'clock till dark; during which time they are attended by overseers, who, if they think them dilatory, or think any thing not so well done as it should be, whip them most unmercifully; so that you may see their bodies long after, whealed and scarred usually from the shoulders to the waist. And before they are suffered to go to their quarters, they have commonly something to do, as collecting herbage for the horses, or gathering fuel for the boilers. So that it is often past twelve before they can get home. Hence, if their food is not prepared, they are sometimes called to labour again, before they can satisfy their hunger. And no excuse will avail. If they are not in the field immediately, they must expect to feel the lash. Did the Creator intend that the noblest creatures in the visible world should live such a life as this?

“Are *these* thy glorious works, Parent of Good?”

8. As to the punishment inflicted on them, says Sir Hans Sloane, “they frequently geld them, or chop off half a foot! After they are whipped till they are raw all over, some put pepper and salt upon them: some drop melted wax upon their skin; others cut off their

ears, and constrain them to broil and eat them. For rebellion," (that is, asserting their native liberty, which they have as much right to as the air they breathe,) "they fasten them down to the ground with crooked sticks on every limb, and then applying fire by degrees to the feet and hands, they burn them gradually upward to the head!"

9. But will not the laws made in the plantations, prevent or redress all cruelty and oppression? We will take but a few of those laws for a specimen, and then let any man judge.

In order to rivet the chain of slavery, the law of Virginia ordains, "That no slave shall be set free, upon any pretence whatever, except for some meritorious services, to be adjudged and allowed by the *Governor and Council*: and that where any slave shall be set free by his owner, otherwise than is herein directed, the church-wardens of the parish, wherein such Negro shall reside for the space of one month, are hereby authorized and required, to *take up and sell* the said Negro, by *public outcry*."

Will not these law-givers take effectual care to prevent cruelty and oppression?

The law of Jamaica ordains, "Every slave that shall run away, and continue absent from his master twelve months, shall be *deem'd rebellious*." And, by another law, fifty pounds are allowed, to those "who kill, or bring in alive, a *rebellious* slave." So their law treats these poor men with as little ceremony and consideration, as if they were merely brute beasts! But the innocent blood which is shed in consequence of such a detestable law, must call for vengeance on the murderous abettors and actors of such deliberate wickedness.

10. But the law of Barbadoes exceeds even this: "If any Negro under punishment, by his master, or his order, for running away, or any other crime or misdemeanour, shall suffer in *life or member*, no person whatsoever shall be liable to any fine therefore. But if any man, of wantonness, or only of blood-mindedness, or cruel intention, *wilfully* kill a Negro of his own," (now observe the severe punishment!) "he shall pay, into the public treasury, fifteen pounds sterling: And not be liable to any other punishment or forfeiture for the same!"

Nearly allied to this, is that law of Virginia: "After proclamation is issued against slaves that run away, it is lawful for any person whatsoever to kill and destroy such slaves, by such ways and means as he shall think fit."

We have seen already some of the ways and means which have been *thought fit* on such occasions. And many more might be mentioned. One gentleman, when I was abroad, *thought fit* to roast his slave alive! But if the most natural act of "running away" from intolerable tyranny, deserves such relentless severity, what punishment have these *law-makers* to expect hereafter, on account of their own enormous offences!

IV. 1. This is the plain, unaggravated matter of fact. Such is the manner wherein our African slaves are procured: such the manner wherein they are removed from their native land, and wherein

they are treated in our plantations. I would now inquire, Whether these things can be defended, on the principles of even heathen honesty? Whether they can be reconciled, (setting the Bible out of the question,) with any degree of either justice or mercy?

2. The grand plea is, "They are authorized by law." But can law, human law, change the nature of things? Can it turn darkness into light, or evil into good? By no means. Notwithstanding ten thousand laws, right is right, and wrong is wrong still. There must still remain an essential difference between justice and injustice, cruelty and mercy. So that I still ask, Who can reconcile this treatment of the Negroes, first and last, with either mercy or justice?

Where is the justice of inflicting the severest evils, on those that have done us no wrong? Of depriving those, that never injured us in word or deed, of every comfort of life? Of tearing them from their native country, and depriving them of liberty itself? To which an Angolan has the same natural right as an Englishman, and on which he sets as high a value? Yea, where is the justice of taking away the lives of innocent, inoffensive men? Murdering thousands of them in their own land, by the hands of their own countrymen? Many thousands, year after year, on shipboard, and then casting them like dung into the sea! And tens of thousands in that cruel slavery, to which they are so unjustly reduced?

3. But waiving, for the present, all other considerations, I strike at the root of this complicated villany. I absolutely deny all slaveholding to be consistent with any degree of natural justice.

I cannot place this in a clearer light, than that great ornament of his profession, Judge Blackstone, has already done. Part of his words are as follows:

"The three origins of the right of slavery assigned by Justinian, are all built upon false foundations. 1. Slavery is said to arise from captivity in war. The conqueror having a right to the life of his captive, if he spares that, has then a right to deal with them as he pleases. But this is untrue, if taken generally, That by the laws of nations a man has a right to kill his enemy. He has only a right to kill him in particular cases, in cases of absolute necessity for self-defence. And it is plain, this absolute necessity did not subsist, since he did not kill him, but made him prisoner. War itself is justifiable only on principles of self-preservation. Therefore it gives us no right over prisoners, but to hinder their hurting us by confining them. Much less can it give a right to torture, or kill, or even enslave an enemy when the war is over. Since therefore the right of making our prisoners slaves, depends on a supposed right of slaughter, that foundation failing, the consequence which is drawn from it must fail likewise."

"It is said, secondly, Slavery may begin, by one man's selling himself to another. And it is true, a man may sell himself to work for another; but he cannot sell himself to be a slave, as above defined. Every sale implies an equivalent given to the seller, in lieu of what he transfers to the buyer. But what equivalent can be given for life or liberty? His property likewise, with the very price

which he seems to receive, devolves *ipso facto* to his master, the instant he becomes his slave: in this case therefore the buyer gives nothing. Of what validity then can a sale be, which destroys the very principle upon which all sales are founded?"

"We are told, thirdly, that men may be *born slaves*, by being the children of slaves. But this being built upon the two former rights, must fall together with them, if neither captivity, nor contract can, by the plain law of nature and reason, reduce the parent to a state of slavery, much less can they reduce the offspring." It clearly follows, that all slavery is as irreconcilable to justice as to mercy.

4. That slave-holding is utterly inconsistent with mercy, is almost too plain to need a proof. Indeed it is said, "That these negroes being prisoners of war, our captains and factors buy them, merely to save them from being put to death. And is not this mercy?" I answer, 1. Did Sir John Hawkins, and many others, seize upon men, women, and children, who were at peace in their own fields and houses, merely to save them from death? 2. Was it to save them from death, that they knocked out the brains of those they could not bring away? 3. Who occasioned and fomented those wars, wherein these poor creatures were taken prisoners? Who excited them by money, by drink, by every possible means, to fall upon one another? Was it not themselves? They know in their own consciences it was, if they have any consciences left. But, 4. To bring the matter to a short issue. Can they say before God, that they ever took a single voyage, or bought a single negro, from this motive? They cannot, they well know: to get money, not to save lives, was the whole and sole spring of their motions.

5. But if this manner of procuring and treating negroes is not consistent either with mercy or justice, yet there is a plea for it which every man of business will acknowledge to be quite sufficient. Fifty years ago, one meeting an eminent statesman in the lobby of the House of Commons, said, "You have been long talking about justice and equity, Pray, which is this bill? Equity or justice?" He answered, very short, and plain, "D—n justice: it is necessity." Here also the slave-holder fixes his foot: here he rests the strength of his cause. "If it is not quite right, yet it *must* be so: there is an absolute *necessity for it*. It is necessary we should procure slaves: and when we have procured them, it is necessary to use them with severity, considering their stupidity, stubbornness, and wickedness.

I answer, You stumble at the threshold: I deny that villany is ever necessary. It is impossible that it should ever be necessary, for any reasonable creature to violate all the laws of justice, mercy, and truth. No circumstances can make it necessary for a man to burst in sunder all the ties of humanity. It can never be necessary for a rational being to sink himself below a brute. A man can be under no necessity of degrading himself into a wolf. The absurdity of the supposition is so glaring, that one would wonder any one could help seeing it.

6. This in general. But to be more particular, I ask, 1. What is necessary? And, secondly, To what end? It may be answered, "The whole method now used by the original purchasers of negroes. is necessary to the furnishing our colonies yearly with a hundred thousand slaves." I grant this is necessary to that end. But how is that end necessary? How will you prove it necessary, that one hundred, that *one* of those slaves should be procured? "Why, it is necessary to my gaining a hundred thousand pounds." Perhaps so: but how is *this* necessary? It is very possible you might be both a better and a happier man, if you had not a quarter of it. I deny that your gaining one thousand is necessary, either to your present or eternal happiness. "But, however, you must allow, these slaves are necessary for the cultivation of our islands: inasmuch as white men are not able to labour in hot climates." I answer, 1. It were better that all those islands should remain uncultivated for ever, yea, it were more desirable that they were altogether sunk in the depth of the sea, than that they should be cultivated at so high a price, as the violation of justice, mercy, and truth. But, secondly, the supposition on which you ground your argument is false. For white men, even Englishmen, are well able to labour in hot climates: provided they are temperate both in meat and drink, and that they inure themselves to it by degrees. I speak no more than I know by experience. It appears from the thermometer, that the summer heat in Georgia, is frequently equal to that in Barbadoes, yea, to that under the line. And yet I and my family (eight in number) did employ all our spare time there, in felling of trees and clearing of ground, as hard labour as any negro need be employed in. The German family likewise, forty in number, were employed in all manner of labour. And this was so far from impairing our health, that we all continued perfectly well, while the idle ones round about us, were swept away as with a pestilence. It is not true therefore that white men are not able to labour, even in hot climates, full as well as black. But if they were not, it would be better that none should labour there, that the work should be left undone, than that myriads of innocent men should be murdered, and myriads more dragged into the basest slavery.

7. "But the furnishing us with slaves is necessary, for the trade, and wealth, and glory of our nation." Here are several mistakes. For, 1. Wealth is not necessary to the glory of any nation; but wisdom, virtue, justice, mercy, generosity, public spirit, love of our country. These are necessary to the real glory of a nation; but abundance of wealth is not. Men of understanding allow, that the glory of England was full as high in Queen Elizabeth's time as it is now: although our riches and trade were then as much smaller, as our virtue was greater. But, secondly, it is not clear, that we should have either less money or trade, (only less of that detestable trade of man-stealing,) if there was not a negro in all our islands, or in all English America. It is demonstrable, white men, inured to it by degrees, can work as well as they, and they *would* do it, were negroes out of the way, and proper encouragement given them. However, thirdly. I come back to the same point: better no trade, than trade procured by

villany. It is far better to have no wealth, than to gain wealth at the expense of virtue. Better is honest poverty, than all the riches bought by the tears, and sweat, and blood of our fellow-creatures.

8. "However this be, it is necessary when we have slaves, to use them with severity."—What, to whip them for every petty offence till they are all in a gore of blood? To take that opportunity of rubbing pepper and salt into their raw flesh? To drop burning sealing-wax upon their skin? To castrate them? To cut off half their foot with an axe? To hang them on gibbets that they may die by inches, with heat, and hunger, and thirst? To pin them down to the ground, and then burn them by degrees, from the feet to the head? To roast them alive?—When did a Turk or a heathen find it necessary to use a fellow-creature thus?

I pray to what end is this usage necessary? "Why, to prevent their running away, and to keep them constantly to their labour, that they may not idle away their time. So miserably stupid is this race of men, yea, so stubborn and so wicked." Allowing them to be as stupid as you say, to whom is that stupidity owing? Without question it lies altogether at the door of their inhuman masters: who gave them no means, no opportunity of improving their understanding: and indeed leave them no motive, either from hope or fear, to attempt any such thing. They were no way remarkable for stupidity, while they remained in their own country: the inhabitants of Africa, where they have equal motives and equal means of improvement, are not inferior to the inhabitants of Europe: to some of them they are greatly superior. Impartially survey in their own country, the natives of Benin, and the natives of Lapland. Compare, (setting prejudice aside) the Samoeids and the Angolans. And on which side does the advantage lie, in point of understanding? Certainly the African is in no respect inferior to the European. Their stupidity, therefore, in our plantations is not natural: otherwise than it is the natural effect of their condition. Consequently it is not their fault, but *your's*. you must answer for it, before God and man.

9. "But their stupidity is not the only reason of our treating them with severity. For it is hard to say, which is the greatest, this or their stubbornness and wickedness."—It may be so: but do not these, as well as the other, lie at *your* door; are not stubbornness, cunning, pilfering, and divers other vices, the natural, necessary fruits of slavery? Is not this an observation which has been made, in every age and nation? And what means have you used to remove this stubbornness. Have you tried what mildness and gentleness would do? I knew one that did: that had prudence and patience to make the experiment: Mr. Hugh Bryan, who then lived on the borders of South Carolina. And what was the effect? Why, that all his negroes, (and he had no small number of them) loved and revered him as a father, and cheerfully obeyed him out of love. Yea, they were more afraid of a frown from *him*, than of many blows from an overseer. And what pains have *you* taken, what method have *you* used, to reclaim them from their wickedness? Have you carefully taught them,

“That there is a God, a wise, powerful, merciful Being, the Creator and Governor of heaven and earth? That he has appointed a day wherein he will judge the world, will take an account of all our thoughts, words, and actions? That in that day he will reward every child of man according to his works:” that “then the righteous shall inherit the kingdom prepared for them from the foundation of the world: and the wicked shall be cast into everlasting fire, prepared for the Devil and his angels.” If you have not done this, if you have taken no pains or thought about the matter, can you wonder at their wickedness? What wonder if they should cut your throat? And if they did, whom could you thank for it but yourself? You first acted the villain in making them slaves, (whether you stole them or bought them.) You kept them stupid and wicked, by cutting them off from all opportunities of improving either in knowledge or virtue: and now you assign their want of wisdom and goodness as the reason for using them worse than brute beasts!

V 1. It remains only to make a little application of the preceding observations.—But to whom should that application be made? That may bear a question. Should we address ourselves to the public at large? What effect can this have? It may inflame the world against the guilty, but is not likely to remove that guilt. Should we appeal to the English nation in general? This also is striking wide; and is never likely to procure any redress for the sore evil we complained of.—As little would it, in all probability, avail, to apply to the parliament. So many things, which *seem* of greater importance, lie before them, that they are not likely to attend to this. I therefore add a few words to those who are more immediately concerned, whether captains, merchants, or planters.

2. And first to the captains employed in this trade. Most of you know the country of Guinea: several parts of it at least, between the river Senegal, and the kingdom of Angola. Perhaps now, by your means, part of it is become a dreary, uncultivated wilderness, the inhabitants being all murdered or carried away, so that there are none left to till the ground. But you well know, how populous, how fruitful, how pleasant it was a few years ago. You know the people were not stupid, not wanting in sense, considering the few means of improvement they enjoyed. Neither did you find them savage, fierce, cruel, treacherous, or unkind to strangers. On the contrary, they were, in most parts, a sensible and ingenious people. They were kind and friendly, courteous, and obliging, and remarkably fair and just in their dealings. Such are the men whom you hire their own countrymen, to tear away from this lovely country; part by stealth, part by force, part made captive in those wars, which you raise or foment on purpose. You have seen them torn away, children from their parents, parents from their children: husbands from their wives, wives from their beloved husbands, brethren and sisters from each other. You have dragged them who have never done you any wrong, perhaps in chains, from their native shore. You have forced them into your ships like an herd of swine, them who had souls as immortal as your own: (only some of them, leaped into the sea, and

resolutely stayed under water, till they could suffer no more from you.) You have stowed them together as close as ever they could lie, without any regard either to decency or convenience. And when many of them had been poisoned by foul air, or had sunk under various hardships, you have seen their remains delivered to the deep till the sea should give up its dead. You have carried the survivors into the vilest slavery, never to end but with life: such slavery as is not found among the Turks at Algiers, no nor among the Heathens in America.

3. May I speak plainly to you? I must. Love constrains me: love to *you*, as well as those you are concerned with.

Is there a God? You know there is. Is he a just God? Then there must be a state of retribution: a state wherein the just God will reward every man according to his works. Then what reward will he render to *you*? O think betimes! before you drop into eternity! Think now. "He shall have judgment without mercy that hath showed no mercy." Are you a *man*? Then you should have a *human* heart. But have you indeed? What is your heart made of? Is there no such principle as compassion there? Do you never *feel* another's pain? Have you no sympathy? No sense of human woe? No pity for the miserable? When you saw the streaming eyes, the heaving breasts, or the bleeding sides and tortured limbs of your fellow-creatures, were you a stone, or a brute? Did you look upon them with the eyes of a tiger? When you squeezed the agonizing creatures down in the ship, or when you threw their poor mangled remains into the sea, had you no relenting? Did not one tear drop from your eye, one sigh escape from your breast? Do you feel no relenting *now*? If you do not, you must go on till the measure of your iniquities is full. Then will the great God deal with *you*, as you have dealt with *them*, and require all their blood at your hands. And at that day it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah than for *you*! But if your heart does relent, though in a small degree, know it is a call from the God of love. And to-day, if you will hear his voice, harden not your heart. To-day resolve, God being your helper, to escape for your life. Regard not money! All that a man hath will he give for his life! Whatever you lose, lose not your soul: nothing can countervail that loss. Immediately quit the horrid trade: at all events be an honest man.

4. This equally concerns every merchant, who is engaged in the slave-trade. It is *you* that induce the African villain to sell his countrymen; and, in order thereto, to steal, rob, murder men, women, and children, without number: by enabling the English villain to pay him for so doing; whom you overpay for his execrable labour. It is *your* money, that is the spring of all, that empowers him to go on: so that whatever he or the African does in this matter, it is all *your* act and deed. And is your conscience quite reconciled to this? Does it never reproach you at all? Has gold entirely blinded your eyes, and stupified your heart? Can you see, can you *feel* no harm therein? Is it doing as you would be done to? Make the case your own. "Master, said a slave at Liverpool (to the merchant that

owned him) what if some of my countrymen were to come here, and take away my mistress, and master Tommy, and master Billy, and carry them into our country, and make them slaves, how would you like it?" His answer was worthy of a man: "I will never buy a slave more while I live." O let his resolution be your's! Have no more any part in this detestable business. Instantly leave it to those unfeeling wretches, "who laugh at human nature and compassion!" Be *you* a man! Not a wolf, a devourer of the human species! Be merciful, that you may obtain mercy!

5. And this equally concerns every gentleman that has an estate in our American plantations: yea, all slave-holders, of whatever rank and degree: seeing *men-buyers* are exactly on a level with *men-stealers*. Indeed you say, "I pay honestly for my goods: and I am not concerned to know how they are come by." Nay but you are: you are deeply concerned to know they are honestly come by. Otherwise you are partaker with a thief, and are not a jot honest than he. But you know they are not honestly come by: you know they are procured by means, nothing near so innocent as picking pockets, house-breaking, or robbery upon the high-way. You know they are procured by a deliberate series of more complicated villany, (of fraud, robbery, and murder) than was ever practised either by Mahometans or Pagans: in particular by murders of all kinds; by the blood of the innocent poured upon the ground like water. Now it is *your* money that pays the merchant, and through him the captain, and the African butchers. *You* therefore are guilty, yea principally guilty, of all these frauds, robberies, and murders. You are the spring that puts all the rest in motion: they would not stir a step without *you*: therefore the blood of all these wretches, who die before their time, whether in the country or elsewhere, lies upon *your* head. "The blood of thy brother," (for whether thou wilt believe it or not, such he is in the sight of Him that made him) "eriedi against thee from the earth," from the ship, and from the waters. O, whatever it costs, put a stop to its cry before it be too late: instantly, at any price, were it the half of your goods, deliver thyself from blood-guiltiness! Thy hands, thy bed, thy furniture, thy house, thy lands, are at present stained with blood. Surely it is enough, accumulate no more guilt: spill no more the blood of the innocent! Do not hire another to shed blood: do not pay him for doing it: Whether you are a Christian or not, show yourself a man! Be not more savage than a lion or a bear!

6. Perhaps you will say, "I do not *buy* any negroes: I only *use* those left by my father." So far is well: but is it enough to satisfy your own conscience? Had your father, have *you*, has any man living, a right to use another as a slave? It cannot be, even setting revelation aside. It cannot be that either war, or contract, can give any man such a property in another as he has in his sheep and oxen. Much less is it possible, that any child of man, should ever be born a slave. Liberty is the right of every human creature, as soon as he breathes the vital air. And no human law can deprive him of that right, which he derives from the law of nature.

If therefore you have any regard to justice, (to say nothing of mercy, nor the revealed law of God,) render unto all their due. Give liberty to whom liberty is due, that is, to every child of man, to every partaker of human nature. Let none serve you but by his own act and deed, by his own voluntary choice. Away with all whips, all chains, all compulsion! Be gentle toward all men, and see that you invariably do unto every one, as you would he should do unto *you*.

7. O thou God of love, thou who art loving to every man, and whose mercy is over all thy works; thou who art the Father of the spirits of all flesh, and who art rich in mercy unto all; thou who hast formed of one blood, all the nations upon the earth; have compassion upon these outcasts of men, who are trodden down as dung upon the earth! Arise, and help these that have no helper, whose blood is spilt upon the ground like water! Are not these also the work of thine own hands, the purchase of thy Son's blood? Stir them up to cry unto thee in the land of their captivity; and let their complaint come up before thee; let it enter into thy ears! Make even those that lead them away captive to pity them, and turn their captivity as the rivers in the South. O burst thou all their chains in sunder: more especially the chains of their sins: thou, Saviour of all, make them free, that they may be free indeed!

The servile progeny of Ham,  
Seize as the purchase of thy blood!  
Let all the Heathens know thy name  
From idols to the living God  
The dark Americans convert,  
And shine in every Pagan heart!

FILE END.



# A GENERAL INDEX

TO THE

TEN VOLUMES

OF

## MR. WESLEY'S WORKS.

*The Letters refer to the Volumes, and the Figures to the Paging.*

### A

- ABEL, the death of, mentioned iii 96  
 Abraham's bosom, import of the phrase vi 52  
 Absolution, priestly, cannot remove the fear of death iii 80  
     according to the church of Rome, what? x 45  
 Abstinence, what? v 294  
 Abuse of a doctrine, no argument against it vi 17  
 Academy of Sciences at Paris, a strange account in the Memoirs of ix 49  
 ——, Ann, a remarkable account of iii 196, 197  
 Act of Uniformity mentioned x 118, 119  
     Conventicle noticed x 119, 120  
 Adam, a censure on, for introducing sin and death into the world vi 234, 235  
     his fall may be turned to a good account vi 235, 241  
     and Christ, a parallel between ix 345, 347  
     and Christ, a comparison between ix 208, 209, 212, 215  
     the consequences of his sin, what? ix 212, 214, 215  
     how the representative of mankind ix 273, 275, 308, 311  
     how in a state of trial for all mankind ix 288, 289  
 Adams, Mr. T. a letter from, to Mr. Wesley, on leaving the Church x 240, 241  
     Mr. Wesley's answer to x 241—243  
     his comment on the Epistle to the Romans censured iii 358  
 Adare, once a strong town, some account of ii 344  
 Addison, Mr. what he says of Taste x 165, 167  
 Address, Calm, to our American Colonies x 130—136  
 Adrian, the emperor, his dying words vi 346  
     what he said to his soul vii 241  
 Advertisement, a singular, at Devizes ii 102  
 Advice, the danger of bad ii 365  
 Affections, the necessity of right, in a minister viii 81  
     the corrupted state of the ix 370  
 Africaus, the miserable condition of vi 333  
 Agahiro, Count, picture of, mentioned iv 303  
 Age, how it steals upon us iv 258  
 Agents, moral, how men are ix 228  
 Air, the original state of the, and observations on the vi 216, 332  
 Akeleyton, the ruins of, mentioned iii 324, 325  
 Albans, St. the Abbey of, described iii 307, 308  
 Alex. Mr. a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 397  
 Alfred, King, his tower mentioned iv 140  
 Allen, Mr. how killed x 105  
 Alms-giving, directions for v 279—281  
     does not supply the place of love vii 97  
     remarks on vii 356, 357  
 Alnwick, a remarkable custom at ii 282  
     castle of, mentioned iv 37  
 Ambition, its influence and various shapes x 109, 110  
 America, Methodist preachers first sent to iii 282  
     European settlements in, mentioned iii 365  
     two letters from Mr. Wesley to preachers in x 357  
     cause of the discontents of x 133, 134  
 Amsterdam, some account of i 198  
 Anabaptists, an address to viii 322, 323  
 Anderson, Dr. his account of the Hebrides recommended iv 172  
 Andrews, St. some account of the college, &c. of iii 437  
 Anecdote, a singular, of some persecutors i 398  
     of a poor man in distress iv 21  
 Angels, bow under the law v 365  
     good, the understanding, holiness, and power of vi 350—353  
     how they minister to the heirs of salvation vi 353—355  
     evil, their nature and properties vi 357—359  
     their employment, what? vi 359—364  
     remarks on the worshipping of x 25  
 Anger, the danger of ii 363  
     what? v 228, 229  
     how excited by gay apparel vii 69  
     how encouraged in children vii 130  
     when not sinful x 300, 307  
 Animals, microscopic, observations on vi 333  
     condition of, since the fall ix 294, 295  
 Animate nature, conjectures on vi 295, 296

A GENERAL INDEX.

Annesley, Dr. some account of i 5—8. 280  
 mentioned iii 266  
 his sermon on Universal Con-  
 scientiousness quoted vii  
 207—209

Anson, a remark on his Voyages ii 325

Answer to an important question x 98—100

Antinomianism, what? iv 350  
 a true picture of ii 78  
 the main pillar of what? v  
 379, 380  
 practical; the prevalence and  
 evil of v 381. 382  
 a caution against viii 55  
 remarks on ix 484, 485  
 what the quintessence of x  
 209  
 a hinderance to the work of  
 God x 305

Antinomians, the difference between them and  
 the Methodists ii 44—46

Antisthenes, the ease of, proposed ix 192

Antoninus, Marcus, his remarkable dream re-  
 ferred to vi 354

Apathy, a remark on x 306, 307

Apocryphal writings, remarks on x 15

Apologies of the Christian Fathers, remarks  
 on ix 51. 53

Apostacy of mankind, how proved ix 318. 320  
 the great, foretold by St. Paul vi  
 270, 271

Apostles, how they lived and preached x 72, 73

Apparitions, remarks on iii 245, 246

Appeal, Wesley's, to men of reason and re-  
 ligion ii 78

Application, necessity of, in preaching iv 39  
 a fine example of v 41, 45

Arthro, some account of the abbey at iii 300

Arians know Christ only after the flesh vii  
 264

Aricclo, Thomas, how raised to supreme  
 power x 129

Aristocracy, what? x 125

Armagh, some account of, and of the Pri-  
 mate's palace iv 19, 20

Arminian, what? ix 473—476

Arminians, wherein they differ from the Cal-  
 vinists ix 474

Arminius, James, a short account of ix 474

Arnobious, what he says of casting out evil  
 spirits ix 22

Article 31st of the Church of England, affirms  
 the doctrine of universal re-  
 demption ix 515

Ashburn, the Rev. Solomon, epitaph of iii 306  
 a remarkable bequest of iv 42

Assembly, in Scotland, some account of the  
 General iii 139. 190  
 of divines at Westminster, what  
 their thoughts on necessity ix  
 459

Associations, the design of vi 21, 22

Assurance, a remark on the word x 209  
 what? viii 563  
 remarks on viii 388. 494  
 the doctrine of, held by bishops  
 Leighton, Hall, &c. iii 28

Atbanasius, his opinion concerning the opera-  
 tions of the Holy Spirit viii  
 258, 259  
 his creed mentioned vi 209

Atheism, how promoted by riches vii 227

Atheist, the conversion of an i 343

Atheists, who? } v 23  
 } vii 311—313

an account of two 312

Atmosphere, reflections on the vi 216

Atonement, the doctrine of the, mentioned x  
 282

Atoning blood, the need of the iii 57  
 on the necessity of the, a let-  
 ter from Mr. Wesley to  
 S. F. x 260

Atterbury, Bishop, some account of i 39

Attorneys, honest, remarks on viii 309

Attributes of God, what? vii 249, 250

Augustine, St. his uncharitable spirit censured  
 vi 323  
 a remarkable saying of vii  
 43, 44  
 what he says of the suffi-  
 ciency of the Scriptures x  
 13

Austin, St. what he said of Divine Provi-  
 dence vi 319  
 a remarkable saying of x 15

Austin, Mr. providentially preserved from  
 drowning ii 454, 455

Authors, ancient, how they polished their  
 writings vii 181

Awaking, what it imports v 26..29

B

Babel, remarks on the building of ix 169

Backslider, a remarkable note from a iii 400  
 the remarkable conversion of a  
 iii 108, 109

Backsliders, why some cast away hope vii  
 46—48  
 the state of, described x 263, 264  
 penitent, have no cause to de-  
 spair vii 48. 54  
 caution to vii 54

Backsliding, a letter on the subject of, from  
 Mr. Wesley to Lady — x 263  
 exemplified ii 39

Bacon, Lord, his Ten Centuries mentioned  
 iv 172

Baily, Rev. Mr. a letter to the viii 562—580

Balligarrene, a town in Ireland inhabited by  
 foreigners ii 344

Ballboys, remarks on iv 201

Bamff, some account of iii 435, 436

Bands, the origin and rules of, } iv 336  
 among the Methodists } ix 478, 479  
 defended against objections iv 337  
 observations on viii 426  
 select, the origin of iv 338

Band-meeting recommended iv 375

Bangor, some account of ii 352, 353

Bankrupts, how to be treated iv 376

Baptism, the necessity of ii 232  
 not the new-birth v 178. 203—206  
 a treatise on ix 155—165  
 the nature of ix 155—157  
 what the Quakers say of ix 115  
 what the Church of Rome says of  
 x 57  
 the permanency of, in the Christian  
 church ix 158, 159  
 the proper subjects of, who ix 159  
 remarks on the mode of adminis-  
 tering ix 491. 523  
 infant, thoughts of the Ancient Fa-  
 thers upon ix 162  
 objections to, answered ix 163—165

- Baptism, remarks on x 34, 35  
 an elderly Quaker a subject of, mentioned ii 40
- Baptists, remarks on their separation from the Church of England viii 353
- Barclay, Robert, Mr. Wesley's opinion of his Apology ii 43, 44  
 what he said of imputed righteousness vi 136  
 his Apology mentioned ix 110—117
- Barton, Mr. his Lectures recommended ii 351, 352
- Basil, St. what he says on learning the Holy Scriptures x 36, 37
- Bass, some account of the iii 348, 349
- Eate, Jane, a letter on Experience from ii 69—71
- Bateman, Mr. the singular house of, mentioned iii 336, 337
- Baxter, Mr. Richard, his history of his own life and times commended ii 375, 376  
 his history of the councils mentioned ii 302  
 his life referred to ii 300  
 a quotation from, on visiting iv 370  
 a quotation from, on reproving sin vi 299  
 his book on apparitions mentioned iii 337  
 what he thought a sufficient quantity of sleep vii 108  
 what he thought requisite qualifications for teaching children x 318
- Beam in the eye, what? v 333
- Beard, Thomas, an account of the treatment of ii 22
- Beasts, their original and present state, with respect to man ix 268, 271, 285
- B. William, an account of ii 31—33
- Beattie, Dr. his Essay on Truth recommended iii 347
- Beauchamp, Ann, an account of ii 342—344
- Beauty, the vanity of { ii 319  
 { iii 274
- Bees, the Fable of the, censured ii 336
- Bedel, Bishop, the inscription on the tombstone of iv 207  
 the castle where he was confined, mentioned iv 270
- Beggars, a town of, mentioned iii 436
- Behmenism, destructive of genuine Christianity x 174
- Behmen, Jacob, thoughts upon x 172  
 his *Mysterium Magnum*, a critique on i 396  
 his singular hypothesis of the earth vi 294  
 the obscurity of his philosophy x 172  
 his divinity censured x 172, 173
- Belfast, an insurrection at iii 374, 375  
 some account of iv 18
- Believing the gospel, what? v 72
- Belisarius, a critique on iii 363
- Bell, Geo. separates from Mr. Wesley iv 415
- Bell, Captain, the affecting case of iii 449, 450
- Bellamy, Mrs. a censure on her Life iv 285, 286
- Bellarmino, a dying saying of vi 246
- Belvidere, some account of iii 217
- Benefactors, an account of some iii 322
- Bengelius, his thoughts on some of the prophecies vi 107  
 his opinion of the controverted text, 1 John v. 7. vi 209, 210
- B——, Miss, seven letters from Mr. Wesley to x 316—324
- Bennet, Mr. John, mentioned ii 256
- Bennets, John, some account of iii 195
- Bennis, Mrs. of Limerick, twenty-seven letters of Mr. Wesley's to x 329—340
- Benson, Mr. Joseph, thirty-six letters from Mr. Wesley to x 398—415
- B——, Miss, six of Mr. Wesley's letters to x 363—369
- Bentley, Dr. mentioned vii 166
- Berridge, the Rev. Mr. some account of ii 411  
 greatly blessed in ministerial labours ii 423—430, 436, 445
- Beverley, Minister, some account of iii 195, 196
- Bible, how to be estimated v 34  
 strongly recommended by a Deist vii 269
- Bigotry, what? v 409, 410
- Bill-broking, the evil of iii 144
- Birds, observations on the creation of vi 219
- Bishop, Miss, a letter from Mr. Wesley to, on the Atonement x 282
- Bishops and Presbyters of the same order ii 76  
 obedience to, how far it extends { iii 454  
 { iv 352
- Bisson, Jeannie, her remarkable piety noticed iv 221
- Blackburn, Archdeacon, a work of his inadvertently iii 264
- Blackmore, Sir Richard, his Prince Arthur noticed iii 382
- Black Gock mentioned iv 107
- Black William, an account of iv 91, 92
- Blackwell, Mr. his Sacred Classics commended iv 199  
 a remarkable saying of x 308
- Blair, Dr. a critique upon his Sermons iv 36
- Blanchland, a description of ii 109
- Blair, Mr. his account of the antiquity of the Hebrew points ii 101
- Blase Castle, the woods nigh to, mentioned iv 117  
 some account of iv 255
- Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, what? i 287
- Bleeding, profuse, how to stop ii 311
- Blessing given to Noah, remarks on the ix 289
- Blessings of God, how of his grace v 9
- Blisters, remarks on x 278
- Blood, remarks on eating ii 66  
 observations on the circulation of the iii 395
- Blood of Christ cleanseth from all sin, how to be understood v 436
- Blow at the Root ix 453—457
- Boasting, Remarks on viii 447
- Bodily emotions, remarks on viii 559—561
- Body, remarks on the human vi 211, 212, 226, 334

A GENERAL INDEX.

- Boehms, Mr. his Sermons mentioned iii 430  
 Bohler, Peter, a letter of his to Mr. Wesley i 187, 188  
 Bolton, persecution at ii 157  
   a surprising change among the persecutors at ii 191  
   Sunday-school of, mentioned iv 216, 236  
   the singing at, commended iv 236  
 Bolton, Mr. his curious works mentioned iv 96  
   the Rev. Mr. his directions for comfortably walking with God, noticed ii 301  
   Miss, fourteen letters from Mr. Wesley to x 369—376  
 Bolzius, J. Martin, of Georgia, a letter from, to Mr. Wesley ii 187, 188  
 Bonavici's history of the war in Italy, mentioned iii 365  
 Bondage, the spirit of, exemplified v 86, 87, 135—137  
 Boniface III. first entitled a universal bishop x 69  
 Books, how to read iv 380  
   forged, remarks on ix 13, 14  
   were opened, the import of vi 42, 43  
 Booth, Elizabeth, a singular account of ii 286, 287  
   Mr. John, a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 464, 465  
 Burlomachi, Monsieur, his treatise on the Law of Nature considered vii 253  
 Borslase, Mr. his Antiquities of Cornwall commended ii 383  
 Born of God, what the phrase imports v 180—183  
   how he that is, sinneth not v 425—431  
 Boston, some account of { iii 60  
   { iv 61  
 Boston, Mr. an extract from his Four-fold State ix 352, 376  
 Bosworth, John, an excellent letter from ii 78  
 Botts, Mr. his history of India noticed iii 430, 446  
 Bourgnon, Antonietto, the character of iii 390  
 Boyne, the river, passed by King William iii 375  
 Bradford, the octagon chapel at, mentioned iii 196  
 Brainerd, Mr. his Journal mentioned ii 194  
   the Life of, recommended iv 161  
 Branches in the true Vine, who? iii 286  
 Brandenburg, Memoirs of the House of, mentioned iii 196  
 Bread, daily, the import of the petition for v 287  
 Brent Hill mentioned iii 287  
 Brerewood, Mr. his account of { vi 281, 282  
   the moral state of { ix 178  
   the world {  
     referred to ix 95  
 Bribery, how to be removed iv 376  
 Bridge, at Coal-Brook Dale, mentioned iv 32  
   a remarkable one, mentioned iv 118  
 Bridges, two remarkable, in Scotland iv 241  
 Briggs, four letters from Mr. Wesley to x 353, 354  
 Brimstone plaster, a surprising account of ii 299, 335  
 Bristol Chapel, the case of iv 118  
 Bristol, the besetting sin of the people of iv 186  
 British nation, the wickedness of, compared to the Jewish nation viii 294—320  
 Brown, Dr. his Animadversions on Shaftesbury's Characteristics, mentioned iii 268  
   Bishop, a remark of, on the doctrine of the Trinity x 302  
     his thoughts on Arianism and Socinianism x 305  
     John, mentioned i 426  
     Jane, the singular case of iv 16  
     Betty, a short account of iv 72  
 Brownfield, James, mentioned iii 303  
 Brute creation, mercy to, recommended ii 349  
 Brute creatures, the original state of, and how distinguished from man vi 254, 255  
   the present state of vi 255—257  
   the deliverance of vi 257—261  
   remarks on their sufferings ix 358  
   soon arrive at a state of perfection x 156  
 Bryant, Mr. his Ancient Mythology mentioned iv 36  
 Buckingham, the Rev. Mr. renounces all connexion with the Methodists iii 202  
 Building on a rock, what? -iii 433  
 Bull, Bishop, his Harmonia Apostolica analyzed i 351  
   Ditto mentioned vii 323  
   maintained the doctrine of justification by works vii 325  
   his account of repentance vii 325  
 Bunyan, John, his Holy War quoted vi 398  
 Burke, Mr. Richard, some account of iii 449  
 Burnet, Dr. his Theory of the Earth mentioned iii 291  
 Burning sermons, remarks on iv 24  
 Burslem mentioned iv 71  
   a remarkable work of God at iv 197, 198  
 Bushfield, Mr. his house and improvements mentioned iv 22  
 Business, Remarks on vii 78, 79  
 Butler, Bishop, his Analogy recommended iii 245  
 Byrom, Dr. his Poems recommended iii 376, 377  
 Byron, Commodore, a surprising account of iii 270
- C
- Cabins, Irish, remarks on iii 297  
 Cadogan, Dr. his Treatise on Chronological Diseases mentioned iii 332  
 Caesar, his character ix 177, 178  
 Call to preach the gospel at a new place, what? iv 369  
 Calvin, John, his account of the death of Servetus i 332  
   what he says of election and reprobation ix 378—380  
   what Mr. Wesley thought of viii 546

- Calvinism fully stated and refuted ix 430—439  
 the mischievous effects of iii 382  
 a hinderance to holiness iv 368
- Campbell, Mr. what he thought of Hades vii 293.  
 Dr. his answer to D. Hume, recommended iii 276
- Camp, a Roman, mentioned iii 349
- Canterbury cathedral, reflection on visiting ii 229, 230
- Captains of ships, the duty of viii 301, 302
- Carishbrook Castle, some account of ii 289  
 of iv 161
- Carnal, and sold under sin, who? i 292  
 what the phrase imports ix 246
- Carn-brae, a celebrated hill, an account of iii 303
- Carrel, Captain, his Travels recommended iv 304
- Cartoons, some remarks on the iv 64
- Castle Barnard, some account of ii 321
- Catechism, the Assembly's, mentioned vi 417  
 quoted iii 59—62  
 of the Church of England, a remark upon the x 324  
 Roman, with a Reply x 10—49
- Catechumens, some account of iv 330
- Catholic spirit, what? v 352, 353  
 wherein it consists x 231, 232
- Catlow, Mr. Jonathan, a singular anecdote of ii 285, 286  
 propagates a new doctrine iii 108
- Cato, his character ix 176
- Caution against religious delusion, remarks on i 273—275
- Cave, Dr. his Primitive Christianity mentioned ii 169  
 a stricture on ii 224
- Celsus, what he said of the Primitive Christians ix 24, 25
- Cennick, Mr. John, embraces Calvinism, and opposes Mr. Wesley i 333, 334, 338—341  
 his case alluded to viii 394, 395
- Chadsey, Mrs. the remarkable case of vii 18, 19
- Chaise-drivers, a strange combination among iv 7, 8
- Chancery Bill, animadversions on a ii 31  
 remarks on a ii 454
- Chancery, delay in, considered viii 309, 310
- Chandler, Joseph, his want of veracity i 320, 321
- Chapel, City Road, the Sermon preached on laying the foundation of the vi 106  
 opened for divine worship by Mr. Wesley iv 28  
 Methodist, the first built at Bristol i 257  
 at Snowfields, an account of the i 426, 427  
 a singular one described iii 439  
 at Sheerness, how built iv 187  
 without windows, an account of a iv 239
- Chapels, a form for settling iv 293, 391, 392  
 two remarkable ii 396, 397
- Chapman, Miss Patty, letter to x 396, 397
- Charges, groundless and absurd, preferred by Mr. H. against Mr. Wesley x 484—487
- Charity, what? iii 439  
 the term, when first introduced into our English Bible vii 90, 91  
 how to be practised viii 63  
 or love, remarks on the permanency of ix 93—95
- Charitiés, public, reflections on the abuses of viii 311
- Charlemont, Lord, his seat mentioned iv 21, 22
- Charles, king of Swéden, mentioned vi 158
- Charter school, the state of a iv 112
- Chastity, how to preserve vi 162—164
- Cheesebrook, Mary, a strange monument of God's mercy ii 127, 126
- Cheesement, Captain, an account of iv 105
- Chepstow, the beautiful walks, woods, &c. at iii 284, 285
- Chester, a short account of ii 267
- Chesterfield, Lord, his Letters } iii 421, 422  
 censured } vii 165, 166, 305
- Chenev, Dr. his method of curing diseases recommended i 336  
 a short account of his death ii 34
- Chicale, an Indian, a conference with i 137, 138
- Chicasaws, some account of their religion ix 181
- Child, a remarkable account of a ii 309  
 the sudden conversion of a ii 13  
 the genuine experience of a ii 13  
 the early piety of ii 83, 84  
 a remarkable account of a, at Dudley iii 127  
 death of a remarkable iii 269  
 the remarkable death of a iv 112
- Children formed into Classes by Mr. Wesley iii 23  
 the conversion of iii 87, 88  
 greatly affected with divine things iii 406  
 a remarkable work among iv 132  
 three drowned iv 175  
 how to instruct iv 380  
 ought to be instructed iv 403  
 the duty of parents to vi 171—175  
 the duty of vi 187—189  
 in what way they ought to go vii 122—131  
 how to be hindered from crying vii 127  
 their wills to be broken, how vii 135, 136  
 the moral condition of ix 270, 298, 299  
 remarks on the sports of ix 305  
 of wrath, what the phrase imports ix 340, 341  
 thoughts on the manner of educating x 150—152
- China, some account of the population of ix 181
- Chinese, some account of the customs and religion of the ix 182, 183
- Chinese fragment, a remark on iv 193
- Chipping, a disgraceful circumstance in the church of ii 279
- Chiasm, what the Church of Rome says of it x 36
- Christ, the Divinity of, proved ii 329  
 how the true God vi 400—402  
 how eternal life vi 402—404  
 the person of, what vii 371—373

- Christ, the sole Lawgiver, Judge, and Sovereign in his Church ix 151, 154  
 how the Representative of all believers ix 310, 311
- Christian almost, what? v 16—20  
 altogether, what? v 20—23  
 who? vii 218  
 a Portraiture of a ix 56—60  
 duty, an Analysis of viii 83, 84
- Christians, their holiness not to be measured by that of the Jews x 195  
 their advantages over Deists, viii 333—336  
 their wickedness no objection to real Christianity vi 271  
 the state of, in Turkey, &c. vi 232
- Christian country, in what sense England is a } ix 101, 102
- Christian world, the present state of the ix 184
- Christian Experience and Practice, a letter from Mr. Wesley to Miss A. on x 272  
 } viii 193, 194.  
 } 234, 235  
 } ix 60—63
- Christianity, what? }  
 how it differs from morality vii 314  
 how it differs from heathenism v 194, 195  
 in its rise, &c. v 34—37  
 as spreading from one to another v 37—39  
 as covering the earth v 39—41  
 true, what it implies x 154
- Chrysostom, a remarkable saying of vii 273  
 his judgment of the operations of the Holy Ghost viii 253—258  
 what he saith of Judas ix 434  
 } i 310  
 } iv 352  
 } vi 94
- Church, what } viii 209, 210  
 } vi 374—378  
 } ix 127  
 why termed holy } vi 379, 380  
 the wisdom of God in carrying on his work in the vi 315—329  
 the state of the primitive vi 264, 265. 822  
 the opinion of the primitive, concerning the operations of the Holy Ghost viii 253—259  
 } iv 352  
 } vi 377
- Church of England, what? } x 95  
 laws of the viii 210, 211  
 the canons of, mentioned viii 211  
 the doctrine of, relating to the } viii 261—265  
 operation of the } ix 105—107  
 Holy Ghost  
 an examination of the power of the, to decree rites and ceremonies ix 152  
 how she ought to act towards incorrigible sinners viii 366  
 reasons against a separation from the x 88—93  
 thoughts on a separation from the x 93, 94  
 farther thoughts on a separation from the x 95—97  
 the expediency and lawfulness of the Methodists separating from the, considered x 204, 205
- Church of England, remarks on the Liturgy, &c. of x 204, 205  
 her advantages over the Church of Rome x 64—70  
 in what instances the Methodists have left the iv 250
- Church of Rome, what she professes to be x 10  
 the authority she claims x 10—12  
 why called Catholic x 10  
 what she teaches concerning the Scriptures x 12—14  
 why she does not suffer the people to read the Scriptures x 14—16  
 what she teaches concerning repentance x 16  
 what she asserts concerning the merit of good works x 16  
 her doctrine of Indulgences x 16, 18  
 her doctrine of Purgatory x 18, 20  
 her doctrine of Confirmation x 36, 38  
 her notions of Limbo x 22  
 her views of Divine Worship x 22, 24  
 she directs prayers to be addressed to angels and saints x 24, 26, 28  
 guilty of worshipping images, relics, &c. x 28, 30, 32  
 what she says of the number of the Sacraments x 32, 34  
 what she teaches concerning baptism x 34, 36  
 her doctrine of the Eucharist x 38, 40, 42  
 her doctrine of Penance x 42, 44.  
 her notion of extreme Unction x. 44, 46  
 what she says of the Sacrament of Orders x 46  
 her doctrine concerning Marriage x 46, 48  
 a statement of several of her doctrines x 66, 67  
 the state of public worship in the x 67, 68  
 how she attempts to prove that the pope is the Head of the Church x 69  
 maintains the lawfulness of putting heretics to death x 77
- Churchwardens, their duty viii 307  
 Church Governors, how far to be obeyed viii 423
- Church, the Rev. Mr. his Remarks answered viii 374—456
- Cicero, what he says on the rules of honesty vii 301  
 a remarkable saying of v. 274  
 some of his sayings concerning Divine Providence vi 310, 311
- Circumcision of the heart, what? v 164—168
- Clarke, Mr. Adam twelve letters to x 420—424

A GENERAL INDEX.

- Clarke, the Rev. Mr. a letter from Mr. Wesley to, on a Catholic Spirit x 231, 232
- Clarkeville, the monument of the Earl of, noticed iii 216, 217
- Classes, Methodist, the origin of, }  
 i 134  
 iv 76  
 x 148, 149
- how examined by Mr. Wesley, at Newcastle ii 108
- how divided by Mr. Wesley iy 76
- consonant to Scripture and reason iv 333
- Class-Meetings, how to be made most useful iv 369
- Clayton, the Rev. Mr. a short account of ii 86
- Clement, William, some account of, when in Germany ii 72
- Clergy of the Church of England, how many of them preach i 281, 282
- the ge- } vii 196—198
- neral character of } viii 208, 315—320
- the impiety of many of the, not a sufficient reason for leaving the Church vii 199—202
- the impiety of the, hinders not the communication of grace by the ordinances they administer vii 199—202
- why so generally despised viii 320, 359
- why they do not avail themselves of the assistance of the Methodist preachers x 98—100
- the sinfulness of railing against the iii 273
- abusing the, how to be understood viii 463
- some of the, contradict the Articles, &c. viii 536
- an Address to viii 67—82
- Clergyman, the awful death of a }  
 i 427, 428  
 ii 387
- an account of a persecuting iii 276, 277
- a pleasing account of a ii 40
- some account of a candid ii 177
- a, censured for reading badly iii 346, 347
- anecdote of a, famous for discovering different sorts of butterflies vi 411
- Clergymen, ungodly, censured vii 273
- Clifton, Miss Goldney's garden at, mentioned iv 254
- Clones, some account of iii 414
- the character of the people of iv 16
- Clonmel, a description of ii 338, 339
- Cloud, a strange account of a ii 280
- Coats, Mr. Alexander, some account of the death of iii 180, 181
- faithfully admonished x 258, 259
- Cobham, the gardens of, mentioned iv 48, 49
- Coheth, or the Preacher, remarks on iii 236
- Coke, Dr. mentioned iii 441
- Colchester, a short account of ii 410
- the castle of described ii 413
- Collect of the Church of England quoted vii 377
- Collection, Yearly, the effect of the, when first mentioned in Manchester iii 186, 187
- Colley, Benjamin, some account of the death of iii 230
- Collier, deliverance of a, from a coal-pit iii 397, 398
- Colne, the gallery of the new chapel at, falls iii 455
- Colony, what? x 130, 131
- Comedies of the ancients, remarks on iii 264
- Comfort, the true ground of ix 447
- Commandments, those of the New Testament binding on believers i 320, 321
- what the word imports v 268
- what breaking the least of the; imports v 268, 269
- Commons, House of, in Ireland, mentioned iv 214
- Communion with God, various degrees of x 301
- Communion of saints, what? x 319, 320
- Condemnation, none to them that are in Christ v 74—78
- who liable to the greatest v 229
- Condition, remarks on the word }  
 ix 498  
 x 283, 284
- Conditions of the New Covenant not fulfilled by Christ x 195
- Conference, Moravian, an account of a i 200, 201
- the first Methodist, some account of the ii 22
- Methodist, the first held in London, June, 1747 ii 116
- an account of a, held in March, 1751 ii 234
- some account of a, held in May, 1755 ii 312
- some account of the first iv 348
- the method of proceeding in a iv 396, 397
- Confession, Protestant, of Faith, drawn up at Paris, referred to ix 341, 342
- at the Synod of Dort, referred to ix 378
- of Faith, the Assembly's, noticed ix 378
- Confidence, a believer should not cast away his i 321
- Confirmation, remarks on x 37, 39
- what the Church of Rome says of x 58
- Conscience, what? }  
 v 111, 112  
 vii 202—205
- a good, what? }  
 v 112—114  
 vii 205
- natural, what? vi 377
- a tender, what? and how preserved vii 206—209
- a hardened, what? vii 206, 207
- a scrupulous, what? vii 206
- how defiled ix 370, 371
- a man of, who? ix 185, 186
- not always an infallible guide x 307
- Consecration of places of worship, remarks on the iii 152, 341
- of Churches and burial-grounds, thoughts on the x 97, 98
- required by law in Ireland x 97, 98
- not required by law in England x 97
- Consequence, the, proved ix 435—439
- Constables, their office viii 299, 300
- Constantia, see Theodosius and Constantia

- Constatine the Great, how he served the Church vii 184, 196  
     how injurious his bounty proved to the Church vi 269  
 Contention between Paul and Barnabas alluded to x 18  
 Contentions about religion, the evil of vi 242  
     the cause and remedy of vi 243  
 Controversial Divinity, a remark on ii 251  
 Controversy between Dr. Clarke and Leibnitz, remarks on iii 413  
 C. Mr. an extraordinary account given by iii 439  
 Conventicle Act mentioned i 262  
     reprobated iv 228  
 Conversation, the evil of unprofitable x 279, 280  
     at meals, what kind most proper vii 60  
 Conversions, many remarkable i 250, 253  
     256, 260  
     two remarkable, at Congleton iii 109  
 Conviction does not always imply condemnation x 283, 284  
 Conway, some account of ii 353  
 Conyers, Dr. mentioned iv 105  
 Cook, Lieutenant, remarkably preserved in many engagements iii 170  
     Captain, his Voyages censured iii 383  
     Mr. mentioned ii 463  
     Mary, a short account of ii 54, 55  
 Cooper, Jane, the death of, mentioned iii 97  
     an account of her death, with one of her letters viii 39—42  
 Cork, the Grand Jury of, makes a singular presentment ii 183  
     the shameful persecutions at viii 563—571  
     riots at ii 203, 204, 207—211  
     Dr. Brown, bishop of, his Treatise of the Human Understanding recommended ii 358  
 Corporation of Cork, remarks on the conduct of the viii 576, 577  
     why they persecuted the first Methodist Preachers viii 578, 579  
 Corpse, a strange account of a ii 378  
 Corrupters of the word of God, who? vii 337, 338  
 Corrupting the word of God, reasons against vii 338—340  
 Council of Trent, the Decree of the, respecting Faith viii 203, 239  
     how it acted with respect to Indulgences x 19  
 Council of Constance, the Decrees of the, animadverted upon x 77, 78  
     the conduct of the, towards John Huss x 81—84  
     an account of the proceedings of the x 82, 83  
 Country Common Sense, a letter from the author of i 292  
 Court Mattress, an account of ii 402  
 Covenant of Grace, all mankind under the iv 359  
     opposed to that of works v 55, 59, 60  
 Covenant of God made with Adam, what? ix 328  
 Covenant made with Abraham, what? ix 404  
 Coveuant relating to David, what? ix 440, 441  
     between the Father and Son, has no foundation in Scripture x 194  
 Covenant, everlasting, remarks on the ix 513  
     New, not made with Christ x 202  
     the origin of renewing the ii 319  
     renewal of the ii 319  
 Covetousness, an observation on v 130, 131  
     the mischievous effects of x 109  
     how to escape x 310, 324  
 Cowley, Mr. his Reflections mentioned ix 186  
 Cowmeadow, Mr. John, a short account of iv 189  
 Cownley, Mr. Three letters from Mr. Wesley to x 275, 276  
 Cowper, Bishop, a critique on, as a writer ix 528  
 Cox, Sir Richard, his History of Ireland mentioned iii 174  
 Coxon, Francis, awful account of ii 109, 110  
 Crantz, Mr. his account of the Missionaries in Greenland iii 224  
 Crawford, Captain, the perfidy of iii 449, 450  
 Creation, the gradation of beings in vi 356, 357  
 Creature, new, what? i 239, 240, 246  
     how made subject to vanity vi 255—257  
 Credition, some account of ii 19  
 Credulity of the primitive Christians, remarks on the ix 15  
 Creed, founded on common sense, remarks on a ii 225  
 Crosby, Mrs. Eight letters from Mr. Wesley to x 438—441  
 Cross, what to take up and bear the vi 84, 85  
     how the taking up the, prevented vii 229, 230  
 Crucifying the Son of God afresh, what? vii 51  
 Cudworth, Mr. mentioned ii 416  
 Culamites, an absurd name given to the original Methodists in Lincolnshire i 414  
 Cumberland, the Duke of, his triangular tower mentioned iii 336  
 Cure, a remarkable ii 98  
 Curse, the original, for the sin of man ix 296, 297  
 Curtius, Q. commended as a fine writer ii 116  
 Custom, the influence of, with respect to dress vii 72  
 Cutts, Lady, mentioned viii 58  
 Cyprian, St. his illustrations of eternity vi 203  
     his account of the state of religion in the third century vi 268  
 Cyprian, St. a defence of his character ix 41—43  
     his wonderful relation concerning some apostates ix 44  
 Cyril, what he says concerning the Scriptures x 13
- D
- Daff, Mr. his Essay on Genius mentioned x 186  
 Daille, his Tract on the Use of the Fathers, exceptionable ii 168  
 Dales, some account of the work of God in the iv 178—182  
 Dalrymple, Sir John, his Memoirs of the Revolution criticised iii 363, 364

- Dancing, the precaution by the ancient heathens in vii 81
- Danish Mount, some account of a iv 153
- Dargle Mount, some account of iii 175, 176  
New, described iv 214
- Darkness, spiritual, not necessary to the work of holiness vi 69, 70
- David, the sin of, mentioned v 183, 184, 185  
a man after God's own heart, how? x 192
- David, Christian, specimens of his Sermons i 205  
some account of i 208—  
210, 212, 213
- David's, St. some account of iv 74
- Davies, the Rev. Mr. (of Virginia) two letters from ii 331, 332, 358, 359  
Sir John, his historical relations concerning Ireland, noticed ii 463, 464  
quoted vii 305
- Dawgreen, in Yorkshire, mentioned iii 305
- Deadness, spiritual, causes of iv 205
- Death, an awful ii 401  
the nature of that which God denounced against Adam ix 202, 327, 340  
how it passed on all men ix 213  
why not desired by all who are perfected in love x 221  
how it reigned from Adam to Moses ix 310
- Dr. Taylor's singular notion of ix 216, 217
- Declaration, a, what? iii 55
- Deed, Trust, of a chapel at Liverpool, remarks on a iii 187
- Deism, remarks on { ii 326, 327  
vii 185
- Deist, the faith of a, what? vii 210  
an Address to a vii 213, 214  
an account of a viii 191  
a prayer recommended to a viii 335, 336
- Deists, an Address to viii 189, 190, 330
- De Jersey, Mr. his gardens mentioned iv 219
- Deliverance, a remarkable, from drowning ii 98, 99
- Dell, William, the works of, mentioned ii 248
- Demerit of believers, a consciousness of, necessary v 138
- Democracy, what? ix 476
- Demoniacs, the case of, considered viii 436—  
438
- Demons, what? vi 349
- Dempster, Mr. two letters from, to Mr. Wesley x 359, 360
- Demuth, Christopher, an account of i 220—  
222
- De Renty, Monsieur, quoted { iv 168  
x 308  
what he said of the devil vi 363  
a remarkable saying of vii 20
- Desire of the eye, what? { v 183, 184,  
185, 193  
vii 59, 227
- Desire of the flesh, what? { vii 59  
vi 409, 410
- Desire of ease, what? vii 59
- Desires, worldly, to be avoided vii 247
- Desmond, Earl of, some account of iii 344
- Despair, the evil effects of vii 44—46
- Devices of Satan, what? vi 17, 18
- Devices of Satan, how to be improved vi 18—21
- Devil, how he works v 400—403  
how cast out v 403, 406  
the power of the vi 360—363  
a preservative against the power of the vi 363, 364
- Devils, remarks on casting out, in the primitive Church ix 37—40
- Dewsbury, a strange account of the vicar and curate of ii 257  
the case of the chapel of, stated iv 277
- Dialogue between a Predestinarian and his Friend ix 430—435
- Dickinson, the Rev. Mr. two letters from Mr. Wesley to x 355, 356
- Dineboul Quarry, an awful occurrence at ii 307, 308
- Directions how to please all men for their good vii 168—170
- Discipline, the great importance of iv 33  
Christian, the importance of vii 259
- Discontent, remarks on viii 294, 305, 306
- Diseases, spiritual, in children, what? and how to be cured vii 124—131
- Disorder, an account of a strange iii 139, 140
- Dispensation, the difference between the Jewish and the Christian v 425—  
428
- Dispensations of Grace, the four, mentioned vii 209, 210
- Dispute, a mode of settling ii 213
- Disputes, the evil consequence of iii 320
- Disputing, the evil of ii 294
- Disquisitions, free and candid, remarks on ii 220
- Dissent from the Church of England, the grounds of, examined ix 151—155
- Dissenters, who the worst i 310, 311  
in what sense the Methodists are not iv 383  
an Address to viii 321, 322
- Dissimulation, observations on vii 167
- Dissipation, what? { vi 416—418  
vii 248  
how to be avoided vi 419  
the ground, nature, and fruits of x 160, 161
- Distillers noticed vi 100
- Distraction, see Dissipation
- Distress, an amazing instance of ii 82
- Disturbances, how occasioned by the preaching of the gospel viii 275, 276
- Ditton, his Discourse on the resurrection of Christ mentioned x 214, 215
- Diversions, public, censured vii 361, 364  
the consequence of vii 364, 366  
arguments against vii 367, 368  
remarks on vii 80—82
- Divinity, comparative, what? vii 102, 103
- Divisions in families, how occasioned by the preaching of the gospel viii 276—  
278
- Dobbs, Mr. his Universal History mentioned iv 216
- Doctrine, Christian, a departure from, censured vii 324—326
- Dodd, Dr. his state of mind while in prison iii 453, 456  
mentioned, note v 124  
an Answer to x 153—156
- Doddridge, Dr. a letter from ii 84, 85

- Dog, a strange account of a iv 102, 103  
 Donatists supposed to have been real Christians x 155  
 Dorset, the Duke of, his seat mentioned iv 67  
 Douglas Cause, the, mentioned iii 236  
 Downes, Mr. taken for a soldier ii 20  
 four letters from Mr. Wesley to x 425, 426  
 Mr. John, the character and sudden death of iii 405  
 the Rev. Mr. a letter to viii 628—538  
 Downpatrick, some account of iv 19  
 Doxology to the Lord's Prayer, what it imports v 289  
 Drake, Sir Francis, mentioned viii 315  
 Dram-drinkers and vendors mentioned vi 100  
 Dream, a remarkable ii 56, 57  
 a useful ii 95  
 a remarkable, realized iv 126  
 Dreams, two remarkable { iii 362, 363  
 ii 379-  
 remarks on the nature and sources of vii 286, 287  
 and visions, how to be regarded? iv 355  
 Dresden, the Palace, Church, Bridge, &c. mentioned i 203  
 the difficulty of gaining admittance into, by strangers i 203, 233  
 Dress, advice to Methodists on vi 153—161  
 the evil of gay and costly vii 68  
 ornamental, for children, condemned vii 129, 137  
 remarks on { vii 145, 146  
 ix 491, 522, 523  
 observations on { vii 261  
 x 309  
 advice relating thereto viii 58  
 what the Quakers say of ix 150  
 how to deal with professors of religion who are addicted to x 300  
 Drogheda, account of the siege of ii 394, 395  
 Dropsy, how cured iii 258  
 Druidical Temple, some account of a iv 153  
 Drummernave, a description of ii 399  
 Drunkard, a notorious, converted- i 286  
 a, converted ii 236  
 a Word to a viii 143—145  
 Drunkards, when and how to be reprov'd vi 302  
 Drunkenness, observations on the evil of viii 306  
 Dublin, a description of ii 124  
 the College of, mentioned ii 393  
 a letter from Mr. Wesley to certain persons in x 451, 452  
 Chronicle, a letter from Mr. Wesley to the Printer of the x 452—455  
 Duchesne, her account of the declaration of a Romish priest x 77—80  
 Dudley, John, a strange account of ii 213—215  
 Ducl, an account of a ii 401  
 Duff, Mr. a remark on his Essay on Genius iv 228  
 Dumfries, a short account of ii 280, 281  
 Dundee, Lord; the character of iii 363, 364  
 Dunmore, the park of, described ii 212  
 the cave of, mentioned iii 55  
 Dunscombe, Mr. a mistake of, corrected i 32  
 Duration, boundless, remarks on vi 200, 201  
 Durham Castle, some account of iv 59  
 Dutch, the character of the iv 114  
 Dying believers, the use they are of to those about them x 295  
 Dykern, Baron, the Rt. Hon. Geo. Charles, a remarkable account of ii 418—421  
 D——, the Rev. Mr. a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 244, 245  
 E  
 Earth, observations on the vi 211, 332, 333  
 the change that will be effected in the vi 294, 295  
 the original and present state of the, considered ix 265, 266  
 the present state of the, what? ix 292—294  
 Earthquake, that at Lishon referred to iii 122  
 at Lisbon, serious thoughts occasioned by the viii 165—174  
 the cause of viii 168, 169  
 near Madely, an account of the iii 376  
 Earthquakes, an account of some ii 370, 371, 382  
 in London, some account of the ii 197, 199  
 Easterbrook, Rev. Mr. some account of the iv 305  
 East Indies, the propriety of sending Missionaries to the, considered iv 122  
 Eating and drinking unworthily, the import of vii 174, 175  
 our own damnation, the import of vi 383  
 Ecclesiastes, remarks on iii 448  
 Edinburgh, some account of { ii 238  
 iii 46  
 Edmondson, William, (the Quaker) some account of iii 174, 175  
 Education, remarks on bad ix 201  
 Edwards, President, his scheme of Necessity stated x 142—144  
 what he says of Absolute Necessity ix 462  
 his thoughts concerning men's voluntary and involuntary actions ix 466  
 Election, Calvinistic, what? ix 381, 382, 420—429  
 unconditional, implies reprobation ix 379  
 the cause of, what? ix 422—424  
 remarks on ix 482, 483  
 unconditional, observations on ix 515  
 the Scripture doctrine of, what? ix 381, 382, 420—429  
 of Members for Parliament, how conducted ii 118  
 Middlesex, remarks on the measures relative to the x 105—107  
 Electrical experiments, observations on ii 126, 127  
 Electricity, why decried by some medical men ii 275, 276  
 strongly recommended ii 356, 357  
 Elements, what? vi 292, 293  
 Elizabeth, Queen, the character of iii 241  
 Elliott, the Rev. Mr. of New England, a saying of iii 138  
 Elm-tree, a very large, mentioned iii 382

- Eloquence cannot supply the place of love  
vii 93—95
- Else, Mr. a Treatise of his mentioned iii 356
- Ely, Isle of, mentioned iii 407
- Endicot, Governor of New England, his  
treatment of the Quakers ii 16
- Enemies to God, how wicked men are ix  
366, 367  
to Christ ix 367—369  
to the Holy Ghost ix 369  
to the law of God ix 369
- England, the moral state of the people of ix  
190, 191
- English, Andrew, the remarkable preserva-  
tion of, in a coal-pit ii  
424
- Englishman, a Word in Season to an viii  
153—156
- English nation, the character of the vi 421
- Enlightened, the import of ix 446
- Enthusiasm, what? i 247  
defined iii 95  
what? viii 398—404. 428—440  
proper guards against i 77  
a remark on ii 262  
a candid discourse concerning i  
275, 276  
an instance of i 411  
exemplified ii 278  
the derivation of the word v  
391, 392  
the nature and different sorts of v  
393—398  
the dreadful evils of v 398  
how to guard against v 398, 399  
remarks on vii 235, 248  
a caution against viii 53, 54  
observations on { viii 264  
ix 83—85  
of the Methodists and Papists  
Compared, a letter to the au-  
thor of viii 471—486
- Enthusiastic ardour, remarks on viii 227
- Enthusiasts, who accounted viii 267, 268
- Episcopacy, Diocesan, remarks on x 237
- Episcopal form of Church Government, a re-  
remark on x 231  
Ordination, not essential to the ex-  
ercise of the Christian ministry  
x 237
- Episcopius's Account of the Synod of Dort  
referred to i 352
- Epsam, Mr. his house and gardens described  
ii 447
- Epworth, anecdote of a poor woman at vi 56
- Erskine, the Rev. Ralph, a letter from i  
269, 270  
the Rev. Mr. his Sermons censured  
ii 247  
some observations concern-  
ing x 266
- Dr. remarks on his account of saving  
faith iii 285, 286  
remarks on his Defence viii  
543—552
- Esau, the case of, stated ix 402
- Essay on the Life to Come, a remark on an  
ii 272  
vi 200  
vii 37
- Eternity, remarks on { vi 200  
vii 37  
of God, observations on the vi 331
- Eucharist, remarks on the x 39, 41, 43
- Eupolis, an account of, note i 13
- Europeans, the moral state of many vi 336, 337
- Eusebius's Ecclesiastical History censured  
i 375
- Evans, John, some account of, when in Flan-  
ders ii 29, 30
- Evidence of Christianity, traditional remarks  
on ix 63  
internal ix 63—66
- E——, James, a candid letter from ii 44, 46
- Evil, the origin of moral and natural vi  
221—223  
moral, the origin of vii 301  
the general spread of vii 301—305  
of several kinds, how to remove iv 376  
deliver us from, the import of v 289  
eye, what? v 307, 308  
speaking, wherein it consists? vi 89—91  
the cure of vi 91—96  
penal, how the hand of God is in it  
vii 361, 362  
natural, observations on ix 264  
how to account for the origin  
of x 216  
moral, how to cure x 219, 220
- Ewer, John, a backslider, some account of ii 8
- Examination, self, a method of i 99—113
- Example, the great importance of { vi 124  
iii 12  
the influence of ix 200
- Exeter, Bishop of, his palace, &c. mentioned  
iv 98
- Exhorters in Cornwall, some account of ii 443
- Exorcism, as practised in the Church of  
Rome x 37
- Experience, how to judge of x 305—307
- Experiment, a singular i 348
- Extravagance in religion, examples of iv 170
- Extroversion, what it signifies vi 420
- Eye, single, what? vii 269  
the importance of, in marriage  
x 158
- Eyc, evil, what? vii 270—272  
the consequences of vii 272—275
- Eye-service, what? vi 193
- Eye, right, the import of the term v 240, 241
- Eye-water, an excellent ii 462
- F
- Facts, objects of faith vi 212, 213  
iv 348
- Faith, what? { viii 177, 178  
vi 375, 376  
vii 209  
definition of, by the Church { i 185  
of England { viii 203  
the doctrine of, intolerable to the car-  
nal man i 188, 189  
justifying, what? i 193, 194  
an instance of the power of ii 400, 401  
weak, what? i 320  
a definition of { iii 285, 286  
v 209, 210  
justifying, what { iv 361  
viii 219, 225, 384  
of a heathen, what? v 10  
of the apostles, while Christ was on  
earth v 16  
in Christ, what? v 10, 11  
Christian, what? v 52  
the condition of justification v 52, 53  
why the condition of justification v 54  
how the condition of justification viii  
390  
how imputed for righteousness { v 58  
vi 247

- Faith, included in the circumcision of the heart v 165  
 a mark of the new-birth v 171, 172  
 the fruits of v 172—174  
 how the loss of, precedes the commission of outward sin v 186  
 of assurance, what Mr. Wesley thought of the i 309  
 of God's elect, what? v 271  
 the loss of vi 60  
 how it acts in relation to futurity vi 205, 206  
 cannot supply the place of love vii 94, 97  
 the several sorts of, what? vii 219  
 saving, what? vii 212  
 how it supplies the place of sense vii 237—239, 245  
 what meant by the full assurance of vii 240  
 what to walk by vii 245  
 the evidence of things { vii 292—300  
   not seen, how? } viii 188, 189, 409  
 how the gift of God? viii 188  
 remarks on a definition of viii 388  
 how men are saved by? viii 192  
 remarks on x 200, 201  
 remarks on the light of x 316  
 Faithfulness of God, what? ix 403  
   how far engaged to keep believers from falling away ix 406  
   man's, remarks on iv 369  
 Fall in Adam, the nature of the vii 369—371  
 of man, occasioned the loss of communion with God ix 235, 236  
 the doctrine of the vi 220—229  
 how it brought God's displeasure upon the human race ix 236  
 Falling away, the possibility of, proved ix 406—416, 439—449  
 Falsehood, the evil of encouraging, in children vii 130, 131  
 Family religion strongly recommended iii 205  
   the great importance of vii 114, 115  
 Fanaticism, remarks on viii 349  
 Farmers, a singular engagement entered into by some ii 303, 304  
   their employment and character iii 204  
 Fast Days, the utility of ii 387, 414, 415  
 Fasting, the Society at Bristol agree to practise i 277  
   and prayer, the utility of iii 107  
   the nature and degrees of v 293—295  
   reason for v 295—300  
   Homily on, quoted v 296  
   objections to, answered v 300—302  
   remarks on vii 262  
   in what manner to be performed v 302—305  
 Fate, remarks on ix 467, 468  
 Fathers, Primitive, an acquaintance with the, useful viii 76  
   their thoughts on the state of the saints immediately after death x 21—23  
 Fear and trembling, the import { vi 191, 192  
   of the phrase } vii 41  
 Feasts, the manner of the Jewish and Roman vi 53, 54  
   Bacchanalian, the evil of . iii 198  
 Feder, Albinus Theodorus, the experience of i 216  
 Feeling, remarks on viii 400, 557—559  
 Feeling, inward, in religion, a defence of viii 560, 561  
 Fell, Captain, how he served Arbroath iv 130  
 Fenelon, Bishop, what he says of simplicity x 298, 319  
 Feoffees, the power of i 257  
 Ferries, a remark on crossing iii 150  
 Fidelity, remarks on viii 51  
   to the grace of God, two letters on, from Mr. Wesley to Miss B. x 313—315  
   in servants, what? vi 195  
 Field's Bible, how to distinguish the genuine iv 100  
 Fingal, a Poem, mentioned { iii 218  
   } iv 174  
 Fire, destruction of the world by v 146, 147  
   of hell, whether material or not vi 369, 370  
   not quenched, what it imports vi 368, 369  
   electrical, remarks on ii 276, 277  
   a great, in Leadenhall-Street iii 182  
   an account of a { iii 405, 406  
   } vii 363  
 Fisher, Bishop, what he says of purgatory x 21, 23  
 Fits, remarks on viii 402, 411  
   epileptic, a strange account of a young man affected by iii 241  
 Flamborough Head mentioned iv 40  
 Flattery, remarks on vii 167  
 Flame of love, how to keep up the iv 152  
 Flesh, what the term imports v 73, 74  
   remarks on the word ix 234, 331, 332  
 Fletcher, the Rev. John, men- { ii 361, 362  
   tioned } iv 124  
   some account of, as a preacher iv 82  
   native of Switzerland vi 140  
   his visit to England vi 140  
   a remarkable anecdote of vi 140  
   joins the Methodist Society vi 140  
   enters Holy Orders, and begins to preach vi 141  
   presented to the living at Madeley vi 141  
   enters upon the superintendence of Lady Huntingdon's College at Travecka vi 141  
   enters upon a vindication of Methodist Minutes of 1770 vi 141  
   character of his writings vi 141, 142  
   his self-denial and diligence vi 142  
   visits his native country vi 142  
   his marriage vi 142  
   his early piety vi 143  
   deeply convinced of his want of faith vi 143  
   obtains a sense of God's favour vi 144  
   remarkably preserved from being burnt to death vi 144  
   builds a chapel at Madeley Wood vi 144  
   his humility, patience, and love vi 144, 145  
 Fletcher, the Rev. John, his deep communion with God vi 145, 146  
   his sickness and death vi 146—151  
   his general character vi 151, 152  
   his epitaph vi 152  
   a quotation from vii 209, 210  
   a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 279  
   280

- Flood, some account of a remarkable, at Hayfield ii 158  
 "Followeth not with us," what the import of v 403—406  
 Folly, worldly, exemplified vii 275—279  
 Fondling expressions in religion, remarks on vii 265—268  
 Food, remarks on taking vii 79, 80  
 "Foolish and hurtful desires," what? vii 58  
 Forbearance, the want of, productive of great mischief vi 266  
 Foreknowledge, remarks on vi 230, 231. 233  
     a remark on x 219  
 Forgetfulness of God, the evil of viii 295  
 Forgiveness of our trespasses, on what terms we pray for v 288  
 Formality in public worship, how to avoid iv 388  
 Foster, Mr. his Voyages censured iv 276  
 Foundry, a letter from Mr. Wesley to the Stewards of x 451  
 Fox, Mr. a critique on his Book of Martyrs ii 230  
 Foy, Captain, the proposal of, to pay off the debt of the Methodists x 449  
 Frames and feelings, remarks on iii 368  
 Frankfort, the difficulty of getting admittance into i 199  
 Free Agency, how possessed by man vi 231  
 Free, Dr. a remark on, as a writer ii 396. 406  
     a letter to viii 525—527  
 Freeholder, a Word to a viii 159—161  
 French generosity exemplified ii 384  
     the landing of the, at Carrickfergus ii 465, 466  
     language, see Voltaire  
     gold, the influence of, in exciting discontent in England x 109  
 Fretfulness, how increased by riches vii 229  
 Friendship, what? x 304  
     with the world, what kind allowed by Christianity vi 423, 424  
     what kind of, forbidden vi 424  
     why to be avoided vi 425—427  
     pleas for, what? vi 427—429  
 Frome, the great diversity of religious opinions in iii 261  
 Frugality, German, an instance of i 199, 200  
 Fruit, why not lasting ii 347, 348  
     of the Spirit, remarks on ix 74  
 Fruit of the Spirit, what? { i 240  
   } viii 557  
 Fruits of faith, what? iv 349  
 Fry, Mr. his case of marriage referred to ii 354  
     his Tract on Marriage recommended iv 166  
 Mrs. some account of the death of iii 280, 281  
 F——d, Mr. George Robert, an account of iv 268, 269  
     the life of, mentioned iv 275  
 F——, Mrs. a strange account of ii 345  
 Fuller, Miss, a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 313  
 Fulneck, the Moravian establishment at ii 112  
 Fulness of God, how described viii 59  
 Fund, Preachers', rules of the first iv 389, 390  
     how to raise a general iv 394—396  
 Fundamentals, remarks on the term vi 209  
 Furlly, Miss, twenty-three letters from Mr. Wesley to x 427—438
- G
- Galatians, the design and subject of the Epistle to iv 351  
 Garden, Physic, at Chelsea, remarks on ii 161  
     a singular, at Oxford, mentioned iv 102  
 Gardiner, Colonel, his death mentioned ii 127  
 G——, Mr. his rudeness censured ii 201, 202  
 Gardiston, Lord, his example recommended iv 292  
 Garlic, the utility of, in restoring the voice iv 180  
 Garson, Sir John, some account of iii 157  
 Gärvaix Abbey mentioned iv 56  
 Gate, wide, and broad way, what the terms import v 340—345  
     strait, and narrow way, what? v 342—345  
     how to enter in at the v 345, 346  
 Geddes, Dr. his account of the Roman Inquisition vii 98  
     his account of Popish Cruelty ix 186  
 Gele, Dr. his Essay toward an amendment of the last translation of the Bible mentioned iii 451  
 Genius, what? { iv 228  
                           } x 186, 187  
     thoughts on x 186, 187  
 Gentiles, what meant by their state of nature ix 223—225  
 Gentleness, observations on viii 51  
 George the Second, King, the death of iii 23  
 George the Third, King, some account of, as a speaker iv 167  
     the sickness and recovery of iv 260, 261  
 Georgia, a description of i 157—161  
 Gerard, Dr. his Essay on Taste censured iv 228  
     his Essay on Genius mentioned x 186  
 Gerard's *Meditationes Sacrae* censured ii 202  
 Giant's Causeway, some account of iv 17  
 Gibson, Bishop, what he said to Mr. Wesley concerning Christian Perfection x 270  
 Gift, heavenly, what? ix 446, 447  
     free, what? ix 213  
     of tongues in the primitive Church, remarks on the ix 17—19  
 Gifts, extraordinary, of the Holy Ghost, remarks on the vii 75  
     what? ix 91  
     what necessary for a minister of the gospel viii 68. 71. 74. 77  
     spiritual, remarks on ix 17—19  
 Gilbert, Miss, mentioned iii 239  
 Gillies, Dr. his Historical Collections commended ii 317  
     James, learns to read in a surprising manner ii 430  
 Glanvill, his relation of witchcraft mentioned ii 247  
     his *Sadducismus Triumphatus* noticed iii 271  
 Glasgow, some account of ii 257  
     mentioned ii 372  
     the character of the people of iii 389  
 Glastenbury Tower mentioned ii 324  
 Glory, how the body shall be raised in vii 346

- Gloucester, the Bishop's palace at, mentioned iv 196  
 Gobalin, Monsieur, his Primitive World Analyzed mentioned iv 186  
 God, in what sense our Father? v 337  
   his eternity vi 200—207  
   the unity of vii 249—256  
   worketh in you to will and to do, the import of vii 40  
 God's dear Son, remarks on the phrase vii 266  
 Godliness, the form of, what? v 18, 19  
 Good, how to do? ii 355, 356  
 Good-bree-ling, reflections on i 245, 246  
 "Good Match," remarks on a vii 121  
 Good sort of men, who? ix 78  
 Goodness, remarks on viii 77, 78  
 Goodshall, Lucy, a short account of i 405, 406  
 Gordon, Mr. his curious garden mentioned iii 409  
   Lord George, mentioned iii 331  
 Gorgeous apparel, what? vii 67  
 Gospel, what? v 71  
   the spread of iv 147  
 Gospel Glass commended ii 356  
 Governor, how God acts as a ix 472, 473  
 Gower, in Wales, described iii 150  
 Gowrie conspiracy, some account of the iii 390  
 Grace, free, what? vi 115—125  
   how it abounds by Christ ix 213  
   the absolute necessity of, for a minister of the gospel vii 71—73. 77—82  
   the overwhelping power of, remarks on the iv 149  
 Graces before and after meat viii 139  
 Gradin, Arvid, (a Swede,) some account of i 222—223  
 Grange-Green Castle, some account of iii 142  
 Graves, Caspar Charles, his declaration and recantation on i 403, 404  
 Gravitation, some remarks on vi 401  
 Gray, his works mentioned iii 447  
 Greenwood, Mr. Charles, the happy death of iv 105  
 Gregory, Dr. a remark on his advice to his daughters iii 389  
   what he says of harmony in music x 169  
 Grenville, Mr. George, his political conduct censured x 107, 108  
 Grimshaw, the Rev. William, some account of iii 68—70  
   a letter from, iii 71—73  
   to the Society in London iii 71—73  
 Guernsey, the Island of, mentioned iv 219  
 Guides, spiritual, who? vii 141, 142  
   an inquiry into their character ix 194, 195  
 Guilford, Mr. Joseph, some account of iii 453  
 Guilt, imputed, observations on ix 260, 261  
 Guion, Madam, remarks on her writings i 396  
   a stricture on her writings x 320  
 Gummy Cystus, a curious flower described iii 415  
 Guthrie's History of Scotland mentioned iii 289, 290  
 Gwenap, the natural amphitheatre of, described iii 201, 260  
 G——, the Rev. Mr. a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 243, 244
- H
- Haddington, the seat of the Earl of, mentioned iii 301  
 Hades, see Hell  
   remarks on the word vii 292, 293  
 Haerlem Wood, some account of iv 182, 183  
 Hagley Park mentioned iv 96  
 Hague, some account of the iv 110  
 Hail-stones, an account of some remarkably large iii 122  
 Haime, John, an account of, when in Flanders, as also of the work of God there ii 9, 27, 28  
   his account of a battle in Flanders ii 73  
 Hall, Mrs. an account of i 35  
   the Rev. Mr. a lamentable account of the death of iii 130—133  
   the death of iii 428  
 Hairs of your head are numbered, the import of that saying vi 311  
 Hart, Mr. a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 283, 284  
 H——, Mr. his low and abusive language noticed x 488  
 Halle, an account of the Orphan-House at i 202  
 Halley, Dr. his observations respecting the great comet viii 170, 171  
 Hallowed be thy name, the import of the petition v 284, 285  
 Hampton Court, some account of { iii 340  
   { iv 188  
 Hand, right, see Eye, right  
   what to give the, to another v 415—417  
 Hannibal mentioned ix 176  
 Hanway, Mr. his History of Shaw Nadir, referred to ii 358  
 Happiness, reflections on the nature and causes of vi 404—407  
   to be desired from God vii 254, 255  
   how to be obtained? viii 199  
   the folly of seeking, in created good x 159  
   of the people of the world, in what it consists viii 199  
 Harcourt, Lord, some account of his seat iv 141  
 Harewood House, some account of iv 36  
 Harmlessness, remarks on vii 284  
 Harris, Howel, his candid and peaceable temper { i 369, 370  
   { ii 44  
   a powerful orator ii 196  
   what he said of Lady Huntington's students iii 359  
   Benjamin, an awful account of iii 98  
 Hartley, Mr. his Defence of the Mystic Writers, a Critique upon iii 125  
   Dr. his scheme of necessity censured ix 467, 468  
   what he says on the formation of our thoughts x 141  
 Haste, how it differs from hurry x 310, 311  
 Hatton, Mr. strange deliverance of iv 51, 52  
 Haughtiness condemned vii 166

- Hay, Mr. on Deformity, a remark on ii 301  
 Haydon, John the singular account of viii 435  
 Headach, a singular instance of the removal of a ii 79  
 Healing the sick in the primitive Church, remarks on ix 35, 36  
 Healths, obscene, the custom of giving, mentioned iv 243, 244  
 Heart right with God, what? v 414  
   right toward our neighbour, what? v 415  
   true to God, what? vii 86  
   the deceitfulness of vii 300—306  
   how deceitful and desperately wicked ix 247, 248  
 Heat, excessive, in England ii 377  
 Heathen honesty, what? v 17  
 Heathens, they admitted the corruption of human nature ix 253, 254, 298  
   the condition of the, what? ix 267  
   the moral state of the, what? ix 319, 320  
   the present state of the, what? ix 179—183  
   the faith of, what? vii 210  
   the imperfect state of their knowledge vii 38, 39  
 Heaven, remarks on the word vi 291, 292  
   what? x 322  
   whether a place, or a state? x 322  
 Heaviness, how it differs from spiritual darkness ii 405, 413  
   character of those who are liable to be in vi 71—73  
   the nature and causes of vi 73—77  
   the ends of vi 77—79  
 Hebden, the Rev. Samuel, his doctrine of Original Sin stated ix 324—350  
 Helier's, St. the Island of, mentioned iv 220  
 Hell, what? vi 53  
   the duration of vi 204, 371, 373  
   in what the torments of, consists vi 366  
   the doctrine of the torments of, proved ix 116  
 Helpers, the office and rules of iv 377, 378  
   how they ought to employ their time iv 378  
   not suffered to follow trades iv 378, 379  
   important questions proposed to iv 384—386, 389  
 Helplessness, how it applies to the children of God v 134, 138  
 Henderson, Mr. his method of treating lunatics iv 85, 86  
   the death of, mentioned iv 261  
 Henry, the Rev. Mr. Philip, mentioned i 375  
   a remarkable saying of iii 303  
   his temper and conduct commended viii 259—264  
   the Rev. Matthew, mentioned i 375  
 Herbert, Lord, his life censured iii 376  
 Heresies, what? vi 383, 384  
 Heresy, remarks on the term x 232, 237, 238  
   and Schism, a letter from Mr. Wesley on, to Mr. — x 237—239  
 Heretic, observations on the application of the word ii 53  
 Hermas, his writings mentioned ix 20, 21  
 Hernhuth, description of i 203  
 Hernhuth, an odd custom at, and an account of their mode of burying i 205  
 Hervey, the Rev. Mr. quoted ix 203, 204, 249, 274, 452  
   some passages in his Iheron and Aspasio censured x 23  
   a letter to, on his resolving to write against Mr. Wesley x 203  
 Hervey, the Rev. Mr. the authenticity of his Eleven Letters doubtful viii 543, 544  
 Hesiod quoted vi 349  
 Hicks, the Rev. Mr. see Berridge  
 Hieroglyphics, the use of x 87  
 Highlands in Scotland, what? iii 301  
 Hill, Mr. R. his Review mentioned iii 357  
   an observation on one of his works iii 456  
   animadverted on as a writer ix 477, 478  
   the effects of his Calvinism ix 506, 507  
   advice to ix 530  
   Sir Richard, his Letter to Mr. Madan commended iv 73  
 History, an acquaintance with, of great importance to ministers viii 95  
 Hitchens, William, an account of ii 360, 361  
 Hoadley's Method of Prayer censured vii 267  
 Hoarseness, a cure for a iv 66  
 Hobbes, Mr. what he thought of reason v 196  
   his dying words vi 345  
 Hobson, Elizabeth, the surprising account of iii 246—253  
 Hodge, Dr. his account of the plague in London ii 153, 154  
   a remark on his Elihu iii 333  
 Holiness, what? x 298  
   little known at Oxford viii 329, 330  
 Holydays, the English manner of keeping ii 71  
 Holy Ghost, the operations of the, on the souls of men, what? viii 242, 243  
   the distinction between the ordinary and extraordinary operations of the viii 243—259  
   effects of the operations of the, in believers vii 373—375  
   remarks on the extraordinary gift of the v 33  
   the ordinary gift of, what? viii 259—263  
   not yet given, how to be understood v 427  
 Holy Island, some account of iii 138, 139  
 Holyrood-house mentioned iii 46, 47, 244  
 Holy Spirit, by what kind of sins is grieved vii 352, 353  
 Holy things not to be given to dogs v 336  
 Homer's Iliad, remarks on ii 153  
   Odyssey, a critique on iii 286  
 Homilies of the Church of England quoted vi 246  
 Honesty, a remarkable instance of ii 335  
 Honour, a man of, who? ix 185  
 Honouring parents, what implied in vi 187, 188, 189  
 Hook's Roman History, a critique upon iii 337

- Hoole's Translation of Tasso's Jerusalem De-  
 livered, a critique upon iii 334  
 Hooly, Ann, the remarkable case of iii 88  
 Hope, what? vi 372  
   included in the circumcision of the  
   heart v 166  
   the full assurance of, what? viii 553  
 Horne, the Rev. Dr. a letter to viii 538—543  
   his Commentary on the  
   Psalms mentioned iv 106  
 Horse, the sudden recovery of a lame ii 79  
 Horses, how to keep from falling iii 297  
   how to be treated iv 384  
 Hoskins, Martin, a remarkable account of iv  
   23  
 Hospital, Royal, at Plymouth, some account  
   of the iv 146  
   St. Luke's, mentioned iii 98  
   at Nottingham mentioned iv 179  
   Dr. Stephens's, some account of  
   ii 179  
 House, the import of the word vii 116  
   of Industry at Cork, some account of  
   the iv 204  
   a singular account of a ii 398  
 Howard, Mr. mentioned iv 204  
 Howe, the Rev. Mr. a quotation from his  
   Living Temple ix 238, 239  
 Howl, the Irish, at funerals, what? ii 211  
 Huddersfield, some account of the people of  
   ii 364  
   the Methodist Preachers with-  
   drawn from, to gratify the  
   Rev. Mr. Venn x 255  
 Humane Society, the rise and plan of vii  
   158, 159  
   the success of the vii 159,  
   160  
   the excellency of the vii  
   160—162  
 Hume, David, censured in 347  
   his work on Miracles condemn-  
   ed iii 268  
   animadverted on vii 305  
 Humility, remarks on the word v 222  
   what? vi 378, 379  
   included in the circumcision of the  
   heart v 164  
   particular questions relating to viii  
   95  
   in what it consists x 295  
 Humphreys, Mr. Joseph, an awful account of  
   iv 300, 301  
 Hunger and thirst, the import of the words  
   ii 407, 408  
 Hunneric, an Arian prince, a cruel persecutor  
   ix 49  
 Hunter, Dr. a critique on the lectures of iv 191  
 Huntingdon, Lord, what he said of the mor-  
   ality of the Bible x 282  
 Husbands, the authority and duty of vi 175—  
   180  
 Huss, John, how treated by the papists x  
   81—84  
 Hutcheson, Professor, what he thought of  
   benevolence vii 83, 84  
   what he says of a  
   moral sense vii 204  
   his scheme of reli-  
   gion censured vii 253, 254  
   an impious sentiment  
   of, censured vii 302  
 Hutchinson, Mr. a critique on his works ii  
   357  
 Hutchinson, Mr. strictures on his system ii  
   395, 404, 405  
   what he says of the ancient  
   inhabitants of Egypt vii 181, 182  
   Richard, a remarkable child for  
   early piety ii 210, 111  
 Huygen, Mr. remarks on his scheme of a plu-  
   rality of worlds vii 191, 192  
   his conjectures on the planetary  
   system mentioned ii 450  
 Hymns, Methodist, the advantage of using in  
   divine worship x 233
- I
- "I can do nothing," a stricture on the saying  
   ix 457  
 Ideas, innate, remarks on vii 13  
 Idleness, not produced by genuine Christian-  
   ity viii 281, 282  
 Idolatry, fallen man guilty of v 192  
   spiritual, what? vi 407—415  
   how promoted by riches vii 227  
 Idols, what? vi 408—413  
   how to be kept from vi 413—415  
   how they rival God vii 251, 252  
 "If we say we have no sin," &c. how to be  
   understood v 430, 431  
 Ignorance, how a cause of spiritual darkness  
   vi 65  
 Illiterate preachers, an inquiry concerning  
   their competency to guide immor-  
   tal souls viii 554—557  
 Ill-nature and unmercifulness, the folly of en-  
   couraging in children vii 131  
 Image of God, what? } v 77  
   ix 291, 308, 312  
   in what it con- } v 46  
   sists? } vi 259, 260  
   natural, what? vi 275, 276  
   moral what? vi 209  
   remarks on the ix 241—243,  
   278—280  
 Image of fallen Adam, found in all his chil-  
   dren ix 358, 359  
   how communicated  
   his posterity ix  
   355—357  
 Image-worship, the origin of, among Chris-  
   tians x 86—88  
 Images, the impiety of representing God by  
   x 33, 56  
   graven, remarks on x 31  
   the use the Church of Rome makes  
   of x 56  
   how first introduced into churches  
   x 87  
 Imaginations of the heart, how evil? v 189  
 Immortal, the body shall be raised, how? vii  
   344—346  
 Impressions, remarks on viii 495  
 Improving grace, the great importance of iii  
   292  
 Imputed righteousness, what? iii 462  
   the doctrine of, stated  
   vi 246—251  
   the danger of abusing  
   the doctrine of vi  
   250  
 "In Christ Jesus," who are? v 72—74  
 Inconsiderateness, the evil of vii 352, 353  
 Independents, remarks on their separation  
   from the Church of England viii  
   370

- Indians, a remarkable conference with some  
i 139, 140  
their cruel mode of putting their prisoners of war to death i 150, 151  
Georgian, an account of the i 161, 162  
American, the miserable state of the vi 330
- Indictments, remarks on the form of iv 68  
Indolence, how hurtful to the spirits x 183  
Indulgences, the doctrine of, as laughed at by the Church of Rome x 17. 19. 52
- Infidel, a strange account of an i 331  
Infidelity, the danger of the increase of i 149  
Infidels, a class of ii 279  
their notion of religion censured vii 254
- Infirmity at Nottingham warmly commended iv 229
- Infirmities, what? v 422, 423  
remarks on viii 509  
sins of, what? v 422
- Ingham, the Rev. Mr. what he said of leaving the Church vi 113
- Injustice, how encouraged in children vii 131  
the prevalence of viii 308  
"In many things we offend all," { v 430, 431  
how to be understood } x 236
- Inns in Holland and Germany, difficulty of procuring admittance into i 197, 203
- Inquisition, Romish, remarks on a custom in the vii 17, 18  
of Portugal, called the house of mercy, viii 165
- Inscription, a remarkable iii 411  
Inscriptions, sepulchral, remarks on the vanity of ii 424
- Insects, observations on vi 256
- Inspiration, the doctrine of, maintained by the church of England v 30  
of the Holy Ghost, remarks on viii 197  
observations on viii 495. 520—524
- Instantaneous conversion, remarks on i 185. 243  
examples of iii 86  
justification, { viii 459.  
476, 477
- Instruction to be given to families vii 118, 119
- Intemperance, how it affects the spirits x 183 184
- Intention, the importance of purity of vi 419  
purity of, in a minister, of vast importance viii 77—80
- Introversion, what meant by vi 420
- Inundations, a strange account of some iii 337, 338
- Inverness, some account of iii 141
- Invocation of saints, not a doctrine of revelation x 16
- Ireland, the state of the natives of ix 189, 190
- Irenaeus, what he says of the miraculous powers of the primitive Church ix 21  
remarks on his character as a writer ix 30—32  
what he says of raising the dead in the primitive Church ix 34
- Irish, the character of the ii 393  
language censured iv 154, 155
- Irregularity in the clergy of the Church of England defended x 248—252
- Irregularity, how Mr. Wesley defended his own x 254, 255
- Irresistible grace, the doctrine of, incompatible with the Scriptures ix 416, 417
- Isle of Man, some account of the { iii 454, 455  
iv 77, 78
- Israel, the religious state of, in the time of Ahab ix 172
- Israelites, contrasted with the Greeks and Romans ix 176
- J
- "Jacob have I loved, and Esau have I hated," the import of ix 402
- Jacobites mentioned ii 308
- Jamaica, an anecdote of the governor of iv 60
- Janc, Mr. John, some account of the death of ii 223
- Jealousy, the evil of vi 168, 169
- Jena, an account of i 201  
an account of the schools of i 234, 235
- Jennings, Dr. quotations from, on Original Sin ix 228, 257
- Jenyng, Mr. his Tract on the Internal Evidences of the Christian Religion censured iii 440, 441
- Jeroboam, the sin of, what? v 413
- Jerome, St. what he says of the Apocryphal writings x 15
- Jew, the faith of the, what? vii 211
- Jews, remarks on the worship of the, at Rotterdam i 237  
a remarkable form of prayer used by the ii 330  
their wickedness, according to their own prophets and historians viii 287—294  
an Address to the viii 329
- Johnson, Dr. his Tour to the Western Isles mentioned iii 435  
his Tour through Scotland mentioned iv 78
- Jones, David, an awful relation of i 146, 147  
Abraham, an example of the justice and mercy of God ii 195  
Mr. some account of iii 78, 79  
his Essay on the Principles of Natural philosophy mentioned iii 181  
his Tract upon Clean and Unclean Beasts commended iii 340  
his Book on the Trinity recommended x 321, 322  
Mrs. singular cure of iv 303  
the case of alluded to viii 418—420
- Jot, what it imports? v 267
- Joy in the Holy Ghost, what? v 67, 222  
the loss of vi 61
- Joy, the nature and ground of a Christian's v 116—118
- Judas, how elected ix 381  
"Judge not, that ye be not judged," how to be understood v 332—335
- Judges, important hints to v 148
- Judgment, the circumstances which shall precede the day of v 140, 141  
the nature of the proceedings of the v 141—145  
a few circumstances which will follow the general v 145—147

- Judgment, private, the right of v 413  
 Judgments of God on opposers of the truth,  
 remarks on the viii 401, 402  
 Jumpers, some account of the iii 113, 114.  
 399.  
 Junius recommended as a writer x 101  
 Juries, grand, their duty viii 298, 299  
 "Just man falleth seven times," the import  
 of the saying v 426  
 "Just shall live by faith," how to be under-  
 stood ix 412—414  
 Justice, a monument of divine, mentioned iv  
 179.  
 Justice of God, how displayed in acquitting  
 or condemning man ix 382  
 Justice of the Peace, the intolerance of a  
 Lincolnshire ii 244, 245  
 the strange conduct of a  
 iii 10  
 Justices of the Peace, the duty of viii 298  
 J——s, Mrs. a remarkable account of i 336  
 Justification, what? } iv 348  
 } v 48. 50. 207  
 how it differs from the new birth  
 v 180  
 not to be confounded with sancti-  
 fication v 48  
 the doctrine of, stated viii 176,  
 177. 182. 415—417  
 the conditions of viii 182. 184.  
 538—541  
 the effects of viii 182. 184, 185  
 the assurance of viii 182, 183  
 the meritorious cause of, what?  
 viii 224, 225  
 by faith, not opposed to holiness  
 viii 225, 226  
 the importance of distinguish-  
 ing, from sanctification vii  
 216—218  
 by faith, how? viii 384. 387, 388  
 remarks on the conse-  
 quences of viii 390  
 a doctrine of Chris-  
 tianity, and of the  
 Ch. of England i 293  
 St. Paul's doctrine of,  
 reconciled with St.  
 James's justification  
 by works viii 541—543  
 strongly maintained by  
 Mr. Wesley viii 545,  
 546  
 observations on ix 489.  
 520, 521  
 what Robert Barclay  
 says ix 111  
 final, the conditions of  
 viii 384, 385  
 twofold, how? ix 487.  
 519, 520  
 Justified state, remarks on the phrase ix 487.  
 520
- K
- Kaim, Lord, his Essays on Morality, &c.  
 censured iii 390  
 his scheme of materialism cen-  
 sured vii 210  
 his sentiments on religion vii  
 300, 301  
 his scheme of absolute necessity  
 censured x 142, 145
- Katherine, St. mentioned, and her } iii 62  
 life referred to } viii 473  
 Kempis, an admirable saying of ii 396  
 his Christian Pattern mentioned  
 viii 5  
 Kenn, Bishop, his poetical prayer mentioned  
 vi 353  
 quoted viii 297  
 Kennedy, Mr. and Mrs. the unhappy fate of  
 ii. 327  
 Kensington Gardens, a remark on ii 301  
 Kilby, Isaac, some account of ii 55, 56  
 Kilkenny, a description of iii 16  
 Killconnell, some account of the church of ii  
 347  
 Kilmore, Bishop of, his gardens and palace  
 mentioned iv 207  
 King, Lord, his account of the primitive  
 Church referred to ii 76  
 Archbishop, his work on the Origin of  
 Evil, referred to x 215—218  
 Mr. John, a letter from Mr. Wesley to  
 x 361  
 King Charles I. by whom deprived of his  
 power x 129  
 II. by whom raised to the  
 throne x 129  
 George II. a remarkable saying of vii  
 221  
 how far the public affairs of  
 his reign, accord with,  
 and differ from, those of  
 the reign of Charles I. x  
 111  
 III. his character defended x  
 102—104  
 King of France, an anecdote of the v 95  
 Kingdom of God, what? } v 64—68  
 } vii 224, 225  
 remarks on being born into  
 the ix 255  
 the way to the v 64—68  
 and his righteousness, what?  
 v 326, 327  
 cometh not with observa-  
 tion, how to be under-  
 stood vi 306. 308  
 heaven, what? v 222. 425, 426  
 what to be the least in the  
 v 269  
 Kingdom come, the import of the petition v  
 285, 286  
 Kingsford, Mr. the remarkable recovery of  
 iv 227  
 Kingston, William, born without arms iv  
 300  
 Kingswood, some account of the } i 302  
 work of God at } iii 342, 343  
 School, the opening of ii 148  
 a fire at ii 387  
 the case of ii 242, 243  
 the rules of, read and confirmed  
 ii 354  
 some account of the work of  
 God at iii 311—313. 379, 380  
 an account of iv 393, 394  
 Kinsale, the fort at, mentioned ii 340  
 Kitely, Mrs. some account of iii 158  
 Knowledge, human, the imper- } vi 329—340  
 fection of } ix 27, 28  
 the desire of, universal vi 329  
 its imperfection with respect to  
 futurity x 300

- Knowledge and virtue, the state of man with regard to, from the earliest Ages ix 168—178  
the present state of man with regard to ix 178—200. 297—300
- Knox, Mr. his History of the Church of Scotland mentioned iii 193  
(of Londonderry) a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 280, 281  
his Essays criticised iv 65
- Koran, some account of the ix 183, 184
- K—, Mrs. of Stratford, a strange account of i 415
- L
- Labour of man, an effect of sin ix 296
- Laetantius, what he says of easting out evil spirits ix 22
- Ladies in Paris, the example of, recommended vii 149
- Lady —, a letter from Mr. Wesley to x 464
- Lancaster, John, some account of, and several other malefactors ii 163—166
- Landlord, how a wicked, was punished iv 160, 151
- Land's End (Cornwall) described ii 383
- Language, plain, what the Quakers say of ix 117
- Language of heaven, what? i 113
- Languages, original, the importance of a minister's understanding the viii 75
- Larwood, Samuel, mentioned ii 325
- Lassels, Mr. some account of i 135
- Laughing, remarks on viii 490
- Laughter, involuntary, strange accounts of i 317
- Laval's History of the Reformed Churches of France mentioned i 375
- Lavington, Bishop of Exeter, a letter to viii 481—486
- Law, moral, the origin of the v 365  
the nature and properties of the v 367—370  
the uses of the v 370—373  
how made void } v 375—382 x 199  
how to establish the v 383—390  
in what sense believers not under the v 380  
how a mystery v 384—385  
how fulfilled by love viii 44  
not abolished by Christ v 266  
how fulfilled by Christ v 266, 267  
its harmony in connexion with the gospel v 267  
the inconsistency and wickedness of teaching men to break the v 270, 271  
mistakes concerning the, rectified v 363, 365  
how Christ is the end of the viii 43  
how believers dead to the, and under it to Christ viii 43  
what it imports? ix 274, 275  
what it requires? } ix 299, 300 ix 487  
ceremonial, Christ came to abolish the v 265  
(civil) the difficulty of obtaining redress in the courts of viii 308—311  
Mosaic, what? viii 43  
Adamic, what it required? v 56, 57
- Law, remarks on the viii 43  
how far its demands are satisfied by Christ x 201
- Law, the Rev. William, his book on the New Birth criticised i 289  
his Spirit of Prayer ii 181  
censured his Serious Call recommended vii 268  
his Serious Call and Christian Perfection mentioned viii 5, 6  
a letter to ix 118—150  
his philosophy ensured ix 119—127  
his scheme (after he commenced mystic) goes to deny the Omnipotence of God ix 127—129  
his scheme goes to deny the justice of God ix 129—132  
his scheme goes to deny the scriptural doctrine of justification ix 134  
what he says of the new birth ix 139—141  
what he says of faith ix 141  
what he says of the loss of fervour ix 142, 143  
what he says of Christ being in the soul of man ix 143—145  
His singular touchstone ix 145  
his writings mentioned ix 491, 492  
a quotation from, on sleep vii 110, 111  
a quotation from, on education vii 123, 124  
his advice on prayer recommended vii 77, 78  
two letters from Mr. Wesley to x 277
- Laws, human, the necessity of ix 357, 358  
how consented to, by those who have no voice in making them x 131
- Lawyers, the character of the generality of ix 193, 194
- Lay-preaching, an apology for viii 353—358  
468—470  
a letter on, from Mr. Wesley to Mr. — x 248
- Lazarus and the rich man, the story of, a real history vi 51—55
- Leader, the business of a iv 332, 345
- Leaders of Classes, the duty and authority of iii 320—322  
how they may be most useful iv 369  
their original office x 149
- Learned world, remarks on the viii 352
- Learning, the state of, in the University of Oxford vii 328
- Leasing-making, what? x 124
- Leasows, (a farm so called) described iv 97
- Leaving the first principles of the doctrine of Christ, how to be understood vii 241
- Lecturers in the Church of England, the qualifications of, what? viii 527
- Lee, Dr. his Sophron criticised iii 382  
Joseph, an awful account of iv 167

- Legacy for a charitable purpose, how to leave  
iv 397
- Leland, Dr. a critique upon his History of  
Ireland iii 370
- Lending stock, the origin and use of } ii 85  
the } iv 343
- Lesley, Dr. some account of his Do- } iv 20  
main } iv 211
- Letter, circular, a singular, from an Arch-  
bishop viii 227  
to an Irish clergyman viii 468—470  
from a preacher to Mr. Wesley ii  
41, 42  
from a person fallen from grace ii 85  
to the Public Advertiser x 74—76  
relating to public calamities ii 327,  
328
- Letters, two, to the Editors of the Freeman's  
Journal, in answer to Mr. O'Leary's  
remarks x 77—85  
commendatory, what? iv 335  
some excellent ii 57—60
- Leusden, his Dissertation on the Hebrew  
Points mentioned ii 357
- Leviticus, the general subject of the hook of  
vi 297
- Le Vray, an extract from his Animadver-  
sions on the Ancient Historians  
iv 158
- Lewin, Miss, some account of the death of  
iii 203, 204
- Lewis, Mr. his Hebrew Antiquities mentioned  
ii 224
- Lewisham mentioned iv 97
- Liberality to the poor exemplified ii 106
- Liberty, how a property of the soul vii 233  
what? v 88  
Christian, what? i 112, 113  
religious, what? x 118—120  
thoughts on x 116—124  
the love of, the glory of rational be-  
ings x 116  
civil, observations on x 120—124  
differs from licentiousness x 114, 115  
remarks on the different kinds of  
x 116—118  
how the ancient Britons defended  
their x 115  
the state of, in America, while under  
the British Government x 134
- Library, public, at Manchester, mentioned  
iv 235  
Christian, remarks on ix 481, 482
- Liburnum tree, some account of the iii 119,  
120
- Licensing preachers, &c. the mode of iv 228
- Life, eternal, what? vi 403  
the proper end of, what? vii 234, 235  
human, represented under the idea of  
a dream vii 285—291  
of God in the soul of man, what?  
v 187  
reflections on the love of ix 316—318
- Light, the promise of, explained v 28—32  
how to shine before men v 263, 264  
what it imports v 306, 307  
observations on vi 210, 332  
of the world, who the v 258, 259
- Lilly, Mr. W. remarks on the life of iii 119,  
120
- Limbo, what the Church of Rome says of  
x 22, 53
- Lincoln, the minister at, mentioned iv 298
- Linner, Michael, the experience of i 213, 214
- Linum Asbestum, what? vi 359
- Liquors, spirituous, remarks on the use of  
x 182, 183
- Liturgy of the Church of England, abounds  
with petitions for perfect holiness  
vii 325, 326
- Liverpool, some account of ii 310, 364, 365
- London, the Bishop of, a letter to the  
viii 457—467
- Londonderry, an account of the siege of, by  
Mr. Walker, recommended  
ii 394, 395  
some account of the bishop of  
iv 414  
the bishop's gardens, &c. at,  
mentioned iv 209  
the honesty of the people at  
iii 166, 167
- Longmore, Elizah. a witness of Christian  
perfection iii 294
- Long-suffering, what? vi 379
- Longworth, R. the happy death of ii 270,  
271
- Lopez, Gregory, his life mentioned i 404
- "Lord, Lord," what implied in saying  
v 355—357
- Lords, House of, an observation on the iv 145  
in Ireland, mentioned iv 214
- Lords's Supper, the duty of receiving the  
vii 171—179  
how often the primitive Chris-  
tians received the vii 172  
objections against receiving  
the, answered vii 173  
an appointed means of grace  
v 157  
who may partake of the, with  
profit viii 397, 461, 462  
what the Quakers say of the  
ix 116  
observations on the, by the An-  
cient Fathers ix 11
- Lough-Neagh, a beautiful lake, noticed ii 398
- Louisa, some account of iv 88, 89, 123, 164
- Love, what? vii 357  
the origin, &c. of v 386, 387  
how the fulfilling of the law v 387, 388  
the nature and proper- } vii 90—93,  
ties of } 110—112,  
357, 358  
the necessity of, in order to happiness  
vii 358, 359  
the necessity of, in order to render  
death comfortable vii 359, 360  
perfect, does not supersede the neces-  
sity of Christ's priestly office x 196  
brotherly, how it mani- } i 345, 346  
fests itself } v 407—409  
of God, included in the circumcision of  
the heart v 167  
the fruits of the v 177  
a mark of the new birth v 176  
the great importance of v 260  
how a more excellent way v 260  
disinterested, an instance of i 113  
particular questions relating to vii 92  
how the end of the commandment, &c.  
viii 41  
the loss of vi 61
- Love of our neighbour, the properties and ex-  
cellence of v 233—237, 239  
particular questions  
relating to the i  
200, 201

- Love of the world censured** viii 312  
 the evil of encouraging the, in children vii 128, 129  
**Love of married persons to each other, what?** vi 164—167  
 effects of the vi 167—171  
**Lovefeast, the origin of, among the Methodists** iv 396  
 a remarkable, in Fetter-lane i 246  
**Lowliness, what?** vi 378  
**Lowness of spirits, remarks on** i 271  
**Lowth, Bishop, his Lectures, "De Poesi Hebræa" commended** iii 185  
**Loxdale, Miss, eight letters from Mr. Wesley to** x 324—328  
**Loyala, Ignatius, remarks on the Life of** i 403  
**Lucian, what he said of the Primitive Christians** ix 24  
 his Dialogues mentioned iii 438  
**Lunatic, an account of a** i 249  
**Lupton, Dr. an anecdote of an ignorant young man by** iv 370  
**Luther, Martin, his Life mentioned** ii 178  
 his comment on Galatians criticised i 350  
 what he said of a revival of religion vi 285  
 confused in his ideas of sanctification vii 217  
 his Comment on the Galatians mentioned vii 217  
 what he said of the people called by his name vii 184  
 what he said of himself v 131  
 what he said of justification by faith v 16  
 pronounced St. James's Epistle an Epistle of Straw i 198  
**Lutherans, how some conclude the Lord's Day in Holland** i 198  
 their mode of worship i 204  
 and Papists, their enmity to each other i 233  
**Luxury, modern, reflections on** viii 306, 307  
**Lying, remarks on** vii 167  
**Lynn, a description of** ii 206  
**Lyttleton, Lord, his Dialogues of the Dead censured** iii 309  
 commended as a fine writer iii 430  
**L. Miss, a letter from Mr. Wesley to** x 225, 226  
**L. Rev. Mr. a letter to** x 311, 312
- M**
- Macburney, Mr. shamefully abused by a mob** iii 371, 372  
**Machiavel, Nicholas, some account of, and of his book** i 144, 145  
**Maclain, Dr. his translation of Mosheim's Ecclesiastical History mentioned** iii 331  
**Mac Nab, Mr. mentioned** iv 50  
**Madeley mentioned** iii 148  
 the origin of the Society at iv 89  
**Madness, religious, remarks on** viii 188, 403, 437, 438  
 remarks on ix 82, 83  
 whether the effect of Methodism viii 282—286  
**Magazine, Arminian, proposals for the, drawn up** iii 461
- Magdalen di Pazzi mentioned** viii 473  
**Mahomet, the Life of, censured** iii 233  
 the faith of, what? vii 210, 211  
**Mahometans, moral condition of the** vi 282  
 present state of the ix 183, 184  
**Malefactor, a word to a condemned** viii 151—153  
**Malefactors, an account of some** i 184, 241  
**Mallet, Miss Sarah, the singular case of** iv 190  
**Manmon, what?** v 320  
 what to serve? v 322, 323  
 the service of, cannot consist with the serving of God vi 51  
 of unrighteousness, what? vi 97  
**Man, in what state born into the world** ix 249, 250  
 the original state of, what? ix 289, 290  
 philosophical reflections on vii 231, 232  
 how God taketh knowledge of vii 190, 191  
 a remarkable old, noticed iii 238  
**Manichees, how they supposed evil came into the world** x 214  
 their notion of fate ix 458, 461, 462  
**Mansfield, Lord, a famous speech of** x 106, 107  
**Mann, Elizabeth, the power of grace exemplified in** ii 274  
**Manners, Mr. John, a short account of** iii 82, 131, 137  
 extracts from the letters of iii 82—85  
**Marcus Antoninus, the character of** ii 64  
**Marckenborn, some account of the family at** i 199, 200  
**Marriage, important hints on the subject of** iii 351  
 rules concerning iv 375, 376  
 believers not to enter into, with unbelievers vi 425  
 Mr. Wesley's remarks on his own ix 522  
 a thought upon x 159, 159  
 contracts vii 273—275  
 the lawfulness of, proved x 47, 49  
 forbidden to the clergy of the Church of Rome x 61  
**Married persons, the duty of** vi 162—187  
 their duty to each other vi 183—185  
 their duty to their children vi 185, 186  
 their duty to their servants vi 186, 187  
**Marsay, Count, the life of, a remark on** iii 417  
**Marsh, Elizabeth, the happy death of** ii 25  
**Marshall, Mr. his gospel mystery of sanctification censured** iii 230, 231  
**Martyn, Justin, what he says of extraordinary gifts** ix 21  
 remarks on his character as a writer and a witness ix 26—30, 31  
 a noble saying of ix 52  
**Martyrdom, the suffering of, cannot supply the place of love** vii 98  
**Martyrs, remarks on their constancy** viii 475, 476  
**Mary, Queen of Scotland, the probable innocence of** iii 241  
 her character iii 290

- Mary, the mother of our Lord, not an object  
 of religious worship x 27, 29, 55  
 Mason, Mr. the death of ii 456  
 Masonry, Free, remarks on a tract on iii 375  
 Mass, what the Church of Rome says of x  
 40, 42  
 ii 123  
 Massacre, Irish, some account of the  
 mentioned x 78  
 an account of a, at Sligo iv 15  
 Masters of families, their duty vii 115—122  
 Materialist, the faith of a, what? vii 210  
 Mathematical knowledge, an unsafe guide on  
 religious subjects x 218, 219  
 Matlock, the valley of, described iii 58, 59  
 Matter, in what sense eternal vi 201, 202  
 Matthews, John, an excellent account of iii  
 157  
 Mausoleum, a curious, built by Mr. Pelham  
 iv 247  
 Maxfield, Thomas, powerfully awakened i  
 260  
 imprisoned in Cornwall  
 ii 46, 47  
 divides the Society in  
 London iii 99—105  
 Maxwell, Lady, thirteen letters from Mr.  
 Wesley to x 341—351  
 Mayor of Cork, the conduct of the, com-  
 mended iv 204, 205  
 the impartiality of a ii 97  
 Mayoralty at Cork described iv 205  
 McBride, Dr. his practice of physic mention-  
 ed iii 461  
 Means of grace, what? v 152  
 mistakes concerning the v  
 150—152  
 mistakes respecting the use  
 of the ii 299, 302, 322—  
 325  
 remarks on the vii 147  
 the importance of using the  
 vii 147, 148  
 objections to the use of the,  
 answered v 158—160  
 the order and manner of  
 using the v 160—162  
 Meccarius, what he said of the experience of  
 the people of God v 208  
 Mecko, a heathen chief, a saying of ix 223  
 Mechtildis mentioned viii 473  
 Mediator, Christ the only x 27, 55  
 Medical Essays mentioned iii 358  
 Medicine, the following fashion in adminis-  
 tering iii 374  
 Medicines, an institution for administering,  
 mentioned iv 341  
 Meckness, what? vi 379  
 remarks on viii 51  
 Christian, what? v 227, 228  
 Melancholy account ii 173, 174  
 Melancthon, Philip, a remarkable narrative  
 from vii 86, 87  
 Melody in music strongly recommended x 170  
 Memory, observations on x 188  
 Mentz, a singular sentence on the door of a  
 church at i 236  
 Merchants, English, observations concerning  
 the ix 193  
 Mercier, Mr. a strange account of ii 543  
 Merciful, who? v 233—237  
 Merit, remarks on the word iv 404  
 remarks on the doctrine of ix 490,  
 521, 522  
 Merit of works, the doctrine of, what? x  
 17, 52  
 Methodism, what? vi 109—115  
 the origin of } x 148, 149  
 iv 413  
 a short history of } vi 107—109  
 the rise of } viii 327, 338  
 peculiar character } vi 111—114  
 and spread of } viii 339, 340  
 the change which, as an instru-  
 ment, it effects in men's hearts  
 and lives viii 337, 338  
 the purity of the religion it re-  
 commends viii 339, 340  
 its freedom from enthusiasm and  
 bigotry viii 340  
 not mixed with vice or ungodli-  
 ness viii 340, 341  
 its freedom from the spirit of per-  
 secution viii 341  
 why the doctrines of, are objected  
 to viii 348, 349  
 not justly chargeable with jealous-  
 ies and divisions viii 501, 505  
 does not undermine morality viii  
 505—509  
 has no tendency to popery viii  
 511—515  
 Thoughts upon x 148—150  
 only scriptural Christianity x 149  
 the good effects of i 229, 230  
 iv 406—412  
 Methodist, the character of a } vii 9—11  
 viii 493  
 the distinguishing marks of a iv  
 407—412  
 the principles of a, what? viii  
 174—186  
 origin and applica- } i 71, 72  
 tion of the term } vi 107, 108  
 Methodists, the origin and pro- } iv 345  
 gress of the } vii 218—220  
 the original design of the iv 264  
 a plain account of the iv 328—  
 344  
 the doctrines of the iv 328, 414  
 strange reports concerning the  
 ii 175  
 what required by those who join  
 the iv 345  
 who meant by, and why } iv 417  
 so called } ix 76  
 the design of God in raising up  
 the iv 368  
 in what sense a new people iv  
 418, 419  
 advice to the people called iv  
 417—422  
 an Address to the, on the Love  
 of Money vii 62—65  
 the discipline of the vii 220, 221  
 opposition against the vii 221  
 obtain legal redress vii 221  
 effects of the preaching of the  
 viii 452—454, 476  
 unjustly charged with skepticism  
 viii 495—498  
 unjustly charged with uncharita-  
 bleness viii 498—500  
 do not oppose St. Paul to St.  
 James in the article of justifi-  
 cation viii 520

- Methodists, do not profess infallibility viii 529  
do not lay claim to the extraordinary gifts of the Holy Ghost viii 529  
do not teach people to neglect their temporal concerns viii 530  
not justly chargeable with making the way to heaven too broad viii 531, 532  
how they say a state of grace may be ascertained viii 533  
believe that regeneration is a supernatural work viii 533, 534, 535  
not justly chargeable with enthusiasm viii 534  
not an independent sect viii 547, 548  
do not undervalue human learning viii 553, 554  
not a fallen people iii 460
- Meyrick, his wonderful recovery from a dangerous illness i 412
- Middleton, Mr. his Essay on Church Government commended i 404  
Dr. his book against the Fathers mentioned ii 168  
a letter to ix 1—66  
the stiffness of his style censured x 252, 253
- Millennium, a letter on the, from Mr. Wesley to the Rev. Mr. H— x 265, 266
- Miller, Mr. a curious invention of iii 74, 374
- Mills, Rebecca, a short account of iii 230
- Milton, what he says of Adam when newly formed ix 466
- Mind of Christ, on possessing the, a letter from Mr. Wesley to Miss— x 227
- Ministers, how far they may resemble the Apostles viii 352, 353  
who? x 147  
who oppose the truth, how to act toward x 146  
Gospel, thoughts concerning x 146—148  
on union among, a letter from Mr. Wesley to— x 269  
on the unfaithfulness of, a letter from Mr. Wesley to the Rev. Mr. L. x 271
- Minutes, General iv 348—405  
of the Conference of ix 501, 524  
1770, remarks on x 317
- Minutius Felix, what he says of casting out devils ix 21
- Miracles, those of Christ prove the divinity of his mission vi 304, 305  
when they ceased in the Christian Church, and } viii 523  
why } ix 95, 96  
pretended, observations on ix 14  
Gospel, remarks on ix 56  
the unreasonable- } viii 363, 364, 404,  
ness of requi- } 440—446  
ring } ix 96  
would not convince those who will not be convinced without them ix 96, 98—101
- Miracles, the unreasonableness of requiring, in proof of the doctrines of the Gospel already established by miracles ix 101, 102
- Miraculous powers of the Apostles, what? ix 16, 17, 68  
why given to the Apostles? ix 8—10, 17  
gifts of the Christian Fathers, remarks on the ix 17—50  
why so soon withdrawn from the Church ii 220
- Miranda, Mr. Law's, the example of, recommended vii 154
- Miseries of mankind, a proof of their degeneracy ix 301—304, 313—316, 356, 357
- Misery, the universality and cause of ix 198—200
- Missionaries, a strange account of two iii 53
- Mitchel, Mr. Thomas, some account of the sufferings of ii 256, 257
- Mittlestadt, a malefactor, receives a pardon at the place of execution ii 448, 449
- Mob, a remarkable account of a ii 399
- Mobs, see Persecution
- Mompesson, Mr. the drumming at his house confirmed iii 246
- Money, how to save and to use iii 232, 233  
the folly of leaving, to those who will do no good with it iv 32  
how the love of, the root of all evil v 219  
how to gain and to save vi 99—104  
how to be used vi 98, 104—106  
the fatal effects of the love of vi 264, 265  
the love of, idolatry vi 412  
how to be disposed of vii 61, 82, 83  
a remark on leaving, by will iv 173
- Monster, some account of a iv 301
- Montague, Lady Mary Wortley, her account of the Mahometans vi 282
- Montanists, what Mr. Wesley thought of the ii 220
- Montanus mentioned vi 323
- Montesquieu, Baron, a critique on his Spirit of Laws x 175, 176
- Moon, observations on the use of the vi 218
- Moore, William, separates from the Methodists iv 145, 146
- Morality, the state of, in the university of Oxford vii 327
- Moravian Church, Mr. Wesley's Address to the the i 296—298  
improperly so called ii 225, 226
- Moravians, the doctrines of the } ii 226, 227  
} viii 375—378  
or Germans, the humility and fortitude of the i 126, 127  
their general walk i 130  
their mode of ordaining a bishop, in Georgia i 130  
their practice censured ii 227  
the effect of their doctrines ii 227—229  
a melancholy account of some of the ii 251—254, 295, 296  
a Declaration of the, published in the Daily Post ii 188, 189  
at Hernhuth, give account of their opinions to the Emp'r. i 210, 212

- Moravians, the unsettled state of their opinions i 210—212, 213  
 the rule and discipline of the i 223—228  
 their account of justifying faith, and the way to obtain it i 306, 307  
 their notions of propagating the faith i 307, 308  
 their ideas of degrees of faith i 316  
 specimens of their eloquence ii 63  
 specimens of their casuistry, note i 358, 359  
 their account of the new creature i 344, 345  
 the spring of their errors i 350  
 their erroneous doctrines i 363—365  
 an account of some iii 270  
 a singular account of their casting lots ii 12, 13, 21  
 at Ziest, an account of the iv 114  
 their want of hospitality blamed iv 158  
 their want of candour censured viii 377  
 their conduct examined viii 378  
 "More excellent way," what? vii 75—83  
 Morgan, Mr. a short account of i 72, 73  
 his sickness i 84, 85  
 his death and elegy i 85—87  
 Morsay, Mr. his Life mentioned iv 21  
 Mortification, particular questions relating to viii 99  
 Mortmain, a remark on the Statute of ii 318  
 Mosaic Dispensation, its glory chiefly eternal vi 157  
 Moses, why the place of his burial was concealed x 29  
 Moss, Richard, a strange account of ii 56, 57  
 Motion, who the author of vi 401  
 Motives, remarks on ix 469, 470  
 Moultray, Monsieur, what he said on seeing Charles XII. of Sweden mortally wounded vii 288  
 Mountains, the antiquity of vi 215  
 Mourners, such as our Lord describes v 224—226  
 M——d, Mrs. her relation of some uncommon circumstances iv 26  
 Muncey, Jane, a pattern of piety and good works i 353, 354  
 Murder, a remarkable account of a iv 206  
 Murmuring, the cause and effects of vi 265  
 Murray, Catherine, the experience and death of iii 219—222  
 Murray, county of, some account of the iii 142  
 Muscular motion, observations on vi 212  
 Museum, British, some account of { ii 454  
 the { iv 68  
 Mr. Cox's, a remark on ii 236  
 Sir Ashton Lever's, mentioned iv 52  
 in Spring Gardens, the wax-work at the, mentioned iv 230  
 Music, modern, remarks on iii 125, 126  
 the fondness of lions and tigers for iii 157, 158  
 ancient remarks on iii 195  
 thoughts on the power of x 168—171  
 the effect of, on the King of Denmark x 169  
 Music, ancient, the power of exemplified x 168—170  
 wherein it differs from modern music x 169  
 modern, censured x 170  
 Mysteries, in what sense not to be believed x 322  
 Mystery, observations on believing a vi 212, 213  
 Mystery of iniquity, how it hath wrought vi 262—273  
 Mystic writer, remarks on a vi 76, 77  
 writers mentioned x 218  
 remarks on x 320  
 Mysticism, the evil effects of iii 114, 385  
 Mystics, their erroneous notions of the doctrine of human redemption x 221
- N
- Naked, the import of the term ix 203  
 Nah, Mr. of Bath, mentioned i 262  
 Nathanael, a true Israelite, who answer the character of vii 85  
 Natural man, the state of the v 82—84  
 Nature of man, how produced by God ix 276, 277  
 Navy, British, the state of religion in the viii 315  
 Neath, a singular account of twelve young men at ix 88  
 Necessity, thoughts on ix 457—471  
 absolute, does away the idea of vice and virtue ix 463  
 makes man neither rewardable nor punishable ix 463  
 renders the day of judgment a mere farce ix 463  
 renders it impossible for man to blame himself for doing wrong ix 464  
 makes God the author of sin ix 465  
 further thoughts on x 141—145  
 Needham, Mr. what he says of microscopic animals ii 404  
 Needles, an account of the rocks at the i 125  
 Negro, the ignorance of a i 140, 141, 147, 148  
 Negroes, the best method of instructing i 148  
 in Virginia, some account of the ii 318, 319  
 Nelson, John, some account of i 393, 394  
 a letter from ii 81, 82  
 the case of ii 21  
 persecuted ii 111, 112  
 a letter from, to Mr. Wesley ii 389  
 Nervous disorders, thoughts on x 182—185  
 causes of x 182—184  
 the way to cure x 185  
 Neusser, Augustine, the experience of i 216, 217  
 Wensel, the experience of i 217  
 Hantz, the experience of i 217, 218  
 Zecharias, the experience of i 218, 219  
 New-birth, what? { i 180  
 viii 520  
 ix 108, 109  
 marks of the v 171—177



## P

- Paddy, Grace, convinced of sin, justified, and renewed in love, in twelve hours ii 178
- Paoli, Paschal, mentioned { iii 288  
iv 132, 141
- Papists, why so called viii 156  
their doctrines viii 156, 157  
the additions they have made to the things contained in the Bible i 279  
not to be converted by penal statutes ii 123  
how to be treated iv 67  
the persecution of, disavowed x 85, 86  
an Address to viii 328, 329  
Irish, the character of the ii 399  
Irish, drove many protestants in the Black Water iii 329
- Paradise, the residence of the blessed x 21, 36
- Paragraph, a remarkable, in an Edinburgh Paper iii 336
- Pardon and acceptance joined together x 194
- Parents, their duty to their children viii 127, 128
- Parish discipline, how far a priest is confined to one viii 423, 425, 426  
the nature of, in Scotland ii 425, 426
- Parnell, Dr. his Hermit cited vi 353
- Partiality, observations on ix 83—85  
the evil of vi 265
- Pascal, Mr. a remark on, as a writer ii 268  
a fine remark of vii 27, 28
- Passionate temper censured vii 166, 167
- Passions, irregular, depress the spirits x 184, 185
- Patience, what? vii 22  
the perfect work of, what? vii 23—25
- Patrick, St. observations on the history of ii 143
- Paustoobee, a remarkable saying of vi 310
- Peace of God, what? v 67, 222  
the loss of vi 61, 62  
the end of the upright man vi 139
- Peace-makers, who? v 272
- Pearls, not to be cast before swine v 336, 337
- Pearson, Bishop, the extraordinary case of x 276  
a fine quota- { viii 259, 260  
tion from { ix 102—104
- Peasant, an anecdote of a, in France viii 469
- Pedantry, what? x 252
- Pelagius, way called a heretic vi 323
- Pelican, description of the iv 301
- Penance, remarks on x 43, 45  
what the Church of Rome says of x 59, 60
- Penitents, the origin of the meetings for iv 336
- Penn, Sir William, a remark on the life of iv 167
- Pennant, Mr. a remark on his Journey through Scotland iii 436
- Pensions, remarks on granting x 103
- Pentecost, the day of, what Mr. Charles Wesley thought of the iii 93
- People, the, who? x 126, 127  
in middling circumstances, their advantages over the rich ii 403
- Pepusch, Dr. his remarks on music ii 147
- Perfect, an offensive term to many v 420
- Perfect, in what sense Christians are not v 420—423  
in what sense Christians { v 423—434  
are { viii 12  
what it imports? { vii 27  
Christian, who? { iv 351  
{ viii 19, 22  
and upright man, who? vi 138, 139  
“Perfecting of the saints,” what? iii 122  
iii 94, 279
- Perfection, Christian, what? { viii 27, 459, 460  
{ x 153, 255  
{ x 258, 259  
examples of { ii 456  
{ 457, 458  
{ 460, 461  
{ iii 82, 86  
{ vii 282  
{ viii 24, 25  
{ iii 164—166  
{ 258, 259  
stated, { iv 402, 403  
proved, and de- { viii 178, 179  
fended { 201, 202  
{ x 234—236  
{ 283  
the abuse of the doctrine of, no argument against it iii 107  
marks of x 293  
exalts Christ x 258  
observations on the doctrine of viii 546  
objections to the doctrine of, answered ix 501—505  
promised viii 23  
prayers for, referred to viii 24  
commands relating to viii 24  
docs not render its possessors independent of the blood of Christ viii 28, 29, 45  
when a person may be said to have attained viii 33  
whether gradual or instantaneous viii 64, 65  
how far gradual, and how far instantaneous viii 33  
important reflections relating to viii 53—64  
a letter on, from Mr. Wesley to Miss H— x 234  
to Mr. A. Coats x 258  
the doctrine of, reviewed viii 64—67  
genuine, contained in 1 Cor. 13th Chapter x 302  
too strong an account of, corrected viii 18, 19  
sinless, remarks on ix 492, 495  
525—527  
an-exceptionable phrase x 267
- Perfections of God, how displayed at the day of judgment v 144
- Perjury, the prevalence and wickedness of viii 303
- Perronet, Rev. Mr. mentioned iv 104  
Miss, the melancholy account of iv 302
- Rev. Vincent, some account of the death of iv 152
- Mr. Charles, some account of his experience x 309, 310

- Perronet, Miss, a letter from Mr. Wesley to  
x 354
- Persecuted for righteousness' sake, who?  
v 245—247
- Persecution, how the children of God should  
behave under v 249—251
- remarks on { vii 283  
x 118—120
- at Bristol i 813
- at Roughlee ii 155, 156
- in Moorfields i 329, 331
- at Wednesbury, { i 435, 440  
Walsal, Darlaston } ii 10, 12  
viii 343—345
- in Cornwall, and at Leeds  
ii 16, 18, 20, 26  
27, 46, 53, 60
- in Lincolnshire ii 166
- protestants sometimes guilty of  
v 238
- overruled and regulated by infi-  
nite wisdom v 247
- why permitted vi 265, 266, 268
- promoted by clergymen viii 485
- Persecutor, at Bristol, the awful death of a  
i 314, 315
- Persecutors, the awful death of some ii 380
- the great evil of encouraging  
ii 166
- how disarmed of their fury ii 127
- the wickedness and cruelty of  
viii 280, 281
- Perseverance of the saints, serious thoughts  
and observations on ix 439—  
450, 516
- Persuasion, not to be effected by one rising  
from the dead vi 58
- Peru's Treatise on the Gravel and Stone re-  
commended iv 165
- Peter, St. the dissimulation of, condemned  
v 184, 186
- referred to  
x 155
- the Great, the life of, mentioned ii 330
- Peters, Sarah, some account of ii 161, 162, 166
- Petherton, South, some account of iv 24
- Petitioning system, observations on the  
x 103, 104
- Pharaoh, the case of, stated ix 402
- Pharisees, who? v 272
- Phelps, Rev. Mr. a short account of iii 91
- Phenomenon in Cornwall ii 322
- Philadelphia, a letter from Mr. Wesley to the  
Rev. Mr. Cooper, of x 315
- Philip's, Fort St. the siege of, mentioned  
ii 408, 409
- Physicians, reflections on the ignorance of  
some ii 417
- Pictures, the origin of their introduction into  
Churches x 86—88
- indecent, censured iii 138
- immodest, how to serve ii 375
- Pike, Mr. a remark on his *Philosophia Sacra*  
ii 356
- Pilson, Susanna, a short account of iii 323
- Pitcairn, Dr. a critique on his works i 395
- Pitt's Virgil quoted vii 162
- Placatt, Mons. his Treatise on Conscience  
recommended vii 202
- Plain dealing, not offensive to the Scotch  
iii 106
- Platina, what? iii 431
- Play-houses, &c. mentioned vi 101
- "Pleasing men for their good," what implied  
in vii 166—170
- Pleasures of mankind, reflections and observa-  
tions on the ix 305, 306, 315
- Pleurisy, how to cure the ii 308, 335, 360
- Pliny, what he says of man ix 314
- Pluralities and non-residence, the evil of  
iv 175
- Plymouth-Dock, how protected from the  
French and Spanish fleets  
iv 46
- Poetry, a specimen of, from the Methodist  
Hymn Book x 228, 229
- Points of importance, some iii 233, 234
- Politics, how far the duty of ministers to  
preach x 137
- Polycarp, remarks on his Epistle to the Phi-  
lippians ix 18
- remarks on his character and mar-  
tyrdom ix 20
- Pompey, his character ix 177
- Pontopidan, Bishop of, his Natural History  
of Norway mentioned iii 62
- Pope, the, claims a power of granting par-  
dons, and of dispensing with an oath  
x 75
- a remarkable saying of a iv 180
- Pope, Mr. a critique on his Verses to the  
Memory of an Unfortunate Young  
Lady x 180, 181
- an example from, on an easy style  
x 253
- his notions of Providence censured  
vi 316, 317
- Popery calmly considered x 50—64
- subversive of true religion x 61—64
- remarks on the doctrines of ix 528, 529
- on a friend embracing, a letter from  
Mr. Wesley to Mr. C. x 312, 313
- why so many converts to? iii 182
- Popish confession, what? iv 337
- remarks on viii 512
- pardons, the cheapness of ii 172
- Popularity, how to avoid iv 387
- Population of the world, reflections on the  
vii 188
- of Great Britain, remarks on the  
iii 404
- the increase of iii 434
- Portsmouth, some account of ii 288
- a remarkable fire at iii 314
- Potter, Archbishop, his Grecian Antiquities  
censured ii 224
- an advice of vii 201
- what he said of the cler-  
gy in Queen Mary's  
reign viii 555
- Rev. Mr. a letter to viii 519—524
- Poverty of spirit, what? v 219
- Power, the origin of x 125—130
- what? x 125
- how derived from God x 125, 126
- supreme, not conveyed to kings by  
the people x 128, 129, 136
- how the body shall be raised in vii  
346, 347
- Practice, holy, necessary for a minister of  
the gospel viii 81, 82
- Prayer, the effects of, in behalf of several  
who were possessed by the Devil  
i 288, 292
- the success and prevalence { ii 218  
of { iii 118
- the good effect of iii 217

- Prayer, recommended vii 77, 78  
 private, the vast importance of }  
 directions for v 282  
 the necessity of impertunate v 337, 338  
 diseases cured in answer to viii 403, 404. 438—440  
 hypocrisy to be guarded against in v 281  
 the Lord's, explained v 282—290  
 a poetical paraphrase on v 290, 291  
 extempore, a defence of viii 275  
 vocal, an observation on x 320  
 one of the primary objects of, what? x 323  
 the prevalence of, for others x 323  
 the several parts of viii 83  
 a collection of Forms of, for Adults, Families, and Children viii 85—112. 112—129. 129—139  
 Praying for the dead, remarks on ix 11  
 Preach, how to? i 326  
 Preacher, Methodist, the business of a iii 328  
 directions to a x 267  
 the advantage of having a, who lives the gospel x 233  
 important advice to a x 268, 269  
 Preachers, how to try those who think themselves called to preach the gospel iv 388, 389  
 of the gospel, admonished vi 328, 329  
 Irish, the character of the iv 275  
 Preaching Christ, what implied in v 385, 386  
 the best method of iv 387  
 morning, remarks on iv 123—125  
 itinerant, a defence of viii 273, 274  
 field, Mr. Wesley began, after his return from America vi 108, 109  
 the utility of iii 115, 148. 172. 178  
 an apology for viii 207  
 recommend- } ii 421, 431, 450  
 ed } iv 368  
 a defence of viii 270—272. 360, 361. 472  
 remarks on ii 157, 158  
 Predestinarians hinder the work of God by disputing ii 235  
 Predestinate, the import of that word vi 232  
 Predestination, the doctrine of, stated vi 229—234  
 not a doctrine of the Church of England iii 263  
 calmly considered ix 377—420  
 an observation on x 267  
 the nature and effects of vi 116—125  
 Prejudice, how it blinds men's minds viii 342, 343  
 Presbyterians, remarks on their separating from the Church of England viii 370  
 Presbyters, see Bishops  
 Presence of God with his people, the certainty of the i 97, 98  
 Presentment, a memorable, at Cork viii 567  
 Preservative, Mr. Wesley's, why published ii 388, 389  
 Press, the licentiousness of the, censured x 124  
 Press gangs, observations, &c. upon } i 272  
 } ii 434  
 } v 279  
 Presumption, the danger of vii 44  
 Presumptuous sins, the evil of vii 353  
 Pretender enters Edinburgh ii 61  
 Preterition, remarks on ix 479  
 Preternatural incident, an account of a iv 231  
 Price, Dr. a remark on his Observations on Liberty iv 432  
 Pride, how dress contributes to produce viii 68  
 the prevalence of viii 312, 313  
 of life, what? } vi 411, 412  
 } vii 228, 229  
 how encouraged in children vii 127, 128  
 Priestley, Dr. his book on Electricity recommended iii 235, 236  
 a remark on his English Grammar iii 302  
 Priests, the wickedness of the Jewish vii 194, 195  
 Prince, Mr. Christian, remarks on his Christian History ii 277  
 David, some account of iii 198  
 Prior, Mr. a defence of his character x 177  
 a comparison between, and Mr. Pope x 181, 182  
 a critique on his writings x 177—180  
 Mrs. a remarkable account of iii 157  
 Prisoners, Dutch, an extraordinary work of God among the iv 119  
 reflections on the condition of viii 314, 315  
 Programma, what? i 46  
 Promises, how conditional? ix 443  
 Propensities to evil, remarks on ix 243—245  
 Prophecy in the name of Christ, what to v 357, 358  
 cannot supply the place of love  
 a remarkable vii 95, 96  
 Propheying, a remark on viii 498, 499  
 Prophet, French, an account of a i 248  
 Prophets, false, who? } v 348, 349  
 } observations concerning viii 265  
 the appearance they assume v 349, 350  
 whether they ought to be heard v 351—353  
 an address to v 353, 354  
 Protestant, the faith of a, what? vii 212  
 the faith and practice of a true ix 532—536  
 Providence, remarks on a general and particular v 397  
 Divine, the doctrine of, asserted vi 310—320  
 the foundation of vi 312, 313  
 a three-fold circle of vi 314—316. 402  
 particular, proved vi 316—319  
 general, remarks on vi 318, 319  
 Divine, the use of the doctrine of vi 319, 320  
 remarks on the interference of x 310  
 the mystery of vi 335—337

- Providence, Divine, an awful  
     general and particular, reflections on  
         viii 304  
 Providential interposition  
     ii 323  
 Prudence, Christian, what?  
     x 223, 224  
     worldly, what?  
         } ix 78  
         } x 223  
 Public Affairs, free thoughts on the state of  
     x 100—115  
 Pudsey, the Moravian settlement at, mentioned  
     iv 35  
 Purbeck, some account of the island of  
     iii 402  
 Pure in heart, who?  
     v 240—242, 243  
     how they see God  
         v 242, 243  
 Purgatory, the resemblance between the ancient and modern  
     vi 53  
 Purified, how believers are  
     v 433, 434  
 Puritans, the history of the, referred to  
     ii 108  
 Purvor, Anthony, a critique on his Translation of the Scriptures  
     ii 54  
 Pye, Dr. his Dialogue between Moses and Lord Bolingbroke mentioned  
     iii 318  
 Pyrah, Jonathan, a remarkable account of  
     vii 95, 96
- Q
- Quaker, the singular reasoning of a  
     i 270  
     an account of a  
         ii 77  
     candid concession of a  
         ii 87  
 Quakerism, where-in it agrees with, and differs from, Christianity  
     ix 110—118  
 Quakers, an address to  
     viii 323, 324  
     remarks on their language  
         viii 324  
     remarks on their idea of being led by the spirit  
         viii 326, 327  
     remarks on their separating from the Church of England  
         viii 370  
     how far to be imitated in the article of dress  
         vi 153, 154  
 Quarterly-Meeting, the first at Newcastle  
     ii 283  
 Queensborough, seat of the Duke of  
     ii 372  
 Queen's House, mentioned  
     iii 408  
 Quesnell referred to, note  
     ix 481  
 Questions, weighty  
     i 76, 77  
     relating to holiness  
         viii 38, 39  
     to be proposed before evening devotion  
         viii 87  
     which may be used every morning  
         viii 90  
 Quintus Sextus, the life of, mentioned  
     iii 377
- R
- Rabin, a place near Castlebar, the character of the people at  
     iii 325  
 Raca, the import of  
     v 229  
 Rain, remarks on the cessation of  
     vi 293  
 Rains and dews in America, a vulgar notion concerning the, corrected  
     i 141, 142  
 Ramsay, R. overtaken by divine justice  
     i 378  
 Chevalier, his philosophical principles of religion mentioned  
     ii 293, 294  
     his treatise on the Principles of Religion censured  
         x 218—222  
     Mary, the death of  
         iii 66  
 Rankin, Mr. Thomas, letters from Mr. Wesley to  
     x 356—360  
 R. Rev. Mr. the singular case of the  
     ii 239, 240
- Raven, an extraordinary account of a  
     iv 291  
 Reynal, the Abbé, his History of Trade, &c. animadverted on  
     iv 12, 13  
 Reason, what?  
     } vi 341, 342  
     } viii 193, 194  
     what it can do  
         vi 341—344  
     of no use, on the scheme of absolute necessity  
         x 143  
     what it cannot do  
         vi 344—348  
     the use of, in religion  
         viii 194  
     to whom undervalued  
         vi 340, 341  
 Rebellion, (Arab.) Dr. Curry's Account of the—censured  
     ii 395  
 Rechabites, the case of the, stated  
     } iv 125  
     } and considered  
     } v 411, 412  
     } vii 144  
 Recollected, what meant by  
     vi 420  
 Recreations, how to determine the innocency of  
     viii 235  
 Redemption, the day of, what?  
     vii 353  
     the scripture doctrine of, stated  
         ii 422—424  
     founded upon original sin  
         ix 250—254  
     general, the doctrine of, proved  
         ix 424—428  
 Reeves, Mr. Jonathan, imprisoned for preaching the gospel  
     viii 373, 374  
 Reformation, the state of religion since the  
     } vi 269, 270  
     } on the continent, gave great offence to the Church of Rome  
     } viii 369, 370  
 Regeneration, the nature and necessity of  
     ix 372  
 Reid, Dr. a critique on his Essay  
     iii 391  
 Reinier, John, a remarkable account of  
     i 131  
 Relics, in what estimation held by the Church of Rome  
     x 28  
     } i 301, 302  
     } v 195  
     } vi 280, 281  
 Religion, true, what?  
     } vii 247, 253, 291  
     } viii 187, 188, 336  
     } 337, 451, 452  
     } x 312, 313  
     false, the danger of  
         vii 252  
     true, the sum of  
         v 218  
     the life of, not a life of misery  
         vii 32, 37  
     founded on reason  
         viii 194  
     the state of, in England, when God raised up the Methodists  
         viii 215, 216, 336, 337  
     experimental and practical, thirty-seven letters on, from Mr. Wesley to a member of his Society  
         x 287—310  
     rational, what Mr. Haliburton said of  
         vii 253  
     true, the great importance of  
         viii 371  
     how to promote the practice of  
         iv 372—375  
     the revival of  
         viii 216, 217  
     that of nature delineated  
         i 156, 157  
     natural, remarks on  
         ix 90, 91  
 Remarks on Mr. Hill's Review  
     ix 476—507  
     Farrago Double Dis-  
         tilled  
         ix 507—530  
 Remonstrance of the City London, on what ground rejected  
     ix 474

- Repentance, what? } iv 348  
 v 68—70  
 viii 218, 219, 384  
 416, 449, 460  
 x 17, 32  
 must precede faith and justifica-  
 tion viii 415, 416  
 how consequent on justification  
 v 211, 212  
 of believers, what? v 128—136
- Reprobation, Calvinistic, what? ix 378  
 unconditional, results from un-  
 conditional election ix 379—  
 381  
 irreconcilable  
 with the Scriptures ix 382—389  
 incompatible  
 with the justice of God  
 ix 386—393  
 inconsistent with  
 the truth of God ix 393  
 inconsistent with  
 the sincerity of God ix 393—395  
 inconsistent with  
 the love of God ix 395, 396  
 the pernicious  
 consequences of ix 418, 419
- Reproof, how to be given iii 263  
 well received ii 206  
 gentle, but important, in a letter  
 from Mr. Wesley to Mrs. S. R.  
 x 286, 287
- Reproving sin and error, the duty and impor-  
 tance of vi 297—299  
 in what manner to  
 be done vi 299—303
- Republican form of government arbitrary  
 x 134
- Resentment, how excited x 45
- Resignation, true, in what it consists  
 viii 59, 60  
 particular questions relating  
 to viii 102, 103
- Restraining people from sin, how to be effect-  
 ed vii 116—118
- Resurrection of the body, the doctrine of the,  
 stated vii 341—349
- Revelation, the necessity of vii 293, 299  
 the best means of rational con-  
 viction vi 59
- Review, Monthly, a letter from Mr. Wesley,  
 on a passage in the x 247, 248
- Reviewers, Monthly, remarks on the ii 355  
 their want of candour  
 and orthodoxy proved  
 x 227—230
- Rewards, future, according to what rule given  
 x 301
- Reynolds, his house and singular conduct de-  
 scribed iii 335
- Rich, what implied in being vii 56—58, 225  
 they ought to visit the { vii 152  
 sick { x 308, 309  
 an Address to the vii 230
- Richard the III. King, the innocence of, ren-  
 dered probable iii 277  
 II. the death of, mentioned  
 iii 398
- Riches, what meant by vii 316—319  
 iii 12  
 iv 47  
 iv 368  
 vii 55—65  
 x 323, 324
- Riches, the fatal effects } iv 151  
 of } vi 323, 324, 325, 327  
 the desire of, how injurious to the  
 soul v 311, 312  
 what to trust in v 312—314  
 the genuine tendency of vi 272  
 how they pierce through with many  
 sorrows vii 60  
 how they hinder holiness vii 225,  
 226  
 how a temptation to unholy tempers  
 vii 227—230  
 how they oppose self-denial vii 262  
 what to set our hearts upon vii  
 318, 319  
 how to avoid setting our hearts upon  
 vii 321, 322  
 injurious to true religion, how?  
 x 150  
 how to be employed vii 259, 261  
 how to prevent their fatal effects  
 x 150
- Righteous overmuch, what to be i 79, 80
- Righteousness, original, what? ix 278—283  
 326, 327, 352—354  
 lost by the first of-  
 fence ix 338, 339  
 imputed, remarks { ix 462, 518  
 on } x 189  
 of God, what the { ix 450—452  
 phrase imports } x 193  
 of Christ, his Divine, what?  
 vi 244  
 his human, what?  
 vii 244  
 his passive, what?  
 vi 244
- Righteousness of Christ, when and how im-  
 puted vi 245—248  
 by whom denied  
 vi 248, 249  
 remarks on the im-  
 putation of the ix 321—324  
 451  
 thoughts { ix 450—452  
 on the imputation { 516, 518, 519  
 of the } x 189  
 how imputed to all  
 men iv 350  
 of the law described v 57  
 the nature of the v  
 65, 67, 222, 231  
 the folly of trusting  
 in the v 60, 61  
 of faith described v 58  
 the wisdom of submit-  
 ting to the v 61, 62  
 inherent, not the ground of our  
 acceptance with God vi 248  
 what that which exceeds the  
 righteousness of the Scribes  
 and Pharisees v 274—278
- Riots, see Persecution
- Road, a remarkable, in Holland i 197
- Roads, remarks on the mode of repairing  
 iii 36
- Roberts, James, a remarkable backslider  
 iii 21
- Robertson, Dr. unadverted on as a histori-  
 an iii 290  
 his History of Charles V.  
 censured iii 346
- Robinhood's Bay, an account of ii 383

- Rock, what to build upon a v 358—360  
361—363
- Rogers, Dr. his Essay on the Learning of the Ancients mentioned ii 370
- Rollin, Mr. a critique on his Ancient History ii 397  
ii 376
- Romaine, Rev. Mr. mentioned  
his book on the Life of Faith mentioned iii 158
- Roman ancient authors, their account of the moral state of mankind ix 171, 173
- Roman Catholic, a letter to a ix 531—536
- Roman Catholics, the faith of the, what? vii 211  
the state of religion among ix 184, 185  
a short method of converting x 70—73  
what their opinion of keeping faith with heretics x 110
- Roman wall, some account of the old ii 312
- Roslin Castle, some account of iv 58
- Rotterdam, an account of iv 108—110
- Rousseau, his Treatise on Education censured iii 292
- Rowe, Mrs. her Devout Exercises recommended iii 280
- Rule, our Saviour's golden, of justice and mercy v 338, 339
- Rules of the Society at Fetter-lane i 186  
and Bands reconsidered ii 354  
and confirmed ii 354
- Rules, General, of the Methodist Societies iv 345—347
- Rushford, Jonas, strange relation by iii 57, 58
- S
- Sabbath-breaker, a word to a viii 140—142
- Sabbath-breaking, the wickedness and prevalence of viii 304
- Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, what the Church of Rome says of the x 58, 59  
how administered in Scotland iii 143
- Sacramentarians, who so called? i 71, 72
- Sacraments, the nature and number of, in the Church of Christ x 33  
what the Church of Rome says of the x 58, 59
- Sailors, British, the moral condition of ix 191, 192
- Saints, who? ix 439  
Romish, remarks on the lives of iii 97  
of the world, who? { i 103  
vi 161
- Salvation, different acceptations of the word iv 360  
what? { v 11—13, 207—209  
vii 40, 41  
viii 219  
by faith, a defence of viii 202  
thoughts on x 138—140  
productive of holiness and good works v 13—16  
the doctrine of, no encouragement to continue in sin viii 204, 205  
how to be worked out vii 41, 42  
the condition of viii 235—237  
how gradual and instantaneous viii 16
- Salvation, conscious, a doctrine of the Church of England viii 239, 240  
by absolute decrees, remarks on the doctrine of x 138—140  
by works, remarks on x 138—140  
by resistible grace, displays the wisdom, justice, and love of God ix 399—401  
ii 29
- Sanctification, what? { iv 351  
v 214  
entire, remarks on { iv 363, 366  
x 256, 257  
whether gradual or instantaneous v 214  
the work of, greatly revived iii 93  
how instantaneous vii 25, 26  
how the end of predestination vi 232  
instantaneous, examples of iii 50  
the promise of, illustrated in verse v 434, 436  
how it differs from justification v 138  
whether by faith or works v 214  
how to be preached vii 371  
a letter from Mr. Wesley to Lady — on x 284
- Sanctifying grace, how to be received iv 357  
faith, a letter on, from Mr. Wesley to Mrs. A. F. x 256
- Sand, what to build on the v 355—358, 360, 361
- Sandeman, Mr. his system, what? x 283, 284
- Sanderson, Mr. Hugh, how served in Scotland iii 391, 392
- Sarum, Old, some account of ii 304
- Saving souls, the vast importance of viii 368, 369
- Scap-goat, how a figure of Christ ix 260
- Schism, what? { vi 382—388  
x 237, 238  
how to be avoided vi 387, 388  
cannot justly be imputed to the Methodists iv 330, 331  
remarks on { viii 365  
x 232  
a caution against viii 57
- Schneider, David, the-experience of i 219, 220
- School, the origin of a iv 342, 343  
charter, some account of a, in Ireland iv 154
- Schools, boarding, remarks on { iii 343, 344  
vii 121, 122  
religious, observations on x 150—152
- Schurman, Anna Maria, the life of, mentioned iii 385
- Sciences, an acquaintance with, of importance to the ministerial character viii 76
- Scone, some account of the royal palace of iii 241, 298
- Scotch towns, the antiquity and oddness of ii 236, 237
- Scotland, the state of the inhabitants of ix 190  
why the work of God has not prospered in iv 40

- Screaming in preaching, the evil of iii 347  
 Scribes, who the, mentioned by our Lord v 271  
   and Pharisees, the righteousness of the, what? v 272—277  
 Scriptural doctrines, what? x 244  
 Scriptures, four arguments in support of the truth of the x 162  
   searching the, a means of grace v 156, 157  
   a sufficient rule of faith and manners x 13  
   the knowledge of the, necessary for a minister viii 75  
   remarks on the method of expounding the, in the primitive Church ix 45, 46  
   the reading of the, not generally allowed in the Church of Rome x 51, 52, 65, 66  
 Scudamore, Mrs. her Life mentioned iv 299, 300  
 Sealed by the Holy Spirit, what meant by vii 356, viii 50  
 Seceders, their uncharitableness iii 209, 210  
 Seed, Rev. Mr. his Sermons commended iii 166  
 Self-denial, the nature and importance of vi 80—89  
 Self-indulgence, what? ii 23, 24  
 Self-will increased by riches vii 229  
 Seneca quoted { v 335, ix 201  
 Separation, causeless, the evil of vi 355, 386  
 Serpent, brazen, why destroyed by Hezekiah x 29, 55  
   observations on the, which beguiled Eve vi 222  
 Servants, directions to vi 190—197  
   professing godliness, how they ought to behave iii 283, 284  
 Servetus, Michael, his case mentioned viii 546  
 Serving God, what implied { v 320, 321, in vii 115, 116  
   and mammon, the impossibility of v 322—324  
 Sexton, a strange account of a iii 222  
 Shaftsbury, Lord, censured as a writer iii 268  
 Shakespeare, a quotation from iii 333  
 Shannon, the river, described ii 141  
 Sharp, Dr. some account of his tracts on the Rubric and Canons ii 315  
 Shaw, Dr. his Travels mentioned iii 244  
 Shea, Catherine, a strange account of ii 376  
 Sheep's clothing, what meant by coming in v 349  
 Sheffield, the first Methodist Chapel at, pulled down by a mob ii 43  
 Shelburne, Lord, his house, &c. described iii 421  
 Shenstone, Mr. mentioned iv 97  
 Sheridan, Mr. a remark on his Essays on Elocution iii 417  
 Sherlock, Dr. an anecdote of ii 376  
 Shiloh, the prophecy concerning, cited vi 304  
 Shinstra, Mr. his Letter against Fanaticism censured iii 331  
 Shipwreck of faith, what to make ix 441  
 Shirley, Rev. Mr. his conduct toward Mr. Wesley censured ix 500, 501  
 Sick, in what manner to be visited, and by whom vii 150—152  
   what implied in visiting the vii 148—155  
 Sight, second, some account of iii 151, 152  
 Sigismund, Emperor, his perfidious conduct toward John Huss x 82—84  
 Signs of times, what? and why not discern-ed vi 306—308  
 Silence, remarks on viii 489, 490  
 Silent waiting on God, what the Quakers say of ix 114, 115  
 Simeon, Rev. Mr. mentioned iv 143  
 Simple, the import of the term vi 420  
 Simplicity, Christian, what? { iii 98, v 114, vi 419  
   remarks on { vii 88, 89, x 304  
 Sin, a definition of ix 166  
   original, defined v 119  
   the extent of vi 271  
   the doctrine of as- { v 189—196, viii 223, ix 168—376  
   serted {  
   arguments drawn from Scripture in support of the doctrine of ix 343—347  
   arguments from reason in support of the doctrine of ix 348, 349  
   the doctrine of, admitted by every church in Europe v 119  
   what the Ancient Fathers say of ix 349, 350  
   several arguments in proof of the doctrine of ix 352—376  
   remarks on the propagation of ix 229, 277  
   the importance of the doctrine of ix 352—376  
   the origin of the phrase ix 338  
   an examination of the supposed consequences of the doctrine of ix 320—324  
 Adam's, in what sense im- { iv 350, ix 320—324  
   puted to all mankind {  
 how imputed to Christ ix 335—337  
 how it precedes the loss of faith v 186  
 remarks on viii 29  
 actual, springs from original depravity ix 229  
 the effects of vi 65—68  
 how it remains in believers v 120—127  
 the dreadful effects of vi 277, 278  
 unto death, what? { iii 438, vii 49, 50  
 against the Holy Ghost, what? vii 52, 53  
 how not imputed, where there is no law ix 210, 211  
 how he that is horn of God { v 183, x 154—156  
   doth not commit {  
 does not produce humility x 196  
 Sins of commission, the effects of vi 62  
 of omission, observations on v 133  
   a caution against viii 56  
   the effects of vi 68  
 Sincerity, what? { iv 358, 359, v 19, 20, 114, 115  
   remarks on viii 45, 46, iii 256  
 Singing, remarks on { iv 72, vii 88, 89

- Singing, true, recommended iv 388  
 at funerals, the custom of, recom-  
 mended iii 92  
 psalms, what the Quakers say of  
 ix 115
- Single eye, what? v 306
- Singleness of heart, what to serve with vi 193
- Skelton, Mr. recommended as a writer iii 328
- Sketches of the History of Man, remarks on  
 iii 391
- Slavery, what? x 489  
 the prevalence of x 489, 490  
 a short history of - x 490  
 arguments for, confuted x 497—499  
 arguments against x 499—502
- Slaves, many die on their voyage x 496  
 how used when brought on shore x  
 496  
 the grievances under which they la-  
 bour x 496
- Slave Trade, a Treatise on the, mentioned  
 iii 340, 341  
 alluded to iii 451
- Sleep, remarks on the quantity necessary  
 vii 77, 107, 109  
 what and how to redeem time from  
 vii 107, 108, 112, 113  
 the bad effects of too much vii 108—  
 112  
 when hurtful to the nerves x 184
- Sligo, the county of, described ii 399  
 the people of, described iii 169  
 the abbey of, mentioned iii 9
- Smith, Mr. his State of the City of Water-  
 ford recommended iii 14  
 Dr. strictures on his Sermon x 135,  
 136
- Smollet, a passage in his History of England  
 censured iv 34, 35
- Smuggler, a word to a viii 147—150
- Smuggling, the evil of iii 181  
 none guilty of, are suffered to re-  
 main in the Methodist Society  
 iii 91, 92  
 remarks on the prevalence of  
 ix 191  
 how to prevent iv 376  
 remarks on x 245, 246
- Smyth, Rev. Mr. mentioned iv 50
- Snarc of the Devil, what? vii 49, 50  
 remarks on ix 237
- Snowsfields Chapel opened iii 101
- Society, Royal, remarks on the iii 256
- Society for the Reformation of Manners, the  
 origin of the vi 22  
 the proceedings of the  
 vi 22—25  
 the excellency of the  
 vi 25—28  
 the qualifications re-  
 quired in the members of the vi 28  
 the spirit in which its  
 members ought to act vi 31  
 how to leave a donation  
 vi 35  
 by will to the vi 35
- Society, Methodist, at Oxford, of whom it  
 originally consisted i 72  
 the declension of  
 i 79, 95, 284  
 increase of its  
 members, and the proceedings of  
 the i 87, 116—118  
 in Fetter-lane, origin of  
 the i 186
- Society, Methodist, in Bristol, origin of the  
 i 252  
 in London, agitated by  
 i 315, 316  
 disputes i 315, 316  
 restored to  
 i 328  
 peaca iv  
 the rules of the iv  
 345—347  
 how often strangers may  
 be present at the meetings of the  
 iv 369
- Benevolent, or Stranger's Friend,  
 originated with the Methodists  
 iv 288
- Societies for Reformation, some account of  
 i 88  
 for the Distribution of Books re-  
 commended ii 376  
 religious, the necessity of forming  
 iv 368
- Socinians represented as knowing Christ after  
 the flesh vii 265
- Socinus, what he said of redemption { ix 218  
 by Christ } x 221
- Socrates, some of his sentiments relative to  
 his death and his Demon vi 346,  
 349
- Soldier a word to a viii 161—164
- Soldiers, the cruelty of some iv 153
- Soldiery, the moral state of the { viii 315  
 British } ix 191
- Solitude, remarks on i 169
- Solway Moss, a phenomenon at iii 338
- Son of God, how manifested under various  
 dispensations vi 277—279
- Sorrowing for the dead, the unprofitableness  
 of vii 332  
 how to prevent vii  
 335
- Soul, the origin of iii 120, 121  
 a Treatise on the, referred to iii 266  
 observations on the vi 211, 334  
 reflections on the vii 232—234  
 the immortality of the, proved x 156,  
 157  
 the folly of attempting to satisfy it with  
 worldly good x 156, 157
- Sovereign, how God acts as a ix 471, 472
- Sovereignty, God's, what? iii 455  
 does not suspend his jus-  
 tice ix 390, 391  
 thoughts on ix 471, 473
- Spencer, Susannah, the experience and happy  
 death of iii 402—405
- Spey, a very impetuous river { iii 299, 300  
 iv 128, 129
- Spirit helpeth our infirmities, remarks on the  
 passage viii 249—251
- Spirit, Holy, how grieved viii 50  
 how he enlightens the under-  
 standing ix 45  
 how he acts as a Comforter  
 ix 92, 93  
 the design of his being sent  
 ix 95
- Spirit, soul, and body, what meant by x  
 162, 163
- Spirits, good and bad, conversations of Eliza-  
 beth Hobson with iii 246—253  
 happy, their employment vii 296—298  
 evil, their power vii 295, 296
- Stadt House, some account of the iii 335
- Stanton-Drew, a famous monument of anti-  
 quity iv 100, 101



- Thunder and lightning, the good effects of,  
at Whitney iv 116
- Thurloe, the Memours of, mentioned iv 88
- Thurot, Monsieur, a remarkable account of  
iii 296
- Tiberius, an anecdote of ix 438
- Tickets, (Methodist,) to whom they should  
be given iv 375
- Tillotson, Archbishop, a passage in his works  
censured vii 325
- Time, what? vi 200, 201
- Titles of honour, what the Quakers say of  
ix 116, 117
- Tiverton, an account of a great fire at ii 247
- Toad, a remarkable anecdote of a vii 311,  
312
- Todmorden, the vale of, described ii 310,  
311
- Told, Silas, some account of iv 29
- Toleration Act, remarks on the viii 270—272  
the Methodists not suffered  
to avail themselves of  
x 374—376
- Toma Chachi, (an Indian,) a speech of i 129
- Tongues, the confusion of, a remark on ii  
137
- Toogood, Rev. Mr. his Reasons for Dissent  
criticised i. 311. 389, 390  
a letter to ix 151—155
- Tracts, the distribution of, in London ii 108
- Trade, the increase of iii 434
- Trades, a remark on following particular vi  
100—102
- Tradesmen, remarks on the conduct of ix  
192, 197
- Tradition, what the Church of Rome says of  
x 12, 14
- Trance, a remarkable account of a young  
woman in a ii 89—91
- Transubstantiation, the absurdity of the doc-  
trine of x 39, 41
- Treasure, in what sense we are forbidden to  
lay up, on earth v 308—310. 315,  
316  
in earthen vessels, what, and why?  
vii 308, 309, 310
- Trembath, Mr. John, some account of iv 99  
two letters to x 245—  
247
- Trenck, Baron, the Life of, censured iv  
266, 267  
v 288
- Trespasses, what meant by? v 288
- Trevccka, a strange account of a young wo-  
man at iii 224, 225  
some account of the house at iii  
112, 284
- Trial, an extraordinary, described iii 409,  
410
- Trinity, remarks on the use of the term vi  
209  
the incomprehensibility of the, no  
argument against believing it vi  
210—213  
the doctrine of the, mentioned x  
302, 322
- Trumpet, how God bloweth his vii 363
- Truth, the want of, lamented viii 311, 312
- Tullamore, Lord, his gardens described ii  
348
- Turks, the two supposed, described iii 97, 99
- Turner, Mr. his remarkable Providences re-  
ferred to iii 275
- Turretin, his History of the Church censured  
i 375
- Try the spirits, how to { i 267  
{ viii 479
- Tybee Island, a short account of i 127
- U
- Ulster, some account of ii 78
- Unbelief, remarks on being delivered from x  
302, 303
- Unchangeableness of God, how to be under-  
stood ix 403
- Uncharitableness, remarks on viii 349, 350
- Uncion, extreme, remarks on x 45, 60
- “Uncion from the Holy One,” remarks on  
the passage viii 252, 253
- Understanding, the blindness of the ix 360—  
363
- Ungodly, how justified? v 50, 51, 54
- Union, Christian, strongly recommended iii  
132—134  
how to promote iv 386, 387  
how to preserve iv 400, 401  
with God, how to obtain x 222  
of the clergy of the Church of Eng-  
land, proposals for the x 254—256
- Upright, how man made ix 324, 325
- Usher, Archbishop, what he says of Christ  
dying for reprobates ix  
435  
his Letters mentioned iv  
222  
a quotation from iv 373  
the last words of ii 78  
the dying prayer of v 109
- Utrecht, some elegant gardens at, mentioned  
iv 183  
the University of, mentioned iv 184  
the political state of iv 184
- V
- Vallancy, Major, his Irish Grammar men-  
tioned iv 154
- Vandome, Elizabeth, a witness of the perfect  
love of God iii 265, 266
- Vanity, how produced by dress vii 69
- Varley, Richard, (a malfactor,) some ac-  
count of ii 357, 358
- Vegetables, remarks on vi 333  
reflections on the qualities of,  
since the fall of man ix 294
- Venn, Rev. Mr. his conduct toward Mr.  
Wesley x 255
- Veracity, what? vii 86, 87
- Vibrations, the doctrine of, considered x 141,  
144
- Vigils, the nature and origin of ix 574, 575
- Vineyard of the Lord, what? vii 215  
the grapes which the  
Lord expects it to  
bring forth, what?  
vii 222—224
- Virtue, the recommending of, not sufficient to  
heal the sin-disordered mind vi 207
- Visions in the Primitive Church, remarks on  
vii 133—137
- Visitation, day of, the importance of know-  
ing the viii 368, 369  
of the clergy in South Carolina, an  
account of a i 147
- Visiting from house to house, the im-  
portance of { iii 360  
{ iv 405
- Visitors of the sick, their business iv 340
- Voltaire, the death of, mentioned iv 25  
the Memoirs of himself censured iv  
138

- Voltaire, his *Henriade*, a critique on ii 355  
 Voters for Members of Parliament, the oath of viii 302, 303  
 Vowler, Rev. Mr. mentioned iii 91
- W
- Wake, Archbishop, his Translation of *Hermas* mentioned ix 20, 21  
 Walcham, Elizabeth, some account of the experience and death of ii 240  
 —242  
 Walker, Rev. Mr. several important letters to x 204—213  
 Walking by sight, what implied in vii 242—245  
 Walk worthy of God, what to vi 378—380  
 Walpole, Mr. his *Historic Doubts* referred to iii 277  
 Sir Robert, a remarkable saying of vii 305  
 Walsh, Mr. Thomas, a letter from, on the Divinity of Christ ii 329, 330  
 his extraordinary Biblical knowledge vii 96  
 War, reflections on ix 187—189  
 Warburton, Bishop, a letter to ix 67—110  
 Wardrobe, Mr. his sudden and happy death mentioned ii 340, 341  
 Ware, Sir James, remarks on his *Antiquities of Ireland* ii 142  
 Warksworth Castle and Chapel, some account of iii 47  
 Warner, Dr. his *History of the Irish Rebellion* mentioned } iii 282  
 } iv 50  
 Watchfulness, the necessity of vi 272, 273  
 Watch-nights, the origin of } i 388  
 } iv 334  
 Water, observations on the creation of vi 215, 216  
 remarks on the changes it will undergo vi 293  
 spout, an account of a iii 21  
 Watts, Dr. his *Improvement of the Mind* mentioned iii 159  
 his *Treatise on the Passions* noticed iii 267  
 a remark on his *Essay on Liberty* iv 58  
 his reflections on the *Divine Mercy* vi 373  
 a quotation from, on *Original Sin* ix 264  
 a quotation from, on *Unconditional Reprobation* ix 394  
 Wedding garment, what? } iv 234, 282, 283  
 } vii 283—285  
 Wednesbury, the persecutions of the Methodists at x 465—483  
 Wesley, Rev. Bartholomew, ejected by the Act of Uniformity i 1  
 Rev. John, sen. his ejection and imprisonment i 3  
 his death and character i 5  
 Rev. Samuel, (father of the late Mr. John Wesley,) leaves the Dissenters when a hoy i 8, 9  
 his great diligence at Oxford i 9  
 refuses to support the Popish interest i 9, 10  
 approves of the revolution in 1688 i 10  
 Wesley, Rev. Samuel, writes in defence of it, and is presented with the livings of Epworth and Wroote i 10  
 indefatigable in his pastoral office, and in his studies i 10, 11  
 a remarkable saying of vii 20  
 his opinion of the Septuagint i 11, 12  
 his poetical talent exemplified i 12—16  
 his peaceful death i 17, 18  
 Susannah, (mother of the late Mr. John Wesley,) examines the controversy between the Church of England and the Dissenters i 18, 19  
 her method of devotion i 19—21  
 her mode of educating her children i 21, 22  
 holds religious meetings at her house i 33—35  
 her thoughts on lay-preaching i 25—28  
 her death and epitaph i 28, 29  
 Rev. John, his remarkable deliverance when his father's house was burnt i 52—54  
 receives the sacrament when eight years old i 55  
 distinguishes himself by his diligence and learning at the Charter-House School i 55  
 elected to Christ Church, Oxford i 55  
 his judgment and affections much influenced by reading two devotional books i 57  
 ordained Deacon i 58  
 elected Fellow of Lincoln College i 59  
 specimens of his early poetry i 60—64  
 chosen Greek Lecturer, and Moderator of the Classes i 62  
 proceeds Master of Arts i 66  
 his method of study i 67  
 becomes his father's curate i 68  
 ordained Priest i 69  
 the direction of the infant society at Oxford committed to him i 71, 72  
 greatly opposed in his attempts to do good i 77, 78  
 becomes acquainted with the Rev. William Law i 87, 88  
 refuses to apply for the living at Epworth i 99—109  
 the character of the, till the period of his going to Georgia i 116—119  
 commences his voyage from Gravesend i 123  
 his manner of spending his time on ship-board i 123, 124  
 arrives at Georgia i 127

- Wesley, Rev. John, enters on his ministry at Savannah** i 131  
     his manner of catechising at Savannah i 145, 146  
     proceedings against, by the court of Savannah i 152—154. 157  
     embarks for England i 164  
     his feelings on ship-board i 169  
     arrives in England i 171  
     convinced of the necessity of justification i 172  
     waits on the Board of Trustees for Georgia i 180  
     begins to pray extempore i 184  
     obtains a sense of his acceptance with God i 194, 195  
     visits the Moravians in Germany i 197—237  
     returns to London i 237  
     preaches at Bristol i 251  
     defends the work wrought by his ministry i 259, 260  
     justifies his irregularity i 263—265  
     visits Wales i 287—289  
     separates from the Moravians i 325  
     remonstrates with Mr. Whitefield i 343  
     his letters to the Moravians at Hernhuth i 358—365  
     his remarkable illness i 372—375. 377  
     waits on the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Bishop of London i 392  
     draws up the state of the case between the Clergy and the Methodists ii 37—39  
     his first visit to Ireland ii 122  
     his reply to the message of the Mayor of Sbaftsbury ii 222  
     enters the marriage state ii 233  
     visits Scotland ii 237  
     preaches in a Scotch Kirk ii 281  
     his reflections on the non-improvement of time ii 394  
     prepares materials for compiling his Natural Philosophy ii 412  
     writes a circular letter to several pious clergymen iii 132—134  
     his pious reflections on the state of his health iii 304  
     his views of the Slave Trade iii 341  
     preserved in imminent danger iii 394  
     dangerously ill at Bristol iv 117  
     his reflections on his birth-day } iii 395. 438  
     his birth-day } iv 96. 246, 247  
     why he wrote his *Calm Address* iii 428, 424
- Wesley, Rev. John, visits Dr. Dodd in prison** iii 449  
     writes against Popery iv 53  
     a singular paragraph published concerning iv 60  
     visits Holland iv 108—115  
     ordains preachers for America and Scotland iv 139. 161  
     visits Holland a second time iv 181—185  
     his reflections on entering on his 86th year iv 274, 275  
     writes to a bishop on the abuse of the Toleration Act iv 296—298  
     the nature and origin of his power iv 397—400  
     how he defended himself against the charge of loving money viii 537. 575  
     his candour in speaking of Mr. Whitefield ix 89, 90  
     the consistency of his doctrines x 284, 285  
     how much secluded from the world x 314  
     preaches his last sermon iv 307  
     his sickness and death iv 307—311  
     his funeral iv 311, 312  
     his will iv 312—314  
     his character iv 317—327
- Rev. Samuel, jun. noticed by the Bishop of Rochester when at School** i 37  
     elected to Christ Church, Oxford i 38  
     his acquaintance with Lord Oxford, &c. i 39  
     removes to Tiverton i 39  
     his poetical talent exemplified i 40  
     his poetical letter to his brother Charles i 85  
     his death, character, and epitaph i 41—43
- Rev. Charles, a remarkable anecdote of** i 44  
     elected to Christ Church, Oxford i 44  
     obtains the name of Methodist i 45  
     awakened to a serious concern for his soul i 46  
     takes his degree of Master of Arts i 48  
     ordained Deacon and Priest, and goes to America with his brother John i 48  
     his character as a preacher and a poet i 49  
     his death and character i 51
- Westminster Abbey, remarks on the tombs in** iii 319
- Weston, Mr. his Dissertations on the Wonders of Antiquity mentioned** iv 234
- Whale, observations on the** vi 219

- Whiskins, Sarah, the experience and happy death of i 380, 381
- Whiston Cliffs, a strange account of viii 166—168
- Whitby, the History of, alluded to iv 41  
the character of the society at iv 133
- White boys, some account of the iii 78
- Whitefield, Rev. George, avows his determination to preach against Mr. Wesley i 342  
his Answer to Mr. Wesley's Sermon on Free Grace noticed iii 180  
attends a Conference iii 224  
a letter from Mr. Wesley to vii 285  
his death iii 316  
his funeral sermon, by Mr. Wesley vi 125—137
- Mr. Peter, his Defence of the Hebrew Points commended ii 365
- Wh—, James, an awful account of ii 243, 244
- Whitson Cliffs, a remarkable phenomenon at ii 313—315
- Wickedness, a life of, not a life of happiness vii 34—35  
universal how to be accounted for ix 248, 249, 259, 267, 269, 278, 285, 286, 288, 308, 312
- Widows, an institution for the support of iv 342
- Wilderness state, what? vi 60—62  
the causes of vi 62—66  
the cure of vi 66—70  
remarks on vii 292
- Wilkes, Mr. observations on his expulsion from the House of Commons x 106, 107
- Will, free, the doctrine of, what? viii 223  
remarks on ix 397, 399, 400
- Will, the corruption of ix 363—370, 428, 429
- Williams, Thomas, his retraction of gross slanders ii 29
- Wills, the making of, ought not to be deferred iv 47, 491
- Wind, the dreadful effects of a violent ii 371  
burning, the effects of a ii 382, 383
- Windser, Robert, a short account of iv 287
- Wisdom, the import of the term x 302  
of God's counsels vi 320—329  
from above, marks of the viii 73  
and knowledge of God, remarks on the terms vi 320  
fleshly, the insufficiency of v 115
- Witchcraft, remarks on { iii 305, 436  
{ ix 32, 33, 55
- Witness of the Spirit, what? v 94—97, 102, 106, 175, 176  
how to distinguish from presumption v 96, 100  
objections against the, answered v 106—110  
remarks on the viii 248, 249  
of our own spirit, what? v 92—95
- Witnesses, remarks on the credibility of ix 54, 55
- Wollaston, his scheme of religion stated and censured vii 214, 253
- Woman, an unhappy, a word to viii 145—147
- Women, remarks on their preaching ix 112
- Wood, Martha, some account of the death of iii 418, 419
- Woodrow, Mr. his History of the Sufferings of the Church of Scotland mentioned iii 236
- Work of God, how to be revived iv 401—403  
in London, remarks on the viii 37  
in England, the character of the ii 316  
causes of the decay of the { iii 393  
{ iv 134, 135  
remarks on extraordinary circumstances attending the ii 452, 453
- Workhouse, a pleasing account of a iii 318  
in Amsterdam, an account of a iv 113
- Working for life, remarks on iv 404
- Works before justification, remarks on viii 224  
good, subsequent to faith viii 409  
cannot supply the place of love vii 94  
how a condition of salvation ix 487, 488, 520  
of supererogation, remarks on x 18, 19, 59  
of God, the original state of the vi 214—221  
the incomprehensibility of vi 331—340  
reflections on { vii 187—189  
the { viii 480, 481  
of the Devil, what? vi 275—277  
how the Son of God destroys the vi 279—281  
of piety and mercy, what? v 212, 281
- World, remarks on the term vi 421  
in what sense to be understood vi 423  
what implied in leaving the vii 5—7  
the consequences of not leaving the vii 7—11  
the most effectual way of leaving the viii 11, 12  
what implied in gaining the vii 28, 29  
the reasonableness of renouncing the viii 376
- Worlds, observations on the plurality of vii 191, 192
- “Worm dieth not,” what meant by vi 367—369
- Worship, religious, what? v 261  
acceptable, remarks on ix 112—115  
public, observations on x 232—234
- Worthiness of Christ, remarks on the ix 217, 218
- Wraxal, Mr. a remark on his Travels iii 423
- Wrecked vessels, how to prevent the plundering of iii 442
- Wright, Mrs. some account of i 29—34  
Peter, a strange account of i 132
- X
- Xenophon's *Kyru Παιδεία* some remarks on iv 20
- Y
- Yarmouth, the disasters of the society at iv 120
- Yew-tree, an old, mentioned iv 19

Young, Dr. Mr. Wesley calls his Night Thoughts a noble work iii 264, 265 a stricture on a saying of x 309	Zeal, the prime objects of, what ? vii 105, 106 unholy, the evil of vi 266
Z	Zinzendorf, Count, his curious advertisement ii 60
Zeal, the effects of, what ? vii 99, 100 the nature of vii 100 the properties of vii 101, 102, 103—105	a specimen of his doctrines ii 97, 98 a Narrative of, referred to ii 223

## A TABLE OF THE TEXTS,

*From which Mr. Wesley preached the Sermons contained in his Works :  
with the subject or occasion of each Sermon.*

BOOK. CH. VER.	SUBJECT.	Vol. Pa.	BOOK. CH. VER.	SUBJECT.	Vol. Pp.
<i>Genesis</i> 1 3	God's Approbation of his Works	vi 214	<i>Jeremiah</i> 8 22	Causes of the Inefficacy of Christianity	vii 256
3 19	Fall of Man	vi 221	17 9	Deceitfulness of the Human Heart	vii 300
6 5	Original Sin	v 188	23 6	The Lord our Righteousness	vi 242
<i>Leviticus</i> 19 17	Duty of Reproving our Neighbour	vi 279	23 24	Omnipresence of God	vi 46
<i>Numbers</i> 23 10	Death of the Rev. Geo. Whitefield	vi 125	<i>Ezekiel</i> 1 16	Some Account of the late Work of God in North America	vii 401
23 23	Laying the Foundation of the New Chapel, City-Road, London	vi 106	<i>Amos</i> 3 6	Public Diversions	vii 361
<i>Joshua</i> 24 15	Family Religion	vii 114	<i>Malachi</i> 3 7	Means of Grace	v 150
<i>1 Samuel</i> 2 17	Attending the Church Service	vii 193	<i>Matthew</i> 5 1-4	Our Lord's Sermon on the Mount	v 214
<i>2 Samuel</i> 12 23	Death of John Griffith	vii 331	5 5-7	Ditto	v 227
24 17	National Sins and Miseries	vii 394	5 8-12	Ditto	v 239
<i>2 Kings</i> 10 15	Catholic Spirit	v 410	5 13-16	Ditto	v 252
<i>Psalms</i> 8 4	What is Man	vii 231	5 16-20	Ditto	v 275
8 3, 4	Ditto	vii 187	6 1-15	Ditto	v 278
37 37	Death of the Rev. Mr. Fletcher	vi 138	6 16-18	Ditto	v 292
46 8	The Cause and Cure of Earthquakes	vii 384	6 19-23	Ditto	v 305
62 10	The Danger of Increasing Riches	vii 316	6 22, 23	Single Eye	vii 268
73 20	Human Life a Dream	vii 285	6 24-34	Our Lord's Sermon on the Mount	v 319
77 7, 8	Call to Backsliders	vii 44	7 13, 14	Ditto	v 340
90 2	Eternity of God	vi 200	7 1-12	Ditto	v 331
94 16	Reformation of Manners	vi 21	7 15-20	Ditto	v 347
<i>Proverbs</i> 22 6	Education of Children	vii 122	7 21-27	Ditto	v 355
<i>Ecclesiastes</i> 7 10	Former Times	vii 179	12 20	Worldly Folly	vii 275
<i>Isaiah</i> 1 21	True Christianity Defended	vii 322	16 3	Signs of the Times	vi 302
5 4	God's Vineyard	vii 215	16 26	The Important Question	vii 27
11 9	General Spread of the Gospel	vi 281	18 15-17	Cure of Evil Speaking	vi 89
			19 24	Riches	vii 224
			22 12	Wedding Garment	vii 280
			25 34	Reward of the Righteous	vii 155
			25 36	Visiting the Sick	vii 147
			<i>Mark</i> 1 15	The Way to the Kingdom	v 64
			1 15	Repentance of Believers	v 128
			9 38, 39	Caution against Bigotry	v 400
			9 48	Hell	vi 365
			12 32	The Unity of the Divine Being	vii 249

BOOK.	SUBJECT.	BOOK.	SUBJECT.
<i>Luke</i>		<i>2 Cor.</i>	
CH. VER.	Vol. Pa.	CH. VER.	Vol. Pa.
9 23	Self-Denial vi 80	3 17	The Holy Spirit vii 370
12 7	Divine Providence vi 310	4 7	The Heavenly Treasure in Earthen Vessels vii 307
16 2	The Good Steward vi 36	5 7	The Difference of Walking by Faith, and Walking by Sight vii 242
16 9	The Use of Money vi 97	5 16	Knowing Christ after the Flesh vii 263
16 31	The Rich Man and Lazarus vi 51	5 17	Sin in Believers v 118
22 19	The Duty of Constant Communion vii 171	6 17, 18	In what sense we are to Leave the World vii 5
<i>John</i>		10 4	Wandering Thoughts vi 5
1 47	An Israelite Indeed vii 83	<i>Galatians</i>	
3 7	The New Birth v 197	4 18	Zeal vii 99
3 8	Marks of the New Birth v 171	<i>Ephesians</i>	
16 22	Wilderness State vi 60	2 8	Salvation by Faith v 9
<i>Acts</i>		2 8	The Scripture Way of Salvation v 206
4 31	Scriptural Christianity v 33	2 12	Living without God vii 311
26 24	The Nature of Enthusiasm v 390	4 1-6	The Church vii 373
26 26	The Almost Christian v 17	4 30	Grieving the Holy Spirit vii 349
<i>Romans</i>		5 14	Awake, thou that Sleepest v 23
2 29	The Circumcision of the Heart v 163	5 16	Redeeming the Time vii 107
3 31	The Law Established through Faith v 374	6 12	Evil Angels vi 356
3 31	Ditto 5 383	<i>Philippians</i>	
4 5	Justification by Faith v 46	2 12, 13	Working out our Salvation vii 38
5 15	God's Love to Fallen Man vi 234	3 12	Christian Perfection v 420
7 12	The Origin, Nature, Properties, and Use of the Law v 363	<i>Colossians</i>	
8 1	The First Fruits of the Spirit v 72	3 20	Obedience to Parents vii 132
8 15	The Spirit of Bondage and Adoption v 81	<i>2 Thess.</i>	
8 16	The Witness of the Spirit v 92	2 7	Mystery of Iniquity vi 262
8 16	Ditto v 101	<i>1 Timothy</i>	
8 19-22	The Great Deliverance vi 252	6 9	The Danger of Riches vii 55
8 29, 30	Predestination vi 229	<i>Hebrews</i>	
8 32	Free Grace vi 115	1 11	Good Angels vi 349
10 5-8	The Righteousness of Faith v 55	6 1	Perfection vi 388
11 33	The Wisdom of God's Counsels vi 320	11 1	The Discoveries of Faith vii 236
14 10	The Great Assize v 139	11 1	Faith vii 292
15 2	Pleasing all Men vii 164	11 6	Faith vii 209
<i>1 Cor.</i>		13 17	Obedience to Pastors vii 140
7 35	Dissipation vi 415	<i>James</i>	
10 13	Temptation vii 14	1 4	Patience vii 21
12 25	Schism vi 381	4 4	Friendship with the World vi 421
12 31	The More Excellent Way vii 74	<i>1 Peter</i>	
13 1-3	Charity vii 90	1 6	Heaviness through Temptations vi 71
13 3	Love vii 355	3 3, 4	Dress vii 66
13 10	The imperfection of Human Knowledge vi 329	<i>1 John</i>	
14 29	The Case of Reason Impartially Considered vi 340	3 9	The Great Privilege of those who are born of God v 180
15 35	The Resurrection of the Dead vii 340	5 7	The Trinity vi 208
<i>2 Cor.</i>		5 8	The End of Christ's Coming vi 273
1 12	The Witness of our own Spirit v 110	5 20	Spiritual Worship vi 399
1 12	Conscience vii 202	5 21	Spiritual Idolatry vi 407
2 11	Satan's Devices vi 12	<i>Rev.</i>	
2 7	Corrupting the Word of God vii 336	21 5	The New Creation vi 290

A

TABLE OF TEXTS,

ILLUSTRATED IN MR. WESLEY'S WORKS.

CH.	VER.	Vol.	Page.	C.	V.	V.	P.	C.	V.	V.	P.	
		<i>Genesis</i>			<i>Lev. (continued.)</i>				<i>Job (continued.)</i>			
1	3	vi	227	19	17	vi	297	42	6	v	73	
1	9	vi	294		<i>Numbers.</i>				<i>Psalms</i>			
1	16	iii	318	16	14	viii	443	2	11	v	284	
1	16	vi	218	23	10	vi	135	7	9	iii	386	
1	17	v	198	23	19	ix	443	8	1, 2	vii	187	
1	21	v	198	23	23	vi	106	8	3	vi	206	
1	24, 25	ix	124		<i>Deuteronomy</i>				3, 4	viii	187	
1	26	vii	307	4	15, 16	ix	467	8	4	vii	231	
1	26	ix	308	5	17	v	372	8	5	vi	41	
1	26, 27	v	197	6	5	iv	351	8	6	vi	254	
1	27	vi	227, 275	6	5	viii	22	11	6	iii	73	
1	28	iii	120	25	4	vi	252	14	4	ix	232	
1	31	vi	214	29	10, 12	ix	159	19	1	vii	244	
2	17	ix	202	30	6	iv	351	19	10	v	370	
2	16, 17	ix	327	34	6	x	29	31	1, 2	v	49	
2	17	v	25		<i>Joshua</i>				10	iv	308	
2	18	vi	168	24	15	vii	114	34	10	ix	263	
2	19	ix	241		<i>Judges</i>				37	vi	138	
2	21	vi	217	30	20	v	26	40	3	viii	30	
2	21	ix	125		<i>1 Samuel</i>				20	ii	316	
3	1, &c.	vi	222	2	12	vii	47	49	12	vii	235	
3	7, &c.	ix	203, 339	2	17	vii	193	50	16	x	238	
3	19	vi	221	2	25	vii	194	51	2	iii	121	
4	7	ix	382	13	14	x	193	51	5	ix	229, 309	
5	1-5	ix	308	21	24	vii	138				344	
5	3	iii	120	28	19	i	49	58	3	ix	230, 345	
5	3	vii	307		<i>2 Samuel</i>				5	viii	96	
5	3	ix	242, 342	12	23	vii	331	62	10	vii	316	
5	23, 24	vi	225	21	2	v	185	66	18	v	385	
6	5	v	188		<i>1 Kings</i>				19	viii	116	
6	5	vii	304	21	25	v	297	71	16	x	198	
6	5	ix	169, 227, 343	21	29	i	355	73	20	vii	285	
					<i>2 Kings</i>				14	iv	164	
6	12	ix	201	10	15	iv	412	77	7, 8	vii	44	
7	11	vi	215	10	15	v	410	81	1	i	412	
7	19	vi	215	17	33	v	319	82	6	vii	48	
8	21	ix	227, 343	18	4	x	29	88	12	vi	40	
9	1, &c.	ix	271		<i>2 Chronicles</i>				89	31, 34	ix	440
9	2	ix	271, 285	20	2	v	160	90	2	vi	200	
9	6	ix	211, 271		<i>Esther</i>				94	vi	21	
15	18	ix	404	5	13	vii	35	104	1, 18	i	62	
17	1	ix	512		<i>Job</i>				4	vi	350	
22	16	ix	322	3	17	iii	72	104	18	iv	170	
46	3	vii	349	4	17, 18	ix	233	104	27	v	224	
49	10	vi	304	5	7	ix	310, 343	116	15	vi	316	
		<i>Exodus</i>			10	iii	121	119	18	v	113	
12	29	vi	352	11	7	v	421	119	96	v	84	
14	10	v	159	11	12	ix	249, 344	119	137	iv	145	
14	21, 22	viii	442	14	1	ix	309	120	5	v	238	
20	4	x	31	14	4	ix	232, 344	139	6	vi	312	
20	5	viii	157	15	14	ix	232, 344	139	15	iii	121	
20	8, &c.	viii	140	16	19	vii	202	141	3	v	36	
20	13	x	310	19	25	viii	237	141	5	viii	218	
20	15	viii	148	25	5	v	286	143	2	v	60	
23	2	v	277	33	3	v	53	144	3	vi	138	
		<i>Leviticus</i>			11	ix	323	144	3, 4	vii	189	
16	21	ix	260	42	8	x	323	145	9	vi	313	



C.	V.	V.	P.	C.	V.	V.	P.	C.	V.	V.	P.
	<i>Matthew</i> (continued.)				<i>Luke</i> (continued.)				<i>John</i> (continued.)		
23	1, 8	vii	200	11	34	vi	419	14	15, &c.	viii	244
23	2	v	351	12	1-5	vi	365	14	16	ix	92
23	8, 9.	ix	152	12	7	v	397	14	21	v	98
24	26	i	335	12	7	vi	310	14	22	v	241
25	34	vii	155	12	15	v	322	14	16, 26	viii	245, 253
25	36	vii	147	12	20	vi	415	15	1, &c.	ix	409, 444
25	42	ix	390	12	31	v	326	15	5	v	37
25	46	v	145	12	51-53	viii	276	15	8	vii	158
26	26	x	39	13	26	v	347	15	18	vi	423
26	27	x	41	13	29	i	353	16	13	viii	253
28	19	ix	159, 163	13	34	vi	122	16	22	vi	60
	<i>Mark</i>			14	26	viii	277	17	3	v	29
1	15	v	64, 128	16	2	vi	36	17	11	ix	445
1	15	vii	374	16	9	vi	97	17	24	vi	147
2	9	i	390	16	14	vi	51	19	34	i	314
2	10	ii	329	16	26	x	21	20	28	viii	239
3	5	v	362, 433	16	31	vi	51	22	19	vii	171
3	28, 29	vii	52	16	31	viii	443			<i>Acts</i>	
4	5	v	392	17	1	ii	348	1	15	vi	263
4	19	vi	325	17	1	vi	385	2	19	iv	355
4	25	iii	158	17	21	vi	306	2	38	ix	168
4	25	v	329	17	28	vii	371	2	43	viii	521
4	25	vii	15	18	1, 4	v	155	2	47	vi	264
4	26	viii	221	18	10	v	272	4	12	v	52
4	31	iii	97	18	15	ix	161	4	31	v	33
5	40	vii	160	19	17	v	329	4	35	v	37
6	7	vii	198	19	41, 42	viii	46	5	17	vii	100
6	13	x	45	20	35	vii	345	6	1	vi	266
8	34	iv	347	20	35, 36	ix	124	6	15	vii	346
8	34	viii	84	22	19	i	323	7	8	ix	160
9	5	vii	346	22	19	viii	397	8	4	viii	354
9	26	i	269	22	19	ix	116	10	14	iii	345
9	38, 39	v	400	22	48	v	270	10	35	vii	212
9	48	vi	365	23	43	x	21	10	38	vii	163
10	21	vi	84					13	39	v	376
10	23	v	311	1	3	ii	329	14	8	viii	443
10	24	vii	225	1	9	v	207	14	17	i	376
10	29	i	131	1	12, 13	v	171	14	17	v	260
12	30	v	66	1	16	vii	371	15	18	v	284
12	30	v	321	1	29	ix	138	15	18	vi	235
12	30	vii	357	1	47	vii	83	15	36, &c.	vii	93
12	32	vii	249	3	5	ix	158	15	39	v	235
12	34	v	70	3	5, 6	ix	329	15	39	vi	266
13	22	v	253	3	6	v	123	16	30	ii	1
14	36	v	129	3	6	ix	234, 257	16	31	iv	79
14	38	v	132	3	7	v	197	16	31	v	59
16	16	v	53	3	7	vi	134	16	31	viii	236
	<i>Luke</i>			3	7	ix	255	17	12, 13	v	156
1	46, 47	v	72, 116	3	12	viii	221	17	26	ix	219
1	73-75	vi	393	3	8	v	171, 199	20	28	vi	375
1	75	x	272	3	16	i	214	21	20	v	64
3	8	viii	338	3	23	ix	156	23	1	v	112
4	5, 6	vi	359	3	36	i	254	24	16	iv	410
4	34	v	10	3	36	ix	442	24	25	vi	349
5	32	i	258	4	11	ix	27	26	8	vii	160
6	40	x	235	4	24	v	151, 260	26	24	v	390
6	41	viii	179	4	34	v	415	26	26	v	17
7	28	vii	211	4	34	vi	244	26	28	iii	12
8	8	i	137	5	24	i	228	28	22	i	282
8	18	iii	278	5	28	vii	341	28	22	v	38
8	18	vii	85	5	39	v	156			<i>Romans</i>	
9	23	vii	229	6	27	iv	404	1	18	v	221
9	55	iv	67	6	29	vii	26	1	18	ix	135
10	12	iii	232	7	38	v	427	1	19, 21	ix	223
10	27	v	20, 267	7	46	v	217	1	20	v	191
10	39	vi	416	7	51	viii	187	1	20	vi	331
10	42	v	24	8	11	ii	97	1	21	v	117
11	2	v	282	8	12	iii	206	1	21, &c.	ix	173, 174
11	2	viii	512	9	25	ix	63	2	13	v	49
11	23	vi	80	10	27-29	ix	444	2	14	ix	243
11	34	iv	410	13	10	x	235	2	29	v	163
11	34	v	114	13	34, 35	v	411	3	7, 8	vii	87

C.	V.	V.	P.	C.	V.	V.	P.	C.	V.	V.	P.
	<i>Romans</i> (continued.)				<i>Romans</i> (continued.)			1	<i>Corinthians</i> (continued.)		
3	10, 20	ix	221	10	1	v	32	10	16	v	157
3	19, &c.	v	374	10	3	v	326	10	16, 17	x	41
3	20	v	12	10	4	iv	259	10	22	ix	156
3	23	i	102	10	4	v	56	10	31	i	240
3	23, &c.	ix	220	10	4	v	327, 371	10	31	iv	333
3	24	v	107	10	4	viii	42	10	31	viii	10
3	25	viii	415	10	4	ix	451	11	18	x	238
3	28	viii	541	10	5, 8	v	55	11	18, &c.	vi	382
3	31	v	13, 52	10	9	v	10	11	23	v	157
3	31	v	374	10	12	iv	200	11	26	ix	116
3	31	x	191	10	12	v	14	11	28	ix	164
4	3	iii	462	11	17	ix	408	11	29	vii	175
4	3	viii	385	11	20, 22	ix	442	12	3	viii	62
4	5	i	189	11	33	vi	320	12	8, 12	ix	17
4	5	iv	360	11	36	vi	402	12	25	vi	381
4	5	v	379	12	2	vii	67	12	25	x	238
4	17	ix	381	12	11	i	226	12	31	v	255
4	25	vi	134	12	11	v	324	12	31	vii	74
5	1	v	37, 241	12	15	v	225	13	The whole chap. ix	ix	98
5	4	v	46	12	17	v	309	13	1, &c.	v	233
5	5	viii	264	12	18	vii	164	13	1, 3	vii	90
5	6	ix	224	12	19	ix	151	13	2	iii	369
5	7	ix	269	13	1	ix	154	13	3	vii	355
5	12	v	47	13	1	x	126	13	4	v	35
5	12-19	ix	207, 220,	13	7	viii	148	13	4	vii	92
			308	13	10	vi	390	13	4	vii	357, 358
5	14	ix	157	13	10	v	167, 260	13	7	x	11
5	15	vi	234	14	1	iv	29	13	8	viii	444
5	15, &c.	ix	251	14	10	v	139	13	5	x	16
5	18	iv	350	14	12	iv	411	13	8	ix	93
5	18	vi	257	14	17	i	302	13	10	vi	329
5	18, 19	ix	251	14	17	v	27, 64	13	12	ix	93
5	19	iv	370	15	2	vii	164	13	12	x	16
5	19	vi	234	15	2	x	238	14	2	ix	259
5	21	x	193, 197	16	10	vii	89	14	15	x	9
6	6	ix	334		1	<i>Corinthians</i>		14	15	viii	250, 256
6	14	i	209	1	2	vi	374	14	20	v	93
6	15	v	380	1	10	x	238	14	20	vi	340
6	23	v	69	1	10	vi	382	14	31	iv	338
7	1, &c.	v	363	1	23	v	376	14	34, 35	ix	112
7	1, &c.	ix	246	2	3	iv	362	14	40	ix	333
7	4	viii	43	2	4, 5	viii	251, 257	15	21, 22	ix	329, 347
7	9	ix	278	2	10	vi	212	15	22	v	188
7	9, &c.	v	87	2	12	v	96	15	22	vi	227
7	12	v	363	2	12	viii	47	15	35	vii	340
7	13	v	368	2	14	v	163	15	41	vi	239
7	14	i	117	3	1	i	195	15	41	vii	348
7	19	vi	274	3	3	v	120	15	45	vii	372
8	1	v	72, 124,	3	10	iv	373	15	47	ix	274
8	1	viii	543	3	12	v	46	15	53	vii	344
8	1, &c.	viii	248	3	12	vi	382	16	14	v	51
8	4	x	199	3	16	vii	350				
8	7, 8	ix	226	4	4	iv	362	1	12	v	104
8	9	viii	247	4	6	ii	194	1	12	vii	202
8	13	v	135	5	9	v	255	1	22	vii	375
8	14, 15	viii	247-254	5	9, 11	vii	6	2	11	vi	12
8	15	v	12, 81	5	11	vii	199	2	17	v	384
8	16	v	92, 101	5	12	vii	314	2	17	vii	334
8	16	viii	48	6	10, 11	v	123	3	3	v	266
8	18	x	22	6	11	viii	220	3	17	i	356, 408
8	19-22	vi	252	7	4	vi	163	3	17	v	88
8	22	ix	262	7	35	vi	415	3	17	vii	370
8	26, 27	viii	249	7	35	x	161	3	17	viii	15
8	29, 30	vi	229	8	1	iii	333	4	7	vii	307
8	32	vi	115	8	5	vii	249	4	17	x	19
8	33	v	78	9	9	vi	252	4	18	vi	206
8	33, 34	x	19	9	9	viii	78	4	18	vii	190
8	38, 39	ix	443	9	21	viii	43	5	4	v	376
9	1	vii	202	9	27	i	104	5	4	x	163
9	12, 13	ix	402	10	12	vii	14	5	7	vii	242
9	15, 16	v	54	10	13	vi	85	5	15	ix	393
9	21	ix	387	10	13	vii	14	5	16	vii	263

C.	V.	V.	P.	C.	V.	V.	P.	C.	V.	V.	P.
	2	<i>Cor. (continued.)</i>				<i>Eph. (continued.)</i>			2	<i>Thessalonians</i>	
5	17	i	239	4	15	vii	87	1	9	v	69
5	17	v	118. 123	4	18	i	273	2	7	vi	262
6	19	i	215	4	22. 24	ix	279. 326	2	13	ix	421
5	14	x	274	4	24	i	274	2	16	iv	362
6	14	vi	425	4	24	vii	304			<i>1 Timothy</i>	
6	17, 18	vii	5	4	25	vii	167	1	2	ix	224
7	1	v	121	4	29	vii	13. 80	1	4	viii	44
7	4	i	75	4	30	vii	349	1	8	v	75, 76
7	9	v	304	5	4	v	18	1	18, 19	ix	408. 441
8	12	iv	359	5	9	ix	74	2	5	vi	244
9	17	i	264	5	15	vi	155	2	9, 10	vi	155
10	4	v	165. 432	5	16	vii	107	2	11, 12	ix	112
10	4	vi	5	5	24	vi	183	2	14	vi	223
10	5	vi	339	5	25	v	125	3	10	v	408
12	7	v	429	5	25, 26	ix	157	4	7	vii	207
13	5	i	239	5	33	vi	181	4	13	iv	378
13	5	v	89	6	1	vi	187	5	19, 20	viii	464
		<i>Galatians</i>		6	1	vii	68	6	1	vi	194
I	2	vi	375	6	4	vi	173	6	8	vi	74
I	10	v	249	6	4	vii	134	6	8	vii	56
2	16	iv	351	6	5	vii	41	6	9	v	311
2	16	v	378	6	6	vi	193	6	9	vii	55
2	20	v	88	6	7	vi	192	6	10	v	131. 202
2	20	v	359	6	9	vi	190	6	17	v	312. 317
2	20	x	72	6	12	vi	356	6	20	iv	260
3	17	v	366	6	13	vi	364			<i>2 Timothy</i>	
3	22	i	262	6	13	ix	493	2	4	iv	378
3	23	iv	351			<i>Philippians</i>		2	15, 16	v	156
3.	27	ix	158	1	9	i	404	2	26	v	86
4	6	i	245	1	9	viii	57, 58	2	26	ix	237
4	6	v	36. 104.	2	5	vi	390, 391	3	5	i	427
			209	2	5, &c.	vii	39	3	12	viii	280
4	18	vii	99	2	12, 13	vii	38	3	12	viii	523
5	1	iv	351	2	13	v	89	3	12	ix	79
5	1	v	79	3	6	v	25	3	15	i	322
5	8	v	373	3	7, 8	v	115	3	16	vii	333
5	17	v	120	3	9	v	73	4	2	ix	77
5	18	v	75	3	12	v	420			<i>Titus</i>	
5	19	v	73	3	21	vii	342	2	4	vi	165
5	22	v	102	3	21	x	235	2	9	vi	192
5	22, 23	vi	390	4	6	iv	408	2	10	vi	195
5	24	v	124	4	7	i	247	2	11	viii	339
6	3	i	327	4	7	vi	37	2	14	vii	157
6	10	iv	411	4	7	vi	139	3	2	vi	93
6	10	vi	239	4	13	x	144	3	8	i	323
6	10	viii	191			<i>Colossians</i>				<i>Hebrews</i>	
6	14	iv	410	1	11	x	297	1	3	v	253
6	16	v	339	1	16	ii	329	1	3	vi	312
		<i>Ephesians</i>		1	17	vi	400	1	10. 12	v	359
1	3	iii	71	1	24	v	124	1	14	vi	349
1	11	vi	233	2	18, 19	ix	261	2	3	iii	385
1	11, 12	ix	422	2	20	i	321	3	12	i	274
1	13	viii	50	2	20	v	160	4	5	v	407
2	1	v	196	3	3	v	201	4	7	v	136
2	1-3	ix	222. 340.	3	9	v	125	4	12	ii	183
			341	3	10	ix	242. 326	4	12	v	371
2	2	vi	352. 362	3	20	x	273	4	13	v	84
2	3	iv	279	3	20	vii	132	4	15	ii	186
2	5	iv	414	3	21	vi	186	4	16	v	137
2	8	v	9. 163.	3	22	vi	191	5	4	viii	356
			206	4	6	v	73	5	9	vi	232
2	8	viii	189. 238			<i>1 Thessalonians</i>		6	1	v	128
2	10	vii	147	4	3	v	395	6	1	vi	388
2	12	vii	311	4	5	vii	252	6	1	vii	241
2	12	ix	179	4	13	vii	334	6	4	v	257
2	15	ix	279, 280	5	13	vii	252	6	4	ix	411, 446
2	22	v	29	5	17	iv	408	6	4. 6	vii	51
2	23	vi	48, 49	5	18	viii	338	6	11	v	174
3	9	v	384	5	19	i	397	7	19	i	409
3	10	vi	321	5	22	vi	138	7	25	iii	441
4	1-6	vi	373	5	23	vi	395	7	27	x	42
4	14	v	23. 82	5	23	x	162	8	10	v	113



